

A NEW METHOD

OF

LEARNING TO READ, WRITE, AND SPEAK

A LANGUAGE IN SIX MONTHS,

ADAPTED TO

THE ITALIAN

FOR

THE USE OF SCHOOLS AND PRIVATE TEACHERS.

BY

H. G. OLLENDORFF, PH. DR.

PROFESSOR OF LANGUAGES.

SIXTH EDITION,

CAREFULLY REVISED, CORRECTED, AND AUGMENTED.

[Translation Reserved.]

London:

WHITTAKER AND CO. AVE MARIA LANE;
DULAU AND CO. SOHO SQUARE;

Paris:

THE AUTHOR'S, 28 BIS, RUE DE RICHELIEU.

1873.

L'AUTEUR et les éditeurs de cet ouvrage se réservent le droit de le traduire ou de le faire traduire en toutes les langues. Ils poursuivront, en vertu des lois, décrets et traités internationaux, toutes contrefaçons, ou toutes traductions faites au mépris de leurs droits.

Le dépôt légal de ce volume a été fait à Paris, au Ministère de l'Intérieur, à Madrid au Ministère du *Fomento*, à Leipzig à la Direction royale du Cercle, à Berlin et à Bruxelles aux Ministères de l'Intérieur; et toutes les formalités prescrites par les traités seront remplies, dans les divers États avec lesquels l'Angleterre, la France, l'Espagne, la Prusse, la Saxe, et la Belgique ont conclu des conventions littéraires.

Each copy has its number and the Author's signature.

TO THE QUEEN.

MADAM,

IF my endeavours to diffuse the knowledge of foreign literature in England have met with success, I shall enjoy the agreeable conviction that the gracious permission to dedicate my book to Your Majesty has not been altogether undeserved.

I am, Madam,

With the greatest respect,

Your Majesty's

Obedient and humble Servant,

DR. H. G. OLLENDORFF.

28 BIS, RUE DE RICHELIEU, PARIS,
November, 1850.

LO STORNELLO PRUDENTE.

Uno stornello assetato trovò una bottiglia d' acqua. Si provò di bevere; ma l' acqua arrivava appena al collo della bottiglia, ed il becco dell' uccello non andava così lontano.

S' accinse a praticarvi un foro, dando di becco alla parete del vaso. Ma invano, che il vetro era troppo duro.

Cercò allora di rovesciare la bottiglia. Ma questo pure non gli riuscì: il vaso era troppo pesante.

Un' idea venne finalmente allo stornello la quale ebbe buon esito: gettò nel vaso buon numero di ciottolini che fecero alzare insensibilmente l' acqua fino alla portata del suo becco, sicchè gli fu possibile di bere comodamente.

La destrezza supera la forza: la pazienza e la riflessione rendono facili molte cose che dapprima sembravano impossibili.

THE SEA-COMPASS.

"How is the wind, Jack?" asked the captain of a ship, addressing the steersman. "North-east-by-North, sir," was the instantaneous answer of the tar. A jocular monk, who was a passenger, drew near the sailor. "My son," said he to him, "I heard thee swear like a demon during the storm; dost thou know thy prayers as well as thy sea-compass?" "No," replied Jack, "for I can tell you, father, that I know my sea-compass a great deal better than even *you* know your prayers."—"Thou art joking, son." "Quite in earnest, father."—Upon this, our tar began thus:—"North—North-west-by-north—North-north-west," and so on, till he had gone round and got to the North again. "Now, father," said Jack, "'tis your turn." The monk recited his *pater noster* in a very ready manner. "That is clever," observed the son of Neptune; "'tis mine now." Then he went on, "North—North-east-by-North—North-north-east, &c.," till he had come to the word again. "Well, father," said he, with a grin, "give us your prayer backwards."—"Backwards! I can't, boy: I have never learnt it but in one way; it is not necessary." "Then," observed the triumphant sailor, "I know my sea-compass better than you know your prayers, for I can tell it in a thousand ways."


OSSERVAZIONE

PEL PROFESSORE ITALIANO.

L' AUTORE di questo metodo non ha il minimo dubbio di venir criticato nella scelta delle frasi e dei vocaboli di cui si servì nel corso dell' opera: la lingua italiana, ricca di tante bellezze fornitele da una letteratura di più di sei secoli, offre una scelta d' espressioni qualche volta imbarazzante per lo studioso; ma l' autore, attenendosi a solido appoggio, preferì il Manzoni, fra i moderni scrittori il più unanimemente stimato in fatto di precisione e di buon gusto.

EXPLANATION OF SOME SIGNS USED IN THIS BOOK.

Expressions which vary either in their construction or idiom from the English are marked thus: †

A hand () denotes a rule of syntax or construction.

PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION.

MY system of acquiring a living language is founded on the principle, that each question contains nearly the answer which one ought, or which one wishes to make to it. The slight difference between the question and the answer is always explained before the question: so that the learner does not find it in the least difficult, either to answer it, or to make similar questions for himself. Again, the question being the same as the answer, as soon as the master pronounces it, it strikes the pupil's ear, and is therefore easily reproduced by his speaking organs. This principle is so evident, that it is impossible to open the book without being struck by it.

Neither the professor nor the pupils lose an instant of their time. When the professor reads the lesson, the pupil answers: when he examines the lesson written by the pupil he speaks again, and the pupil answers; also when he examines the exercise which the pupil has translated, he speaks and the pupil answers: thus both are, as it were, continually kept in exercise.

The phrases are so arranged that, from the beginning to the end of the method, the pupil's curiosity is excited by the want of a word or an expression: this word or expression

is always given in the following lesson, but in such a manner as to create a desire for others that render the phrase still more complete. Hence, from one end of the book to the other, the pupil's attention is continually kept alive, till at last he has acquired a thorough knowledge of the language which he studies.

Having been long solicited by numerous demands for this, the English and Italian part of my Method, and being besides encouraged by the happy result of my system, I am in hopes that my efforts to facilitate the study of foreign languages in England will this time again be crowned with success. May this new work, the fruit of many years' labour, add another service to the list of those I have already rendered to education, and may it deserve the approbation which public opinion has hitherto always granted me. It will be my best reward.

28 BIS, RUE DE RICHELIEU, PARIS,
July 25, 1846.

PREFACE TO THE NEW EDITION.

IN order to justify a continuance of the favour which this book has experienced at the hands of both masters and students, the present edition has been carefully revised and corrected, and a new and more complete Index added to it.

1, RADNOR PLACE, HYDE PARK, LONDON, W.,
April, 1859.

ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION.

THE Italian Alphabet contains twenty-two letters, viz.:

a,	b,	c,	d,	e,	f,	g,	h,	i,	
Pronounced like <i>a</i> in <i>far</i> , <i>bee</i> , <i>tchee</i> , <i>dee</i> , <i>ay</i> , <i>effe</i> , <i>dgee</i> , <i>acca</i> , <i>ee</i> ,									
j,	l,	m,	n,	o,	p,	q,	r,	s,	t,
<i>ee loongo</i> , <i>elle</i> , <i>emme</i> , <i>enne</i> , <i>o</i> , <i>pee</i> , <i>coo</i> , <i>airr</i> , <i>esse</i> , <i>tee</i> ,									
u, v, z.									
<i>oo</i> , <i>vay</i> , <i>dzaita</i> .									

The three following letters are sometimes found in old authors, but do not properly belong to the Italian Alphabet:—

k,	x,	y.
<i>cappa</i> ,	<i>iccas</i> ,	<i>ypsilon</i> .

General rule.—Every letter in Italian is pronounced.

It is impossible to lay down precise rules for the pronunciation of vowels and consonants: this must be left to a good master. In Italy itself the pronunciation varies according to the provinces.

VOWELS.

A is pronounced like *a* in *far*.

E has two sounds: the one close like *ay* in *day* (*e chiuso*)—Ex. *e* (conjunction), and; the other open (*e aperto*)—Ex. *è* (with the grave accent), is.

I has the sound of the English *i* in *ignorance*, *idiot*.

O, like *e*, has two sounds: the one close, like *oa* in *boat*—Ex. *rosa*, corroded; the other open, like *o* in *hot*—Ex. *rosa*, rose.

U is always pronounced like *oo* in *book*.

CONSONANTS.

C (*tchee*) and G (*dgee*) alter in sound according to the vowels which they precede. They are always hard before *a*, *o*, *u*, and soft before *e*, *i*. C followed by an *h* is always pronounced like *k*.

H in Italian is never aspirated. When it follows *c* and *g* it gives them a hard sound.—Ex. *chi*, who (pronounce *key*); *ghirlanda*, garland (pronounce like *gee* in *geese*, and not *dgeer-landa*).

GL followed by *i* has the sound of *illi* in the French word *bouilli*—Ex. *gli*, the. Before the other vowels, and frequently also before *i*, followed by a consonant, it has the same hard sound as in English—Ex. *negligenza*, negligence; *glaciale*, glacial.

GN followed by *a*, *e*, *o*, *u* has very much the sound of *nion* in *companion*—Ex. *campagna*, country.

J (*i loongo*) is pronounced like an *i* at the beginning and in the middle of a word; at the end of a word it is pronounced like double *i* (*ii*)—Ex. *desiderj*, wishes.

R is strongly marked in Italian.

SC before *e*, *i*, *ia*, *ie*, *io*, *iu* is pronounced like *sh* in *show*—Ex. *scena*, scene.

Z has two different sounds, that of *dz* and of *tz*—Ex. *zona*, zone (pronounce *dzona*); *zoppo*, lame (pronounce *tzoppo*).

Double letters must always be both distinctly pronounced in Italian—Ex. *pittore*, a painter (pronounce *pit-tore* and not *pi-tore*).

The only accent employed is the grave accent (´), on the last syllable of some words. Grammatically speaking, the acute accent (´), the circumflex (ˆ), and the double dot (¨) belong to the language, but are very seldom employed.

The accent in Italian generally falls on the penultimate syllable; many words however have it on the ante-penultimate, and some on the last syllable, which then has the grave accent, as *virtù*, virtue.

All verbs of more than one syllable have the accent on the ante-penultimate in the third person plural of every tense, except of the future, and in the first person plural of the imperfect of the sub-

junctive—Ex. *ámáno*, they love; *amávano*, they loved, &c.; *amássimo*, that we might love. Most infinitives of the second conjugation follow this rule—Ex. *crédere*, to believe. The exceptions are, *cadére*, to fall; *dovére*, to be obliged (ought); *sapére*, to know; and a few others, which have the accent on the penultimate.

Harmony of sound being the peculiar characteristic of the Italian language, a letter or a syllable is often suppressed in favour of the ear—Ex. *buon cane*, good dog (instead of *buono cane*); *bel cavallo*, fine horse (instead of *bello cavallo*).

FIRST LESSON.¹

Lezione Prima.

DEFINITE ARTICLE.

MASCULINE SINGULAR.

(When the word begins with any consonant except *s*, followed by another consonant.)

<i>Nominative,</i>	the.	<i>Nominativo,</i>	il.
<i>Genitive,</i>	of the.	<i>Genitivo,</i>	del.
<i>Dative,</i>	to the.	<i>Dativo,</i>	al.
<i>Accusative,</i>	the.	<i>Accusativo,</i>	il.
<i>Ablative,</i>	from the.	<i>Ablativo,</i>	dal.

Have you?

| Avete? Ha Ella? *

¹ TO PROFESSORS.—Each lesson should be dictated to the pupils, who should pronounce each word as soon as dictated. The professor should also exercise his pupils by putting the questions to them in various ways. Each lesson includes three operations: the teacher, in the first place, looks over the exercises of the most attentive of his pupils, putting to them the questions contained in the printed exercises; he then dictates to them the next lesson; and, lastly, puts fresh questions to them on all the preceding lessons. The teacher may divide one lesson into two, or two into three, or even make two into one, according to the degree of intelligence of his pupils.

² It is, perhaps, through an abuse of civilization that the use of the second person plural *you* has been introduced into modern languages. The Italians, however, go still farther, and use, as the pronoun of address, even in speaking to a man, the third person singular feminine, *Ella*, which they begin with a large letter, out of deference for the person they speak to, and to distinguish it from the third person feminine. It relates to *Vostra Signoria* (contracted: *Vossignoria*, abridged *V. S.*, your worship), which is understood.

There are, however, three ways of addressing a person, viz. :—

1. *Dar del tu*, to say thou.
2. *Dar del voi*, to say you.
3. *Dar del Lei*, to speak in the third person.

Well-educated persons use the second person singular *tu*, thou,

Yes, Sir, I have.

The.

The hat.

Have you the hat?

Yes, Sir, I have the hat.

The bread.

The salt.

The soap.

Sì, Signore,³ ho.Il (before *s*, followed by a consonant, *lo*; and before a vowel, *l'*).

Il cappello.

Ha Ella il cappello?

Sì, Signore, ho il cappello.

Il pane.

Il sale.

Il sapone.

DEFINITE ARTICLE, MASCULINE SINGULAR.

When the word begins with *s*, followed by a consonant (or with *z*).

<i>Nom.</i>	the.
<i>Gen.</i>	of the.
<i>Dat.</i>	to the.
<i>Acc.</i>	the.
<i>Abl.</i>	from the.

<i>Nom.</i>	lo.
<i>Gen.</i>	dello.
<i>Dat.</i>	allo.
<i>Acc.</i>	lo.
<i>Abl.</i>	dallo.

only in speaking to their intimate friends. It is also used in all sorts of poetry. The second person plural, *voi*, you, is used towards servants, but towards other persons it is a mark of familiarity. The third person, *ella*, she, is most generally used as the pronoun of address, and you may be sure never to give offence in using it, either towards your superiors or inferiors. But as we must know how to speak to our servants and intimate friends, as well as to other persons, we have in the course of our method made use sometimes of the one, sometimes of the other, and sometimes of both ways of expression, giving, however, always the preference to *Ella*.

In speaking in the third person singular, *Ella* is used for the subject or nominative; *Lei*, *La*, *Le*, for the other cases: and in speaking in the same manner to more than one person, the plural of those pronouns must be made use of, viz. *Elle* or *Elleno*, for the subject or nominative, and *Loro*, *Le*, for the other cases. These pronouns being feminine, the adjective must needs agree with them. Ex.: *E' Ella contenta?* or simply: *è contenta?* are you satisfied? (literally: is she satisfied?) *Come sta Ella?* or simply: *Come sta?* how do you do? (literally: how is she?) *Le parlo*, I speak to you (literally: I speak to her). *Sono suo* (or *il di Lei*) *devotissimo servo*, I am your most devoted servant (literally: I am her most devoted servant). *Ho veduto il di Lei* (or *il suo*) *signor fratello*, or else *il fratello di V. S.*, I have seen your brother (literally: I have seen her Mr. brother), i. e. the brother of your worship.

³ When *Signor* is followed by a noun, it has no *e* at the end, except when it begins with *s*, followed by a consonant. Ex.: *il Signor Alessandro*, Mr. Alexander; *il Signor Conte*, Count; *il Signor Abate*, Abbot; *il Signore Stefano*, Mr. Stephen.

The looking-glass.	Lo specchio.
The boot.	Lo stivale.
The sugar.	Lo zucchero.

Obs. A. When the word begins with a vowel, the same article is made use of, with this difference only, that for the letter *o* an apostrophe (') is substituted, as :

<i>Nom.</i>	the.	<i>Nom.</i>	l'.
<i>Gen.</i>	of the.	<i>Gen.</i>	dell'.
<i>Dat.</i>	to the.	<i>Dat.</i>	all'.
<i>Acc.</i>	the.	<i>Acc.</i>	l'.
<i>Abt.</i>	from the,	<i>Abt.</i>	dall'.

The coat.	L' abito, il vestito.
The man.	L' uomò.

My hat. | Il mio cappello.

Obs. B. In Italian the definite article precedes the possessive pronoun.

Your bread.	{ Il di Lei pane. Il suo pane. ⁴
Have you my hat?	{ Il vostro pane.
	Ha Ella il mio cappello?
Yes, Sir, I have your hat.	{ Avete il mio cappello?
	Sì, Signore, ho il { di Lei } cap-
	pello. ⁵
Have you your bread?	{ Ha Ella il di Lei pane?
Yes, Sir, I have my bread.	{ Avete il vostro pane?
Have you my sugar?	Sì, Signore, ho il mio pane.
	{ Ha Ella }
	{ Avete } il mio zucchero?
Yes, Sir, I have your sugar.	Sì, Signore, ho il di Lei zuc-
	chero.

Obs. C. When the word beginning with *z*, or with *s*, followed by a consonant, is preceded by another word, the article is not *lo*, but *il*.

Which or what? | *Quale or Che?*

Obs. D. Which or what is more generally rendered by *che*, when the noun follows immediately, and by *quale* (plural *quali*) when it is separated from it.⁶ But *what* is preferably rendered by *che*, and *which* by *quale* (abridged *qual*).

⁴ The first of these expressions is generally used by well-educated persons.

⁵ That is to say, *il cappello di V. S.*, the hat of your worship.

⁶ Ex.: *Ecco due spade: quale volete?* Here are two swords, which will you have? *Quali fra questi libri sono i miei?* Which of these books are mine?

Which hat have you?
 I have my hat.
 Which bread have you?
 I have your bread.
 Which soap have you?
 I have my soap.
 Which coat have you?
 I have your coat.

Qual cappello ha Ella?
 Ho il mio cappello.
 Che pane ha Ella?
 Ho il di Lei pane
 Qual sapone ha Ella?
 Ho il mio sapone.
 Che abito ha Ella?
 Ho il di Lei abito.

EXERCISE.

1.

Have you the bread?—Yes, Sir, I have the bread.—Have you your bread?—I have my bread.—Have you the salt?—I have the salt.—Have you my salt?—I have your salt.—Have you the soap?—Yes, Sir, I have the soap.—Have you your soap?—I have my soap.—Which soap have you?—I have your soap.—Have you the sugar?—I have the sugar.—Have you your sugar?—I have my sugar.—Which sugar have you?—I have your sugar.—Which boot have you?—I have my boot.—Have you my boot?—I have your boot.—Which bread have you?—I have my bread.—Which salt have you?—I have your salt.—Have you the looking-glass?—I have the looking-glass.—Which looking-glass have you?—I have my looking-glass.—Have you my looking-glass?—I have your looking-glass.—Have you the coat?—Yes, Sir, I have the coat.—Which coat have you?—I have my coat.—Have you my coat?—I have your coat.⁷

SECOND LESSON.

*Lezione Seconda.**It.*

Have you my hat?
 Yes, Sir, I have it.

Lo (sometimes il).

Ha Ella il mio cappello?
 Sì, Signore, l'ho.

⁷ Pupils desirous of making rapid progress may compose a great many phrases, in addition to those we have given them in the exercises; but they must pronounce them aloud, as they write them. They should also make separate lists of such substantives, adjectives, pronouns, and verbs, as they meet with in the course of the lessons, in order to be able to find those words more easily, when they require to refer to them in writing their lessons.

Good.	Buono. ¹
Bad.	Cattivo.
Pretty.	{ Vezzoso, leggiadro, vago, grazioso.
Handsome, fine, or beautiful.	Bello. ²
Ugly.	Brutto.
Old.	Vecchio.

The cloth.	Il panno.
The wood.	Il legno. ³
The thread.	Il refe.
The handkerchief.	Il fazzoletto, il moccichino.
The waistcoat.	Il giubbetto.
The cotton.	Il cotone.
The dog.	Il cane.
The horse.	Il cavallo.
Have you the fin	Ha Ella il bel cane?
Yes, Sir, I have it.	Sì, Signore, l' ho.

<i>Not.</i>	<i>Non.</i>
I have not.	Non ho.
I have not the bread.	Non ho il pane.
No, Sir.	No, Signore.
Have you my old hat?	Avete il mio vecchio cappello?
No, Sir, I have it not.	No, Signore, non l' ho.

Which dog have you?	Qual cane ha Ella?
I have my pretty dog.	Ho il mio grazioso cane.
Which handkerchief have you?	Qual fazzoletto ha Ella?
I have your pretty cotton handkerchief.	Ho il di Lei grazioso fazzoletto di cotone.

<i>Of.</i>	<i>Di.</i>
The cloth coat.	{ L' abito di panno.
	{ Il vestito di panno.

Obs. A. The preposition *di* (like *de* in French) is always put between the name of the thing and the name of the matter of which it is made, and this is in Italian always the last.

¹ Where two words happen to finish with the same vowel, we generally suppress, for the sake of euphony, that of the first word, as: *buon panno*, good cloth; *buon giorno*, good morning; instead of: *buono panno*, *buono giorno*. But the suppression does not take place when the second word begins with *s* followed by a consonant.

² Before a consonant (not before *s* followed by a consonant) *bel* is employed.

³ Wood for fuel is feminine, and is rendered by *la legna*.

The cotton handkerchief.	Il fazzoletto di cotone.
The gun.	Lo schioppo.
The leather.	Il cuoio.
The gold.	L' oro.
The lead.	Il piombo. ⁴
The iron.	Il ferro.
The candlestick.	Il candelliere.
The wooden gun.	Lo schioppo di legno.
The leaden horse.	Il cavallo di piombo.
The golden candlestick.	Il candelliere d' oro.

Obs. B. The preposition *di* loses its *i* before a vowel, as may be seen from the example above.

Which gun have you?	Che schioppo ha Ella?
I have the iron gun.	Ho lo schioppo di ferro.
Which candlestick have you?	Che candelliere ha Ella?
I have the fine golden candlestick.	Ho il bel candelliere d' oro.
Have you my fine wooden horse?	{ Ha Ella il mio bel cavallo di legno?
No, Sir, I have it not.	No, Signore, non l' ho.

EXERCISE.

2.

Have you my fine horse?—Yes, Sir, I have it.—Have you my old waistcoat?—No, Sir, I have it not.—Which dog have you?—I have your pretty dog.—Have you my ugly handkerchief?—No, Sir, I have it not.—Have you the good cloth?—Yes, Sir, I have it.—Have you my ugly gun?—No, Sir, I have it not.—Which gun have you?—I have your fine gun.—Which candlestick have you?—I have the golden candlestick.—Have you my golden candlestick?—I have not your golden candlestick.—Which boot have you?—I have the leathern boot.—Have you my wooden gun?—No, Sir, I have it not.—Have you the good bread?—I have not the good bread.—Which waistcoat have you?—I have my fine cotton waistcoat.—Which soap have you?—I have my old soap.—Which sugar have you?—I have your good sugar.—Which salt

⁴ It will not be amiss for those who are acquainted with the French and Latin languages to notice, that whenever the letter *l* is found in those languages after *b, f, p*, it is in Italian changed into *i*. Ex. :—

Lead,	French,	plomb;	Italian,	piombo.
Flower,	..	fleur,	..	fiore.
White,	..	{ blanc,	..	bianco.
		{ blanche,	..	bianca.
Full,	..	plein,	..	pieno.
Temple,	..	temple,	..	tempio.

have you?—I have the bad salt.—Which coat have you?—I have my old cloth coat.—Have you my ugly wooden candlestick?—No, Sir, I have it not.—Have you my leaden gun?—No, Sir, I have it not.—Have you my pretty coat?—No, Sir, I have it not.—Which horse have you?—I have your iron horse.—Have you my fine hat?—No, Sir, I have it not.

THIRD LESSON.

Lezione Terza.

<i>Something, any thing.</i>	{ <i>Qualche cosa.</i> <i>Alcuna cosa.</i>
Have you any thing?	{ Ha Ella qualche cosa? Ha Ella alcuna cosa?
I have something.	{ Ho qualche cosa. Ho alcuna cosa.
<i>Nothing or not any thing.</i>	{ <i>Non—niente.</i> <i>Non—nulla (cosa).</i> Or simply: <i>Nulla</i> (before the verb).
<i>Nothing, not any thing.</i>	{ Non ho niente. Non ho nulla. Nulla ho.
I have nothing.	

Obs. A. Nulla may simply be used for *nothing, not any thing*; but then it stands before the verb.

The wine.	Il vino.
My money (cash).	Il mio denaro (<i>or</i> danaro).
The silver (metal).	L' argento.
Of silver.	D' argento.
The silver candlestick.	Il candelliere d' argento.
The string.	Il cordone.
The ribbon, the tape.	Il nastro.
The golden ribbon.	Il nastro d' oro.
The button.	Il bottone.
The coffee.	Il caffè.
The cheese.	{ Il cacio. Il formaggio.
Are you hungry?	{ + Ha Ella fame? + Avete fame?
I am hungry.	+ Ho fame.
I am not hungry.	+ Non ho fame.

Are you thirsty?

I am thirsty.

I am not thirsty.

Are you sleepy?

I am sleepy.

I am not sleepy.

{ + Ha Ella sete?
 { + Avete sete?
 + Ho sete.
 + Non ho sete.
 { + Ha Ella sonno?
 { + Avete sonno?
 + Ho sonno.
 + Non ho sonno.

Something, or any thing good.

Have you any thing good?

Nothing, or not any thing bad.

Nothing, or not any thing bad.

I have nothing good.

Qualche cosa di buono.
 { Ha Ella } qualche cosa di buo-
 { Avete } no?
 { Non—niente di cattivo.
 { Non—nulla di cattivo.
 Or simply:
Nulla di cattivo (before the
 verb).
 { Non ho niente di buono.
 { Non ho nulla di buono.
 { Nulla ho di buono.

Obs. B. Qualche cosa, non—niente, non—nulla, niente or nulla, require di when they are before an adjective.

Have you any thing pretty?

I have nothing pretty.

{ Ha Ella } qualche cosa di vago?
 { Avete }
 { Non ho niente di vago.
 { Nulla ho di leggiadro.

What?

What have you?

What have you good?

I have the good coffee.

Are you afraid?

I am afraid.

I am not afraid.

{ Che?
 { Che cosa?
 { Cosa?
 { Che ha Ella?
 { Che cosa ha Ella?
 { Cosa ha Ella?¹
 Che ha Ella di buono?
 Ho il buon caffè.
 { + Ha Ella paura?
 { + Avete paura?
 + Ho paura.
 + Non ho paura.

¹ The third expression is the least correct, and used only in conversation.

Are you warm ?

I am warm.

I am not warm.

Are you cold ?

I am not cold.

{	Ha Ella caldo ?
	Avete caldo ?
	† Ho caldo.
	† Non ho caldo.
	† Ha Ella freddo ?
†	Non ho freddo.

EXERCISE.

3.

Have you my good wine?—I have it.—Have you the good gold?—I have it not.—Have you the money?—I have it.—Have you the gold ribbon?—No, Sir, I have it not.—Have you your silver candlestick?—Yes, Sir, I have it.—What have you?—I have the good cheese.—I have my cloth coat.—Have you my silver button?—I have it not.—Which button have you?—I have your beautiful gold button.—Which string have you?—I have the gold string.—Have you any thing?—I have something.—What have you?—I have the good bread. I have the good sugar.—Have you any thing good?—I have nothing good.—Have you any thing handsome?—I have nothing handsome. I have something ugly.—What have you ugly?—I have the ugly dog.—Have you any thing pretty?—I have nothing pretty. I have something old.—What have you old?—I have the old cheese.—Are you hungry?—I am hungry.—Are you thirsty?—I am not thirsty.—Are you sleepy?—I am not sleepy.—What have you beautiful?—I have your beautiful dog.—What have you bad?—I have nothing bad.—Are you afraid?—I am not afraid.—Are you cold?—I am cold.—Are you warm?—I am not warm.—Which thread have you?—I have your good thread.—Have you the fine horse?—No, Sir, I have it not.—Which boot have you?—I have my old leathern boot.—Which handkerchief have you?—I have your fine cotton handkerchief.—Which waistcoat have you?—I have my pretty cloth waistcoat.—Which gun have you?—I have your fine silver gun.—Have you any thing pretty?—I have nothing pretty.—Have you any thing?—I have nothing.

FOURTH LESSON.

Lezione Quarta.

That.

{	Quel.
	Quello.
	Quell'.

Obs. *Quel* is used before a consonant, *quello* before *s* followed by a consonant, and *quell'* before a vowel. Ex:—

That book.	Quel libro.
That looking-glass.	Quello specchio.
That coat.	Quell' abito.

Of the.

Of the dog.
Of the boot.
Of the coat.
Of the man.

Del (genitive before a consonant).
Dello (— before *s*, followed by a consonant).
Dell' (— before a vowel).
Del cane.
Dello stivale.
Dell' abito.
Dell' uomo.

Of the tailor.
Of the baker.
Of the neighbour.

Del sartore.
Del fornaio.
Del vicino.

That or the one.

The neighbour's, or that of the neighbour.

The baker's, or that of the baker.

The man's, or that of the man.

Or.

Have you my book or the neighbour's?

I have the neighbour's.

Quello.

Quello del vicino.

Quello del fornaio.

Quello dell' uomo.

O.

{ Ha Ella } il mio libro, o quello
{ Avete } del vicino?
Ho quello del vicino.

Have you my bread or that of the baker?

I have yours.

I have not the baker's.

{ Ha Ella } il mio pane, o quello
{ Avete } del fornaio?
Ho il di Lei. Ho il vostro. Ho il suo.
Non ho quello del fornaio.

Mine or my own. { *Nominative.* } Il mio.
 { *Accusative.* }

Of mine *Genitive.* Del mio.
From mine. *Ablative.* Dal mio.

Yours. { *Nom.* } Il vostro. Il suo. Il di Lei.
 { *Acc.* }
Of yours. *Gen.* Del vostro. Del suo. Del di Lei.
From yours. *Abl.* Dal vostro. Dal suo. Dal di Lei.

The friend.
Of the friend.
That of the friend.

L' amico.
Dell' amico.
Quello dell' amico.

The stick.	Il bastone.
The thimble.	Il ditale.
The coal.	Il carbone.
My brother.	Mio fratello.

Rule. There is no article before the possessive pronoun in the singular, when it is immediately followed by a noun of quality or kindred.

My dear brother.	Il mio caro fratello.
My brother's, or that of my brother.	Quello di mio fratello.
Your friend's, or that of your friend.	Quello del vostro (di Lei) amico.

EXERCISES.

4.

Have you that book?—No, Sir, I have not.—Which book have you?—I have that of the neighbour.—Have you my stick, or that of my friend?—I have that of your friend.—Have you my bread or the baker's?—I have the baker's. I have not yours.—Have you the neighbour's horse?—No, Sir, I have it not.—Which horse have you?—I have that of the baker.—Have you your thimble or the tailor's?—I have my own.—Have you the pretty gold string of my dog?—I have it not.—Which string have you?—I have my silver string.—Have you my gold button or the tailor's?—I have not yours; I have the tailor's.—Have you my brother's coat or yours?—I have your brother's.—Which coffee have you?—I have the neighbour's.—Have you your dog or the man's?—I have the man's.—Have you your friend's money?—I have it not.—Are you cold? I am cold.—Are you afraid?—I am not afraid.—Are you warm?—I am not warm.—Are you sleepy?—I am not sleepy; I am hungry.—Are you thirsty?—I am not thirsty.

5.

Have you my coat or the tailor's?—I have the tailor's.—Have you my gold candlestick or that of the neighbour?—I have yours.—Have you your coal or mine?—I have mine.—Have you your cheese or the baker's?—I have my own.—Which cloth have you?—I have that of the tailor.—Which boot have you?—I have my own.—Have you the old wood of my brother?—I have it not.—Which soap have you?—I have my brother's good soap.—Have you my wooden gun, or that of my brother?—I have yours.—Which waistcoat have you?—I have my friend's cloth waistcoat.—Have you your leathern boot or mine?—I have not yours; I have my own.—What have you?—I have nothing.—Have you any thing good?—I have nothing good.—Have you any thing old?—I have nothing old.—What have you pretty?—I have my friend's pretty dog.—Have you my handsome or my ugly stick?—I have your ugly stick.—Are you hungry or thirsty?

FIFTH LESSON.

Lezione Quinta.

The merchant.	Il mercante.
Of the shoemaker.	Del calzolaio.
The boy.	Il ragazzo.
The knife.	Il coltello.
The spoon.	Il cucchiaino.

Have you the merchant's stick or yours? Avete il bastone del mercante o il vostro?

Neither.

Non—nè.

Nor.

Nè.

I have neither the merchant's stick nor mine. Non ho il bastone del mercante nè il mio.

Are you hungry or thirsty?

† Avete fame o sete?

I am neither hungry nor thirsty.

† Non ho nè fame nè sete.

Are you warm or cold?

† Avete caldo o freddo?

I am neither warm nor cold.

† Non ho nè caldo nè freddo.

Have you the wine or the bread?

Avete il vino o il pane?

I have neither the wine nor the bread.

Non ho il vino nè il pane.

I have neither yours nor mine.

Non ho nè il vostro nè il mio.

I have neither my thread nor the tailor's.

Non ho il mio refe nè quello del sartore.

The cork.	Il turacciolo.
The corkscrew.	Il tiraturaccioli.
The umbrella.	L' ombrello.
The honey.	Il miele.
The nail.	Il chiodo.
The iron nail.	Il chiodo di ferro.
The hammer.	Il martello.
The carpenter.	Il legnaiuolo.
The Frenchman.	Il Francese.

What have you?

or,

What is the matter with you?

{ Che cosa avete?
Cosa avete?
Che avete?

Nothing.

I have nothing, or
Nothing is the matter with me.
Is any thing the matter with you?
Nothing is the matter with me.

{	<i>Non—niente (niente).</i>
	<i>Non—nulla (nulla).</i>
	+ Non ho niente.
	+ Non ho nulla.
	+ Avete qualche cosa?
{	+ Non ho niente.
	Non ho nulla (nulla ho).

EXERCISES.

6.

I am neither hungry nor thirsty.—Have you my boot or the shoemaker's?—I have neither yours nor the shoemaker's.—Have you your knife or the boy's?—I have neither mine nor the boy's.—Which knife have you?—I have that of the merchant.—Have you my spoon or the merchant's?—I have neither yours nor the merchant's; I have my own.—Have you the honey or the wine?—I have neither the honey nor the wine.—Have you your thimble or the tailor's?—I have neither mine nor the tailor's.—Have you your corkscrew or mine?—I have neither yours nor mine; I have the merchant's.—Which cork have you?—I have the neighbour's.—Have you the iron or the silver nail?—I have neither the iron nor the silver nail; I have the golden nail.—Are you warm or cold?—I am neither warm nor cold; I am sleepy.—Are you afraid?—I am not afraid.—Have you my hammer or the carpenter's?—I have neither yours nor the carpenter's.—Which nail have you?—I have the iron nail.—Which hammer have you?—I have the wooden hammer of the carpenter.—Have you any thing?—I have something.—What have you?—I have something fine.—What have you fine?—I have the Frenchman's fine umbrella.—Have you the cotton or the thread tape?—I have neither the cotton nor the thread tape.

7.

Have you your gun or mine?—I have neither yours nor mine.—Which gun have you?—I have my friend's.—Have you my cotton handkerchief or that of my brother?—I have neither yours nor your brother's.—Which string have you?—I have my neighbour's thread string.—Have you the book of the Frenchman or that of the merchant?—I have neither the Frenchman's nor the merchant's.—Which book have you?—I have my own.—What is the matter with you?—Nothing.—Is any thing the matter with you?—Nothing is the matter with me.—Are you cold?—I am not cold; I am warm.—Have you the cloth or the cotton?—I have neither the cloth nor the cotton.—Have you any thing good or bad?—I have nothing good or bad.—What have you?—I have nothing.

SIXTH LESSON.

Lezione Sesta.

The beef, the ox.
The biscuit.
Of the captain.
Of the cook.

Il manzo, il bue.
Il biscotto.
Del capitano.
Del cuoco.

Have I?
You have.
You have not.
Am I hungry?
You are hungry.
You are not hungry.
Am I afraid?
You are afraid.
You are not afraid.
Am I ashamed?
You are not ashamed.
Are you ashamed?
I am ashamed.
Am I wrong?
You are wrong.
You are not wrong.
Am I right?
You are right.
You are not right.

Ho?
Avete. Ella ha.
Non avete. Ella non ha.
† Ho fame?
† Avete fame. Ella ha fame.
† Non avete fame. Ella non ha fame.
† Ho paura?
† Avete paura. Ella ha paura.
† Non avete paura. Ella non ha paura.
† Ho vergogna?
† Non avete vergogna.
† Ella non ha vergogna.
† Ha Ella vergogna?
† Avete vergogna?
† Ho vergogna.
† Ho torto?
† Avete torto. Ella ha torto.
† Ella non ha torto.
† Non avete torto.
† Ho ragione?
† Ella ha ragione.
† Avete ragione.
† Ella non ha ragione.
† Non avete ragione.

Have I the nail?
You have it.
You have it not.

Ho il chiodo?
L' avete. Ella lo ha (*or l' ha*).
Non l' avete. Ella non lo ha (*or non l' ha*).

Have I any thing good?	Ho io qualche cosa di buono?
You have nothing good.	{ Ella non ha } niente (nulla) di
	{ Non avete } buono.
You have neither any thing good nor bad.	{ Ella non ha } niente di buono
	{ Non avete } nè di cattivo.

What have I?	{ Che ho?
	{ Che cosa ho?
Have I the carpenter's hammer?	Ho io il martello del legnaiuolo?
You have it not.	Voi non l'avete. Non l'ha.
Have you it?	L'avete voi? Lo ha Ella?
I have it not.	Non l'ho.
Have I it?	L'ho io?

The butter.	Il burro, il butirro.
The mutton.	Il castrato (montone).
The milk.	Il latte.
The penknife.	Il temperino.

<i>Which one?</i>	<i>Quale?</i>
That of the captain, or the captain's.	Quello del capitano.
That of the cook, or the cook's.	Quello del cuoco.
The fine one.	Il bello.
The ugly one.	Il brutto.

Am I right or wrong?	+ Ho io ragione o torto?
You are neither right nor wrong.	{ + Ella non ha nè ragione nè torto.
	{ + Non avete nè ragione nè torto.
You are neither hungry nor thirsty.	{ + Ella non ha nè fame nè sete.
	{ + Non avete nè fame nè sete.
You are neither afraid nor ashamed.	{ + Ella non ha nè paura nè vergogna.
	{ + Voi non avete nè paura nè vergogna.

Have I your butter or mine?	Ho il vostro butirro o il mio?
You have neither yours nor mine.	{ Ella non ha nè il di Lei nè il mio.
	{ Non avete nè il vostro nè il mio.

EXERCISES.

8.

I have neither the baker's dog nor that of my friend.—Are you

ashamed?—I am not ashamed.—Are you afraid or ashamed.—I am neither afraid nor ashamed.—Have you my knife?—Which?—The fine one.—Have you my beef or the cook's?—I have neither yours nor the cook's.—Which have you?—I have that of the captain.—Have I your biscuit?—You have it not.—Am I hungry or thirsty?—You are neither hungry nor thirsty.—Am I warm or cold?—You are neither warm nor cold.—Am I afraid?—You are not afraid. You are neither afraid nor ashamed.—Have I any thing good?—You have nothing good.—What have I?—You have nothing.—Which penknife have I?—You have that of the Frenchman.—Have I your thimble or that of the tailor?—You have neither mine nor that of the tailor.—Which one have I?—You have your friend's.—Which umbrella have I?—You have mine.—Have I the baker's good bread?—You have it not.—Which money have I?—You have your own.—Have you my iron gun?—I have it not.—Have I it?—You have it.—Have I your mutton or the cook's?—You have neither mine nor the cook's.—Have I your knife?—You have it not.—Have you it?—I have it.—Which biscuit have I?—You have that of the captain.—Which cloth have I?—You have the merchant's.—Have you my coffee or that of my boy?—I have that of your good boy.—Have you your cork or mine?—I have neither yours nor mine.—What have you?—I have my brother's good candlestick.

9.

Am I right?—You are right.—Am I wrong?—You are not wrong.—Am I right or wrong?—You are neither right nor wrong.—You are afraid.—You are not sleepy.—You are neither warm nor cold.—Have I the good coffee or the good sugar?—You have neither the good coffee nor the good sugar.—Have I any thing good or bad?—You have nothing good or bad.—What have I?—You have nothing.—What have I pretty?—You have my friend's pretty dog.—Which butter have I?—You have that of your cook.—Have I your corkscrew or the merchant's?—You have neither mine nor the merchant's.—Which milk have you?—I have that of the Frenchman.—Which penknife have you?—I have the silver penknife of my neighbour.—Which have I?—You have that of the old baker.—Which have you?—I have that of my old tailor.—What is the matter with you?—I am afraid.—Have I any thing?—You have nothing.

SEVENTH LESSON.

*Lezione Settima.**Who?*

Who has?
 Who has the knife?
 The man has the knife.
 The man has not the knife.
 Who has it?
 The boy has it.
 The boy has it not.

Chi?

Chi ha?
 Chi ha il coltello?
 L' uomo ha il coltello.
 L' uomo non ha il coltello.
 Chi lo ha?
 Lo ha il ragazzo.
 Il ragazzo non l' ha.

The chicken.
 The chest, the trunk.
 The bag, the sack.
 The ship.
 The young man.
 The youth.

Il pollastro (il pollo).
 Il baule (il forziere).
 Il sacco (la sacchetta).
 Il bastimento.
 Il giovane (il giovine).
 L' adolescente (il giovinetto).

He.

Egli (for persons).
Esso (for persons and for things).
Ei or *e'* (also for persons).

Obs. A. *Egli* is used for persons, *esso* for persons and for things, and *ei* or *e'* for persons, but not generally before a vowel or before *s* followed by a consonant.

He has.
 He has the chest.
 He has not the chest.
 He has it.
 He has it not.

Egli ha (esso ha, egli à¹).
Egli ha il baule.
Ei (e') non ha il baule.
Egli (esso) l'ha.
Ei (e') l'ha.
Ei (e') non l' ha.

¹ The letter *h* is never pronounced in Italian. What proves this is, that it may be entirely omitted, and a grave accent be put in its stead on the three first persons singular and third person plural of the verb *avere*, to have; and instead of *ho*, I have; *hai*, thou hast; *ha*, he (she) has; *hanno*, they have, we may write: *ò*, *ài*, *à*, *anno*. This kind of orthography has been followed by *Metastasio*, but is not generally approved.

Has he?	{ Ha egli?
	{ Ha esso?
	{ Ha?
Has he the knife?	Ha egli il coltello?
Has the man?	Ha l' uomo?
Has the friend?	Ha l' amico?
Has the baker?	Ha il fornaio?
Has the young man?	Ha il giovane?

The Englishman. | L' Inglese.

Is the man hungry?	† Ha fame l' uomo?
He is hungry.	† Ha fame.
He is not hungry.	† Non ha fame.
He is neither hungry nor thirsty.	† Non ha nè fame nè sete.
Is your brother warm or cold?	† Ha caldo o freddo il di Lei fratello?
Is the man afraid or ashamed?	† Ha paura o vergogna l' uomo?
Is the man right or wrong?	† Ha ragione o torto l' uomo?
Has the boy the hammer of the carpenter?	Ha il ragazzo il martello del legnaiuolo?
He has it.	L' ha.
He has it not.	Non l' ha.
Has the baker it?	L' ha il fornaio?
What has my friend?	Che ha il mio amico?

The rice.	Il riso.
The countryman, the peasant.	Il contadino, il paesano, il rustico.
The servant.	Il servitore, il servo, il domestico.

His <i>or</i> her penknife.	Il suo temperino.
His <i>or</i> her dog.	Il suo cane.
The bird.	L' uccello.
His <i>or</i> her foot.	Il suo piede (piè).
His <i>or</i> her eye.	Il suo occhio.
His money.	Il suo denaro.
The tea.	Il tè.

<i>His, her, hers.</i>	<i>Il suo.</i>
Has the servant his trunk or mine?	Ha il servitore il suo forziere o il mio?
He has his own.	Ha il suo (ha il suo proprio).

Somebody or any body,
some one or any one (in-
definite pronouns).

Has any body my book?

Somebody has it.

Who has my stick?

No one, nobody, not any body.

Nobody has your stick.

Nobody has it.

Qualcheduno, qualcuno, or
alcuno.

Ha qualcuno il mio libro?

Qualcheduno l' ha.

Chi ha il mio bastone?

Nessuno, niuno, veruno.

Nessuno ha il vostro bastone.

Nessuno l' ha.

Niuno l' ha.

Veruno l' ha.

Obs. B. In using *alcuno* for *no one, nobody, not any body*, it must always be accompanied by *non*; but *nessuno, niuno, and veruno*, require *non* only when they follow the verb.

Who has your gun?

Nobody has it.

Chi ha il di Lei schioppo?

Alcuno non l' ha.

Non l' ha nessuno.

Non l' ha niuno.

Non l' ha veruno.

Non l' ha alcuno.

Nessuno l' ha.

EXERCISES.

10.

Who has my trunk?—The boy has it.—Is he thirsty or hungry?—He is neither thirsty nor hungry.—Has the man the chicken?—He has it.—Who has my waistcoat?—The young man has it.—Has the young man my ship?—The young man has it not.—Who has it?—The captain has it.—What has the youth?—He has the fine chicken.—Has he the knife?—He has it not.—Is he afraid?—He is not afraid.—Is he afraid or ashamed?—He is neither afraid nor ashamed.—Is the man right or wrong?—He is neither right nor wrong.—Is he warm or cold?—He is neither warm nor cold.—Who has the countryman's rice?—My servant has it.—Has your servant my penknife or his?—He has neither yours nor his.—Which penknife has he?—He has that of his neighbour.—Who has my old boot?—Your shoemaker has it.—What has your friend?—He has his good money.—Has he my gold?—He has it not.—Who has it?—The baker has it.—Has the baker my bird or his?—He has his.—Who has mine?—The carpenter has it.—Who is cold?—Nobody is cold.—Is any body warm?—Nobody is warm.—Has any body my chicken?—Nobody has it.—Has your servant your waistcoat or mine?—He has neither yours nor mine.—Which has he?—He has his own.

11.

Has any one my gun?—No one has it.—Has the youth my book?—He has it not.—What has he?—He has nothing.—Has he the hammer or the nail?—He has neither the hammer nor the nail.—Has he my umbrella or my stick?—He has neither your umbrella nor your stick.—Has he my coffee or my sugar?—He has neither your coffee nor your sugar; he has your honey.—Has the boy my brother's biscuit or that of the Frenchman?—He has neither that of your brother nor that of the Frenchman; he has his own.—Have I your bag or that of your friend?—You have neither mine nor my friend's; you have your own.—Who has the peasant's bag?—The good baker has it.—Who is afraid?—The tailor's boy is afraid.—Is he sleepy?—He is not sleepy.—Is he cold or hungry?—He is neither cold nor hungry.—What is the matter with him?—Nothing.—Has the peasant my money?—He has it not.—Has the captain (got) it?—He has it not.—Who has it?—Nobody has it.—Has your neighbour any thing good?—He has nothing good.—What has he ugly?—He has nothing ugly.—Has he any thing?—He has nothing.

12.

Has the merchant my cloth or his?—He has neither yours nor his.—Which cloth has he?—He has that of my brother.—Which thimble has the tailor?—He has his own.—Has your brother his wine or the neighbour's?—He has neither his nor the neighbour's.—Which wine has he?—He has his own.—Has any body my gold ribbon?—Nobody has it?—Who has my silver string?—Your good boy has it.—Has he my wooden or my leaden horse?—He has neither your wooden nor your leaden horse; he has his friend's leathern horse.—Is any body wrong?—Nobody is wrong.—Who has the Frenchman's good honey?—The merchant has it.—Has he it?—Yes, Sir, he has it.—Are you afraid or ashamed?—I am neither afraid nor ashamed.—Has your cook his mutton?—He has it.—Have you my bread or my cheese?—I have neither your bread nor your cheese.—Have I your salt or your butter?—You have neither my salt nor my butter.—What have I?—You have your mutton.—Has any body my gold button?—No one has it.—Who has the tea?—Which?—Mine.—Your servant has it.—Which tea has the Englishman?—He has his own.

EIGHTH LESSON.

Lezione Ottava.

The sailor.	Il marinaio.
The tree.	L' albero.
His looking-glass.	Il suo specchio.
His mattress.	Il suo materasso.
The stranger (the foreigner).	Lo straniero.
The foreigner.	Il forestiero.
The garden.	Il giardino.
The glove.	Il guanto.

This or that ox.	Quel bue.
This or that hay.	Quel fieno.
This or that boot.	Quello stivale.

This or that friend.	Quell' amico.
This or that man.	Quell' uomo.
This or that ass.	Quell' asino.

<i>This book.</i>	<i>Questo libro (cotesto libro)</i>
<i>That book.</i>	<i>Quel libro.</i>

Have you this or that book?	Ha Ella questo libro o quello?
I have this one, I have not that one.	Ho questo, non ho quello.

DECLENSION OF THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

Questo (cotesto), quello.

MASCULINE SINGULAR.

<i>Nom.</i> }	Questo,	this.	Quello,	that.
<i>Acc.</i> }				
<i>Gen.</i>	Di questo,	of this.	Di quello,	of that.
<i>Dat.</i>	A questo,	to this.	A quello,	to that.
<i>Abi.</i>	Da questo,	from this.	Da quello,	from that.

Obs. A. Demonstrative pronouns are never preceded by an article, prepositions only, such as *di, a, da*, being the words employed before them.

*This.**That.**Questo (cotesto).**Quello.*

Obs. B. *Questo* designates the object near the person who speaks, *cotesto* the object distant from the person who speaks, and near the person spoken to; but *quello* designates at the same time the object distant from both the person who speaks and that spoken to.

Have I this or that?

You have this, you have not that.

Has the man this hat or that?

Ho io questo o quello?

Ella ha questo, non quello.

Ha l' uomo questo cappello o quello?

But.

He has not this, but that.

He has this, but not that.

Ma.

Non ha questo, ma quello.

Ha questo, ma non quello.

The note, the billet, or the ticket.

The granary.

The corn.

Il biglietto (viglietto).

Il granaio.

Il grano.

Have you this note or that?

I have not this, but that.

I have this, but not that.

Has the neighbour this looking-glass or that?

He has this, but not that.

Ha Ella questo biglietto o quello?

Non ho questo, ma ho quello.

Ho questo, ma non ho quello.

Ha il vicino questo specchio o quello?

Ha questo, ma non ha quello.

The horse-shoe.

Il ferro *da* cavallo.

Obs. C. The preposition *da* is made use of between two substantives, when the latter expresses the use of the former.

The wine-bottle.

The oil-bottle.

The milk-pot.

The bottle of wine.

The bottle of oil.

Il fiasco *da* vino.Il fiasco *da* olio.Il vaso *da* latte.

Il fiasco di vino.

La bottiglia d' olio.

That or *which* (relative pronoun).

Have you the note which my brother has?

I have not the note which your brother has.

{ *Che,*
Il quale.

Ha Ella il biglietto che ha mio fratello?

Non ho il biglietto che ha il di Lei fratello.

Have you the horse which I have?	Ha Ella il cavallo che ho io?
I have the horse which you have.	Ho il cavallo che ha V. S.

<i>That which, the one which.</i>	<i>il che, Quello che.</i>
I have not that which you have.	Non ho quello che Ella ha.
I have not that which he has.	Non ho quello ch' egli ha.
Have I the glove which you have?	Ho io il guanto che ha Vos- signoria?
You have not the one which I have.	Non avete quello che ho io.

EXERCISES.

13.

Which hay has the stranger?—He has that of the peasant.—Has the sailor my looking-glass?—He has it not.—Have you this glove or that?—I have this.—Have you the hay of my garden or that of yours?—I have neither that of your garden nor that of mine, but I have the stranger's.—Which glove have you?—I have the sailor's.—Have you his mattress?—I have it.—Which thread has the sailor?—He has his own.—Who has my good note?—This man has it.—Who has that gun?—Your friend has it.—Have you the corn of your granary or that of mine?—I have neither that of your granary nor of mine, but I have that of my merchant.—Who has my glove?—That servant has it.—What has your servant?—He has the tree of this garden.—Has he that man's book?—He has not the book of that man, but he has that of this boy.—Has the peasant this or that ox?—He has neither this nor that, but he has the one which his boy has.—Has this ass his hay or that of the horse?—He has neither his nor that of the horse.—Which horse has this peasant?—He has your neighbour's.—Have I your note or his?—You have neither mine nor his, but you have that of your friend.—Have you this horse's hay?—I have not his hay, but his shoe.—Has your brother my note or his?—He has neither yours nor his own, but he has the sailor's.—Has the foreigner my bird or his own?—He has that of the captain.—Have you the tree of this garden?—I have it not.—Are you hungry or thirsty?—I am neither hungry nor thirsty, but I am sleepy.

14.

Has the sailor this bird or that?—He has not this, but that.—Has your servant this stick or that?—He has this, but not that.—Has your cook this chicken or that?—He has neither this nor that, but he has that of his neighbour.—Am I right or wrong?—You are neither right nor wrong, but your good boy is wrong.—Have I this knife or that?—You have neither this nor that.—What have I?—

You have nothing good, but you have something bad.—Have you the chest which I have?—I have not that which you have.—Which horse have you?—I have the one which your brother has.—Have you the ass which my friend has?—I have not that which he has, but I have that which you have.—Has your friend the looking-glass which you have or that which I have?—He has neither that which you have nor that which I have, but he has his own.

15.

Which bag has the peasant?—He has the one which his boy has.—Have I your golden or your silver candlestick?—You have neither my golden nor my silver candlestick, but you have my iron candlestick.—Have you my waistcoat or that of the tailor?—I have neither yours nor the tailor's.—Which have you?—I have that which my friend has.—Are you cold or warm?—I am neither cold nor warm, but I am thirsty.—Is your friend afraid or ashamed?—He is neither afraid nor ashamed, but he is sleepy.—Who is wrong?—Your friend is wrong.—Has any one my umbrella?—No one has it.—Is any one ashamed?—No one is ashamed, but my friend is hungry.—Has the captain the ship which you have or that which I have?—He has neither that which you have nor that which I have.—Which has he?—He has that of his friend.—Is he right or wrong?—He is neither right nor wrong.—Has the Frenchman any thing good or bad?—He has nothing good or bad, but he has something pretty.—What has he pretty?—He has the pretty looking-glass.—Has he the good biscuit?—He has it not, but his neighbour has it.—Has the Englishman the wine-bottle?—He has the wine-bottle, but he has not the bottle of wine.—Which shoe (*il ferro*) has your baker?—He has that of the horse.—Has he my oil-bottle?—He has not your oil-bottle, but he has your milk-pot.

NINTH LESSON.

Lezione Nona.

DECLENSION OF THE DEFINITE ARTICLE MASCULINE IN THE PLURAL

(when the word begins with a consonant, except *s* followed by another consonant).

PLURAL.		PLURALE MASCOLINO.	
<i>Nom.</i>	the.	<i>Nom.</i>	I.
<i>Gen.</i>	of the.	<i>Gen.</i>	Dei or de'.
<i>Dat.</i>	to the.	<i>Dat.</i>	Ai or a'.
<i>Acc.</i>	the.	<i>Acc.</i>	I.
<i>Abl.</i>	from the.	<i>Abl.</i>	Dai or da'.

THE FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

Rule. Masculine nouns and adjectives, whatever may be their ending, change it in the plural into *i*. Ex.

The hats.	I cappelli.
The books.	I libri.
The good books.	I buoni libri.
Of the books.	Dei libri.
The sticks.	I bastoni.
Of the sticks.	Dei bastoni.
The thimbles.	I ditali.
The dogs.	I cani.
The brothers.	I fratelli.
The merchants.	I mercanti.
The horses.	I cavalli.
The neighbours.	I vicini.
The good neighbours.	I buoni vicini.
Of the neighbours.	Dei vicini.
The peasants.	I rustici.
The servants.	I domestici.

DECLENSION OF THE DEFINITE ARTICLE MASCULINE IN THE PLURAL

(when the word begins with *s* followed by a consonant, with *z*, or with a vowel).

PLURAL.		PLURALE MASCOLINO.	
<i>Nom.</i>	the.	<i>Nom.</i>	gli.
<i>Gen.</i>	of the.	<i>Gen.</i>	degli.
<i>Dat.</i>	to the.	<i>Dat.</i>	agli.
<i>Acc.</i>	the.	<i>Acc.</i>	gli.
<i>Abbl.</i>	from the.	<i>Abbl.</i>	dagli.

The guns.	Gli schioppi.
The boots.	Gli stivali.
The good boots.	I buoni stivali.
The friends.	Gli amici.
The umbrellas.	Gli ombrelli.
The coats.	Gli abiti.

Obs. A. When the word begins with *i*, an apostrophe is substituted in the article *gli* for the letter *i*, thus:—

<i>Nom.</i>	} the Englishmen.	<i>Nom.</i>	} Gl' Inglesi.
<i>Acc.</i>		<i>Acc.</i>	
<i>Gen.</i>	} Englishmen.	<i>Gen.</i>	Degl' Inglesi.
<i>Dat.</i>		<i>Dat.</i>	Agli' Inglesi.
<i>Abbl.</i>		<i>Abbl.</i>	Dagli' Inglesi.

FIRST EXCEPTION.—All nouns ending in the singular in *i*, monosyllables, and nouns having the accent on the last vowel, as also words ending in *ie*, do not change their termination in the plural. Ex.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Singulare.</i>	<i>Plurale.</i>
The king.	The kings.	Il re (rege).	I re (regi).
The foot.	The feet.	Il piè (piede).	I piè (piedi).
The tea.	Teas.	Il tè.	I tè.
The coffee.	Coffees.	Il caffè.	I caffè.
The bailiff.	The bailiffs.	Il podestà.	I podestà.

SECOND EXCEPTION.—Nouns ending in *co* and *go*, generally insert in the plural the letter *h*. Ex.

The cook.	The cooks.	Il cuoco.	I cuochi.
The bag.	The bags.	Il sacco.	I sacchi.
The inn.	The inns.	L' albergo.	Gli alberghi.
The dialogue.	The dialogues.	Il dialogo.	I dialoghi.
The German.	The Germans.	Il Tedesco.	I Tedeschi.
The Pole.	The Poles.	Il Polacco.	I Polacchi.
The fire.	The fires.	Il fuoco.	I fuochi.

THIRD EXCEPTION.—Nouns ending in *io*, preceded by a vowel, lose the letter *o* in the plural, and those in which *io* is preceded by a consonant, change in the plural *io* into *ii*.¹ Ex.

The baker.	The bakers.	Il fornaio.	I fornai.
The spoon.	The spoons.	Il cucchiaino.	I cucchiai.

The shoemaker.	The shoemakers.	Il calzolaio.	I calzolari.
The bookseller.	The booksellers.	Il libraio.	I librai.
The uncle.	The uncles.	Lo zio.	Gli zii.
The temple.	The temples.	Il tempio.	I templi.
The principle.	The principles.	Il principio.	I principii.

Obs. B. When, however, the final syllable *io* is preceded by *c*, *ch*, *g*, *gl*, it may in the plural be changed merely into *i*. Ex.

The looking-glass.	The looking-glasses.	Lo specchio.	Gli specchi.
The eye.	The eyes.	L' occhio.	Gli occhi.
The cheese.	The cheeses.	Il formaggio.	I formaggi.
The son.	The sons.	Il figlio.	I figli.

¹ Formerly these nouns took *j* in the plural, but the generality of modern authors have entirely rejected this letter from the alphabet. The reason is that it is pronounced like *i*, and whenever it occurs in the formation of the plural, two *i*'s are substituted for it.

NINTH LESSON.

FOURTH EXCEPTION.—The following few words form their plurals quite irregularly, viz.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Singulare.</i>	<i>Plurale.</i>
The man.	The men.	L' uomo.	Gli uomini.
God.	The gods.	Dio.	Gli ² Dei.
The ox.	The oxen.	Il bue.	I buoi.

Obs. C. There are some masculine nouns terminated in *o*, which in the plural take the feminine termination *a*, together with the feminine article,³ and others also in *o*, which in the plural take either the masculine article and termination, or the feminine we shall speak of them hereafter.⁴

My looking-glasses.	I miei specchi.
Your looking-glasses.	I vostri specchi.
Have you my small looking-glasses?	Ha Ella i miei piccoli ⁵ specchi
I have not your small looking-glasses, but I have your large looking-glasses.	Non ho i di Lei piccoli, ma i Lei grandi specchi.

Great, large.	Grande.
Little, small.	Piccolo.

Obs. D. *Grande*, great, loses the syllable *de* before a consonant (not before *s* followed by a consonant), and for the letter *e* before a vowel an apostrophe is substituted. Before a noun in the plural beginning with a vowel, *grandi* must be used.

The large hat.	Il gran cappello.
The large coat.	Il grand' abito.

² *Dio* is the only word in Italian beginning with a consonant other than *s* (followed by a consonant) or *z*, which in the plural take the article *gli* instead of *i*.

³ Nouns terminated in *a*, *i*, *u*, with a few exceptions (of which hereafter), and when they do not represent male individuals, or dignities, or professions belonging to male individuals, are feminine; all others are generally masculine.

⁴ The principal are:—

Il centinaio,	the hundred.	<i>Plur.</i> Le centinaia.
Il ciglio,	the eyelid.	Le ciglia.
Il migliaio,	the thousand.	Le migliaia.
Il miglio,	the mile.	Le miglia.
Il moggio,	a measure.	Le moggia.
Lo staio,	the bushel.	Le staia.
Il paio,	the pair.	Le paia.
L' uovo,	the egg.	Le uova.

⁵ There is in Italian that particularity, that the signification of nouns can be augmented or diminished by the addition of certain syllables called augmentatives and diminutives (of which hereafter see Lesson X.). But in the present instance we cannot make use of them, on account of the contradictory answer.

Mascolino.

My *or* mine.
Thy—thine.
His.
Our—ours.
Your—yours.
Their—theirs.

<i>Singulare.</i>	<i>Plurale.</i>
Il mio.	I miei.
Il tuo.	I tuoi.
Il suo.	I suoi. ⁶
Il nostro.	I nostri.
Il vostro.	I vostri.
Il loro.	I loro.

His books, looking-glasses, coats.	I suoi libri, specchi, abiti.
Our books, looking-glasses, coats.	I nostri libri, specchi, abiti.
Their books, looking-glasses, coats.	I loro libri, specchi, abiti.

Which books, looking-glasses, coats?	Quali (quai, qua', obs.) libri, specchi, abiti?
Which?	Quali (quai, qua')?

These <i>or</i> those books.	Quei (<i>or</i> que') libri.
These <i>or</i> those coats.	Quegli abiti.
These <i>or</i> those looking-glasses.	Quegli specchi.

Which books have you?	Quai libri avete (ha Ella)?
I have the fine books of your good neighbours.	Ho i bei libri dei vostri buoni vicini.
Have I his small boots?	Ho io i suoi piccoli stivali?
You have not his small boots, but you have his large boots.	Ella non ha i suoi piccoli stivali, ma ha i suoi stivali grandi.

Which looking-glasses have I?	Quali specchi ho io?
You have the pretty looking- glasses of your brothers.	Ella ha i leggiadri specchi dei di Lei fratelli.
Have you the large hammers of the carpenters?	Ha Ella i grandi martelli dei legnaiuoli?
I have not their large hammers, but their large nails.	Non ho i loro grandi martelli, ma ho i loro gran chiodi.
Has your brother my wooden guns?	Ha il di Lei fratello i miei schioppi di legno?
He has not your wooden guns.	Non ha i di Lei schioppi di legno.
Which has he?	Quali ha egli?

⁶ To avoid ambiguity, we say, in the third person, *di lui*, instead of *il suo*, *i suoi*. Ex.: Paul loves Peter and his children, *Paolo ama Pietro e i di lui figliuoli*, or *i figliuoli di lui*; for in using *i suoi* it might convey the meaning that Paul loves his own children.

Have you the Frenchmen's fine umbrellas?

I have not their fine umbrellas, but I have their fine sticks.

My oxen.

Their asses.

His horses.

Of my gardens.

Of your horses.

Have you the trees of my gardens?

I have not the trees of your gardens.

Of my agreeable gardens.

Of my fine horses.

I have not your cotton handkerchiefs, but I have your cloth coats.

The bread, the loaves, agreeable.

Ha Ella i begli ombrelli dei Francesi?

Non ho i loro begli ombrelli, ma ho i loro bei bastoni.

I miei buoi.

I loro asini.

I suoi cavalli.

Dei miei giardini.

Dei { di Lei } cavalli.
 { vostri }

Ha Ella gli alberi dei miei giardini?

Non ho gli alberi dei di Lei giardini.

Dei miei ameni giardini.

De' miei bei cavalli.

Non ho i vostri fazzoletti di cotone, ma ho i vostri abiti di panno.

Il pane, I pani, ameno.

EXERCISES.

16.

Have you the gloves?—Yes, Sir, I have the gloves.—Have you my gloves?—No, Sir, I have not your gloves.—Have I your looking-glasses?—You have my looking-glasses.—Have I your pretty handkerchiefs?—You have not my pretty handkerchiefs.—Which handkerchiefs have I?—You have the pretty handkerchiefs of your friends.—Has the foreigner our good penknives?—He has not our good penknives, but our good ships.—Who has our fine horses?—Nobody has your fine horses, but somebody has your fine oxen.—Has your neighbour the trees of your gardens?—He has not the trees of my gardens, but he has your pretty notes.—Have you the horses' hay?—I have not their hay, but their shoes (*i loro ferri*).—Has your tailor my fine golden buttons?—He has not your fine golden buttons, but your fine golden threads (*fil*).—What has the sailor?—He has his fine ships.—Has he my sticks or my guns?—He has neither your sticks nor your guns.—Who has the tailor's good waistcoats?—Nobody has his waistcoats, but somebody has his silver buttons.—Has the Frenchman's boy my good umbrellas?—He has not your good umbrellas, but your good knives.—Has the shoemaker my leathern boots?—He has your leathern boots.—What has the captain?—He has his good sailors.—What has our bookseller?—He has his good books.—Which books have you?—I have the fine books of our booksellers.

17.

Which mattresses has the sailor?—He has the good mattresses

The hat .. the large ugly hat.	Il cappello .. il cappellaccio.
The table .. the large ugly table.	La tavola .. la tavolaccia.
The house .. the ugly house.	La casa .. la casaccia.

Obs. B. Nouns terminated in *ame* denote plenty or abundance, as : *Gentame*, abundance of people ; *ossame*, abundance of bones.

Obs. There are nouns in all these terminations, without being augmentatives. Ex. *Il bastone*, the stick ; *lo stame*, the carded wool ; *il laccio*, the noose ; *la faccia*, the face.

OF DIMINUTIVES.

There are also two sorts of diminutives, viz.

1. Of kindness and flattery in : *ino*, *etto*, *ello*, for the masculine, and *ina*, *etta*, *ella*, for the feminine. Ex.

From *povero*, poor, are derived :

A poor little man.	Poverino, poveretto, poverello.
A poor little woman.	Poverina, poveretta, poverella.

2. Of compassion in : *uccio*, *uzzo*, *icciuolo*, for the masculine, and in : *uccia*, *uzza*, *icciola*, for the feminine. Ex.

From *l' uomo*, the man, are formed :

The poor little man.	L' omuccio, l' omuzzo, l' omicciuolo.
----------------------	---------------------------------------

Obs. C. The diminutives convey no bad meaning, like the augmentatives ; and to express a little old man, you may use indifferently : *vecchietto*, *vecchino*, *vecchietto*, *vecchierello*, *vecchierellino*, *vecchiuzzo*. From *la casa*, you may form : *la casina*, *la casetta*, *la casuzza*, *la casuccia*, *la casucciola*, to express the small house.

Obs. D. The diminutives in *ino* and *ina*, express something tender, flattering, and cajoling. Ex. The pretty little prince, *il principino* (from *principe*) ; the pretty little princess, *la principessina* (from *principessa*) ; the little table, *il tavolino* (from *tavola*) ; the pretty small house, *il casino* (from *casa*) ; the little chamber, *il camerino* (from *camera*) ; the little cap, *il berrettino* (from *berretta*) ; the pretty little dog, *il cagnolino* (from *cane*).

Obs. E. These examples show that many feminine nouns in *a* form their diminutives in *ino*, which termination is masculine.

<i>Those.</i>	{ <i>Quelli</i> , <i>Quei</i> or <i>que</i> '.
Have you my books or those of the man ?	Ha Ella i miei libri, o quei (que') dell' uomo ?
I have not yours ; I have those of the man.	Non ho i di Lei, ho quelli dell' uomo.

<i>Those which.</i>	{ <i>Quelli che</i> . <i>Quei</i> (or <i>que</i> ') <i>che</i> .
---------------------	---

Have you the books which I have?	{ Ha Ella i libri che ho io ? Avete i libri che ho io ?
I have those which you have.	{ Ho quei che Ella ha. Ho quei che avete voi. Ho quelli che ha Ella.
Has the Englishman the knives which you have, or those which I have?	Ha l' Inglese i coltelli che avete voi, o quelli che ho io ?
He has neither those which you have, nor those which I have.	Non ha nè quelli che avete voi, nè quelli che ho io.
Which knives has he?	Quali coltelli ha egli ?
He has his own.	Ha i suoi.

These books.	Questi libri.
Those books.	Quei (que') libri.
Those coats.	Quegli abiti.
Those looking-glasses.	Quegli specchi.

Have you these or those books?	Avete questi libri, o quelli ?
<i>These</i> (Plur. of <i>this one</i>).	<i>Questi</i> .
<i>Those</i> (Plur. of <i>that one</i>).	<i>Quelli</i> (<i>quegli</i>).

Have I these or those?	Ho questi, o quelli ?
You have these, you have not those.	Avete questi, non avete quelli.

Have I the looking-glasses of the French, or those of the English?	Ho io gli specchi dei Francesi, o quelli degl' Inglesi ?
You have neither the former nor the latter.	Non avete nè questi, nè quelli.

Obs. F. In Italian, as in French, *the former and the latter, the one and the other*, are expressed in an inverted order; *questo*, *questi*, referring to the latter, and *quello*, *quelli*, to the former.

Has the man these or those sticks?	Ha l'uomo questi bastoni, o quelli ?
He has these, but not those.	Ha questi, ma non ha quelli.
Have you your guns or mine ?	Ha Ella i di Lei schioppi, o i miei ?
I have neither yours nor mine, but those of our good friends.	Non ho nè i di Lei, nè i miei, ma ho quelli dei nostri buoni amici.

One .. one book.	Uno .. Un libro.
Good .. good bread.	Buono .. Buon pane.
Fine .. fine horse.	Bello .. Bel cavallo.
Great .. great courage.	Grande .. Gran coraggio.
Saint .. Saint Peter.	Santo .. San Pietro.
That .. that dog.	Quello .. Quel cane.

Obs. G. These adjectives lose, the two first their last vowel, the

others their last syllable, in the singular, when they precede a word beginning with a consonant (not *s* followed by a consonant).

But when they precede a word beginning with a vowel, all lose their last vowel. Ex.

The fine tree.		Il bell' albero.
The large tree.		Il grand' albero.

Obs. H. This suppression of a letter or a syllable never takes place before a feminine noun or before a masculine noun in the plural, except with respect to the word *grande*, for we say :

Large books.		Gran libri.
--------------	--	-------------

But we must say :

Great man.		Grand' uomo.
Great men.		Grandi uomini.

Obs. I. The word *bello* may be used in the plural as follows :

Fine.		<i>Plur.</i> {	Belli.
			Bei or be'.
			Begli (before <i>s</i> followed by a consonant, and before a vowel).

EXERCISES.

18.

Have you these or those notes?—I have neither these nor those.—Have you the horses of the French or those of the English?—I have those of the English, but I have not those of the French.—Which oxen have you?—I have those of the foreigners.—Have you the chests which I have?—I have not those which you have, but those which your brother has.—Has your brother your biscuits or mine?—He has neither yours nor mine.—Which biscuits has he?—He has his own.—Which horses has your friend?—He has those which I have.—Has your friend my books or his?—He has neither yours nor his, but he has those of the captain.—Have I your waistcoats, or those of the tailors?—You have neither these nor those.—Have I your asses?—You have not ours, but those of our neighbours.—Have you the birds of the sailors?—I have not their birds, but their fine sticks.—Which glasses (*il bicchiere*) has your boy?—He has mine.—Have I my boots or those of the shoemakers?—You have not yours, but theirs.

19.

Which milk has the man?—He has ours.—Has he our coffee?—He has it not.—Have you our coats or those of the strangers?—I have not yours, but theirs.—Has your carpenter our hammers or those of our friends?—He has neither ours nor those of our friends.—Which nails has he?—He has his good iron nails.—Has any one the ships of the English?—No one has those

of the English, but some one has those of the French.—Who has the cook's chickens?—Nobody has his chickens, but somebody has his butter.—Who has his cheese?—His boy has it.—Who has my old gun?—The sailor has it.—Have I the peasant's bag?—You have not his bag, but his corn.—Which guns has the Englishman?—He has those which you have.—Which umbrellas has the Frenchman?—He has those which his friend has.—Has he our books?—He has not ours, but those which his neighbour has.—Is the merchant's boy hungry?—He is not hungry, but thirsty.—Is your friend cold or warm?—He is neither cold nor warm.—Is he afraid?—He is not afraid, but ashamed.—Has the young man the birds of our servants?—He has not their birds, but their soap.—Which penknives has he?—He has those of his old merchants.—Have you any thing good or bad?—I have neither any thing good nor bad, but something fine.—What have you fine?—I have our cook's fine beef.—Have you not their fine mutton?—No, Sir, I have it not.

ELEVENTH LESSON.

Lezione Undecima.

The comb.	Il pettine.
The small comb.	{ Il pettinino.
The glass.	{ Il piccolo pettine.
Have you my small combs?	{ Il bicchiere.
	Ha Ella i miei piccoli pettini (pettinetti)?
The nose.	Il naso.
The wood or forest.	Il bosco : <i>plur.</i> i boschi.
The work.	{ Il lavoro.
The jewel.	{ Il travaglio.
	Il gioiello.
<i>Them.</i>	<i>Li, gli.</i>
Has he my fine glasses?	Ha esso i miei bei bicchieri?
He has them.	{ Li ha.
Have I them?	{ Esso li ha.
You have them.	{ Li ho io?
	{ Ella li ha.
	{ Li avete.
You have them not.	{ Ella non li ha.
	{ Non li avete.
Has the man my fine jewels?	Ha l' uomo i miei bei gioielli?
He has them not.	Non li ha.
Has the boy (got) them?	Li ha il ragazzo?
The men have them.	Gli uomini li hanno.
Have the men (got) them?	Li hanno gli uomini?

They.

- They have them.
 They have them not.
 Who has them?

Eglino, essi (ei, e').

- Eglino li hanno.
 Essi non li hanno.
 Chi li ha?

The German, the Germans.
 The Turk, the Turks.
 The Italian, the Italians.
 The Spaniard, the Spaniards.
 The Russian, the Russians.
 The American, the Americans.

Il Tedesco, i Tedeschi.
 Il Turco, i Turchi.
 L'Italiano, gl' Italiani.
 Lo Spagnuolo, gli Spagnuoli.
 Il Russo, i Russi.
 L'Americano, gli Americani.

The clothes.

{ I vestiti.
 { Gli abiti.

*Some or any.*¹

Some or any wine.
 Some or any bread.
 Some or any butter.
 Some or any sugar.
 Some or any money.
 Some or any books.
 Some or any buttons.

{ SING. *Del, dello, dell'.*
 { PLUR. *Dei, degli, degl'.*
 Del vino.
 Del pane.
 Del butirro.
 Dello zucchero.
 Del denaro.
 Dei libri.
 Dei bottoni.

Some or any gold.
 Some or any silver (metal).

Dell' oro.
 Dell' argento.

Some or any men.
 Some or any friends.
 Some or any coats.

Degli uomini.
 Degli amici.
 Degli abiti.

Have you any wine?
 I have some wine.
 Has this man any cloth?
 He has some cloth.

Avete del vino?
 Ho del vino.
 Ha del panno quell' uomo? .
 Ha del panno.

¹ *Some or any* is sometimes expressed in Italian, and sometimes not; nearly as in English. It is expressed when a *quantity* or a *little* may be understood, otherwise it is not expressed. Ex. Give me some bread, *datemi del pane*; I drink wine, and you drink water, *io bevo vino, e voi bevete acqua*; we have seen no soldiers, or we have not seen any soldiers, *non abbiamo veduto soldati*; water and bread are sufficient for me, *pane ed acqua mi bastano*; to write well we must employ good paper and good ink, *per bene scrivere bisogna adoperare buona carta e buon inchiostro*; the poor are often reduced to bad meat, *i poveri sono spesso ridotti a cattiva carne*.

Has he any books?	Ha egli libri?
He has some books.	Ha libri.
Have you any money?	Avete denaro?
I have some money.	Ho denaro.

<i>No</i> or <i>not any</i> , before a noun.	<i>Non</i> .
I have no wine.	Non ho vino.
He has no money.	Non ha danaro.
You have no books. -	{ Ella non ha libri.
They have no friends.	{ Non avete libri.
	Non hanno amici.

Some <i>or</i> any good wine.	Del buon vino.
Some <i>or</i> any bad cheese.	Del cattivo formaggio.
Some <i>or</i> any excellent wine.	Vino eccellente.
Some <i>or</i> any excellent coffee.	Eccellente caffè.
Some <i>or</i> any good books.	Buoni libri.
Some <i>or</i> any pretty glasses.	Leggiadri bicchieri.
Some <i>or</i> any fine coats.	Begli abiti.
Some <i>or</i> any old wine.	Vino vecchio.

Have you any good butter?	{ Ha Ella buon burro?
I have no good butter, but some excellent cheese.	{ Avete buon burro?
Has that man any good books?	Non ho buon burro, ma ho eccellente formaggio.
He has not any good books.	Ha buoni libri quell' uomo?
Has the merchant any pretty gloves?	Non ha buoni libri.
He has no pretty gloves, but some pretty jewels.	Ha bei guanti il mercante?
	Non ha bei guanti, ma ha graziosi gioielli.

What has the baker?	Che ha il fornaio?
He has some excellent bread.	Ha del pane eccellente.
The painter.	Il pittore.
Some coals.	Carbone.
The pencil (of a painter).	Il pennello.
The picture.	Il quadro.
The pencil.	Il lapis (<i>la matita</i> , a feminine noun).

EXERCISES.

20.

Have you my fine glasses?—I have them.—Have you the fine horses of the English?—I have them not.—Which sticks have you?

—I have those of the foreigners.—Who has my small combs?—My boys have them.—Which knives have you?—I have those of your friends.—Have I your good guns?—You have them not, but your friends have them.—Have you my pretty birds, or those of my brothers?—I have neither yours nor your brothers', but my own.—Which ships have the Germans?—The Germans have no ships.—Have the sailors our fine mattresses?—They have them not.—Have the cooks (got) them?—They have them.—Has the captain your pretty books?—He has them not.—Have I them?—You have them. You have them not.—Has the Italian (got) them?—He has them.—Have the Turks our fine guns?—They have them not.—Have the Spaniards them?—They have them.—Has the German the pretty umbrellas of the Spaniards?—He has them.—Has he them?—Yes, Sir, he has them.—Has the Italian our pretty gloves?—He has them not.—Who has them?—The Turk has them.—Has the tailor our waistcoats or those of our friends?—He has neither the latter nor the former.—Which coats has he?—He has those which the Turks have.—Which dogs have you?—I have those which my neighbours have.

21.

Have you any wood?—I have some wood.—Has your brother any soap?—He has no soap.—Have I any mutton?—You have no mutton, but you have some beef.—Have your friends any money?—They have some money.—Have they any milk?—They have no milk, but they have some excellent butter.—Have I any fire?—You have no fire, but you have some coals (*in the sing. in Italian*).—Has the merchant any cloth?—He has no cloth, but some pretty garments.—Have the English any silver?—They have no silver, but they have some excellent iron.—Have you any good coffee?—I have no good coffee, but some excellent wine.—Has the merchant any good books?—He has some good books.—Has the young man any milk?—He has no milk, but some excellent tea.—Have the French any good gloves?—They have some excellent gloves.—Have they any birds?—They have no birds, but they have some pretty jewels.—Who has the fine pencils of the English?—Their friends have them.—Who has the good biscuits of the bakers?—The sailors of our captains have them.—Have they our clothes?—Yes, Sir, they have them.—What have the Italians?—They have some beautiful pictures.—What have the Spaniards?—They have some fine asses.—What have the Germans?—They have some excellent corn.

22.

Have you any friends?—I have some friends.—Have your friends any fire?—They have some fire.—Have the shoemakers any good boots?—They have no good boots, but some excellent leather.—Have the tailors any good waistcoats?—They have no good waistcoats, but some excellent cloth.—Has the painter any umbrellas?—He has no umbrellas, but he has some beautiful pictures.

—Has he the pictures of the French or those of the Italians?—He has neither the latter nor the former.—Which has he?—He has those of his good friends.—Have the Russians any thing good?—They have something good.—What have they good?—They have some good oxen.—Has any one my small combs?—No one has them.—Who has the peasants' fine chickens?—Your cooks have them.—What have the bakers?—They have some excellent bread.—Have your friends any old wine?—They have no old wine, but some good milk.—Has any one your golden candlesticks?—No one has them.

TWELFTH LESSON.

Lezione Duodecima.

*Some of it, any of it, of it.
Some of them, any of them,
of them.*

Ne (is always placed before the verb, except when this is in the infinitive, participle, or imperative).

Have you any wine?

I have some.

Have you any bread?

I have not any, *or* none.

Have you any good wine?

I have some good.

Have I any good cloth?

You have not any good.

Has the merchant any sugar?

He has some sugar.

He has some.

He has not any.

Has he any good sugar?

He has some good.

He has not any good.

Have I any salt?

You have some salt.

You have no salt.

You have some.

You have not any.

{ Ha Ella vino?

{ Avete vino?

{ Ne ho.

{ Avete pane?

{ Non ne ho.

{ Ha Ella buon vino?

{ Avete buon vino?

{ Ne ho di buono.

{ Ne ho del buono.

{ Ho io buon panno?

{ Ella non ne ha di buono.

{ Non ne avete di buono.

{ Ha zucchero il mercante?

{ Ha zucchero.

{ Ne ha.

{ Non ne ha.

{ Ha egli buon zucchero?

{ Ne ha di buono.

{ Ne ha del buono.

{ Non ne ha di buono.

{ Ho sale?

{ Avete sale.

{ Non avete sale.

{ Ne avete.

{ Non ne avete.

Have you any boots?
 I have some boots.
 I have no boots.
 I have some.
 I have not any.
 Has the man any good horses?
 He has some good ones.
 He has not any good ones.
 Has he any pretty knives?
 He has some pretty ones.
 He has not any pretty ones.
 Has he any money?
 He has some.
 He has not any.
 Have our friends any good butter?

They have some good.
 They have not any good.
 Have you good or bad books?
 I have some good ones.
 Have you good or bad bread?
 I have some good.
 Who has some bad wine?
 Our merchant has some.

Avete stivali?
 Ho stivali.
 Non ho stivali.
 Ne ho.
 Non ne ho.
 Ha l' uomo buoni cavalli?
 Ne ha dei buoni.
 Non ne ha di buoni.
 Ha egli bei coltelli?
 Ne ha dei belli.
 Non ne ha di belli.
 Ha egli danaro?
 Ne ha.
 Non ne ha.
 Hanno buon burro i nostri amici?
 Ne hanno di buono.
 Non ne hanno del buono.
 Ha Ella buoni, o cattivi libri?
 Ne ho dei buoni.
 Avete buono, o cattivo pane?
 Ne ho del buono.
 Chi ha cattivo vino?
 Ne ha il nostro mercante.

What bread has the baker?
 He has some good.
 What boots has the shoemaker?
 He has some good ones.
 The hatter.
 The joiner.

Qual pane ha il fornaio?
 Ne ha del buono.
 Quali stivali ha il calzolaio?
 Ne ha dei buoni.
 Il cappellaio.
 Il falegname.

A or one.

{ *Un* (before a consonant or
 a vowel).
 { *Uno* (before *s* followed by
 a consonant, or when it
 stands alone).

DECLENSION OF THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

Mascolino.

Nom. a or an.
Gen. of a — an.
Dat. to a — an.
Acc. a — an.
Abl. from a — an.

Nom. uno.
Gen. d' uno.
Dat. ad uno.
Acc. uno.
Abl. da uno.

A or one horse.	Un cavallo.
Have you a book?	{ Ha Ella } un libro?
I have a book.	{ Avete } un bicchiere?
Have you a glass?	Ho un libro.
I have no glass.	{ Ha Ella } un bicchiere?
I have one.	{ Avete } un bicchiere.
Have you a good horse?	Non ho bicchiere.
I have a good horse.	Ne ho uno.
I have a good one.	Ha Ella un buon cavallo?
I have two good ones.	Ho un buon cavallo.
I have two good horses.	Ne ho uno buono.
I have three good ones.	Ne ho due buoni.
Have I a gun?	Ho due buoni cavalli.
You have a gun.	Ne ho tre buoni.
You have one.	Ho uno schioppo?
You have a good one.	Ella ha uno schioppo.
You have two good ones.	Ella ne ha uno.
Has your brother a friend?	Ella ne ha uno buono.
He has a friend.	Ella ne ha due buoni.
He has one.	Ha un amico il di Lei fratello?
He has a good one.	Ha un amico.
He has two good ones.	Ne ha uno.
He has three good ones.	Ne ha uno buono.
Four.	Ne ha due buoni.
Five.	Ne ha tre buoni.
Has your friend a fine knife?	Quattro.
He has one.	Cinque.
He has none.	Ha il vostro amico un bel col-
He has two of them.	tello?
He has three.	Ne ha uno,
He has four.	Non ne ha.
Have you five good horses?	Ne ha due.
I have six.	Ne ha tre.
I have six good and seven bad ones.	Ne ha quattro.
Who has a fine umbrella?	{ Ha Ella } cinque buoni cavalli?
The merchant has one.	{ Avete } cinque buoni cavalli?
	Ne ho sei.
	Ne ho sei buoni e sette cattivi.
	Chi ha un bell' ombrello?
	Il mercante ne ha uno.

EXERCISES.

23.

Have you any salt?—I have some.—Have you any coffee?—I have not any.—Have you any good wine?—I have some good (wine).—Have you any good cloth?—I have no good cloth, but I have some good money.—Have I any good sugar?—You have not

any good.—Has the man any good honey?—He has some.—Has he any good cheese?—He has not any.—Has the American any money?—He has some.—Have the French any cheese?—They have not any.—Have the English any good milk?—They have no good milk, but they have some excellent butter.—Who has some good soap?—The merchant has some.—Who has some good bread?—The baker has some.—Has the foreigner any coals?—He has not any.—Has he any cloth?—He has some.—What rice have you?—I have some good (rice).—What hay has the horse?—He has some good (hay).—What leather has the shoemaker?—He has some excellent (leather).—Have you any jewels?—I have not any.—Who has some jewels?—The merchant has some.—Have I any boots?—You have some boots.—Have I any hats?—You have no hats.—Has your friend any good knives?—He has some good ones.—Has he any good oxen?—He has not any good ones.—Have the Italians any fine horses?—They have not any fine ones.—Who has some fine asses?—The Spaniards have some.

24.

Has the captain any good sailors?—He has some good ones.—Have the sailors any good mattresses?—They have not any good ones.—Who has some good biscuits?—The baker of our good neighbour has some.—Has he any bread?—He has not any.—Who has some beautiful ribbons?—The French have some.—Who has some excellent iron nails?—The carpenter has some.—Has he any hammers?—He has some.—What hammers has he?—He has some iron ones.—What is the matter with your brother?—Nothing is the matter with him.—Is he cold?—He is neither cold nor warm.—Is he afraid?—He is not afraid.—Is he ashamed?—He is not ashamed.—What is the matter with him?—He is hungry.—Who has some pretty gloves?—I have some.—Who has some fine pictures?—The Italians have some.—Have the painters any fine gardens?—They have some fine ones.—Has the hatter good or bad hats?—He has some good ones.—Has the joiner good or bad wood?—He has some good (wood).—Who has some pretty jewels?—The boys of our merchants have some.—Have they any birds?—They have not any.—Have you any tea?—I have not any.—Who has some?—My servant has some.—Has your servant any clothes?—He has not any.—Who has some?—The servants of my neighbour have some.

25.

Have you a pencil?—I have one.—Has your boy a good book?—He has a good one.—Has the German a good ship?—He has none.—Has your tailor a good coat?—He has a good one.—He has two good ones.—He has three good ones.—Who has some fine boots?—Our shoemaker has some.—Has the captain a fine dog?—He has two.—Have your friends two fine horses?—They have four.—Has the young man a good or bad gun?—He has no good one; he has a bad one.—Have you a cork?—I have none.—Has your friend a

good corkscrew?—He has two.—Have I a friend?—You have a good one.—You have two good friends.—You have three good ones.—Your brother has four good ones.—Has the carpenter an iron nail?—He has six iron nails.—He has six good ones, and seven bad ones.—Who has good beef?—Our cook has some.—Who has five good horses?—Our neighbour has six.—Has the peasant any corn?—He has some.—Has he any looking-glasses?—He has not any.—Who has some good friends?—The Turks have some.—Have they any money?—They have not any.—Who has their money?—Their friends have it.—Are their friends thirsty?—They are not thirsty, but hungry.—Has the joiner any bread?—He has not any.—Has your servant a good coat?—He has one.—Has he this or that coat?—He has neither this nor that.—Which coat has he?—He has that which your servant has.—Have the peasants these or those bags?—They have neither these nor those.—Which bags have they?—They have their own.—Have you a good servant?—I have a good one.—Who has a good chest?—My brother has one.—Has he a leathern or a wooden chest?—He has a wooden one.

THIRTEENTH LESSON.

Lezione Decimaterza.

<i>How much? How many?</i>	<i>Quanto? Quanti?</i>
How much bread?	Quanto pane?
How much money?	Quanto denaro?
How many knives?	Quanti coltelli?
How many men?	Quanti uomini?
How many friends?	Quanti amici?

Only, but.

I have but one friend.
 I have but one.
 I have but one good gun.
 I have but one good one.
 You have but one good one.
 How many horses has your brother?
 He has but one.
 He has but two good ones.

Soltanto.
Solamente.
Non—che.
Non—se non.
 Ho soltanto un amico.
 Ne ho solamente uno.
 Ho soltanto un buono schioppo.
 Ne ho solamente uno buono.
 Ne avete solamente uno buono.
 Quanti cavalli ha vostro fratello?
 Non ne ha che uno.
 Non ne ha se non uno.
 Non ne ha che due buoni.
 Non ne ha se non due buoni.

Much, a good deal of, very much.

Many.

Much bread.

A good deal of good bread.

Many men.

Have you much money?

I have a good deal.

Have you much good wine?

I have a good deal.

Molto } *assai.*
Molti }

Molto pane (assai pane).

Molto pane buono.

Molti uomini (assai uomini).

Avete molto denaro?

Ne ho molto.

Ha Ella molto buon vino?

Ne ho molto.

Too much.

Too many.

You have too much wine.

They have too many books.

Have you many books?

I have too many.

Troppo.

Troppi.

Avete troppo vino.

Hanno troppi libri.

Avete molti libri?

Ne ho troppi.

Enough.

Enough money.

Knives enough.

Abbastanza.

Abbastanza denaro.

Abbastanza coltelli.

Little.

A little.

A little cloth.

A little salt.

A few men.

A few friends.

{ *Poco.* Sing.

{ *Pochi.* Plur.

Un poco (di alquanto).

Un poco di panno.

Un poco di sale.

Pochi uomini.

Pochi amici.

But little, only a little, not much.

Non — quasi. Non — che

poco.

Non — molto.

Solamente poco.

Non — se non poco.

Non — molti.

Non — che pochi.

Non — se non pochi.

Not many, but few.

I have but little money.

He has few friends.

We have but little gold.

{ Non ho che poco danaro.

{ Non ho se non poco danaro.

{ Non ha molti amici.

{ Ha pochi amici.

{ Non abbiamo molto oro.

{ Non abbiamo che poco oro.

{ Non abbiamo se non poco oro.

Courage.
You have not much courage.
We have few friends.

Coraggio.
Non avete quasi coraggio.
Non abbiamo quasi amici.

Have we?
We have.
We have not.

Abbiamo? abbiamo noi?
Abbiamo, noi abbiamo.
Non abbiamo.

Some pepper.
Some vinegar.
Have we any vinegar?
We have some.
We have not any.

Pepe.
Aceto, dell' aceto.
Abbiamo aceto?
Ne abbiamo.
Non ne abbiamo.

Have you a good deal of money?

{ Ha Ella molto denaro?
{ Avete molto denaro?

I have but little of it.

{ Non ne ho se non poco.
{ Non ne ho molto.

You have but little of it.

Non ne avete se non poco.

He has but little of it.

Non ne ha molto.

We have but little of it.

Non ne abbiamo che poco.

Have you enough wine?

Ha Ella abbastanza vino?

I have only a little, but enough.

Non ne ho molto, ma abbastanza.

Eight.
Nine.
Ten.
Eleven.

Otto.
Nove.
Dieci.
Undici.

And.

| *E.*

EXERCISES.

26.

How many friends have you?—I have two good friends.—Have you eight good trunks?—I have nine.—Has your servant three coats?—He has only one good one.—Has the captain two good ships?—He has only one.—How many hammers has the carpenter?—He has but two good ones.—How many boots has the shoemaker?—He has ten.—Has the young man nine good books?—He has only five.—How many guns has your brother?—He has only four.—Have you much bread?—I have a good deal.—Have the Spaniards much money?—They have but little.—Has our neighbour much coffee?—He has only a little.—Has the foreigner much corn?—He has a good deal.—What has the American?—He has much sugar.—What has the Russian?—He has a good deal of

salt.—Has the peasant much rice?—He has not any.—Has he much cheese?—He has but little.—What have we?—We have much bread, much wine, and many books.—Have we much money?—We have only a little, but enough.—Have you many brothers?—I have only one.—Have the French many friends?—They have but few.—Has our friend much hay?—He has enough.—Has the Italian much cheese?—He has a good deal.—Has this man courage?—He has none.—Has the painter's boy any pencils?—He has some.

27.

Have you much pepper?—I have but little.—Has the cook much beef?—He has but little beef, but he has a good deal of mutton.—How many oxen has the German?—He has eight.—How many horses has he?—He has only four.—Who has a good many biscuits?—Our sailors have a good many.—Have we many notes?—We have only a few.—How many notes have we?—We have only three pretty ones.—Have you too much butter?—I have not enough.—Have our boys too many books?—They have too many.—Has our friend too much milk?—He has only a little, but enough.—Who has a good deal of money?—The peasants have a good deal.—Have they many gloves?—They have not any.—Has the cook enough butter?—He has not enough.—Has he enough vinegar?—He has enough.—Have you much soap?—I have only a little.—Has the merchant much cloth?—He has a good deal.—Who has a good deal of pepper?—Our neighbour has a good deal.—Has our tailor many buttons?—He has a good many.—Has the painter many gardens?—He has not many.—How many gardens has he?—He has but two.—How many knives has the German?—He has three.—Has the captain any fine horses?—He has some fine ones, but his brother has none.—Have we any jewels?—We have a good many.—What jewels have we?—We have gold jewels.—What candlesticks have our friends?—They have silver candlesticks.—Have they gold ribbons?—They have some.

28.

Has the youth any good sticks?—He has no good sticks, but some beautiful birds.—What chickens has our cook?—He has some pretty chickens.—How many has he?—He has six.—Has the hatter any hats?—He has a good many.—Has the joiner much wood?—He has not a great deal, but enough.—Have we the horses of the French or those of the Germans?—We have neither these nor those.—Which horses have we?—We have our own.—Has the Turk my small combs?—He has them not.—Who has them?—Your son has them.—Have our friends much sugar?—They have little sugar, but much honey.—Who has our looking-glasses?—The Italians have them.—Has the Frenchman this or that spoon?—He has neither this nor that.—Has he the mattresses which we have?—He has not those which we have, but those which his friends have.—Is he ashamed?—He is not ashamed, but afraid.

FOURTEENTH LESSON.

Lezione Decimaquarta.

<i>A few books.</i>	{	<i>Alcuni libri.</i> <i>Qualche libro.</i>
---------------------	---	---

Obs. A. The noun following *qualche* is always used in the singular.

Have you a few books?	{	Ha Ella alcuni libri? Avete qualche libro?
-----------------------	---	---

<i>A few.</i> I have a few. You have a few. He has a few.		<i>Alcuni (parecchi).</i> Ne ho alcuni (parecchi). Ne avete parecchi. Ne ha alcuni.
--	--	--

I have but a few books. You have but a few books. He has but a few sous. I have but a few. You have but a few. He has but a few.	{	Non ho se non alcuni libri. Non ho che pochi libri. Ho soltanto alcuni libri. Avete solamente alcuni libri. Non ha se non alcuni soldi. Ne ho soltanto alcuni. Ne avete solamente alcuni. Ne ha soltanto alcuni.
---	---	---

One <i>or</i> a sou.	<i>Plur.</i> sous.		Un soldo.	<i>Plur.</i> dei soldi.
One — a franc.	„ francs.		Un franco.	„ dei franchi.
One — a crown.	„ crowns.		Uno scudo.	„ degli scudi.

<i>Other.</i> Another sou. Some other sous.		<i>Altro.</i> Un altro soldo. Alcuni altri soldi.
---	--	---

Have you another horse?		Ha Ella un altro cavallo?
I have another.		Ne ho un altro.

No other.

I have no other horse.

I have no other.

Have you any other horses?

I have some others.

I have no others.

Non—altro.

Non ho altro cavallo.

Non ne ho altro.

Ha Ella alcuni altri cavalli?

Ne ho degli altri.

Non ne ho altri.

The arm.

The heart.

The month.

The volume.

Il braccio (*plur.* le braccia).

Il cuore.

Il mese.

Il volume.

What day of the month is it?

It is the first.

It is the second.

It is the third.

{ Quanti ne abbiamo del mese?

{ Ai quanti siamo del mese?

{ È il primo.

{ Siamo al primo.

{ Ne abbiamo due.

{ Siamo ai due.

{ Ne abbiamo tre.

{ Siamo ai tre.

Obs. B. The cardinal numbers must be used in Italian when speaking of the days of the month, though the ordinal are used in English, except *il primo*, the first.¹

It is the eleventh.

Which volume have you?

I have the fourth.

{ Ne abbiamo undici.

{ Siamo all'undici (*or* agli undici).

Qual volume ha Ella?

Ho il quarto.

The first.

— second.

— third.

— fourth.

— fifth.

— sixth.

— seventh.

— eighth.

— ninth.

— tenth.

Singular.

Il primo,

Il secondo,

Il terzo,

Il quarto,

Il quinto,

Il sesto,

Il settimo,

L'ottavo,

Il nono,

Il decimo,

Plural.

i primi.

i secondi.

i terzi.

i quarti.

i quinti.

i sestì.

i settimi.

gli ottavi.

i noni.

i decimi.

¹ Henceforth the learners should write the date before their task.
Ex. *Londra, ai (il or al) quindici di Luglio mille otto cento quaranta quattro.* London, 15th July, 1844.

The eleventh.		L' undecimo,	gli undecimi.
— twentieth.		Il ventesimo,	i ventesimi.
— twenty-first.		Il ventesimo-	i ventesimi-
		primo,	primi.
— twenty-second.		Il ventesimo-	i ventesimi-
		secondo,	secondi.
— thirtieth.		Il trentesimo,	i trentesimi.
— fortieth,		Il quarantesimo,	i quarantesimi,
&c.		&c.	
Have you the first or second		Ha Ella il primo o il secondo	
book?		libro?	
I have the third.		Ho il terzo.	
Which volume have you?		Qual volume ha Ella?	
I have the fifth.		Ho il quinto.	
The remaining numerals are :			
		1.	2.
		<i>Cardinal Num-</i>	<i>Ordinal Num-</i>
		<i>bers.</i>	<i>bers.</i>
Twelve,	twelfth.	Dodici.	Duodecimo.
Thirteen,	thirteenth.	Tredici.	Decimoterzo, or
			Tredicesimo.
Fourteen,	fourteenth.	Quattordici.	Decimo quarto,
			or Quattordicesimo.
Fifteen,	fifteenth.	Quindici.	Decimo quinto,
			or Quindicesimo.
Sixteen,	sixteenth.	Sedici.	Decimo sesto, or
			Sedicesimo.
Seventeen,	seventeenth.	{ Diecisette, or	Decimo settimo,
		{ Diciasette.	or Diciasettesimo.
Eighteen,	eighteenth.	{ Dieciotto, or	Decimottavo.
		{ Diciotto.	
Nineteen,	nineteenth.	{ Diecinove, or	Decimo nono.
		{ Dicianove.	
Twenty.		Venti, &c.	
Twenty-one.		Vent' uno, &c.	
Twenty-two.		Ventidue, &c.	
Twenty-three,	twenty-third.	Ventitre,	Ventesimo terzo,
			&c.
Thirty.		Trenta, &c.	
Forty.		Quaranta, &c.	
Fifty,	fiftieth.	Cinquanta,	Cinquantesimo.
Sixty,	sixtieth.	Sessanta,	Sessantesimo.
Seventy,	seventieth.	Settanta,	Settantesimo.
Eighty,	eightieth.	Ottanta,	Ottantesimo.
Ninety,	ninetieth.	Novanta,	Novantesimo.
A or one hundred,	hundredth.	Cento,	Centesimo.
A or one thousand,	thousandth.	Mille,	Millesimo.

	<i>Cardinal Num- bers.</i>	<i>Ordinal Num- bers.</i>
Two hundred, two hundredth.	Ducento (du- gento),	Ducentesimo.
Three hundred, three hundredth.	Trecento,	Trecentesimo.
Two thousand, two thousandth.	Due mila,	Due millesimo.
A million, millionth.	Millione,	Millionesimo.
Two millions.	Due milioni.	
The last.	L' ultimo.	
A tenth.	Una decina or dicina.	
A dozen.	Una dozzina.	
A score.	Una ventina.	
A thirtieth.	Una trentina, etc.	

Obs. C. From the above may be seen that *cento* is invariable in the plural, and *mille* is in the plural changed into *mila*.

EXERCISES.

29.

Have you many knives?—I have a few.—Have you many pencils?—I have only a few.—Has the painter's friend many looking-glasses?—He has only a few.—Has your son a few sous?—He has a few.—Have you a few francs?—We have a few.—How many francs have you?—I have ten.—How many sous has the Spaniard?—He has not many; he has only five.—Who has the beautiful glasses of the Italians?—We have them.—Have the English many ships?—They have a good many.—Have the Italians many horses?—They have not many horses, but a good many asses.—What have the Germans?—They have many crowns.—How many crowns have they?—They have eleven.—Have we the horses of the English, or those of the Germans?—We have neither the former nor the latter.—Have we the umbrellas of the Spaniards?—We have them not, but the Americans have them.—Have you much butter?—I have only a little, but enough.—Have the sailors the mattresses which we have?—They have not those which we have, but those which their captain has.—Has the Frenchman many francs?—He has only a few, but he has enough.—Has your servant many sous?—He has no sous, but francs enough.

30.

Have the Russians pepper?—They have but little pepper, but a good deal of salt.—Have the Turks much wine?—They have not much wine, but a good deal of coffee.—Who has a good deal of milk?—The Germans have a good deal.—Have you no other gun?—I have no other.—Have we any other cheese?—We have some other.—Have I no other picture?—You have another.—Has our neighbour no other horse?—He has no other.—Has your brother no other friends?—He has some others.—Have the shoemakers no other boots?—They have no others.—Have the tailors many coats?

—They have only a few; they have only four.—How many gloves have you?—I have only two.—Have you any other biscuits?—I have no other.—How many corkscrews has the merchant?—He has nine.—How many arms has this man?—He has only one; the other is of wood.—What heart has your son?—He has a good heart.—Have you no other servant?—I have another.—Has your friend no other birds?—He has some others.—How many other birds has he?—He has six others.—How many gardens have you?—I have only one, but my friend has two of them.

31.

Which volume have you?—I have the first.—Have you the second volume of my book?—I have it.—Have you the third or fourth book?—I have neither the former nor the latter.—Have we the fifth or sixth volumes?—We have the fifth, but we have not the sixth volumes.—Which volumes has your friend?—He has the seventh volume.—What day of the month is it?—It is the eighth.—Is it not the eleventh?—No, Sir, it is the tenth.—Who has our crowns?—The Russians have them.—Have they our gold?—They have it not.—Has the youth much money?—He has not much money, but much courage.—Have you the nails of the carpenters or those of the joiners?—I have neither those of the carpenters nor those of the joiners, but those of my merchants.—Have you this or that glove?—I have neither this nor that.—Has your friend these or those notes?—He has these, but not those.—Has the Italian a few crowns?—He has a few.—Has he a few francs?—He has five.—Have you another stick?—I have another.—What other stick have you?—I have another iron stick.—Have you a few good candlesticks?—We have a few.—Has your boy another hat?—He has another.—Have these men any vinegar?—These men have none, but their friends have some.—Have the peasants any other bags?—They have no others.—Have they any other bread?—They have some.

FIFTEENTH LESSON.

Lezione Decimaquinta.

The tome (the volume).
Have you the first or second
volume of my book?

Both.

I have both.
Have you my book or my stick?

Il tomo (il volume).
Ha Ella il primo, o il secondo
tomo del mio libro?
L' uno e l' altro (ambidue),
or simply *ambo*.
Ho l' uno e l' altro. Ho ambidue.
Ha Ella il mio libro, o il mio
bastone?

I have neither the one nor the other.

The ones and the others.

Has your brother my gloves or his own?

He has both yours and his.

Has he my books or those of the Spaniards?

He has neither (the ones nor the others).

Non ho nè l' uno nè l' altro.

Gli uni e gli altri.

Ha il di Lei fratello i miei guanti, o i suoi?

Egli ha gli uni e gli altri.

Ha egli i miei libri, o quelli degli Spagnuoli?

Non ha nè gli uni nè gli altri.

The Scotchman.

The Irishman.

The Dutchman.

Lo Scozzese.

L' Irlandese.

L' Olandese.

Still, yet, some, or any more.

Some more wine.

Some more money.

Some more buttons.

Have you any more wine?

I have some more wine.

I have some more.

Ancora.

Anco, per anco.

Ancora vino.

Ancora del vino (see note 1, Lesson XI.).

Ancora danaro.

Ancora del danaro.

Ancora bottoni.

Ancora dei bottoni.

Ha Ella ancora vino?

Ho ancora vino.

Ne ho ancora.

Has he any more money?

He has some more.

Have I any more books?

You have some more.

Ha egli ancora danaro?

Ne ha ancora.

Ho ancora libri?

Ella ne ha ancora.

Not any more, no more.

I have no more bread.

He has no more money.

Have you any more butter?

I have no more.

We have no more.

Has he any more vinegar?

He has no more.

We have no more books.

We have no more.

He has no more dogs.

He has no more.

Non—più.

Non ho più pane.

Non ha più danaro.

Ha Ella ancora del burro?

Non ne ho più.

Non ne abbiamo più.

Ha egli ancora aceto?

Non ne ha più.

Non abbiamo più libri.

Non ne abbiamo più.

Non ha più cani.

Non ne ha più.

Not much more, not many more.

Have you much more wine?
I have not much more.
Have you many more books?
I have not many more.

Non—più molto.

Non—più molti.

Ha Ella ancora molto vino?
Non ne ho più molto.
Ha Ella ancora molti libri?
Non ne ho più molti.

One book more.
One good book more.
A few books more.

Have you a few francs more?

I have a few more.
Have I a few more sous?
You have a few more.
We have a few more.
They have a few more.

Ancora un libro.

Ancora un buon libro.

Ancora alcuni libri (qualche libro).

Ha Ella ancora alcuni franchi (qualche franco)?

Ne ho ancora alcuni.

Ho ancora alcuni soldi?

Ella ne ha ancora alcuni.

Ne abbiamo ancora alcuni.

Ne hanno ancora alcuni.

EXERCISES.

32.

Which volume of this book have you?—I have the first.—How many volumes has this book?—It has two.—Have you my book or my brother's?—I have both.—Has the foreigner my comb or my knife?—He has both.—Have you my bread or my cheese?—I have neither the one nor the other.—Has the Dutchman my glass or that of my friend?—He has neither the one nor the other.—Has the Irishman our horse or our trunk?—He has both.—Has the Scotchman our boots or our waistcoats?—He has neither (the ones nor the others).—What has he?—He has his good iron guns.—Have the Dutch our ships or those of the Spaniards?—They have neither (the ones nor the others).—Which ships have they?—They have their own.—Have we any more hay?—We have some more.—Has our merchant any more pepper?—He has some more.—Has our friend any more money?—He has not any more.—Has he any more jewels?—He has some more.—Have you any more coffee?—We have no more coffee, but we have some more tea.—Has the Dutchman any more salt?—He has no more salt, but he has some more butter.—Has the painter any more pictures?—He has no more pictures, but he has some more pencils.—Have the sailors any more biscuits?—They have not any more.—Have your sons any more books?—They have not any more.—Has the young man any more friends?—He has no more.

33.

Has our cook much more beef?—He has not much more.—Has he many more chickens?—He has not many more.—Has the peasant

much more milk?—He has not much more milk, but he has a great deal more butter.—Have the French many more horses?—They have not many more.—Have you much more oil?—I have much more.—Have we many more looking-glasses?—We have many more.—Have you one book more?—I have one more.—Have our neighbours one more garden?—They have one more.—Has our friend one umbrella more?—He has not one more.—Have the Scotch a few more books?—They have a few more.—Has the tailor a few more buttons?—He has not any more.—Has our carpenter a few more nails?—He has no more nails, but he has a few more sticks.—Have the Spaniards a few more sous?—They have a few more.—Has the German a few more oxen?—He has a few more.—Have you a few more francs?—I have no more francs, but I have a few more crowns.—What more have you?—We have a few more ships, and a few more good sailors.—Have I a little more money?—You have a little more.—Have you any more courage?—I have no more.—Have you much more vinegar?—I have not much more, but my brother has a great deal more.

34.

Has he sugar enough?—He has not enough.—Have we francs enough?—We have not enough.—Has the joiner wood enough?—He has enough.—Has he hammers enough?—He has enough.—What hammers has he?—He has iron and wooden hammers.—Have you rice enough?—We have not rice enough, but we have sugar enough.—Have you many more gloves?—I have not many more.—Has the Russian another ship?—He has another.—Has he another bag?—He has no other.—What day of the month is it?—It is the sixth.—How many friends have you?—I have but one good friend.—Has the peasant too much bread?—He has not enough.—Has he much money?—He has but little money, but enough hay.—Have we the cotton or the thread coats of the Americans?—We have neither their cotton nor their thread coats.—Have we the gardens which they have?—We have not those which they have, but those which our neighbours have.—Have you any more honey?—I have no more.—Have you any more oxen?—I have not any more.

SIXTEENTH LESSON.

*Lezione Decimasesta.**Several.**Many.*

Several men.

Several children.

Several knives.

*Parecchi, diversi, varii.**Molti.*

Parecchi uomini.

Parecchi fanciulli (bambini).

Varii coltelli.

The father.

The child.

The ink.

The inkstand.

The cloak.

The cake (the pastry, the pie).

The small cake.

The macaroni.

The pastry-cook.

Petty-patties.

Il padre.

Il fanciullo (il bambino).

L' inchiostro.

Il calamaio.

Il mantello (il pastrano).

Il pasticcio.

Il pasticcino.

I maccheroni.

Il pasticciere.

Pasticcini.

*As much.**As many.**As much—as.**As many—as.*

As much bread as wine.

As many men as children.

*Tanto.**Tanti.*

Tanto—{ *quanto*, plur.
quanti.¹
Tanti—{ *che*.
come.

Tanto pane quanto vino (che or come vino).

Tanti uomini quanti fanciulli (come or che fanciulli).

Have you as much gold as silver?

Ha Ella tanto oro quanto argento?

I have as much of this as of that.

I have as much of the latter as of the former.

Ho tanto di questo quanto di quello.

¹ Though *che* and *come* are sometimes used as the correlatives of *tanto*, it is only tolerated, and none of the great writers, or indeed no Italians who speak their language correctly, use anything but *quanto*, *quanti*, as the correlatives of *tanto*, *tanti*.

I have as much of the one as of the other.	Ho tanto dell' uno quanto dell' altro.
Have you as many boots as handkerchiefs?	Ha Ella tanti stivali quanti fazzoletti?
I have as many of these as of those.	Ho tanti di questi quanti di quelli.
I have as many of the former as of the latter.	
I have as many of the one as of the other.	Ho tanto degli uni quanto degli altri.

Quite (or just) as much, as many. *Altrettanto, altrettanti.*

I have quite as much of this as of that.	Ho altrettanto di questo quanto di quello.
Quite as much of the one as of the other.	Altrettanto dell' uno quanto dell' altro.
Quite as much of these as of those.	Altrettanto di questi quanto di quelli.
Quite as many of the one as of the other.	Altrettanto degli uni quanto degli altri.

An enemy, enemies.	Un nemico, nemici.
My dear friend.	Mio caro amico (vocative).
Dear.	Caro.
The heart.	Il cuore.

Obs. A. Words in the singular, having one of the liquid consonants, *l, m, n, r*, before their final vowel, may lose the latter (except before words beginning with *s* followed by a consonant). The vowels after *l* and *r*, however, are oftener dropped than those after *m* and *n*.

The linen thread.	Il <i>fil</i> di lino (instead of <i>filo</i>).
The faithful heart.	Il <i>cuor</i> (or <i>cor</i>) fedele (instead of <i>cuore</i> or <i>core</i>).
Your welfare.	Il <i>ben</i> vostro (instead of <i>bene</i>).
My opinion.	Il <i>parermio</i> (instead of <i>parere</i>). ²

More (a comparative adverb). *Più.*

More bread.	Più pane.
More men.	Più uomini.

² But as soon as the word following begins with *s* followed by a consonant, there is no elision. We say: *il sole splendente*, the splendid sun; *un bene straordinario*, an extraordinary benefit; *un parere strano*, a strange opinion; and not *il sol splendente*, *un ben straordinario*, *un parer strano*.

Than.

More bread than wine.
 More knives than sticks.
 More of this than of that.
 More of the one than of the other.
 More of these than of those.
 More of the ones than of the others.
 I have more of your sugar than of mine.
 He has more of our books than of his own.

Che.

Più pane che vino.
 Più coltelli che bastoni.
 Più di questo che di quello.
 Più dell' uno che dell' altro.
 Più di questi che di quelli.
 Più degli uni che degli altri.
 Ho più del vostro zucchero che del mio.
 Egli ha più dei nostri libri che dei suoi.

Obs. B. *Quanto*, *che*, and *come*, are employed for the comparative of equality, but *che* only for the comparative of superiority and minority.

Less, fewer.

Less wine than bread.
 Less knives than sticks.

Meno.

Meno vino che pane.
 Meno coltelli che bastoni.

Less than I.

Meno di me.

Obs. C. After *meno* and *più*, *than* is rendered by *di* before a pronoun not accompanied by a verb. Ex.

Less than he.
 Less than we.
 Less than you.
 Less than they.

Meno di lui.
 Meno di noi.
 Meno di voi (di Lei).
 Meno di loro.

They.

As they.

Than they.

As much as you.

As much as he.

As much as they.

Loro.

Quanto loro.

Di loro.

Che loro.

Tanto quanto Lei, Ella, voi (Loro).

Tanto quanto lui.

Tanto quanto loro.

EXERCISES.

35.

Have you a horse?—I have several.—Has he several coats?—He has only one.—Who has several looking-glasses?—My brother has several.—What looking-glasses has he?—He has beautiful looking-glasses.—Who has good petty-patties?—Several pastry-

cooks have some.—Has your brother a child?—He has several.—Have you as much coffee as tea?—I have as much of the one as of the other.—Has this man a son?—He has several.—How many sons has he?—He has four.—How many children have our friends?—They have many: they have ten.—Have we as much bread as butter?—You have as much of the one as of the other.—Has this man as many friends as enemies?—He has as many of the one as of the other.—Have we as many spoons as knives?—We have as many of the one as of the other.—Has your father as much gold as silver?—He has more of the latter than of the former.—Has the captain as many sailors as ships?—He has more of the latter than of the former. He has more of the one than of the other.

36.

Have you as many guns as I?—I have as many.—Has the foreigner as much courage as we?—He has quite as much.—Have we as much good as bad coffee?—We have as much of the one as of the other.—Have our neighbours as much cheese as milk?—They have more of the latter than of the former.—Have your sons as many petty-patties as books?—They have more of the latter than of the former; more of the one than of the other.—How many noses has the man?—He has but one.—How many feet has he?—He has several.—How many cloaks have you?—I have but one, but my father has more than I; he has five.—Have my children as much courage as yours?—Yours have more than mine.—Have I as much money as you?—You have less than I.—Have you as many books as I?—I have less than you.—Have I as many enemies as your father?—You have fewer than he.—Have the Russians as many children as we?—We have fewer than they.—Have the French as many ships as we?—They have fewer than we.—Have we as many jewels as they?—We have fewer than they.—Have we fewer clothes than the children of our friends?—We have fewer than they.

37.

Who has fewer friends than we?—Nobody has fewer.—Have you as much of your wine as of mine?—I have as much of yours as of mine.—Have I as many of your books as of mine?—You have fewer of mine than of yours.—Has the Turk as much of your money as of his own?—He has less of his own than of ours.—Has your baker less bread than money?—He has less of the latter than of the former.—Has our merchant fewer dogs than horses?—He has fewer of the latter than of the former; fewer of the one than of the other.—Have your servants more sticks than spoons?—They have more of the latter than of the former.—Has our cook as much butter as beef?—He has as much of the one as of the other.—Has he as many chickens as birds?—He has more of the latter than of the former.

38.

Has the carpenter as many sticks as nails?—He has as many of these as of those.—Have you more biscuits than glasses?—I have more of the latter than of the former.—Has our friend more sugar than money?—He has not so much of the latter as of the former.—Has he more gloves than umbrellas?—He has not so many of the latter as of the former.—Who has more soap than I?—My son has more.—Who has more pencils than he?—The painter has more.—Has he as many horses as I?—He has not so many horses as you, but he has more pictures.—Has the merchant fewer oxen than we?—He has fewer oxen than we, and we have less corn than he.—Have you another note?—I have another.—Has your son one more inkstand?—He has several more.—Have the Dutch as many gardens as we?—We have fewer than they.—We have less bread and less butter than they.—We have but little money, but enough bread, beef, cheese, and wine.—Have you as much courage as our neighbour's son?—I have just as much.—Has the youth as many notes as we?—He has just as many.

SEVENTEENTH LESSON.

Lezione Decimasettima.

OF THE INFINITIVE.

There are in Italian three Conjugations, which are distinguished by the termination of the Present of the Infinitive, viz.

1. The first has its infinitive terminated in *ARE*, as:—

<i>parlare,</i>	to speak;
<i>comprare,</i>	to buy;
<i>tagliare,</i>	to cut.
2. The second in *ERE*, as:—

<i>temere,</i>	to fear;
<i>perdere,</i>	to lose;
<i>credere,</i>	to believe.
3. The third in *IRE*, as:—

<i>sentire,</i>	to feel;
<i>finire,</i>	to finish;
<i>udire,</i>	to hear.

Each verb we shall give hereafter will have the number of the class to which it belongs marked after it. The verbs marked with an asterisk (*) are irregular.

Fear.	Paura.	} All these words require the preposition <i>DI</i> , or, after them, when followed by any infinitive verb. Ex.
Shame.	Vergogna.	
Wrong.	Torto.	
Right.	Ragione.	
Time.	Tempo.	
Courage.	Coraggio.	
A mind, a wish.	Desiderio or voglia.	

To work.	Lavorare 1.
To speak.	Parlare 1.
Have you a mind to work?	Ha Ella desiderio di lavorare?
I have a mind to work.	Ho desiderio di lavorare.
He has not the courage to speak.	Egli non ha coraggio di parlare.

Are you afraid to speak?	Ha Ella paura di parlare?
I am ashamed to speak.	Ho vergogna di parlare.

To cut.	Tagliare 1.
To cut it.	Tagliarlo.

Obs. In Italian, as in English, the accusative of the personal pronouns and the relative *ne* are placed after the Infinitive; but in Italian the pronoun is joined to the verb in the Infinitive (which loses its final vowel), the present participle, and in the imperative (of which more hereafter). Ex.

To cut them.	Tagliarli.
To cut some.	Tagliarne.

Have you time to cut the bread?	Ha Ella tempo di tagliare il pane?
I have time to cut it.	Ho tempo di tagliarlo.
Has he a mind to cut trees?	Ha egli desiderio di tagliare alberi?
He has a mind to cut some.	Ha desiderio di tagliarne.

<i>To buy.</i>	<i>Comprare (comperare) 1.</i>
To buy some more.	Comprarne ancora.
To buy one.	Comprarne uno.
To buy two.	Comprarne due.

To buy one more.	Comprarne ancora uno.
To buy two more.	Comprarne ancora due.

To break.	Rompere* 2.
To pick up.	{ Raccorre* (raccogliere*) 2.
	{ Raccattare 1.
To mend, to repair.	{ Accomodare 1.
	{ Raccomodare 1.
	{ Assettare 1.
To look for, to seek.	Cercare 1.

Have you a mind to buy one more horse?	Ha Ella desiderio di comprare ancora un cavallo?
I have a mind to buy one more.	Ho desiderio di comprarne, ancora uno.
Have you a mind to buy some books?	Ha Ella desiderio di comprare libri?
I have a mind to buy some, but I have no money.	Ho desiderio di comprarne, ma non ho danaro.
Are you afraid to break the glasses?	Ha Ella paura di rompere i bicchieri?
I am afraid to break them.	Ho paura di romperli.

Has he time to work?	Ha egli tempo di lavorare?
He has time, but no mind to work.	Ha tempo, ma non ha voglia di lavorare.

Am I right in buying a horse?	Ho ragione di comprare un cavallo?
You are not wrong in buying one.	Ella non ha torto di comprarne uno.

EXERCISES.

39.

Have you still a mind to buy my friend's horse?—I have still a mind to buy it, but I have no more money.—Have you time to work?—I have time, but no mind to work.—Has your brother time to cut some sticks?—He has time to cut some.—Has he a mind to cut some bread?—He has a mind to cut some, but he has no knife.—Have you time to cut some cheese?—I have time to cut some.—Has he a desire to cut the tree?—He has a desire to cut it, but he has no time.—Has the tailor time to cut the cloth?—He has time to cut it.—Have I time to cut the trees?—You have time to cut them.—Has the painter a mind to buy a horse?—He has a mind to buy two.—Has your captain time to speak?—He has time, but no desire to speak.—Are you afraid to speak?—I am not afraid, but I am ashamed to speak.—Am I right in buying a gun?—You are right in buying one.—Is your friend right in buying a great ox?—He is wrong in buying one.—Am I right in buying little oxen?—You are right in buying some.

40.

Have you a desire to speak?—I have a desire, but I have not the courage to speak.—Have you the courage to cut your arm?—I have not the courage to cut it.—Am I right in speaking?—You are not wrong in speaking, but you are wrong in cutting my trees.—Has your friend's son a desire to buy one more bird?—He has

a desire to buy one more.—Have you a desire to buy a few more horses?—We have a desire to buy a few more, but we have no more money.—What has our tailor a mind to mend?—He has a mind to mend our old clothes.—Has the shoemaker time to mend our boots?—He has time, but he has no mind to mend them.—Who has a mind to mend our hats?—The hatter has a mind to mend them.—Are you afraid to look for my horse?—I am not afraid, but I have no time to look for it.—What have you a mind to buy?—We have a mind to buy something good, and our neighbours have a mind to buy something beautiful.—Are their children afraid to pick up some nails?—They are not afraid to pick up some.—Have you a mind to break my jewel?—I have a mind to pick it up, but not to break it.—Am I wrong in picking up your gloves?—You are not wrong in picking them up, but you are wrong in cutting them.

41.

Have you the courage to break these glasses?—I have the courage, but I have no mind to break them.—Who has a mind to break our looking-glass?—Our enemy has a mind to break it.—Have the foreigners a mind to break our guns?—They have a mind, but they have not the courage to break them.—Have you a mind to break the captain's ship?—I have a mind, but I am afraid to break it.—Who has a mind to buy my beautiful dog?—Nobody has a mind to buy it.—Have you a desire to buy my beautiful trunks, or those of the Frenchman?—I have a desire to buy yours, and not those of the Frenchman.—Which books has the Englishman a mind to buy?—He has a mind to buy that which you have, that which your son has, and that which mine has.—Which gloves have you a mind to seek?—I have a mind to seek yours, mine, and our children's.

42.

Which looking-glasses have the enemies a desire to break?—They have a desire to break those which you have, those which I have, and those which our children and our friends have.—Has your father a desire to buy these or those petty-patties?—He has a mind to buy these.—Am I right in picking up your notes?—You are right in picking them up.—Is the Italian right in seeking your handkerchief?—He is wrong in seeking it.—Have you a mind to buy another ship?—I have a mind to buy another.—Has our enemy a mind to buy one ship more?—He has a mind to buy several more, but he is afraid to buy some.—Have you two horses?—I have only one, but I have a wish to buy one more.

EIGHTEENTH LESSON.

Lezione Decima ottava.

<i>To make.</i>	}	<i>Fare* 1.</i>
<i>To do.</i>		
<i>To be willing.</i>	}	<i>Volere* 2. (Desiderare 1.)</i>
<i>To wish.</i>		

Will you?	}	Vuol Ella? (Volete?)
Are you willing?		
Do you wish?	}	Voglio (<i>or vo</i>).
I will, I am willing, I wish.		Vuol egli?
Will he? is he willing? does he wish?		
He will, he is willing, he wishes.		Egli vuole.
We will, we are willing, we wish.		Vogliamo.
You will, you are willing, you wish.		Volete (vogliono).
They will, they are willing, they wish.		Vogliono.

Thou wilt, thou art willing, thou wishest.	Vuoi.
--	-------

Do you wish to make my fire?	Vuol Ella fare il mio fuoco?
I am willing to make it.	Voglio farlo.
I do not wish to make it.	Non voglio farlo.
Does he wish to buy your horse?	Vuol egli comprare il di Lei cavallo?
He wishes to buy it.	Egli vuol comprarlo.
He does not wish to buy it.	Egli non vuol comprarlo.

To burn.	{	Bruciare 1.
		Abbruciare 1.
To warm.	{	Scaldare 1.
		Riscaldare 1.
To tear.	{	Stracciare 1.
		Lacerare 1.

The broth.	Il brodo.
My bed.	Il mio letto.

<i>To go.</i>	<i>Andare</i> * 1.
<i>With or at the house of.</i>	{ <i>In casa di, or da.</i>
<i>To the house of.</i>	
<i>To be.</i>	<i>Essere</i> * 2.
To be with the man <i>or</i> at the man's house.	{ Essere in casa dell' uomo.
	{ Essere dall' uomo.
To go to the man's house.	{ Andare in casa dell' uomo.
	{ Andare dall' uomo.
To be with his (one's) friend, <i>or</i> at his (one's) friend's house.	{ Essere in casa del suo amico.
	{ Essere dal suo amico.
To go to my father's house.	{ Andare da mio padre.
	{ Andare a casa di mio padre.

<i>At home.</i>	{ <i>In casa.</i>
	{ <i>In casa sua.</i>
To be at home.	Essere in casa.
To go home.	Andare a casa.

To be with me, <i>or</i> at my house.	Essere in casa mia	{ da me. ¹
To go to my house.	Andare a casa mia	
To be with him, <i>or</i> at his house.	Essere in casa sua	{ da lui.
To go to his house.	Andare a casa sua	
To be with us, <i>or</i> at our house.	Essere in casa nostra	{ da noi. ²
To go to our house.	Andare a casa nostra	
To be with you, <i>or</i> at your house.	Essere { in casa sua, di Lei	{ da Lei.
	„ „ vostra,	
	a casa sua, di	{ da voi.
	Lei	
	„ „ vostra,	
To be with them, <i>or</i> at their house.	Essere in casa loro	{ da loro.
To go to their house.	Andare a casa loro	
To be with some one, <i>or</i> at some one's house.	Essere in casa { d' uno.	{ di qualcuno.
	di qualcuno.	
To go to some one's house.	Andare a casa { d' uno.	{ di qualcuno.
	di qualcuno.	
To be with no one, <i>or</i> at no one's house.	Non essere { in casa di nessuno.	{ da nessuno.
	da nessuno.	
	in casa di alcuno.	
	da alcuno.	
To go to no one's house.	Non andare { a casa di nessuno.	{ da alcuno.
	da alcuno.	
	a casa di alcuno.	

¹ } We cannot say in Italian *da me, da noi*, when we speak of
² } ourselves. Ex. *Voglio andare a casa mia* (not *da me*), I

<i>At whose house? With whom?</i>	} <i>Da chi? in casa di chi?</i>
<i>To whose house?</i>	
To whose house do you wish to go?	<i>Da chi vuol Ella andare?</i>
I wish to go to no one's house.	<i>Non voglio andare a casa di nessuno.</i>
At whose house (with whom) is your brother?	<i>Da chi è il di Lei fratello?</i>
He is at ours (with us).	<i>È in casa nostra.</i>
Is he at home?	<i>È in casa?</i>
He is not at home.	<i>Non è in casa.</i>

Are you?	<i>È Ella? (Siete?)</i>
Tired.	<i>Stanco, lasso.</i>
Are you tired?	<i>È Ella stanca? (Siete lasso?)</i>
I am tired.	<i>Sono stanco.</i>
I am not tired.	<i>Non sono stanco.</i>
Is he?	<i>È egli?</i>
He is.	<i>Egli è.</i>
We are.	<i>Noi siamo.</i>
You are.	<i>Voi siete (Elleno sono).</i>
They are.	<i>Eglino sono.</i>

Thou art.	Sei.
-----------	------

<i>To drink.</i>	<i>Bere* or berevere* 2.</i>
<i>Where?</i>	<i>Dove? ove? onde? donde?</i>

What do you wish to do?	<i>Che vuol Ella fare?</i>
What does your brother wish to do?	<i>Che vuol fare il di Lei fratello?</i>

Is your father at home?	<i>È in casa vostro padre?</i>
What will the Germans buy?	<i>Che vogliono comprare i Tedeschi?</i>
They will buy something good.	<i>Vogliono comprare qualche cosa di buono.</i>
They will buy nothing.	<i>Non vogliono comprar niente.</i>
Do they wish to buy a book?	<i>Vogliono comprare un libro?</i>
They wish to buy one.	<i>Vogliono comprarne uno.</i>
Do you wish to drink any thing?	<i>Vuol Ella bere qualche cosa?</i>
I do not wish to drink any thing.	<i>Non voglio beber niente.</i>

wish to go home. But: *Mio fratello vuol venire da me*, My brother wishes to come to my house; *Vogliamo andare a casa nostra* (not *da noi*), We will go home. But: *Vogliamo, i Signori, venire da noi?* Gentlemen, will you come to our house?

EXERCISES.

43.

Do you wish to work?—I am willing to work, but I am tired.—Do you wish to break my glasses?—I do not wish to break them.—Are you willing to look for my son?—I am willing to look for him.—What do you wish to pick up?—I wish to pick up that crown and that fiancé.—Do you wish to pick up this or that sou?—I wish to pick up both.—Does your neighbour wish to buy these or those combs?—He wishes to buy both these and those.—Does that man wish to cut your foot?—He does not wish to cut mine, but his own.—Does the painter wish to burn some oil?—He wishes to burn some.—What does the shoemaker wish to mend?—He wishes to mend our old boots.—Does the tailor wish to mend any thing?—He wishes to mend some waistcoats.—Is our enemy willing to burn his ship?—He is not willing to burn his own, but ours.—Do you wish to do any thing?—I do not wish to do any thing.—What do you wish to do?—We wish to warm our tea and our father's coffee.—Do you wish to warm my brother's broth?—I am willing to warm it.—Is your servant willing to make my fire?—He is willing to make it, but he has no time.

44.

Do you wish to speak?—I do (wish to speak).—Is your son willing to study?—He is not willing to study.—What does he wish to do?—He wishes to drink some wine.—Do you wish to buy anything?—I wish to buy something.—What do you wish to buy?—I wish to buy some jewels.—Are you willing to mend my handkerchief?—I am willing to mend it.—Who will mend our son's clothes?—We will mend them.—Does the Russian wish to buy this or that picture?—He will buy neither this nor that.—What does he wish to buy?—He wishes to buy some ships.—Which looking-glasses does the Englishman wish to buy?—He wishes to buy those which the French have, and those which the Italians have.—Does your father wish to look for his umbrella or for his stick?—He wishes to look for both.—Do you wish to drink some wine?—I wish to drink some, but I have not any.—Does the sailor wish to drink some milk?—He does not wish to drink any; he is not thirsty.—What does the captain wish to drink?—He does not wish to drink anything.—What does the hatter wish to make?—He wishes to make some hats.—Does the carpenter wish to make anything?—He wishes to make a large ship.—Do you wish to buy a bird?—I wish to buy several.

45.

Does the Turk wish to buy more guns than knives?—He wishes to buy more of the latter than of the former.—How many corkscrews does your servant wish to buy?—He wishes to buy three.—Do you wish to buy many corks?—We wish to buy only a few, but our children wish to buy a good many.—Will your children seek

the gloves that we have?—They will not seek those that you have, but those which my father has.—Does any one wish to tear your coat?—No one wishes to tear it.—Who wishes to tear my boots?—Your children wish to tear them.—With whom is our father?—He is at his friend's.—To whose house do you wish to go?—I wish to go to yours.—Will you go to my house?—I will not go to yours, but to my brother's.—Does your father wish to go to his friend's?—He does not wish to go to his friend's, but to his neighbour's.—At whose house is your son?—He is at our house.—Will you look for our hats, or for those of the Dutch?—I will look for neither yours, nor for those of the Dutch; but I will look for mine, and for those of my good friends.

46.

Am I right in warming your broth?—You are right in warming it.—Is my servant right in warming your bed?—He is wrong in warming it.—Is he afraid to tear your coat?—He is not afraid to tear it, but to burn it.—Do your children wish to go to our friends?—They do not wish to go to your, but to our friends'.—Are your children at home?—They are not at home, but at their neighbours'.—Is the captain at home?—He is not at home, but at his brother's.—Is the foreigner at our brother's?—He is not at our brother's, but at our father's.—At whose house is the Englishman?—He is at yours.—Is the American at our house?—He is not at our house, but at his friend's.—With whom is the Italian?—He is with nobody; he is at home.—Do you wish to go home?—I do not wish to go home; I wish to go to my neighbour's son's.—Is your father at home?—No, Sir, he is not at home.—With whom is he?—He is with the good friends of our old neighbour.—Will you go to any one's house?—I will go to no one's house.

47.

Where is your son?—He is at home.—What will he do at home?—He wishes to drink some good wine.—Is your brother at home?—He is not at home; he is at the foreigner's.—What do you wish to drink?—I wish to drink some milk.—What will the German do at home?—He will work, and drink some good wine.—What have you at home?—I have nothing at home.—Has the merchant a desire to buy as much sugar as tea?—He wishes to buy as much of the one as of the other.—Are you tired?—I am not tired.—Who is tired?—My brother is tired.—Has the Spaniard a mind to buy as many horses as asses?—He wishes to buy more of the latter than of the former.—Do you wish to drink anything?—I do not wish to drink anything.—How many chickens does the cook wish to buy?—He wishes to buy four.—Do the French wish to buy anything?—They do not wish to buy anything.—Does the Spaniard wish to buy anything?—He wishes to buy something, but he has no money.—Do you wish to go (*venire*) to our brothers'?—I do not wish to go to their house, but to their children's.—Is the Scotchman at any body's house?—He is at nobody's house.—Where is he?—He is at his own house.

NINETEENTH LESSON.

Lezione Decimanona.

<i>Where? Whither? Where?</i>	{	<i>Ove? Dove?</i>
<i>to?</i>		<i>Onde? Donde?</i>
<i>There or thither, to it, at it,</i>	{	<i>Vi or ci.</i> ¹
<i>in it.</i>		
<i>To go thither.</i>		<i>Andarvi, andarci.</i>

Obs. The relative or local adverbs *ci* and *vi* are joined to the verb, which loses its final vowel.

To be there. *Esservi, esserci.*

<i>It to it, it there or thither.</i>		<i>Ce lo, ve lo.</i>
<i>Them there, or thither.</i>		<i>Ce li, ve li.</i>

<i>To take, to carry.</i>		<i>Portare 1.</i>
<i>To send.</i>		<i>Inviare 1. Mandare 1.</i>
<i>To lead, to take.</i>		<i>Menare 1.</i>
<i>To conduct.</i>		<i>Condurre* 2.</i>

<i>To take it there or thither.</i>		{ <i>Portarcelo.</i>
		{ <i>Portarvelo.</i>

<i>Him (object of the verb).</i>		<i>Lo or l'.</i>
<i>Them (—).</i>		<i>Li or gli.</i>

<i>Him there, or thither.</i>		<i>Ce lo, ve lo.</i>
<i>To send him thither.</i>		{ <i>Inviarcelo.</i>
		{ <i>Inviarvelo.*</i>
<i>To take him thither.</i>		{ <i>Menarvelo.</i>
		{ <i>Condurvelo.</i>

¹ When not united to the verb, *there* is expressed by *ivi, là, lì.*

Them there, or thither.
Some of it there, or thither.
 To carry them thither.
 To carry some thither.

Ce li (or gli). Ve li (or gli).
Fene, cene.
 Portarceli, portarveli.
 Portarcene, portarvene.

Will you send him to my father?	{	Vuol Ella inviarlo a casa di mio padre?
		Vuol Ella mandarlo da mio padre.
I will send him thither, or to him.	{	Voglio inviarvelo.
		Voglio inviarcelo.
		Voglio mandarvelo.
		Voglio mandarcelo.

The physician.
To come.

Il medico.
Venire 3.*

When?
 To-morrow.
 To-day.

Quando?
 Domani.
 Oggi.

Somewhere or whither, any where or whither.

In qualche luogo.

No where, not any where.

In nessun luogo.

Do you wish to go any where?

Vuol Ella andare in qualche luogo?

I wish to go some where.

Voglio andare in qualche luogo.

I do not wish to go any where.

Non voglio andare in nessun luogo.

To write.
 At what o'clock?
 At one o'clock.
 At two o'clock.

Scrivere 2.*
 A che ora?
 Al tocco. A un' ora.
 Alle due. A due ore.

Half.
 The quarter.
 At half-past one.
 At a quarter past one.
 At a quarter past two.

Mezzo; *feminine*, Mezza.
 Il quarto.
 { Al tocco e mezzo.
 { All' una e mezzo.
 { Al tocco e un quarto.
 { All' una e un quarto.
 { Alle due un quarto.

At a quarter to one.

At twelve o'clock.

At twelve o'clock at night (mid-night).

Less.

{ Al tocco meno un quarto.

{ All' una meno un quarto.

A mezzo giorno. Al meriggio.

A mezza notte.

Meno.

EXERCISES.

48.

Do you wish to go home?—I wish to go thither.—Does your son wish to go to my house?—He wishes to go there.—Is your brother at home?—He is there (*Egli c' è* or *egli v' è*).—Whither do you wish to go?—I wish to go home.—Do your children wish to go to my house?—They do not wish to go there.—To whom will you take that note?—I will take it to my neighbour.—Will your servant take my note to your father's?—He will take it there.—Will your brother carry my guns to the Russian's?—He will carry them thither.—To whom do our enemies wish to carry our guns?—They wish to carry them to the Turks.—Whither will the shoemaker carry my boots?—He will carry them to your house.—Will he carry them home?—He will not carry them thither.—Will you come to my house?—I will not come.—Whither do you wish to go?—I wish to go to the good Englishmen's.—Will the good Italians go to our house?—They will not go thither.—Whither do they wish to go?—They will go no where.

49.

Will you take your son to my house?—I will not take him to your house, but to the captain's.—When will you take him to the captain's?—I will take him there to-morrow.—Do you wish to take my children to the physician?—I will take them thither.—When will you take them thither?—I will take them thither to-day.—At what o'clock will you take them thither?—At half-past two.—When will you send your servant to the physician?—I will send him there to-day.—At what o'clock?—At a quarter past ten.—Will you go any where?—I will go some where.—Whither will you go?—I will go to the Scotchman's.—Will the Irishman come to your house?—He will come to my house.—Will your son go to any one's house?—He will go to some one's house.—To whose house does he wish to go?—He wishes to go to his friends'.—Will the Spaniards go any where?—They will go no where.—Will our friend go to any one's house?—He will go to no one's house.

50.

When will you take your youth to the painter's?—I will take him thither to-day.—Whither will he carry these birds?—He will carry them no where.—Will you take the physician to this man?—I will take him there.—When will the physician go to your bro-

ther's?—He will go there to-day.—Will you send a servant to me?—I will send one.—Will you send a child to the painter's?—I will send one (thither).—In whose house is the captain?—He is with nobody.—Has your brother time to come to my house?—He has no time to come (there).—Will the Frenchman write one more note?—He will write one more.—Has your friend a mind to write as many notes as I?—He has a mind to write quite as many.—To whose house does he wish to send them?—He will send them to his friends.—Who wishes to write little notes?—The young man wishes to write some.—Do you wish to carry many books to my father's?—I will only carry a few.

51.

Will you send one more trunk to our friend's?—I will send several more (there).—How many more hats does the hatter wish to send?—He wishes to send six more.—Will the tailor send as many boots as the shoemaker?—He will send less.—Has your son the courage to go to the captain's?—He has the courage to go (there), but he has no time.—Do you wish to buy as many dogs as horses?—I will buy more of the latter than of the former.—At what o'clock do you wish to send your servant to the Dutchman's?—I will send him thither at a quarter to six.—At what o'clock is your father at home?—He is at home at twelve o'clock.—At what o'clock does your friend wish to write his notes?—He will write them at midnight.—Are you afraid to go to the captain's?—I am not afraid, but ashamed to go there.

TWENTIETH LESSON.

Lezione Ventesima.

<i>To, meaning in order to.</i>	<i>Per.</i>
Have you money to buy bread?	Ha Ella danaro per comprare del pane?
I have some to buy some.	Ne ho per comprarne.
Will you go to your brother's in order to see him?	Vuole Ella andare dal di Lei fratello per vederlo?
I have no time to go (there) to see him.	Non ho tempo di andarvi (d'andarvi) per vederlo.
Has your brother a knife to cut his bread?	Ha un coltello il di Lei fratello per tagliare il suo pane?
He has none to cut it.	Non ne ha per tagliarlo.

<i>To sweep.</i>	{ <i>Scopare</i> 1.
	{ <i>Spazzare</i> 1.
<i>To eat.</i>	<i>Mangiare</i> 1.
<i>To kill.</i>	<i>Ammazzare</i> 1. <i>Uccidere</i> * 2.
<i>To salt.</i>	<i>Salare</i> 1. (<i>Mettere</i> * in sale.)

<i>To be able (can).</i>	<i>Potere</i> * 2.
Can you? or are you able?	Può Ella? (potete?)
I can, or I am able.	Posso.
I cannot, I am not able.	Non posso.
Can he? or is he able?	Può egli?
He can, or he is able.	Egli può.
He cannot, he is unable.	Non può.
We can, we are able.	Possiamo.
You can, you are able.	Potete (può).
They can, they are able.	Possono (ponno).

Thou canst, art able. *Puoi.*

<i>Me</i>	<i>Mi.</i>
(direct object or accusative).	
<i>Him.</i>	<i>Lo.</i>
(direct object or accusative).	

<i>To see.</i>	<i>Vedere</i> * 2.
To see me.	Vedermi.
To see him.	Vederlo.
To see the man.	Vedere l' uomo.
To kill him.	Ammazzarlo, ucciderlo.

To.

	<i>A.</i>	
<i>To the or at the.</i>	{ SING. <i>Al, allo,</i>	(See Lesson. IX.)
	<i>all'.</i>	
	{ PLUR. <i>Ai (a'),</i>	
	<i>agli, agl'.</i>	

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>	<i>Singolare.</i>	<i>Plurale.</i>
To the friend.	To the friends.	All' amico.	Agli amici.
To the man.	To the men.	All' uomo.	Agli uomini.
To the captain.	To the captains.	Al capitano.	Ai capitani.
To the coat.	To the coats.	All' abito.	Agli abiti.
To the book.	To the books.	Al libro.	Ai libri.
To the Englishman.	To the English.	All' Inglese.	Agli Inglesi.
To the Italian.	To the Italians.	All' Italiano.	Agli Italiani.

<i>To him</i>	<i>Gli.</i>
(indirect object or dative).	
<i>To me.</i>	<i>Mi.</i>

To speak to me.	Parlarmi.
To speak to him.	Parlargli.
To write to him.	Scrivergli.
To write to me.	Scrivermi.
To speak to the man.	Parlare all' uomo.
To speak to the captain.	Parlare al capitano.
To write to the captain.	Scrivere al capitano.

Can you write to me?	Può Ella scrivermi?
I can write to you.	Posso scriverle (or' scrivervi).
Can the man speak to you?	Può parlarle (parlarvi) l' uomo?
He can speak to me.	Può parlarmi.
Will you write to your brother?	Vuole scrivere al di Lei fratello?
I will write to him.	Voglio scrivergli.

The basket.	Il canestro, il paniere.
The carpet.	Il tappeto.
The floor.	Il pavimento.
The cat.	Il gatto.

Will you send the book to the man?	Vuole mandare il libro all' uomo?
I will send it to him.	Voglio mandarglielo.

Obs. A. When the pronoun *gli* precedes *lo* or *ne*, an *e* is inserted between the two pronouns.

When will you send it to him?	Quando vuole mandarglielo?
I will send it to him to-morrow.	Voglio mandarglielo domani.

			SINGULAR.	
			<i>Indirect object, or Dative.</i>	<i>Direct object, or Accusative.</i>
First person:	<i>To me.</i>	<i>Me.</i>	<i>Mi,</i> or <i>a me.</i>	<i>Me,</i> or <i>mi.</i>
Third person:	<i>To him.</i>	<i>Him.</i>	<i>Gli,</i> — <i>a lui.</i>	<i>Lo,</i> — <i>lui.</i>

			PLURAL.	
			<i>Ci,</i> <i>ne,</i> or <i>a noi.</i>	<i>Noi,</i> or <i>ci.</i>
First person:	<i>To us.</i>	<i>Us.</i>	<i>Vi,</i> — <i>a voi.</i>	<i>Vi,</i> — <i>voi.</i>
Second person:	<i>To you.</i>	<i>You.</i>		
Third person:	<i>To them.</i>	<i>Them.</i>	<i>Loro,</i> — <i>a loro.</i>	<i>Loro,</i> — <i>li.</i>

Does he wish to speak to you?	Vuol parlarle (parlarvi)?
He does not wish to speak to me, but to you.	Non vuol parlare a me, ma a Lei.
Do you wish to write to him?	Vuole Ella scrivergli?
I do not wish to write to him, but to his brother.	Non voglio scrivere a lui, ma a suo fratello.

The following is the order in which the personal pronouns must be placed in the sentence:—

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>	<i>Singolare.</i>	<i>Plurale.</i>
It to me.	Them to me.	† Me lo.	† Me li.
It to him.	Them to him.	† Glielo.	† Glieli.
It to us.	Them to us.	† Ce lo (well).	† Ce li.
It to you.	Them to you.	† Ve lo.	† Ve li.
It to them.	Them to them.	Lo loro.	Li loro.

Obs. B. The pronouns: *mi, ti, ci, vi, si*, are changed into: *me, te, ce, ve, se*, when they are followed by one of the pronouns: *lo, la, li, gli, le, ne*.

When will you send me the basket?	Quando vuol Ella mandarmi il paniere?
I will send it you to-day.	Voglio mandarglielo (mandarvelo) oggi.

In the following manner the relative pronoun *ne*, some of it, is placed with regard to the personal pronoun:—

Some to me.	† Me ne.
Some to him.	† Gliene.
Some to us.	† Ce ne.
Some to you.	† Ve ne.
Some to them.	Ne loro.

To give.	Dare* 1.
To lend.	Prestare 1.

Are you willing to give me some bread?	Vuol darmi del pane?
I am willing to give you some.	Voglio dargliene (darvene).
Will you lend my brother some money?	Vuol prestare del danaro a mio fratello?
I will lend him some.	Voglio prestargliene.

A TABLE OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

SINGULAR.				
	FIRST PERSON.	SECOND PERSON.	THIRD PERSON.	
			Masculine.	Feminine.
Subject, or Nominative . . .	<i>Io,</i>	<i>Tu,</i>	<i>Egli, esso, ei, e', he.</i>	<i>Ell'a, essa, she.</i>
Object indirect in the Genitive	<i>Di me,</i>	<i>Di te,</i>	<i>Di lui,</i>	<i>Di lei,</i>
Object indirect in the Dative	<i>Me, mi, a me,</i>	<i>Te, ti, a te,</i>	<i>Gli, li, a lui,</i>	<i>Le, a lei,</i>
Object direct, or Accusative	<i>Me, mi,</i>	<i>Te, ti,</i>	<i>Lui, lo, il, him.</i>	<i>Lei, lei, — her.</i>
Object indirect in the Ablative	<i>Da me,</i>	<i>Da te,</i>	<i>Da lui,</i>	<i>Da lei,</i>
PLURAL.				
Subject, or Nominative . . .	<i>Noi,</i>	<i>Voi,</i>	<i>Egliuo, essi, they.</i>	<i>Ell'eno, esse, they.</i>
Object indirect in the Genitive	<i>Di noi,</i>	<i>Di voi,</i>	<i>Di loro,</i>	<i>Di loro,</i>
Object indirect in the Dative	<i>A noi, ci, ce, ne, to us.</i>	<i>Vi, ve, a voi, to you.</i>	<i>Loro, a loro, to them.</i>	<i>Loro, a loro, to them.</i>
Object direct, or Accusative	<i>Ci, ce, ne, noi, us.</i>	<i>Vi, ve, voi, you.</i>	<i>Loro, gli, li, them.</i>	<i>Le, loro, them.</i>
Object indirect in the Ablative	<i>Da noi,</i>	<i>Da voi,</i>	<i>Da loro,</i>	<i>Da loro,</i>

EXERCISES.

52.

Has the carpenter money enough to buy a hammer?—He has enough to buy one.—Has the captain money enough to buy a ship?—He has not enough to buy one.—Has the peasant a desire to buy some bread?—He has a desire to buy some, but he has not money enough to buy some.—Has your son ink to write a note?—He has not any to write one.—Have you time to see my brother?—I have no time to see him.—Does your father wish to see me?—He does not wish to see you.—Has your servant a broom (*uno scopino*) to sweep the floor?—He has one to sweep it.—Is he willing to sweep it?—He is willing to sweep it.—Has the sailor money to buy some tea?—He has none to buy any.—Has your cook money to buy some beef?—He has some to buy some.—Has he money to buy some chickens?—He has some to buy some.—Have you salt enough to salt my beef?—I have enough to salt it.—Will your friend come to my house in order to see me?—He will neither come to your house, nor see you.—Has your neighbour a desire to kill his horse?—He has no desire to kill it.—Will you kill your friends?—I will only kill my enemies.

53.

Can you cut me some bread?—I can cut you some.—Have you a knife to cut me some?—I have one.—Can you mend my gloves?—I can mend them, but I have no wish to do it.—Can the tailor make me a coat?—He can make you one.—Will you speak to the physician?—I will speak to him.—Does your son wish to see me in order to speak to me?—He wishes to see you in order to give you a crown.—Does he wish to kill me?—He does not wish to kill you; he only wishes to see you.—Does the son of our old friend wish to kill an ox?—He wishes to kill two.—Who has a mind to kill our cat?—Our neighbour's child has a mind to kill it.—How much money can you send me?—I can send you twenty francs.—Will you send me my carpet?—I will send it you.—Will you send the shoemaker anything?—I will send him my boots.—Will you send him your coats?—No, I will send them to my tailor.—Can the tailor send me my coat?—He cannot send it you.—Are your children able to write to me?—They are able to write to you.—Will you lend me your basket?—I will lend it you.

54.

Have you a glass to drink your wine?—I have one, but I have no wine; I have only tea.—Will you give me money to buy some?—I will give you some, but I have only a little.—Will you give me that which you have?—I will give it you.—Can you drink as much

wine as milk?—I can drink as much of the one as of the other.—Has our neighbour any coals to make a fire?—He has some to make one, but he has no money to buy bread and butter.—Are you willing to lend him some?—I am willing to lend him some.—Do you wish to speak to the German?—I wish to speak to him.—Where is he?—He is with the son of the American.—Does the German wish to speak to me?—He wishes to speak to you.—Does he wish to speak to my brother or to yours?—He wishes to speak to both.—Can the children of our neighbour work?—They can work, but they will not.

55.

Do you wish to speak to the children of the Dutchman?—I wish to speak to them.—What will you give them?—I will give them good petty-patties.—Will you lend them anything?—I am willing to lend them something.—Can you lend them anything?—I cannot lend them anything; I have nothing.—Has the cook some more salt to salt the beef?—He has a little more.—Has he some more rice?—He has a great deal more.—Will he give me some?—He will give you some.—Will he give some to my little children?—He will give them some.—Will he kill this or that chicken?—He will neither kill this nor that.—Which ox will he kill?—He will kill that of the good peasant.—Will he kill this or that ox?—He will kill both.—Who will send us biscuits?—The baker will send you some.—Have you anything to do?—I have nothing to do.

56.

What has your son to do?—He has to write to his good friends and to the captain.—To whom do you wish to speak?—I wish to speak to the Italians and to the French.—Do you wish to give them some money?—I wish to give them some.—Do you wish to give this man some bread?—I wish to give him some.—Will you give him a coat?—I will give him one.—Will your friends give me some coffee?—They will give you some.—Will you lend me your books?—I will lend them to you.—Will you lend your neighbours your mattress?—I will not lend it to them.—Will you lend them the looking-glass?—I will lend it to them.—To whom will you lend your umbrellas?—I will lend them to my friends.—To whom does your friend wish to lend his bed?—He will lend it to nobody.

TWENTY-FIRST LESSON.

Lezione Ventesima prima.

<i>To whom?</i>	<i>A chi?</i> (a question followed by the object indirect in the dative.)
<i>Whom?</i>	<i>Chi?</i> (for persons.)
<i>What?</i>	<i>Che?</i> (for things.)

DECLENSION OF THE INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS:

Chi? Who?—Che? What?

	<i>For persons.</i>	<i>For things.</i>	<i>For persons.</i>	<i>For things.</i>
Subject, or Nomina-tive. } <i>Who?</i> <i>What?</i>	<i>Chi?</i>	<i>Che?</i>		
Object indi-rect in the Genitive. } <i>Of whom?</i> <i>Of what?</i>	<i>Di chi?</i>	<i>Di che?</i>		
Object indi-rect in the Dative. } <i>To whom?</i> <i>To what?</i>	<i>A chi?</i>	<i>A che?</i>		
Object di-rect, or Ac-cusative. } <i>Whom?</i> <i>What?</i>	<i>Chi?</i>	<i>Che?</i>		
Object indi-rect in the Ablative. } <i>From whom?</i> <i>From what?</i>	<i>Da chi?</i>	<i>Da che?</i>		

Chi? who? has no plural, and always refers to persons, without distinction of sex, as *who* in English.

Che? what? has no plural, and always relates to things.

Obs. A. In *che*, before a vowel, an apostrophe may be substituted for the letter *e*, but not in *chi* for the letter *i*.

To answer.	<i>Rispondere* 2.</i>
To answer the man.	<i>Rispondere all' uomo.</i>
To answer the men.	<i>Rispondere agli uomini.</i>

Who is it?
Of whom do you wish to speak?
What do you wish to say?
To whom do you wish to answer?
I wish to answer my brother.
To answer him.
To answer you.

To answer them.

Obs. B. Loro, them or to them, is not joined to the verb like the other pronouns.

Chi è?
Di chi vuol parlare?
Che vuol dire?
Che cosa vuol dire?
A chi vuole rispondere?
Voglio rispondere a miofratello.
Rispondergli.
Risponderle (the feminine *le* is here used out of politeness).
Risponder loro.

To answer the note.
To answer it.
To answer the notes.
To answer them.

To it, to them.

Will you answer my note?
I will answer it.
Will you answer the men?
I will answer them.
My father wishes to speak to them.

Rispondere al biglietto.
Risponderci, rispondervi.
Rispondere ai biglietti.
Risponderci, rispondervi.
Ci or vi.
Vuol rispondere al mio biglietto?
Voglio risponderci (rispondervi).
Vuol rispondere agli uomini?
Voglio risponder loro.
Mio padre vuol parlar loro?

The theatre.
The play.
The ball.

To or at the theatre.
To — at the play.
To — at the ball.
To — at the garden.
The magazine, }
The warehouse, }
The storehouse. }
The counting-house.
The market.

Il teatro.
Lo spettacolo.
Il ballo.

Singolare. Plurale.
Al teatro. Ai teatri.
Allo spettacolo. Agli spettacoli.
Al ballo. Ai balli.
Al giardino. Ai giardini.

Il magazzino.

Il banco (lo studio).
Il mercato.

There, thither.

To go there, thither.
To be there.

Do you wish to go to the theatre?
I wish to go there.
Is your brother at the theatre?

Ci, or vi.

Andarci or andarvi.
Esserci or esservi.
Vuol Ella andare al teatro?
Voglio andarci (andarvi).
Il di Lei fratello è al teatro (or in teatro)?

He is there.	Vi è.
He is not there.	Non c'è (non vi è).
Where is he?	Ov'è egli?

<i>In.</i>	<i>Nel, nello, nei, negli, in.</i>
Is your father in his garden?	È nel suo giardino il di Lei padre?
He is there.	Egli c'è or egli v'è.
Where is the merchant?	Dov'è il mercante?
He is in his warehouse.	È nel suo magazzino.

What have you to do?	Che ha Ella da fare?
----------------------	----------------------

Obs. C. The preposition *to* is rendered by *da* when it precedes an infinitive depending on the verb *avere*, to have, or *essere*, to be.

I have nothing to do.	Non ho da far niente.
What has the man to drink?	Che ha da bere l'uomo?
He has nothing to drink.	Non ha da ber niente.
Have you anything to do?	Ha Ella qualche cosa da fare?
I have to answer a note.	Ho da rispondere ad un biglietto.
I have to speak to your brother.	Ho da parlare al di Lei fratello.
Where is your brother?	Dov'è suo fratello?
The place.	Il luogo.
He is in that place.	È in quel luogo.
Whither does he wish to go?	Ove vuol egli andare?
He wishes to go into the garden.	Vuol'andare al giardino.
Does he wish to go to the garden?	Vuol egli andare al giardino?
He wishes to go there.	Vuol andarci (or andarvi).

EXERCISES.

57.

Will you write to me?—I will write to you.—Will you write to the Italian?—I will write to him.—Will your brother write to the Englishmen?—He will write to them, but they have no mind to answer him.—Will you answer your friend?—I will answer him.—But whom will you answer?—I will answer my good father.—Will you not answer your good friends?—I will answer them.—Who will write to you?—The Russian wishes to write to me.—Will you answer him?—I will not answer him.—Who will write to our friends?—The children of our neighbour will write to them.—Will they answer them?—They will answer them.—To whom do you wish to write?—I wish to write to the Russian.—Will he answer you?—He wishes to answer me, but he cannot.—Can the Spaniards answer us?—They cannot answer us, but we can answer them.—To whom do you wish to send this note?—I wish to send it to the joiner.

58.

What have you to do?—I have to write.—What have you to write?—I have to write a note.—To whom?—To the carpenter.—What has your father to drink?—He has some good wine to drink.—Has your servant anything to drink?—He has to drink some tea.—What has the shoemaker to do?—He has to mend my boots.—What have you to mend?—I have to mend my thread handkerchiefs.—To whom have you to speak?—I have to speak to the captain.—When will you speak to him?—To-day.—Where will you speak to him?—At his house.—To whom has your brother to speak?—He has to speak to your son.—What has the Englishman to do?—He has to answer a note.—Which note has he to answer?—He has to answer that of the good German.—Have I to answer the note of the Frenchman.—You have to answer it.—Which note have you to answer?—I have to answer that of my good friend.—Has your father to answer a note?—He has to answer one.—Who has to answer notes?—Our children have to answer a few.—Will you answer the notes of the merchants?—I will answer them.—Will your brother answer this or that note?—He will answer neither this nor that.—Will any one answer my note?—No one will answer it.

59.

Which notes will your father answer?—He will answer only those of his good friends.—Will he answer my note?—He will answer it.—Have you to answer any one?—I have to answer no one.—Who will answer my notes?—Your friends will answer them.—Have you a mind to go to the ball?—I have a mind to go there.—When will you go there?—To-day.—At what o'clock?—At half-past ten.—When will you take your child to the play?—I will take him there to-morrow.—At what o'clock will you take him there?—At a quarter to six.—Where is your son?—He is at the play.—Is your friend at the ball?—He is there.—Where is the merchant?—He is in his counting-house.—Where do you wish to take me to?—I wish to take you to my warehouse.—Where does your cook wish to go?—He wishes to go to the market.—Is your brother at the market?—He is not there.—Where is he?—He is in his warehouse.

60.

Where is the Dutchman?—He is in his granary.—Will you come to my house in order to go to the play?—I will come to your house, but I have no mind to go to the play.—Where is the Irishman?—He is at the market.—To which theatre do you wish to go?—I wish to go to that of the French.—Will you go to my garden or to that of the Scotchman?—I will go neither to yours

nor to that of the Scotchman; I wish to go to that of the Italian.—Does the physician wish to go to our warehouses or to those of the Dutch?—He will go neither to yours nor to those of the Dutch, but to those of the French.—What do you wish to buy at the market?—I wish to buy a basket and some carpets.—Where do you wish to take them?—I will take them home.

61.

How many carpets do you wish to buy?—I wish to buy two.—To whom do you wish to give them?—I will give them to my servant.—Has he a mind to sweep the floor?—He has a mind to do it, but he has no time.—Have the English many warehouses?—They have many.—Have the French as many dogs as cats?—They have more of the latter than of the former.—Have you many guns in your warehouses?—We have many there, but we have but little corn.—Do you wish to see our guns?—I will go into your warehouses in order to see them.—Do you wish to buy anything?—I wish to buy something.—What do you wish to buy?—I wish to buy a pocket-book (*un portafolio*), a looking-glass, and a gun.—Where will you buy your trunk?—I will buy it at the market.—Have you as much wine as tea in your store-houses?—We have as much of the one as of the other.—Who wishes to tear my coat?—No one wishes to tear it.

62.

Will the English give us some bread?—They will give you some.—Will they give us as much better as bread?—They will give you more of the latter than of the former.—Will you give this man a franc?—I will give him several.—How many francs will you give him?—I will give him five.—What will the French lend us?—They will lend us many books.—Have you time to write to the merchant?—I wish to write to him, but I have no time to-day.—When will you answer the German?—I will answer him to-morrow.—At what o'clock?—At eight.—Where does the Spaniard wish to go?—He wishes to go nowhere.—Does your servant wish to warm my broth?—He wishes to warm it.—Is he willing to make my fire?—He is willing to make it.—Where does the baker wish to go?—He wishes to go to the wood.—Where is the youth?—He is at the play.—Who is at the captain's ball?—Our children and our friends are there.

TWENTY-SECOND LESSON.

Lezione Ventesima seconda.

	<i>Singolare.</i>	<i>Plurale.</i>
To or at the corner.	Nel } canto.	Nei } canti.
To or at the hole.	Al }	Ai }
In the hole, in the holes.	Nel } buco.	Nei } buchi. ¹
Where is your cat?	Nel buco.	Nei buchi.
It is in the bag.	Ove è il suo gatto?	
	E nel sacco.	
<hr/>		
To or at the bottom.	{ In fondo.	
To or at the bottom of the bag.	{ Al fondo.	
At the corner of the fire.	Nel fondo del sacco.	
	Accanto del fuoco.	
<hr/>		
To or at the end.	Al fine.	
To the end of the wood.	Al fine del bosco.	
To the end of the woods.	Al fine dei boschi.	
<hr/>		
<i>To send for.</i>	<i>Mandare a cercare.</i>	
<i>To go for, to fetch.</i>	<i>Andare a cercare.</i>	
Will you send for some wine?	Vuol mandare a cercar del vino?	
I will send for some.	Voglio mandarne a cercare.	
Will your son go for some bread?	Il di Lei figlio vuol andare a cercar del pane?	
He will not go for any.	Non vuol andarne a cercare.	
I will send for the physician.	Voglio mandar a cercare il medico.	
I will send for him.	Voglio mandarlo a cercare.	
He will send for my brothers.	Vuol mandar a cercare i miei fratelli.	
He will send for them.	Vuol mandarli a cercare.	
Will you send for glasses?	Vuol Ella mandar a cercare dei bicchieri?	
I will send for some.	Voglio mandarne a cercare.	

¹ *The hole* is rendered by *il buco* (mas.), and *la buca* (fem.); but the feminine, *la buca*, is used to designate a comparatively large hole, whilst the masculine, *il buco*, is used to designate a small hole. Ex. *Il gatto, il cane è nella buca*, the cat, the dog is in the hole; *un buco nel vestito*, a hole in the coat; *gli uccelli hanno fatto il loro nido nella buca*, the birds have made their nest in the hole.

What have you to do?
I have to go to the market.

Che ha Ella da fare?
Ho da andare al mercato (Devo andare al mercato).

What have you to drink?
We have to drink some good wine.
You have to mend your handkerchiefs.

Che hanno Elleno da bere?
Abbiamo da bere del buon vino.
Ha da raccomodare i di Lei fazzoletti.

They have.
What have the men to do?
They have to go to the warehouse.

Hanno.
Che hanno da fare gli uomini?
Hanno ad andare al magazzino.

This evening (to night).
In the evening.
This morning.
In the morning.

Stasera.
La sera, or nella sera.
Stamattina (stamane).
{ La mattina, il mattino.
Nella mattina, nel mattino.

Now, at present.

{ Adesso, in questo punto.
Ora.

Thou.
Thou hast—thou art.

Tu.²
Tu hai (ài)—tu sei.

² We have already seen (Note ², Lesson I.) in what instances the Italians use the second person singular; let us, in addition, observe, that it is a mark of intimacy among friends, and is used by parents and children, brothers and sisters, husbands and wives, towards one another: in general, it implies familiarity, founded on affection and fondness, or hatred and contempt. *Voi*, as we have seen in the above note, is used towards servants and persons with whom we are on a familiar footing, as: *Che dite voi?* What do you say? *Mi avete veduto?* Have you seen me? *No, non vi ho veduto;* No, I have not seen you. *Io vi dirò,* I will tell you. But the most polite way of addressing a person is with *Vossignoria* (V. S.) contracted and abridged from *Vostra Signoria*, your worship, and in speaking to persons of rank, *Vossignoria Illustrissima*, *Vostra Eccellenza*, and to persons of royal blood, *Vostra Altezza*; to monarchs, *Vostra Maestà*.

All these titles being expressed by feminine substantives in the singular, the word *Ella* is used to avoid a continual repetition of them; it must therefore always be considered as a relative to, or a substitute for the above titles.

According to this principle the nominative should always be *Ella* (as it is the custom in Tuscany), and the accusative *Lei*, as: *Sta Ella*

John, art thou here?
Yes, Sir, I am.

Giovanni, sei tu là?
Sì, Signore, ci sono.

bene? Are you well? *Come ha Ella dormito?* How have you slept? In Rome, however, and the rest of Italy, they say in the nominative also *Lei* (generally considered as incorrect), as: *Stà bene Lei?* Are you well? *Come ha dormito Lei?* How have you slept? and it would sound affected, if, according to the Florentine manner, you were to use there *Ella*.

In addressing with *Ella*, the participle or adjective agrees, according to the best authors, with the feminine noun, *Fossignoria*. Ex. *Se Ella si fosse compiaciuta*, If you had been so kind. *Quant'è già ch' Ella è arrivata?* How long is it since you arrived? (and not *compiaciuto, arrivato*.)

The five cases are therefore used in the following manner:—

You.	N.	<i>Fossignoria.</i>	<i>Ella</i> , also <i>Lei</i> .
Your.	G.	<i>di Fossignoria.</i>	<i>Di Lei (suo, sua).</i>
To you.	D.	<i>a Fossignoria.</i>	<i>A Lei, Le.</i>
You.	Acc.	<i>Fossignoria.</i>	<i>Lei, La.</i>
From you.	Abl.	<i>da Fossignoria.</i>	<i>Da Lei.</i>

Obs. If a particular stress is to be put on the person addressed, *a Lei* is used in the dative, and *Lei* in the accusative; if not, *Le* in the dative, and *La* in the accusative. If *Le* happens to meet with one of the pronouns, *lo, la, li, le, ne*, it is changed into *gli*, as: *glielo, gliela*, it to you; *glieli, gliele*, them to you; *gliene*, some to you.

EXAMPLES.

NOMINATIVE.

Where are you going?	Dove va <i>Fossignoria?</i> (or <i>Ella?</i> or <i>Lei?</i>)
Have you always been well?	È <i>Ella</i> stata sempre bene?
You look very well.	<i>Ella (Lei)</i> ha buonissima ciera.

GENITIVE.

Your observation is right.	{ Il riflesso di <i>V. S.</i> (or di <i>T. Ecc.</i>) è giusto, or il di <i>Lei</i> riflesso, or il suo riflesso è giusto.
Where are your gloves?	{ Dove sono i di <i>Lei</i> guanti? or i suoi guanti?
Which is your room?	{ Qual è la di <i>Lei</i> camera? or la sua camera?
I sit down here near you.	Io seggo qui presso di <i>Lei</i> .

DATIVE.

Let us take a walk, if it pleases you (<i>i.e.</i> if you please).	Andiamo a spasso, se <i>Le</i> piace.
That will neither please you nor him.	Questo non piacerà nè a <i>Lei</i> , nè a lui.
I thank you very humbly.	<i>Le</i> rendo devotissime grazie.

Art thou fatigued?
I am not fatigued.
Are the men tired?

Sei stanco?
Non sono stanco.
Sono stanchi gli uomini?

Obs. A. The adjective in Italian, the same as in French, when it is preceded by a noun or pronoun, must agree with it in number; that is, if the noun or pronoun is in the plural, the adjective must be put in the same number, as may be seen from the example in the question above, and in the answer below.

They are not tired. | Non sono stanchi.

Obs. B. It will moreover be noticed, that the adjectives in Italian form their plural number exactly in the same manner as the nouns or substantives.

I thank you and your uncle very much.
Listen then, I will tell it you directly.
He is not willing to tell it either you or me.
To you alone I will say it.
I shall be eternally grateful to you for it.
I will let you see them.
I will show them you and your sister.
I will show it you to-morrow.
Well! to you I can refuse nothing.

Rendo a *Lei* e al Signor zio le dovute grazie.
Ascolti dunque, *glielo* dirò subito.
Non *lo* vuol dire nè a *Lei*, nè a me.
Lo dirò a *Lei* sola.
Glíene sarò eternamente obbligato.
Glíeli farò vedere.
Li farò vedere a *Lei* e alla sorella.
Glíela (fem.) mostrerò domani.
Alla buon' ora! a *Lei* non posso dar un rifiuto.

ACCUSATIVE.

Do not trouble yourself, I pray.
I begged you and not your brother.
Pardon me if I interrupt you.
He has interrupted you and us.
I thank you for it.
Do not refuse me that favour, I entreat you.
To-morrow I shall go with you to my cousin's.

Nón s' incomodi, *La* prego.
Ho pregato *Lei* e non il fratello.
Scusi, se *La* interrompo.
Egli ha interrotto *Lei* e noi.
Ne *La* ringrazio.
Via, non mi rifiuti questo favore, ne *La* scongiuro.
Domani andrò con *Lei* dal cugino.

ABLATIVE.

This depends upon you.
That comes from you.
He was already twice at your house.

Questo dipende da *Lei*.
Questo proviene da *Lei*.
Ei fu già due volte da *Lei*.

Thou wilt (wishest)—thou artable (canst).	Vuoi—Puoi.
Art thou willing to make my fire?	Vuoi fare il mio fuoco?
I am willing to make it, but I cannot.	Bramo farlo, ma non posso.

Art thou afraid?	† Hai paura?
I am not afraid; I am cold.	† Non ho paura; ho freddo.
Art thou hungry?	† Hai fame?

<i>To sell.</i>	<i>Vendere</i> 2.
<i>To tell, to say.</i>	<i>Dire</i> * 3.
To tell some one, to say to some one.	Dire a qualcuno.

The word, the jest, device, motto.	{ Il vocabolo (la parola, a fem noun).
Will you tell the servant to make the fire?	{ Il motto. Vuol dire al servitore di fare il fuoco?
I will tell him to make it.	{ Voglio dirgli di farlo. Gli voglio dire di farlo.

Thy.	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Thine.	Tuo.	Tuoi.
Thy book—Thy books.	Il tuo.	I tuoi.
	Il tuo libro.	I tuoi libri.

With me, with thee, with him.	Meco, teco, seco (con lui).
With her.	Con lei.
With us, with you, with them.	Con noi, con voi, con loro.

Wilt thou go with me?	Vuoi venir meco?
-----------------------	------------------

Obs. C. When a person is spoken to, the verb *to go* is rendered by *venire*, to come.

I will not go with thee, but with him.	{ Non voglio venir teco, ma con lui. Non voglio venir con te, ma con lui.
---	---

With our friends.	Coi (plur. of <i>col</i>) nostri amici.
I will go with our good friends.	Voglio andare coi nostri buoni amici.

EXERCISES.

63.

Will you send for some sugar?—I will send for some.—Son (*figlio mio*), wilt thou go for some petty-patties?—Yes, father (*padre mio*), I will go for some.—Whither wilt thou go?—I will go into the garden.—Who is in the garden?—The children of our friends are there.—Will you send for the physician?—I will send for him.—Who will go for my brother?—My servant will go for him?—Where is he?—He is in his counting-house.—Will you give me my broth?—I will give it you.—Where is it?—It is at the corner of the fire.—Will you give me some money to (*per*) fetch some milk?—I will (give you some to fetch some).—Where is your money?—It is in my counting-house; will you go for it?—I will go for it.—Will you buy my horse?—I cannot buy it; I have no money.—Where is your cat?—It is in the bag.—In which bag is it?—In the bag of the granary.—Where is this man's (*di costui*) dog?—It is in a corner of the ship.—Where has the peasant (*got*) his corn?—He has it in his bag.—Has he a cat?—He has one.—Where is it?—It is at the bottom of the bag.—Is your cat in this bag?—It is in it.

64.

Have you anything to do?—I have something to do.—What have you to do?—I have to mend my gloves, and to go to the garden.—Who is in the garden?—My father is there.—Has your cook anything to drink?—He has to drink some wine and some good broth.—Can you give me as much butter as bread?—I can give you more of the latter than of the former.—Can our friend drink as much wine as coffee?—He cannot drink so much of the latter as of the former.—Have you to speak to any one?—I have to speak to several men.—To how many men have you to speak?—I have to speak to four.—When have you to speak to them?—This evening.—At what o'clock?—At a quarter to nine.—When can you go to the market?—I can go thither in the morning.—At what o'clock?—At half-past seven.—When will you go to the Frenchman's?—I will go to him to-night.—Will you go to the physician's in the morning or in the evening?—I will go to his house in the morning.—At what o'clock?—At a quarter past ten.

65.

Have you to write as many notes as the Englishman?—I have to write less than he.—Will you speak to the German?—I will speak to him.—When will you speak to him?—Now.—Where is he?—He is at the other end of the wood.—Will you go to the market?—I will go thither to (*per*) buy some cloth.—Do not your neighbours wish to go to the market?—They cannot go thither; they are fatigued.—Hast thou the courage to go to the wood in

the evening?—I have the courage to go thither, but not in the evening.—Are your children able to answer my notes?—They are able to answer them.—What do you wish to say to the servant?—I wish to tell him to make the fire, and to sweep the warehouse.—Will you tell your brother to sell me his horse?—I will tell him to sell it you.—What do you wish to tell me?—I wish to tell you something.—Whom do you wish to see?—I wish to see the Scotchman.—Have you anything to tell him?—I have a motto to tell him.—Which books does my brother wish to sell?—He wishes to sell thine and his own.—Will you come with me?—I cannot go with you.—Who will come with me?—Nobody.—Will your friend come with us?—He will go with you.—With whom wilt thou go?—I will not go with any one.—Will you go with my friend?—I will not go with him, but with thee.—Wilt thou go with me to the warehouse?—I will go with you, but not to the warehouse.—Whither wilt thou go?—I will go with our good friends into the garden of the captain.

TWENTY-THIRD LESSON.

Lezione Ventesima terza.

<i>To go out.</i>	<i>Uscire* 3.¹</i>
<i>To remain, to stay.</i>	<i>{ Rimanere* 2. Restare 1.</i>
	<i>{ Stare* 1.</i>
When do you wish to go out?	Quando vuol Ella uscire?
I wish to go out now.	Voglio uscire adesso.
	<i>{ Rimanere in casa.</i>
To remain (to stay) at home.	<i>{ Stare in casa.</i>
<hr/>	
<i>Here.</i>	<i>Quà, què, in questo luogo (ci, vi).</i>
	<i>{ Rimaner quà, rimaner qui.</i>
To remain here.	<i>{ Stare quà, star qui.</i>
<i>There.</i>	<i>Là, lì (ci, vi).</i>
	<i>{ Vuol Ella rimaner quà?</i>
Will you stay here.	<i>{ Vuol Ella stare in questo luogo?</i>
I will stay here.	<i>{ Voglio starvi (rimanervi).</i>
	<i>{ Vuol rimaner là il di Lei amico?</i>
Will your friend remain there?	<i>{ Il di Lei amico vuol star lì?</i>
He will not stay there.	<i>{ Non vuole rimaner là (star là).</i>
Will you go to your brother's?	<i>{ Vuol andare dal di Lei fratello?</i>
I will go to his house.	<i>{ Voglio andarci.</i>

¹ Many Italians make use of *sortire* instead of *uscire*; but this is done erroneously, for *sortire* means, to select, to draw lots, and not to go out.

The pleasure, the favour.	{ Il piacere.
To give pleasure.	{ Far piacere.
To do a favour.	{ Far un piacere.
	{ Rendere* un servizio (servizio).

Are you going ?	Va Ella (andate) ?
I am going.	Vado.
I am not going.	Non vado.
Thou art going.	Vai.
Is he going ?	Va egli ?
He goes, <i>or</i> is going.	Egli va.
He is not going.	Non va.
Are we going ?	Andiamo ?
We go, <i>or</i> are going.	Andiamo.
They go, <i>or</i> are going.	Eglino vanno.

Are you going to your brother ?	Va Ella dal di Lei fratello ?
I am going there.	Ci vado, vi vado (vadovi, vadoci).
Where is he going ?	Dove va egli ?
He is going to his father.	Va da suo padre.

<i>All, every.</i>	{ SING. <i>Tutto</i> } ogni, qua-
	{ PLUR. <i>Tutti</i> } lunque.
Every day.	{ Tutti i giorni.
	{ Ogni giorno.
Every morning.	{ Tutte le mattine.
	{ Ogni mattino (mattina).
Every evening.	{ Tutte le sere.
	{ Ogni sera.

It is.	E
Late.	Tardi.
What o'clock is it ?	Che ora è ?
It is three o'clock.	Sono le tre.
It is twelve o'clock.	{ È mezzodì (è mezzo giorno).
	{ Sono le dodici
It is a quarter past twelve.	{ È mezzodì e un quarto.
	{ Sono le dodici e un quarto.
It wants a quarter to six.	{ Sono le sei meno un quarto.
	{ Sono le cinque e tre quarti.
It is half-past one.	{ È un' ora e mezzo.

<i>To be acquainted with (to know).</i>	<i>Conoscere* 2.</i>
<i>To be acquainted with (to know) a man.</i>	<i>Conoscere un uomo.</i>

<i>Need.</i>	<i>Bisogno.</i>
<i>To want.</i>	<i>Aver bisogno di.</i>
<i>To be in want of.</i>	
I want it.	Ne ho bisogno.
I am in want of it.	
Are you in want of this knife?	Ha Ella bisogno di questo coltello?
I am in want of it.	Ne ho bisogno.
Are you in want of these knives?	Ha Ella bisogno di questi coltelli?
I am in want of them.	Ne ho bisogno.
I am not in want of them.	Non ne ho bisogno.
I am not in want of anything.	{ Non ho bisogno di nulla.
	{ Non ho bisogno di niente.
Is he in want of money?	Ha egli bisogno di danaro?
He is not in want of any.	Non ne ha bisogno.

Of what?	{ Di che cosa? }	{ Di che? }
What are you in want of?	{ Di qual cosa? }	
What do you want?		Di che ha Ella bisogno?
Of whom?		Di chi?

OBJECT INDIRECT IN THE GENITIVE OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

Of me, of thee, of him, of her.	Di me, di te, di lui, di lei (ne).
Of us, of you, of them.	Di noi, di voi, di loro (ne).

Is your father in want of me?	Il di Lei padre ha bisogno di me?
He is in want of you.	Ha bisogno di Lei (di voi).
Are you in want of these books?	Ha Ella bisogno di questi libri?
I am in want of them.	Ne ho bisogno.
Is he in want of my brothers?	Ha egli bisogno dei miei fratelli?
He is in want of them.	{ Ne ha bisogno.
	{ Ha bisogno di loro.

<i>To read.</i>	<i>Leggere*.</i>
-----------------	------------------

EXERCISES.

66.

Will you do me a favour?—Yes, Sir, which?—Will you tell my servant to make the fire?—I will tell him to make it.—Will you tell him to sweep the warehouses?—I will tell him to sweep them.—What will you tell your father?—I will tell him to sell you his horse.—Will you tell your son to go to my father's?—I will tell him to go to his house.—Have you anything to tell me?—I have nothing to tell you.—Have you anything to say to my father?—I have a word to say to him.—Do these men wish to sell their carpets?—They do not wish to sell them.—John, art thou there (*là*)?—Yes, Sir, I am here.—What art thou going to do?—I am going to your hatter to (*per*) tell him to mend your hat.—Wilt thou go to the tailor to tell him to mend my coats?—I will go to him.—Are you willing to go to the market?—I am willing to go thither.—What has your merchant to sell?—He has to sell some beautiful leather gloves (*guanti di pelle*), combs, good cloth, and fine wooden baskets.—Has he any iron guns to sell?—He has (some to sell).—Does he wish to sell me his horses?—He wishes to sell them you.—Have you anything to sell?—I have nothing to sell.

67.

Is it late?—It is not late.—What o'clock is it?—It is a quarter past twelve.—At what o'clock does the captain wish to go out?—He wishes to go out at a quarter to eight.—What will you do?—I wish to read.—What have you to read?—I have a good book to read.—Will you lend it me?—I will (lend it you).—When will you lend it me?—I will lend it you to-morrow.—Have you a mind to go out?—I have no mind to go out.—Are you willing to stay here, my dear friend?—I cannot remain here.—Whither have you to go?—I have to go to the counting-house.—When will you go to the ball?—To-night.—At what o'clock?—At midnight.—Do you go to the Scotchman in the evening or in the morning?—I go to him (both) in the evening and in the morning.—Where are you going now?—I am going to the theatre.—Where is your son going?—He is going nowhere; he is going to stay at home to (*per*) write his notes.—Where is your brother?—He is at his warehouse.—Does he not wish to go out?—No, Sir, he does not wish to go out.—What does he wish to do?—He wishes to write to his friends.—Will you stay here or there?—I will stay there.—Where will your father stay?—He will stay there.—Has our friend a mind to stay in the garden?—He has a mind to stay there.

68.

At what o'clock is the Dutchman at home?—He is at home every

evening at a quarter past nine.—When does your cook go to the market?—He goes thither every morning at half-past five.—When does our neighbour go to the Irishmen?—He goes to them every day.—At what o'clock?—At eight o'clock in the morning.—What do you wish to buy?—I do not wish to buy anything; but my father wishes to buy an ox.—Does he wish to buy this or that ox?—He wishes to buy neither.—Which does he wish to buy?—He wishes to buy your friend's.—Has the merchant one more coat to sell?—He has one more, but he does not wish to sell it.—Has this man one knife more to sell?—He has not one knife more to sell, but he has a few more guns to sell.—When will he sell them?—He will sell them to-day.—Where?—At his warehouse.—Do you wish to see my friend?—I wish to see him in order to know him.—Do you wish to know my children?—I do (wish to know them.)—How many children have you?—I have only two, but my brother has more than I: he has six.—Does that man wish to drink too much wine?—He wishes to drink too much.—Have you wine enough to drink?—I have only a little, but enough.—Does your brother wish to buy too many petty-patties?—He wishes to buy a great many, but not too many.

69.

Can you lend me a knife?—I can lend you one.—Can your father lend me a book?—He can lend you several.—What are you in want of?—I am in want of a good gun.—Are you in want of this picture?—I am in want of it.—Does your brother want money?—He does not want any?—Does he want some boots?—He does not want any.—What does he want?—He wants nothing.—Are you in want of these sticks?—I am in want of them.—Who wants some sugar?—Nobody wants any.—Does anybody want pepper?—Nobody wants any.—What do I want?—You want nothing.—Does your father want these pictures or those?—He wants neither these nor those.—Are you in want of me?—I am in want of you.—When do you want me?—At present.—What have you to say to me?—I have something to say to you.—Is your son in want of us?—He is in want of you and your brothers.—Are you in want of my servants?—I am in want of them.—Does any one want my brother?—No one wants him.—Does your father want anything?—He does not want anything.—What does the Englishman want?—He wants some corn.—Does he not want some jewels?—He does not want any.—What does the sailor want?—He wants some biscuits, milk, cheese, and butter.—Will you give me anything?—I will give you some bread and wine.

TWENTY-FOURTH LESSON.

Lezione Ventesima quarta.

THE PRESENT.

In regular verbs ¹ the present tense is formed from the infinitive, whose termination is changed into *o*.

The first and second persons singular, and the first person plural are for all the three conjugations terminated in the same manner, viz.

The first person singular in <i>o</i> . Ex.	{	I speak.	Parlo.
		I sell.	Vendo.
		I serve.	Servo.
The second person singular in <i>i</i> . Ex.	{	Thou speakest.	Parli.
		Thou sellest.	Vendi.
		Thou servest.	Servi.
The first person plural in <i>iamo</i> . Ex.	{	We speak.	Parliamo.
		We sell.	Vendiamo.
		We serve.	Serviamo.

As for the third person singular, it is for the first conjugation terminated in *a* (from *are*, as *parlare*), and for the second and third conjugations in *e*. The second person plural terminates for the first conjugation in *ate* (from *are*, as *parlare*), for the second in *ete* (from *ere*, as *vendere*), and for the third in *ite* (from *ire*, as *servire*). The third person plural ends for the first conjugation in *ano* (from *are*, as *parlare*), and for the second and third conjugations in *ono*.

EXAMPLES.

INFINITIVE.

-
1. *Parlare*, to speak. 2. *Vendere*, to sell. 3. *Servire*, to serve.
-

PRESENT TENSE.

<i>First Conjugation.</i>		<i>Second Conjugation.</i>		<i>Third Conjugation.</i>	
Parlo,	I speak.	Vendo,	I sell.	Servo,	I serve.
Parli,	thou speak- est.	Vendi,	thou sell- est.	Servi,	thou serv- est.
Parla,	he speaks.	Vende,	he sells.	Serve,	he serves.
Parliamo,	we speak.	Vendiamo,	we sell.	Serviamo,	we serve.
Parlate,	you speak.	Vendete,	you sell.	Servite,	you serve.
Parlano,	they speak.	Vendono,	they sell.	Servono,	they serve.

¹ As for the irregular verbs, it is impossible to give, for the present, any fixed rules concerning them. The learner must mark them in his list of irregular verbs as he meets with them in proceeding.

Obs. A. As the rules which I give above, on the formation of the present tense, are applicable only to regular verbs, it remains now to point out the irregularities in the present tense of all those irregular verbs which we have employed already, to enable the learner to use them in his exercises. They are as follows :

Those that are not given here are, of course, regular in the present tense.

<i>To give.</i>			<i>Dare</i> * 1.		
			<i>First Person.</i>	<i>Second Person.</i>	<i>Third Person.</i>
I give,	thou givest,	he gives.	Io do,	tu dai,	egli dà.
We give,	you give,	they give.	Noi diamo,	voi date,	eglino danno.
<i>To make, to do.</i>			<i>Fare</i> * 1 (formerly <i>facere</i>).		
I make	thou makest	he makes	Io faccio	tu fai,	egli fa.
or do,	or dost,	or does.	or fo,		
We do,	you do,	they do.	Noi facciamo,	voi fate,	eglino fanno.
<i>To stay, to remain.</i>			<i>Stare</i> * 1. ²		
I stay,	thou stayest,	he stays.	Io sto,	tu stai,	egli sta.
We stay,	you stay,	they stay.	Noi stiamo,	voi state,	eglino stanno.
<i>To drink.</i>			<i>Bere or bere</i> * 2.		
I drink,	thou drink-	he drinks.	Bero,	bevi,	beve.
	est,				
We drink,	you drink,	they drink.	Beviamo,	bevete,	bevono (or beono).
<i>To see.</i>			<i>Vedere</i> * 2.		
I see,	thou seest,	he sees.	Vedo, veg-	vedi,	vede.
			go, or		
			veggio.		
We see,	you see,	they see.	Vediamo or	vedete,	vedono or
			veggiamo,		veggono.
<i>To remain.</i>			<i>Rimanere</i> * 2.		
I remain,	thou remainest,	he remains.	Rimango,	rimani,	rimane.
We remain,	you remain,	they remain.	Rimania-	rimanete,	rimangono.
			mo,		
<i>To pick up.</i>			<i>Raccorre</i> * 2 (abridged from <i>raccogliere</i>).		
I pick up,	thou pick-	he picks	Raccolgo,	raccogli,	raccoglie.
	est up,	up.			
We pick up,	you pick,	they pick	Raccogli-	raccogliete,	raccogliono.
	up,	up.	amo.		

² These three verbs, viz. *dare**, *fare**, *stare**, together with *andare** (which see in the foregoing Lesson), are the only irregular verbs of the first conjugation, all the others being regular.

To say, to tell.

I say, thou sayest, he says.
We say, you say, they say.

To conduct, to take.

I conduct, thou con-ductest, he con-ducts.
We con-duct, you con-duct, they con-duct.

To come.

I come, thou com-est, he comes.
We come, you come, they come.

To go out.

I go out, thou goest out, he goes out.
We go out, you go out, they go out.

Dire * 3 (formerly *dicere*).

1st Pers. 2nd Pers. 3rd Pers.

Dico, dici (or di), dice.

Diciamo, dite, dicono.

Condurre * 2 (formerly *conducere*).

Conduco, conduci, conduco.

Conduci-amo. conducete, conducono.

Venire * 3.

Vengo, vieni, viene.

Veniamo, venite, vengono.

Uscire * 3.

Esco, esci, esce.

Usciamo, uscite, escono.

or e- or e-
sciamo, scite.

Obs. B. There is no distinction in Italian between I love, do love, and am loving. All these present tenses are expressed by *amo*, I love. *Ex.*

To love.

I { love.
do love. He { loves.
am loving. { does love.
Thou { lovest. { is loving.
dost love. You { love.
art loving. { do love.
We { love. { are loving.
do love. They { do love.
are loving. { are loving.

Amare 1.

Amo, ama.

Ami, amate.

Amiamo, amano.

To love, to like, to be fond of.

Amare 1. *Aver* * caro, *Piacere* *.

To arrange, to set in order.

Do you like him?
I do (like him.)
I do not like him.


{ *Ordinare* 1. *Mettere* * (2)
in ordine.

{ *Assettare* 1.

L' ama Ella? (L' amate?)

L' amo.

Non l' amo.

 Personal pronouns, not standing in the nominative, take their place before the verb, except when this is in the infinitive, the present participle, or the imperative, for then the pronoun is joined to the verb, which loses its final *e* as we have seen in *Obs. Lesson XVII.*

Do you sell your horse?	{ Vende Ella il di Lei cavallo?
I do sell it.	{ Vendete il vostro cavallo?
Do you sell it?	{ Lo vendo.
Does he send you the note?	{ Lo vende Ella?
He does send it me.	{ Lo vendete?
Does the servant sweep the floor?	{ Le manda il biglietto?
He does sweep it.	{ Egli me lo manda.
	{ Spazza il pavimento il servi-
	{ tore?
	{ Egli lo spazza.

To want, to miss.
To pay.

Mancare l.
Pagare l.

Obs. C. Verbs ending in *care* or *gare* take the letter *h* after *c* or *g* in all tenses and persons where *c* or *g* meets with one of the vowels *e, i*. Ex.

Art thou in want of anything?	{ Manchi di qualche cosa?
I am in want of nothing.	{ Ti manca qualche cosa?
Dost thou pay for thy boots?	{ Non manco di niente.
I pay for them.	{ Non mi manca niente.
	{ + Paghi i tuoi stivali?
	{ + Li pago.

Obs. D. *To want, to be in want of*, may be rendered in Italian in various manners; amongst others, also in the following:—

<i>To want, to be in want of.</i>	{ <i>Essere d' uopo,</i>	{ <i>Aver d' uopo</i>
	{ <i>Essere uopo,</i>	{ <i>di,</i>
	{ <i>Essere mestie-</i>	{ <i>Aver mesti-</i>
	{ <i>ri,</i>	{ <i>eri di.</i>
Are you in want of this knife?	Le è d' uopo cotesto coltello?	
I am in want of it.	(Le è mestieri cotesto coltello?)	
Are you in want of these knives?	Mi è d' uopo. (Mi è mestieri.)	
I am in want of them.	Le son d' uopo questi coltelli? Ha	
I am not in want of them.	d' uopo di questi coltelli?	
I am not in want of anything.	Mi son d' uopo. Ne ho d' uopo.	
Is he in want of money?	Non mi son d' uopo. Non ne ho	
He does not want any.	d' uopo.	
	Non mi è d' uopo niente. Non	
	ho d' uopo di niente.	
	Gli è d' uopo danaro?	
	Non gliene è d' uopo.	

To open.

Aprire 3 (regular in Present).*

I open, thou openest, he opens.	Apro, apri, apre.
We open, you open, they open.	Apriamo, aprite, aprono.
Do you open his note?	Apri Ella (aprite) il suo biglietto?
I do not open it.	Non l' apro.
Does he open his eyes?	Apri egli gli occhi?
He opens them.	Egli li apre.
Whom do you love?	Chi ama Ella (amate)?
I love my father.	Amo mio padre.
Does your father love his son?	Il di Lei padre ama suo figlio?
He does love him.	Egli l' ama.
Do you love your children?	Ama Ella i di Lei fanciulli?
I do love them.	Li amo.

To like.

To be fond of

*Piacere.**

I like, thou likest, he likes.	Piaccio, piaci, piace.
We like, you like, they like.	Piacciamo, piacete, piacciono.

Obs. E. This verb, the same as *dolere** (see next Lesson), is in Italian employed impersonally with the dative of the personal pronoun. *Ex.*

Are you fond of wine?	Le piace il vino?
I am fond of it.	Mi piace.
What are you fond of?	Che Le piace? (Che vi piace?)
Cider.	Del cidro.
I am fond of cider.	Il cidro mi piace.
What is the American fond of?	Che piace all' Americano?
He is fond of coffee.	Gli piace il caffè.
The ugly man.	L' uomaccio.

To receive.

To finish.

Ricevere 2.

Finire 3.*

I finish, thou finishest, he finishes.	Finisco, finisci, finisce.
We finish, you finish, they finish.	Finiamo, finite, finiscono.

This instant.

Now.

At once.

All' istante.

Ora.

Subito.

What are you going to do?	{ † Che fa ora Ella?
I am going to read.	{ † Che fate ora?
What is he going to do?	† Ora leggo (sto per leggere).
He is going to write a note.	† Che fa egli all' istante?
Are you going to give me anything?	† All' istante scrive un biglietto.
I am going to give you some bread and wine.	† Mi dà Ella subito qualcosa?
	† Le do subito pane e vino.

Obs. F. Instead of saying *questo uomo*, this man; *cotesto uomo*, that man, the Italians often use the plural of the pronouns, *questo*, *cotesto*, and translate as follows :

<i>This man.</i>	<i>Questi.</i>
<i>That man.</i>	<i>Cotesti.</i>

Otherwise :

<i>This man.</i>	<i>Costui</i> (Plur. <i>costoro</i> , these men).
<i>That man.</i>	<i>Colui</i> (Plur. <i>coloro</i> , those men).

Obs. G. As for *cotestui*, that man, it is grown obsolete.

Do you know this man?	Conosce Ella questi?
I know neither this nor that one.	Non conosco nè questi nè quello.
Do you see this man?	Vede Ella costui?
I do not see this man, but that one.	Non vedo costui, ma colui.
Do you hear these men?	Sente Ella costoro?
I do not hear these men, but those.	Non sento costoro, ma coloro.

<i>To know.</i>	<i>Sapere</i> * 2.
I know, thou knowest, he knows.	So, sai, sa.
We know, you know, they know.	Sappiamo, sapete, sanno.

EXERCISES.

70.

Do you love your brother?—I do (love him).—Does your brother love you?—He does not love me.—My good child, dost thou love me?—Yes, I do (love thee).—Dost thou love this ugly man (*quel-l'uomaccio*)?—I do not love him.—Whom do you love?—I love my children.—Whom do we love?—We love our friends.—Do we like anyone?—We like no one.—Does anybody like us?—The Americans like us.—Do you want anything?—I want nothing.—Whom is your father in want of?—He is in want of his servant.—What do you want?—I want the note.—Do you want this or that note?—I want this.—What do you wish to do with it (*farne*)?—I wish to open it, in order to read it.—Does your son read our notes?—He does (read them).—When does he read them?—He reads them when he receives them.—Does he receive as many notes as I?—He receives more than you.—What do you give me?—I do not give thee anything.—Do you give this book to my brother?—I do (give it him).—Do you give him a bird?—I do (give him one).—To whom do you lend your books?—I lend them to my friends.—Does your friend lend me a coat?—He lends you one.—To whom do you lend your clothes?—I do not lend them to anybody.

71.

Do we arrange anything?—We do not arrange anything.—What does your brother set in order?—He sets his books in order.—Do you sell your ship?—I do not sell it.—Does the captain sell his?—He does (sell it).—What does the American sell?—He sells his oxen.—Does the Englishman finish his note?—He does (finish it).—Which notes do you finish?—I finish those which I write to my friends.—Dost thou see anything?—I see nothing.—Do you see my large garden?—I do (see it).—Does your father see our ships?—He does not see them, but we see them.—How many soldiers do you see?—We see a good many; we see more than thirty.—Do you drink anything?—I drink some wine.—What does the sailor drink?—He drinks some cider.—Do we drink wine or cider?—We drink wine and cider.—What do the Italians drink?—They drink some coffee.—Do we drink wine?—We do (drink some).—What art thou writing?—I am writing a note.—To whom?—To my neighbour.—Does your friend write?—He does write.—To whom does he write?—He writes to his tailor.—What are you going to do?—I am going to write.—What is your father going to do?—He is going to read.—What is he going to read?—He is going to read a book.—What are you going to give me?—I am not going to give you anything.—What is our friend going to give you?—He is going to give me something good.—Do you know my friend?—I do (know him).

72.

Do you write your notes in the evening?—We write them in the morning.—What dost thou say?—I say nothing.—Does your brother say anything?—He says something.—What does he say?—I do not know.—What do you say to my servant?—I tell him to sweep the floor, and to go for some wine, bread, and cheese.—Do we say anything?—We say nothing.—What does your friend say to the shoemaker?—He tells him to mend his boots.—What do you tell the tailors?—I tell them to make my clothes.—Dost thou go out?—I do not go out.—Who goes out?—My brother goes out.—Where is he going?—He is going to the garden.—To whom are you going?—We are going to the good English.—What art thou reading?—I am reading a note from my friend.—What is your father reading?—He is reading a book.—What are you doing?—We are reading.—Are your children reading?—They are not reading; they have no time to read.—Do you read the books which I read?—I do not read those which you read, but those which your father reads.—Do you know this man?—I do not know him.—Does your friend know him?—He does (know him).—What is your friend going to do?—He is not going to do anything.

73.

Do you know my children?—We do (know them).—Do they know

you?—They do not know us.—With whom are you acquainted?—I am acquainted with nobody.—Is anybody acquainted with you?—Somebody is acquainted with me.—Who is acquainted with you?—The good captain knows me.—What dost thou eat?—I eat some bread.—Does not your son eat some cheese?—He does not eat any.—Do you cut anything?—We cut some wood.—What do the merchants cut?—They cut some cloth.—Do you send me anything?—I send you a good gun.—Does your father send you money?—He does (send me some).—Does he send you more than I?—He sends me more than you.—How much does he send you?—He sends me more than fifty crowns.—When do you receive your notes?—I receive them every morning.—At what o'clock?—At half-past ten.—Is your son coming?—He is coming.—To whom is he coming?—He is coming to me.—Do you come to me?—I do not come to you, but to your children.—Where is our friend going?—He is going nowhere; he remains at home.—Are you going home?—We are not going home, but to our friends.—Where are your friends?—They are in their garden.—Are the Scotchmen in their gardens?—They are there.

74.

What do you buy?—I buy some knives.—Do you buy more knives than glasses?—I buy more of the latter than of the former.—How many horses does the German buy?—He buys a good many; he buys more than twenty (of them).—What does your servant carry?—He carries a large trunk.—Where is he carrying it?—He is carrying it home.—To whom do you speak?—I speak to the Irishman.—Do you speak to him every day?—I speak to him every morning and every evening.—Does he come to you?—He does not come to me, but I go to him.—What has your servant to do?—He has to sweep my floor and to set my books in order.—Does my father answer your notes?—He answers them.—What does your son break?—He breaks nothing, but your children break my glasses.—Do they tear anything?—They tear nothing.—Who burns my hat?—Nobody burns it.—Are you looking for anybody?—I am not looking for anybody.—What is my son looking for?—He is looking for his pocket-book.—What does your cook kill?—He kills a chicken.

75.

Are you killing a bird?—I am killing one.—How many chickens does your cook kill?—He kills three (of them).—To whom do you take my boy?—I take him to the painter's.—When is the painter at home?—He is at home every evening at seven o'clock.—What o'clock is it now?—It is not yet six o'clock.—Do you go out in the evening?—I go out in the morning.—Are you afraid to go out in the evening?—I am not afraid, but I have no time to go out in the evening.—Do you work as much as your son?—I do not work as much as he.—Does he eat as much as you?—He eats less than I.—

Can your children write as many notes as my children?—They can write just as many.—Can the Russian drink as much wine as cider?—He can drink more of the latter than of the former.—When do our neighbours go out?—They go out every morning at a quarter to five.—Which note do you send to your father?—I am sending him my own.—Do you not send mine?—I am sending it also.—To whom do you send your clothes?—I send them to nobody; I want them.—To whom do your sons send their boots?—They send them to no one; they want them.

* * We should fill volumes, were we to give all the exercises that are applicable to our lessons, and which the pupils may very easily compose by themselves. We shall, therefore, merely repeat what we have already mentioned at the commencement:—Pupils who wish to improve rapidly ought to compose a great many sentences in addition to those given; but they must pronounce them aloud. This is the only way by which they will acquire the habit of speaking fluently.

TWENTY-FIFTH LESSON.

Lezione Ventesima quinta.

To go to the play,
To be at the play.

Andare * allo spettacolo.
Essere * allo spettacolo.

To bring.

{ Recare l.
Portare l.

To find.
The butcher.
The sheep.

Trovare l.
Il macellaio.
Il montone.

What, or the thing which.

{ Ciò che.
Quel che.
Quanto.

Do you find what you look for (or what you are looking for)?

Trova Ella ciò che cerca?

I find what I look for.

Trovo ciò che cerco.

I find what I am looking for.

Egli non trova ciò che cerca.

He does not find what he is looking for.

We find what we look for.

Troviamo ciò che cerchiamo.

They find what they look for.

Eglino trovano ciò che cercano.

I mend what you mend.
I buy what you buy.

I pay what you pay.
Are you in want of money?
I am not in want of any.
Do you take him to the play?
I do take him thither.

Assetto ciò che assetta Ella.
Compro quello che compra Ella
(comprate voi).
Pago quanto paga Ella.
Manca Ella di danaro?
Non ne manco.
Lo conduce allo spettacolo?
Ve lo conduco.

To study.

| Studiare 1.

Instead of.

| { *In luogo di.*
| *Invece di.*

Obs. Instead of is in English followed by the present participle, whilst in Italian it is followed by the infinitive.

To play.

To listen.

To hear.

Instead of listening.

Instead of playing.

Do you play instead of studying?
I study instead of playing.
That man speaks instead of listening.

Giucare 1.

Ascoltare 1.

Sentire 3.

{ *Invece d' ascoltare.*
{ *In luogo d' ascoltare.*
{ *In luogo di giucare.*
{ *Invece di giucare.*

Gioca Ella invece di studiare?
Studio invece di giucare.
Questi parla invece d' ascoltare.

To ache.

To complain.

The finger.

I complain —thou complainest.

We complain—they complain.

You complain—he complains.

Have you a sore finger?

Have you the headache?

I have a sore finger.

I have the headache.

Has your brother a sore foot?

He has a sore eye.

We have sore eyes.

Dolere.*

Dolersi.*

Il dito (plur. *le dita*, fem.).

Mi dolgo *or* doglio—ti duoli.

Ci dogliamo —si dolgono.

Vi dolete —si duole.

† Le duole il dito?

† Le duole il capo (la testa)?

† Il dito mi duole.

† Il capo (la testa) mi duole.

† Duole il piede al di Lei fratello?

† Gli duole l' occhio.

† Ci dolgono gli occhi.

The study (a closet).
The desk.

| Lo scrittoio. Lo studio.
| Lo scrittoio.

The elbow.	Il gomito.
The back.	Il dorso.
The arm.	Il braccio (<i>plur.</i> le braccia).
The knee.	Il ginocchio (<i>plur.</i> le ginocchia).
I have a sore elbow.	Mi duole il gomito.
Thou hast a pain in thy back.	Ti duole il dorso.
He has a sore arm.	Gli duole il braccio.
You have a sore knee.	Vi duole il ginocchio.

Do you read instead of writing?	Legge Ella invece di scrivere?
Does your brother read instead of speaking?	Legge il di Lei fratello invece di parlare?
Does the servant make the bed?	Fa il letto il servitore?
He makes the fire instead of making the bed.	Egli fa il fuoco invece di fare letto.

<i>To learn.</i>	<i>Imparare l.</i>
To learn to read.	Imparare a leggere.
I learn to read.	Imparo a leggere.
He learns to write.	Egli impara a scrivere.

EXERCISES.

76.

Do you go to the play this evening?—I do not go to the play.
 —What have you to do?—I have to study.—At what o'clock do you go out?—I do not go out in the evening.—Does your father go out?—He does not go out.—What does he do?—He writes.
 —Does he write a book?—He does (write one).—When does he write it?—He writes it in the morning and in the evening.—Is he at home now?—He is at home (He is).—Does he not go out?—He cannot go out; he has a sore foot.—Does the shoemaker bring our boots?—He does not bring them.—Is he not able to work?—He is not able to work; he has a sore knee.—Has anybody a sore elbow?—My tailor has a sore elbow.—Who has a sore arm?—I have a sore arm.—Do you cut me some bread?—I cannot cut you any; I have sore fingers (*mi dogliono le dita*).—Do you read your book?—I cannot read it; I have sore eyes (*mi dolgono gli occhi*).—Who has sore eyes?—The French have sore eyes.—Do they read too much?—They do not read enough.—What day of the month is it to-day?—It is the third.—What day of the month is it to-morrow?—To-morrow is the fourth.—Are you looking for any one?—I am not looking for any one.—What is the painter looking for?—He is not looking for anything.—Whom are you looking for?—I am looking for your son.—Have you anything to tell him?—I have something to tell him.—What have you to tell him?—I have to tell him to go to the play this evening.

77.

Who is looking for me?—Your father is looking for you.—Is anybody looking for my brother?—Nobody is looking for him.—Dost thou find what thou art looking for?—I do (find what I am looking for).—Does the captain find what he is looking for?—He finds what he is looking for, but his children do not find what they are looking for.—What are they looking for?—They are looking for their books.—Where dost thou take me to?—I take you to the theatre.—Do you not take me to the market?—I do not take you thither.—Do the Spaniards find the umbrellas which they are looking for?—They do not find them.—Does the tailor find his thimble?—He does not find it.—Do the merchants find the cloth which they are looking for?—They do (find it).—What do the butchers find?—They find the oxen and sheep which they are looking for.—What does your cook find?—He finds the chickens which he is looking for.—What is the physician doing?—He is doing what you are doing.—What is he doing in his study?—He is reading.—What is he reading?—He is reading your father's book.—Whom is the Englishman looking for?—He is looking for his friend, in order to take him to the garden.—What is the German doing in his study?—He is learning to read.—Does he not learn to write?—He does not learn it (*l'impara*).—Does your son learn to write?—He learns to write and to read.

78.

Does the Dutchman speak instead of listening?—He speaks instead of listening.—Do you go out instead of remaining at home?—I remain at home instead of going out.—Does your son play instead of studying?—He studies instead of playing.—When does he study?—He studies every day.—In the morning or in the evening?—In the morning and in the evening.—Do you buy an umbrella instead of buying a book?—I buy neither the one nor the other.—Does our neighbour break his sticks instead of breaking his glasses?—He breaks neither.—What does he break?—He breaks his guns.—Do the children of our neighbour read?—They read instead of writing.—What is our cook doing?—He makes a fire instead of going to the market.—Does the captain give you anything?—He gives me something.—What does he give you?—He gives me a great deal of money.—Does he give you money instead of giving you bread?—He gives me money and bread.—Does he give you more cheese than bread?—He gives me less of the latter than of the former.

79.

Do you give my friend less knives than gloves?—I give him more of the latter than of the former.—What does he give you?—He gives me many books instead of giving me money.—Does your servant make your bed?—He does not make it.—What is he

doing instead of making your bed?—He sweeps the study instead of making my bed.—Does he drink instead of working?—He works instead of drinking.—Do the physicians go out?—They remain at home instead of going out.—Does your servant make coffee?—He makes tea instead of making coffee.—Does any one lend you a gun?—Nobody lends me one.—What does your friend lend me?—He lends you many books and many jewels.—Do you read the book which I read?—I do not read the one which you read, but the one which the great captain reads.—Are you ashamed to read the books which I read?—I am not ashamed, but I have no wish to read them.

SECOND MONTH.

Secondo Mese.

TWENTY-SIXTH LESSON.

Lezione Ventesima sesta.

Do you learn French ?	{ Impara Ella il francese?
	{ Impara Ella l' idioma francese
	{ (or la lingua francese) ?
I do learn it.	L' imparo.
I do not learn it.	Non l' imparo.

French.	Il francese.
English.	L' inglese.
German.	Il tedesco.
Italian.	L' italiano.
Spanish.	Lo spagnuolo.
Polish.	Il polacco (il polonese).
Russian.	Il russo.
Latin.	Il latino.
Greek.	Il greco.
Arabian, Arabic.	L' arabo.
Syrian, Syriac.	Il siriano.
I learn Italian.	Imparo l' italiano.
My brother learns German.	Mio fratello impara il tedesco.

The Pole.	Il Polacco.
The Roman.	Il Romano.
The Greek.	Il Greco.
The Arab, the Arabian.	L' Arabo.
The Syrian.	Il Siriano.

Are you an Englishman ?	È Ella Inglese ?
No, Sir, I am a Frenchman.	No, Signore, sono Francese.

Obs. A. When the indefinite article is used in English to denote qualities, the Italians make use of no article.

He is a German.	Egli è Tedesco.
Is he a tailor ?	È egli sarto ?
No, he is a shoemaker.	No, egli è calzolaio.

The fool.
He is a fool.

Il pazzo.
Egli è pazzo.

The morning.
The evening.
The day.

Il mattino, la mattina.
La sera.
Il giorno (il dì).

To wish.

{ Desiderare 1.
Dare* (conjugated Lesson
XXIV.).
Augurare 1.

I wish you a good morning.

Le do (auguro) il buon giorno.

Obs. B. Often the indefinite article in English answers to the definite article in Italian.

Does he wish me a good evening?

Mi dà (augura) egli la buona sera?

He wishes you a good morning.

Egli Le dà (augura) il buon giorno.

He has a large nose.

Egli ha il naso grande.

He has blue eyes.

Egli ha gli occhi azzurri.

Blue.

Azzurro, turchino.

Black.

Nero, negro.

Long.

Lungo.

A large knife.

Un coltellone.

A large man.

Un uomone.

A French book.

Un libro francese.

An English book.

Un libro inglese.

French money.

Danaro francese.

English soap.

Sapone inglese.

Do you read a German book?

Legge Ella un libro tedesco?

I read an Italian book.

Leggo un libro italiano.

To listen to some one.

+ Ascoltare { qualcuno.
uno.
alcuno.

To listen to something.

+ Ascoltare { qualcosa.
qualche cosa.
alcuna cosa.

What or the thing which.

Ciò che, quel che, quanto.

Do you listen to what the man tells you?

+ Ascolta Ella ciò che l' uomo Le dice?

I listen to it.

+ L' ascolto.

He listens *to* what I tell him.
Do you listen *to* what I tell you?
Do you listen *to* me?

I do listen *to* you.
Do you listen *to* my brother?
I do not listen *to* him.
Do you listen *to* the men?
I listen *to* them.

† Egli ascolta ciò che gli dico.
† Ascolta Ella quel che Le dico?
† Mi ascolta (or m' ascolta)
Ella?
† La ascolto (or L' ascolto).
† Ascolta Ella mio fratello?
† Non l' ascolto.
† Ascolta Ella gli uomini?
† Li ascolto.

To take away.

To take off.

Do you take your hat off?
I take it off.
Does he take off his coat?
He does take it off.
He does not take it off.
Do your children take off their
boots?
They do take them off.
You take your gloves off.
We take off our gloves.
We take them off.

Portar via (levare) 1.

Levarsi 1.

† Si leva Ella il cappello?
† Me lo levo.
† Levassi egli l' abito?
† Se lo leva.
† Non se lo leva.
† Si levano gli stivali i di Lei
fanciulli?
† Se li levano.
{ Ella si leva i guanti.
Vi levate i guanti.
† Ci leviamo i guanti.
† Ce li leviamo.

To correct.

Does your father correct your
exercises?

The exercise.

Correggere † 2.

Corregge i di Lei temi suo pa-
dre?

Il tema.

Obs. C. There are in Italian many nouns terminated in *a*, for the
most part derived from the Greek, which are masculine.

The exercises.

He corrects them.

I temi.

Egli li corregge.

To speak French.

To speak English.

Do you speak French?
No, Sir, I speak English.

Parlare francese.

Parlare inglese.

Parla Ella francese?

No, Signore, parlo inglese.

To take.

*Prendere** (regular in the
present.)

To drink coffee.

{ † Prendere il caffè.
† Prendere del caffè (or simply
prendere caffè).

To drink tea.

Do you drink tea?
I do drink some.
Do you drink tea every day?
I drink some every day.
My father drinks coffee.
He drinks coffee every morning.
My brother drinks tea.
He drinks tea every morning.

{ Prendere *il* tè.
Prendere *del* tè (prendere tè).
† Prende Ella del tè?
† Ne prendo.
† Prende Ella *il* tè ogni giorno?
† Lo prendo ogni giorno.
† Mio padre prende del caffè.
† Prende *il* caffè ogni mattina.
† Mio fratello prende del tè.
† Prende *il* tè ogni mattina.

To take away.

Who takes away the book?
The Frenchman takes it away.
Does any one take away the glasses?
No one takes them away.
What do you take away?
I take away your boots and your brother's clothes.

Portar via.

Chi porta via il libro?
Lo porta via il Francese.
Qualcuno porta via i bicchieri?
Nessuno li porta via.
Che cosa portate via?
Porto via i di Lei stivali ed i vestiti del di Lei fratello.

EXERCISES.

80.

Do you go for anything?—I go for something.—What do you go for?—I go for some cider.—Does your father send for anything?
—He sends for some wine.—Does your servant go for some bread?
—He goes for some.—For whom does your neighbour send?—He sends for the physician.—Does your servant take off his coat in order to make the fire?—He does (take it off in order to make it).
—Do you take off your gloves in order to give me some money?—I do take them off in order to give you some.—Do you learn French?
—I do (learn it).—Who learns English?—The Frenchman learns it.—Does your brother learn German?—He does (learn it).—Do we learn Italian?—You do (learn it).—What do the English learn?—They learn French and German?—Do you speak Spanish?—No, Sir, I speak Italian.—Who speaks Polish?—My brother speaks Polish.—Do our neighbours speak Russian?—They do not speak Russian, but Arabic.—Do you speak Arabic?—No, I speak Greek and Latin.—What knife have you?—I have an English knife?—What money have you there? Is it Italian or Spanish money?—It is Russian money.—Have you an Italian hat?—No, I have a Spanish hat.—Are you an Englishman?—No, I am a Frenchman.—Are you a Greek?—No, I am a Spaniard.

81.

Are these men Germans?—No, they are Russians.—Do the Russians speak Polish?—They do not speak Polish, but Latin,

Greek, and Arabic.—Is your brother a merchant?—No, he is a joiner.—Are these men merchants?—No, they are carpenters.—Are you a cook?—No, I am a baker.—Are we tailors?—No, we are shoemakers.—Art thou a fool?—I am not a fool.—What is that man?—He is a physician.—Do you wish me anything?—I wish you a good morning.—What does the young man wish me?—He wishes you a good evening.—Do your children come to me in order to wish me a good evening?—They come to you in order to wish you a good morning.—Has the German black eyes?—No, he has blue eyes.—Has this man large feet?—He has little feet and a large nose.—Have you time to read my book?—I have no time to read it, but much courage to study Italian.—What dost thou do instead of playing?—I study instead of playing.—Dost thou learn instead of writing?—I write instead of learning.—What does the son of our friend do?—He goes into the garden instead of doing his exercises?—Do the children of our neighbours read?—They write instead of reading.—What does our cook do?—He makes a fire instead of going to the market.—Does your father sell his ox?—He sells his horse instead of selling his ox.

82.

Does the son of the painter study English?—He studies Greek instead of studying English.—Does the butcher kill oxen?—He kills sheep instead of killing oxen.—Do you listen to me?—I do (listen to you).—Does your brother listen to me?—He speaks instead of listening to you.—Do you listen to what I am telling you?—I listen to what you are telling me.—Dost thou listen to what thy brother tells thee?—I listen to it.—Do the children of the physician listen to what we tell them?—They do not listen to it.—Do you go to the theatre?—I am going to the warehouse instead of going to the theatre.—Are you willing to read my book?—I am willing to read it, but not now; I have sore eyes.—Does your father correct my exercises or those of my brother?—He corrects neither yours nor those of your brother.—Which exercises does he correct?—He corrects mine.—Do you take off your hat in order to speak to my father?—I do not take it off in order to speak to him.—Do you take off your boots?—I do not take them off.—Who takes off his hat?—My friend takes it off.—Does he take off his gloves?—He does not take them off.—What do these boys take off?—They take off their boots and their clothes.—Who takes away the glasses?—Your servant takes them away?—What do your children take away?—They take away the books and my notes.—What do you take away?—I take away nothing.—Do we take away anything?—We take away our father's penknife and our brother's trunks.—Do you give me English or German cloth?—I give you neither English nor German cloth; I give you French cloth.—Do you read Spanish?—I do not read Spanish, but German.—What book is your brother reading?—He is reading a French book.—Do you drink tea or coffee in the morning?—I

drink tea.—Do you drink tea every morning?—I drink some every morning.—What do you drink?—I drink coffee.—What does your brother drink?—He drinks tea.—Does he drink some every morning?—He drinks some every morning.—Do your children drink tea?—They drink coffee instead of drinking tea.—What do we drink?—We drink tea or coffee.

TWENTY-SEVENTH LESSON.

Lezione Ventesima settima.

To wet, to moisten.

To show.

I show.

Thou showest.

He shows.

Bagnare 1.

{ *Mostrare* 1.

{ *Far vedere.*

Faccio vedere.

Fai vedere.

Fa vedere.

Mostro.

Mostri.

Mostra.

To show some one.

Do you show me your gun?

I do show it you.

What do you show the man?

I show him my fine clothes.

{ *Mostrare* } a qualcuno.
{ *Far vedere* }

{ *Mi fa Ella vedere* } il di Lei

{ *Mi mostra Ella* } schioppo?

Glielo faccio vedere.

Che mostra Ella all' uomo?

Gli mostro i miei begli abiti.

To smoke.

The tobacco.

Tobacco, (for smoking).

Snuff.

Fumare 1.

Il tabacco.

Del tabacco da fumare.

{ *Del tabacco in polvere.*

{ *Del tabacco da naso.*

The gardener.

The valet.

The concert.

Il giardiniere.

Il cameriere.

Il concerto.

To intend.

The ball.

Do you intend to go to the ball
this evening?

I intend to go thither.

{ *Pensare* 1, { donottakea pre-
{ *Intendere* *2, { position before
the infinitive.

{ *Il ballo.*

{ *La festa da ballo.*

*Pensa Ella andare alla festa da
ballo stassera (or stasera)?*

Penso andarci.

*To know.**Sapere** 2. (Lesson XXIV.)*To swim.**Nuotare* 1.Do you know *how* to swim?

Sa Ella nuotare?

Obs. *To know* is in English followed by *how to* before the infinitive, whilst in Italian the infinitive joined to the verb *sapere* is not preceded by any particle.

Do you know how to write?

Sa Ella scrivere?

Does he know how to read?

Sa egli leggere?

*To extinguish.**Spegnere** 2 (or *spengere** 2).

Do you extinguish the fire?

Spegne Ella il fuoco?

I do not extinguish it.

Non lo spengo.

He extinguishes it.

Egli lo spegne.

Thou extinguishest it.

Tu lo spegni.

*To light, to kindle.**Accendere* * 2.*Often.*

Do you often go to the ball?

Spesso (*spesse volte, sovente*).

Va Ella spesso alla festa da ballo?

As often as you.

{ Così spesso come Lei.

As often as I.

{ Spesso quanto Lei.

As often as he.

Così spesso come me.

As often as they.

Così spesso come lui.

{ Così spesso come loro.

{ Spesso come loro.

Do you often see my father?

Vede Ella spesso mio padre?

*Often.**Più spesso.*

I see him oftener than you.

Lo vedo più spesso di Lei.

Not so often.{ *Meno spesso.*

Not so often as you.

{ *Non tanto spesso.*

Not so often as I.

Meno sovente di Lei.

Not so often as they.

Meno spesso di me.

Meno spesso di loro.

EXERCISES.

83.

What does your father want?—He wants some tobacco.—Will you go for some?—I will go for some.—What tobacco does he want?—He wants some snuff.—Do you want tobacco (for smoking)?

--I do not want any; I do not smoke.—Do you show me anything?—I show you gold ribbons (*dei nastri d' oro*).—Does your father show his gun to my brother?—He does (show it him).—Does he show him his beautiful birds?—He does (show them to him).—Does the Frenchman smoke?—He does not smoke.—Do you go to the ball?—I go to the theatre, instead of going to the ball.—Does the gardener go into the garden?—He goes to the market instead of going into the garden.—Do you send your valet (*il cameriere*) to the tailor's?—I send him to the shoemaker's instead of sending him to the tailor's.—Does your brother intend to go to the ball this evening?—He does not intend to go to the ball, but to the concert.—When do you intend to go to the concert?—I intend to go there this evening.—At what o'clock?—At a quarter past ten.—Do you go for my son?—I do (go for him).—Where is he?—He is in the counting-house.—Do you find the man whom you are looking for?—I do (find him).—Do your sons find the friends whom they are looking for?—They do not find them.

84.

Do your friends intend to go to the theatre?—They intend to go thither.—When do they intend to go thither?—They intend to go thither to-morrow.—At what o'clock?—At half-past seven.—What does the merchant wish to sell you?—He wishes to sell me some pocket-books.—Do you intend to buy some?—I will not buy any.—Dost thou know anything?—I do not know anything.—What does your little brother know?—He knows how to write and to read.—Does he know French?—He does not know it.—Do you know German?—I know it.—Do your brothers know Greek?—They do not know it, but they intend to study it.—Do you know English?—I do not know it, but I intend to learn it.—Do my children know how to read Italian?—They know how to read, but not how to speak it.—Do you know how to swim?—I do not know how to swim, but how to play.—Does your son know how to make coats?—He does not know how to make any; he is no tailor.—Is he a merchant?—He is not (*non l' è*).—What is he?—He is a physician.—Do you intend to study Arabic?—I intend to study Arabic and Syriac.—Does the Frenchman know Russian?—He does not know it; but he intends learning it.—Whither are you going?—I am going into the garden in order to speak to my gardener.—Does he listen to you?—He does (listen to me).

85.

Do you wish to drink some cider?—I wish to drink some wine; have you any?—I have none; but I will send for some.—When will you send for some?—Now.—Do you know how to make tea?—I know how to make some.—Where is your father going?—He goes nowhere; he remains at home.—Do you know how to write a note?—I know how to write one.—Can you write exercises?—I can write

some.—Dost thou conduct anybody?—I conduct nobody.—Whom do you conduct?—I conduct my son.—Where do you conduct him?—I conduct him to my friends to (*per*) wish them a good morning.—Does your servant conduct your child?—He conducts him.—Whither does he conduct it?—He conducts it into the garden.—Do we conduct any one?—We conduct our children.—Whither are our friends conducting their sons?—They are conducting them home.

86.

Do you extinguish the fire?—I do not extinguish it.—Does your servant light the fire?—He does (light it).—Where does he light it?—He lights it in your warehouse.—Do you often go to the Spaniard?—I go often to him.—Do you go oftener to him than I?—I go oftener to him than you.—Do the Spaniards often come to you?—They do (come often to me).—Do your children oftener go to the ball than we?—They go thither oftener than you.—Do we go out as often as our neighbours?—We go out oftener than they.—Does your servant go to the market as often as my cook?—He goes thither as often as he.—Do you see my father as often as I?—I do not see him as often as you.—When do you see him?—I see him every morning at a quarter to five.

TWENTY-EIGHTH LESSON.

Lezione Ventesima ottava.

We have seen, in many of the foregoing lessons and exercises, that the Italians have no particular way to construe interrogative sentences; all depends on the tone with which the sentence is pronounced. The English interrogative auxiliaries *do* and *am*, therefore, are generally not rendered in Italian. Sometimes they may be rendered by *forse*, which signifies *perhaps*, as will be seen by the following examples:—

Do I wish?	{ Voglio?
	{ Voglio forse?
Am I able?	{ Posso?
	{ Posso forse?
Am I doing?	{ Faccio (<i>or fo</i>)?
	{ Faccio forse?
<hr/>	
What am I doing?	{ Cosa faccio?
	{ Che cosa faccio?
What do I say?	{ Cosa dico?
	{ Che dico?
Where am I going?	{ Ove vado?
To whom do I speak?	{ A chi parlo?

Am I going?	Vado? Vado forse?
Am I coming?	Vengo? Vengo forse?
You are coming.	Ella viene.
Do you tell or say?	Dice Ella?
I say or tell.	Dico.
He says or tells.	Egli dice.
What does he say?	Che dice egli?
We say.	Diciamo.
Do I speak?	Parlo? Parlo forse?
Do I love or like?	Amo? Amo forse?

Are you acquainted with that man?	Conosce Ella colui?
I am not acquainted with him.	Non lo conosco.
Is your brother acquainted with him?	Lo conosce il di Lei fratello?
He is acquainted with him.	Egli lo conosce.
Do you drink cider?	Beve Ella del cidro?
I do drink cider, but my brother drinks wine.	Bevo del cidro, ma mio fratello beve del vino.
Do you receive a note to-day?	Riceve Ella oggi un biglietto?
I receive one.	{ Ne ricevo uno.
What do we receive?	{ Lo ricevo. ¹
What do our children receive?	Che riceviamo?
They receive some books.	Che ricevono i nostri fanciulli?
	Essi ricevono dei libri.

To begin, to commence.

I begin to speak.

{ *Principiare* 1.
Cominciare 1 (*incominciare*).
 Principio (*incomincio*) a parlare.

Before.

Do you speak before you listen?
 Does he go to the market before he breakfasts?

To breakfast.

He goes thither before he writes.
 Do you take off your gloves before you take off your boots?

{ *Prima di*.
Innanzi di (che).
Avanti di.
 Parla Ella prima d' ascoltare?
 Va Egli al mercato innanzi che far colazione?
Far colazione.
 Egli ci va prima di scrivere.
 Si leva Ella i guanti prima di levarsi gli stivali?

¹ *Uno*, in the sense of an indefinite article, can in Italian never stand at the end of a sentence; in its stead the pronoun is used before the verb, or joined to it.

To depart, to set out.

When do you intend to depart?
I intend to depart to-morrow.

Partire 3.

Quando pensa Ella partire?
Penso partire domani.

*Well.**Badly.*

Do I speak well?
You do not speak badly.

*Bene.**Male.*

Parlo bene?
Ella non parla male.

Does your brother know Italian? | Sa l'italiano il di Lei fratello?

Obs. When a tense of a verb is a monosyllable, or when it has the accent on the last syllable, the pronoun may follow it, but the consonant must be doubled. This applies more generally to poetry than to prose. *Ex.*

He knows it.
Who knows English?
My father knows it.

Egli sallo (instead of *lo sa*).
Chi sa l'inglese?
Mio padre sallo.

EXERCISES.

87.

Do I read well?—You read well.—Do I speak well?—You do not speak well.—Does my brother speak French well?—He speaks it well.—Does he speak German well?—He speaks it badly.—Do we speak well?—You speak badly.—Do I drink too much?—You do not drink enough.—Am I able to make hats?—You are not able to make any; you are not a hatter.—Am I able to write a note?—You are able to write one.—Am I doing my exercise well?—You are doing it well.—What am I doing?—You are doing exercises.—What is my brother doing?—He is doing nothing.—What do I say?—You say nothing.—Do I begin to speak?—You begin to speak.—Do I begin to speak well?—You do not begin to speak well (*a parlar bene*), but to read well (*ma a legger bene*).—Where am I going?—You are going to your friend's.—Is he at home?—Do I know?—Am I able to speak as often as the son of our neighbour?—He is able to speak oftener than you.—Can I work as much as he?—You cannot work as much as he.—Do I read as often as you?—You do not read as often as I, but you speak oftener than I.—Do I speak as well (*così bene*) as you?—You do not speak so well as I.—Do I go (*vengo*) to you, or do you come to me?—You come to me, and I go (*vengo*) to you.—When do you come to me?—Every morning at half-past six.

88.

Do you know the Russian whom I know?—I do not know the one you know, but I know another.—Do you drink as much cider

as wine?—I drink less of the latter than of the former.—Does the Pole drink as much as the Russian?—He drinks just as much.—Do the Germans drink as much as the Poles?—The latter drink more than the former.—Dost thou receive anything?—I do (receive something).—What dost thou receive?—I receive some money.—Does your friend receive books?—He receives some.—What do we receive?—We receive some cider.—Do the Poles receive tobacco?—They receive some.—From whom (*da chi*) do the Spaniards receive money?—They receive some from the (*dagl'*) English, and from the (*dai*) French.—Do you receive as many friends as enemies?—I receive less of the latter than of the former.—From whom (*da chi*) do your children receive books?—They receive some from me and from their friends.—Do I receive as much cheese as bread?—You receive more of the latter than of the former.—Do our servants receive as many waistcoats as coats?—They receive less of the latter than of the former.—Do you receive one more gun?—I receive one more.—How many more books does our neighbour receive?—He receives three more.

89.

When does the foreigner intend to depart?—He intends to depart to-day.—At what o'clock?—At half-past one.—Do you intend to depart this evening?—I intend to depart to-morrow.—Does the Frenchman depart to-day?—He departs now.—Where is he going?—He is going to his friends.—Is he going to the English?—He is going to them (*ci va*).—Dost thou set out to-morrow?—I set out this evening.—When do you intend to write to your friends?—I intend to write to them to-day.—Do your friends answer you?—They do answer me.—Does your father answer your note?—He answers it.—Do you answer my brothers' notes?—I answer them.—Does your brother begin to learn Italian?—He begins to learn it.—Can you speak French?—I can speak it a little.—Do our friends begin to speak German?—They begin to speak it.—Are they able to write it?—They are able to write it.—Does the merchant begin to sell?—He does (begin).—Do you speak before you listen?—I listen before I speak.—Does your brother listen to you before he speaks?—He speaks before he listens to me.—Do your children read before they write?—They write before they read.

90.

Does your servant sweep the warehouse before he goes to the market?—He goes to the market before he sweeps the warehouse.—Dost thou drink before thou goest out?—I go out before I drink.—Do you intend to go out before you breakfast?—I intend to breakfast before I go out.—Does your son take off his boots before he takes off his coat?—He neither takes off his boots nor his coat.—Do I take off my gloves before I take off my hat?—You take off your hat before you take off your gloves.—Can I take off my boots

before I take off my gloves?—You cannot take off your boots before you take off your gloves.—At what o'clock do you breakfast?—I breakfast at half-past eight.—At what o'clock does the American breakfast?—He breakfasts every day at nine o'clock.—At what o'clock do your children breakfast?—They breakfast at seven o'clock.—Do you go to my father's before you breakfast?—I go to him before I breakfast.

TWENTY-NINTH LESSON.

Lezione Ventesima nona.

We have seen (Lessons XVI. and XXVII.) that the comparative of equality is formed by *come*, *tanto*, *quanto*, *altrettanto*, *così*; the comparative of superiority by *più*, and that of minority by *meno*. As for the superlative, it is formed by changing the last vowel of the adjective for the masculine into *issimo*, and for the feminine into *issima*. Ex.

			<i>Positive. Comparat. Superlative.</i>
Learned, more	most		Dotto, più dotto, dottissimo.
learned,	learned.		
Poor, poorer,	poorest.		Povero, più povero, poverissimo.
Wise, wiser,	wisest.		Savio, più savio, savissimo. ¹
Pious, more pious,	most pious.		Pio, più pio, piissimo.
Rich, richer,	richest.		Ricco, più ricco, ricchissimo.
Cool, cooler,	coolest.		Fresco, più fresco, freschissimo.
Broad, broader,	broadest.		Largo, più largo, larghissimo.
Often, oftener,	most often.		Spesso, più spesso, spessissimo.

Obs. A. From these examples it may be seen that the superlative is always formed by joining to the adjective in the plural the syllable *ssimo*.

Obs. B. The relative superlative, *i.e.* when the article *the* is joined to *most* or *least*, is expressed by *il più*, *il meno*, for the masculine, and by *la più*, *la meno*, for the feminine. Ex.

The greatest.	Il più grande.
The smallest.	Il meno grande.
The finest.	Il più bello.
The least fine.	Il meno bello.

¹ The grammarians form the plural of *savio* into *savi* or *savj*, instead of *savii*. According to the former formation, therefore, the superlative is *savissimo*, instead of *saviissimo*.

This book is small, that is smaller, and this is the smallest of all.	Questo libro è piccolo, quello è più piccolo, e cotesto è il più piccolo di tutti.
This hat is large, but that is larger.	Questo cappello è grande, ma quello è più grande.
Is your hat as large as mine?	Il di Lei cappello è così grande come il mio?
It is larger than yours.	È più grande del suo.
It is not so large as yours.	È meno grande del suo.
Are our neighbour's children as good as ours?	I fanciulli del nostro vicino sono così savi come i nostri?
They are better than ours.	Sono più savi dei nostri.
They are not so good as ours.	Sono meno savi dei nostri.
He is the happiest man in the world.	Egli è il più felice degli uomini (or fra gli uomini).

A very fine book.	Un bellissimo libro.
Very fine books.	Dei bellissimi libri.
A very pretty knife.	Un leggiadriissimo coltello.
Very well.	Benissimo.

This man is extremely learned.	Questi è dottissimo.
This bird is very pretty.	Questo uccello è vezzosissimo.

Obs. C. *Molto* and *assai* serve also to form absolute superlatives.
Ex.

Very wise.	Molto savio.
Very large.	Assai grande.

Obs. D. The prefix *arci* also serves to form an absolute superlative. Ex.

Very handsome.	Arcibello.
Extremely long.	Arcilunghissimo.

Obs. E. To some words the particle *stra* may be prefixed to form an absolute superlative. Ex.

Over rich.	Straricco.
Over done (cooked).	Stracotto.

Obs. F. The following adjectives are irregular in the formation of their comparatives and superlatives:—

Good, better, best.	<i>Positive. Comparat. Superlative.</i> Buono, migliore, ottimo.
Bad, worse, the worst.	Cattivo, peggiore, pessimo.
Great, greater, greatest.	Grande, maggiore, massimo.
Little, less, the least.	Piccolo, minore, minimo.

ADVERBS.

Well,	better,	the best.	Bene,	meglio,	ottimamente.
Bad,	worse,	the worst.	Male,	peggio,	pessimamente.

The least noise hurts me.	Il minimo strepito mi fa male.
The least thing hurts him.	La minima cosa gli fa male.

Obs. G. In Italian the repetition of the positive forms a superlative. *Ex.*

A very learned man.	Un uomo dotto dotto.
The weather is very cold.	Il tempo è freddo freddo.
This seems to me most ugly.	Questo mi sembra brutto brutto.
She is the finest woman in the world.	È la bella delle belle.

Obs. H. Superlative adverbs are formed by joining to the adjective in the plural the termination *ssimamente*. *Ex.*

Learned — most learnedly.	Dotto — dottissimamente.
Prudent — most prudently.	Prudente — prudentissimamente.
Rich — most richly.	Ricco — ricchissimamente.

<i>Whose?</i>	<i>Di chi?</i>
Whose hat is this?	Di chi è questo cappello?
<i>It is.</i>	<i>È.</i>
It is my brother's hat.	} È il cappello di mio fratello.
It is the hat of my brother.	
It is my brother's.	} Chi ha il più bel cappello?
Who has the finest hat?	
Whose hat is the finest?	
That of my father is the finest.	Quello del padre mio è il più bello.
Whose ribbon is the handsomer, yours or mine?	Qual è il più bel nastro, quello di Lei, o il mio?

Do you read as often as I?	Legge Ella così spesso come io?
I read oftener than you.	Leggo più spesso di Lei.
Does he read as often as I?	Legge egli così spesso come io?
He reads and writes as often as you.	Egli legge e scrive così spesso come Ella (or legge e scrive spesso al pari di Lei).
Do your children write as much as we?	Scrivono quanto noi i di Lei fanciulli?
They write more than you.	Eglino scrivono più di Loro.
We read more than the children of our friends.	Noi leggiamo più dei fanciulli dei nostri amici.
To whom do you write?	A chi scrivono?
We write to our friends.	Scriviamo ai nostri amici.
We read good books.	Leggiamo dei buoni libri.

EXERCISES.

91.

Whose book is this?—It is mine.—Whose hat is that?—It is my father's.—Are you taller than I?—I am taller than you.—Is your brother as tall as you?—He is as tall as I.—Is thy hat as bad as my father's?—It is better, but not so black as his.—Are the clothes of the Italians as fine as those of the Irish?—They are finer, but not so good.—Who have the finest gloves?—The French have them.—Who has the finest horses?—Mine are fine, yours are finer than mine; but those of our friends are the finest of all.—Is your horse good?—It is good, but yours is better, and that of the Englishman is the best of all the horses which we know.—Have you pretty boots?—I have very pretty ones, but my brother has prettier than I.—From whom (*da chi*) does he receive them?—He receives them from his best friend.

92.

Is your wine as good as mine?—It is better.—Does your merchant sell good knives?—He sells the best knives that I know (*che conosco*, subjunctive).—Do we read more books than the French?—We read more than they; but the English read more than we, and the Germans read the most (*i più*).—Hast thou a finer garden than that of our physician?—I have a finer one than he (*del suo*).—Has the American a finer stick than thou?—He has a finer one.—Have we as fine children as our neighbours?—We have finer ones.—Is your coat as pretty as mine?—It is not so pretty, but better than yours.—Do you leave to-day?—I do not leave to-day.—When does your father set out?—He sets out this evening at a quarter to nine.—Which of these two children is the better (*savio*)?—The one who studies is better than the one who plays.—Does your servant sweep as well as mine?—He sweeps better than yours.—Does the Englishman read as many bad books as good ones?—He reads more good than bad ones.

93.

Do the merchants sell more sugar than coffee?—They sell more of the latter than of the former.—Does your shoemaker make as many boots as mine?—He makes more than yours.—Can you swim as well (*così bene*) as my son?—I can swim better than he; but he can speak French better than I.—Does he read as well as you?—He reads better than I.—Does the son of your neighbour go to market?—No, he remains at home; he has sore feet.—Do you learn as well as the son of our gardener?—I learn better than he, but he studies better than I.—Whose gun is the finest?—Yours is very fine, but that of the captain is still finer, and ours is the finest of all.—Has any one finer children than you?—No one has finer ones.—Does your son read as often as I?—He reads oftener than you.—Does my brother speak French as often as you?—He speaks and reads it as often as I.—Do I write as much as you?—You write

more than I.—Do our neighbours' children read German as often as we?—We do not read it as often as they.—Do we write as often as they?—They write oftener than we.—To whom do they write?—They write to their friends.—Do you read English books?—We read French books instead of reading English books.

THIRTIETH LESSON.

Lezione Trentesima.

To believe.

To put on.

I put on my hat.
He puts on his gloves.
Do you put on your boots?
We do (put them on).
What do your brothers put on?
They put on their clothes.
Whither do you conduct me?
I conduct you to my father.

Credere 2.

Mettere, mettersi.*

Mi metto il cappello.
Si mette i guanti.
Si mettono gli stivali?
Ce li mettiamo.
Che si mettono i di Lei fratelli?
Mettono i loro vestiti.
Ove mi conduce Ella?
La conduco da mio padre.

Do you go out?

I do (go out).

Do we go out?

We do (go out).

When does your father go out?

Esce Ella?

E esco.

Usciamo?

Usciamo.

Quando esce il di Lei padre?

Early.

{ *Per tempo,*
Di buon' ora,
A buon' ora,
Presto.

As early as you.

He goes out as early as you.

{ Così per tempo come Ella.
Così di buon' ora come Ella.
Egli esce così per tempo come
Ella.

<i>Late.</i>	<i>Tardi.</i>
<i>Too.</i>	<i>Troppo.</i>
Too late.	Troppo tardi.
Too soon, too early.	Troppo di buon' ora (troppo a buon' ora).
Too large, too great.	Troppo per tempo. Troppo presto.
Too little.	Troppo grande.
	Troppo piccolo.

Too much. | *Troppo.*

Do you speak too much?	Parla Ella troppo?
I do not speak enough.	Non parlo abbastanza.

<i>Later than you.</i>	<i>Più tardi di Lei.</i>
I go out later than you.	Esco più tardi di Lei.

Do you go to the play as early as I?	Va Ella allo spettacolo così di buon' ora come io?
I go thither earlier than you.	Ci vado più di buon' ora di Lei (più presto di Lei).
<i>Sooner.</i>	<i>Più presto (più tosto).</i>
<i>Earlier.</i>	<i>Più per tempo.</i>
Does your father go thither earlier than I?	<i>Più di buon' ora.</i>
He goes thither too early.	Ci va il di } più presto di me?
	Lei padre } più per tempo di me?
	Ci va } troppo di buon' ora.
	troppo presto.

<i>Already.</i>	<i>Già, di già.</i>
Do you speak already?	Parla Ella di già?
<i>Not—yet.</i>	<i>Non—ancora.</i>
I do not speak yet.	<i>Non—per anco.</i>
Do you finish your note?	Non parlo ancora (per anco).
I do not finish it yet.	Finisce Ella il di Lei biglietto?
Do you breakfast already?	Non lo finisco ancora.
	Fa Ella già colazione?

Do you come to see me?	Viene Ella a vedermi?
------------------------	-----------------------

Obs. A. Verbs of motion always require the preposition *a* (*ad* before a vowel), and verbs of rest the preposition *in*. Ex.

I go to see my children.
 I send for some wine.
 I send for the physician.
 I am going to the theatre.
 I stay in the garden (in the room).

Vado a vedere i miei fanciulli.
 Mando a prendere del vino.
 Mando a chiamare il medico.
 Vado al teatro.
 Resto in giardino (in camera).

Obs. B. But as we have seen in the foregoing lessons, the infinitive is in Italian sometimes preceded by *di* (Lesson XVII.), sometimes by *a* or *ad* (Lessons XXV., XXVIII., and this), sometimes by *per* (Lesson XX.), and sometimes it is simply used without any of these prepositions before it. The latter is the case when it is joined to one of the following verbs, some of which have already been exemplified in some of the preceding lessons, such as: *volere**, to wish, to be willing (Lesson XVIII.); *potere**, to be able, can (Lesson XX.); *far vedere*, to show (Lesson XXVII.); *pensare, intendere*, to intend to (Lessons XXVII and XXVIII.).

Bisognare, to be requisite.
 Calcolare, to intend to.
 Credere, to believe.
 Degnare, to deign.
 Desiderare, to wish.
 Dichiarare, to declare.
 Dovere*, to owe.
 Fare*, to do.
 Intendere*, to hear, to intend.
 Lasciare, to let.
 Negare, to deny.

Osare, ardire*, to dare.
 Parere*, to appear.
 Pensare, to think.
 Potere*, to be able (can).
 Pretendere*, to pretend.
 Sapere*, to know.
 Sembrare, to appear.
 Sostenere*, to maintain.
 Vedere*, to see.
 Volere*, to be willing.

EXAMPLES.

It is necessary to do that.
 I intend going to the play.
 He thinks he is able to do it.
 He deigns to give it me.
 He wishes to speak to the king.
 I declare I cannot do that.
 I ought to go there.
 He sends me word.
 I intend to speak to him.
 He lets me do it.
 He says he cannot do it.
 I dare to go there; I dare to do it.
 They seem to say.
 I intend to make a journey.
 Can you give me a franc?
 He pretends he can do it.
 I can do it; I know how to do it.
 He seems to have a wish to do it.
 I maintain I can do it.
 We see him come.
 Will you do me a favour?

Bisogna far ciò.
 Calcolo andare allo spettacolo.
 Egli crede poterlo fare.
 Egli degna darmelo.
 Egli desidera parlare al re.
 Dichiaro non potere far ciò.
 Devo andarci.
 Egli mi fa dire.
 Intendo parlargli.
 Egli me lo lascia fare.
 Egli nega poterlo fare.
 Oso andarci; ardisco farlo.
 Eglino paiono dire.
 Penso far un viaggio.
 Può Ella darmi un franco?
 Egli pretende poterlo fare.
 So farlo.
 Egli sembra volerlo fare.
 Sostengo saperlo fare.
 Lo vediamo venire.
 Vuol Ella farmi un piacere?

Obs. C. Further, there is no preposition before the infinitive when it is used in an absolute sense. *Ex.*

To eat too much is dangerous.	<i>Mangiare troppo è pericoloso.</i>
To speak too much is foolish.	<i>Parlar troppo è imprudente.</i>
To do good to those that have offended us, is a commendable action.	<i>Far bene a quelli chi ci hanno offeso, è un' azione lodevole.</i>

EXERCISES.

94.

Do you put on another coat in order to go to the play?—I put on (of them, *ne*) another.—Do you put on your gloves before you put on your boots?—I put on my boots before I put on my gloves.—Does your brother put on his hat instead of putting on his coat?—He puts on his coat before he puts on his hat.—Do our children put on their boots in order to go to our friends?—They put them on in order to go to them.—What do our sons put on?—They put on their clothes and their gloves.—Do you already speak French?—I do not speak it yet, but I begin to learn (it, *lo*).—Does your father go out already?—He does not yet go out.—At what o'clock does he go out?—He goes out at ten o'clock.—Does he breakfast before he goes out?—He breakfasts and writes his notes before he goes out.—Does he go out earlier than you?—I go out earlier than he.—Do you go to the play as often as I?—I go thither as often as you.—Do you begin to know that man?—I begin to know him.—Do you breakfast early?—We do not breakfast late.—Does the Englishman go to the concert earlier than you?—He goes there later than I.—At what o'clock does he go thither?—He goes thither at half-past eleven.

95.

Do you not go too early to the concert?—I go thither too late.—Do I write too much?—You do not write too much, but you speak too much.—Do I speak more than you?—You speak more than I and my brother.—Is my hat too large?—It is neither too large nor too small.—Do you speak French oftener than English?—I speak English oftener than French.—Do your friends buy much corn?—They buy but little.—Have you bread enough?—I have only a little, but enough.—Is it late?—It is not late.—What o'clock is it?—It is one o'clock.—Is it too late to go to your father's?—It is too late to go to his house.—Do you conduct me to him?—I do (conduct you to him).—Where is he?—He is in his counting-house.—Does the Spaniard buy a horse?—He cannot buy one.—Is he poor?—He is not poor; he is richer than you.—Is your brother as learned as you?—He is more learned than I, but you are more learned than he and I.

96.

Do you know that man?—I do (know him).—Is he learned?—

He is the most learned of all the men that I know (*conosca*, subjunctive).—Is your horse worse than mine?—It is not so bad as yours.—Is mine worse than the Spaniard's?—It is worse: it is the worst horse that I know (*conosca*, subjunctive).—Do you give those men less bread than cheese?—I give them less of the latter than of the former.—Do you receive as much money as your neighbours?—I receive much more than they.—Who receives the most money?—The French receive the most.—Can your son already write a note?—He cannot write one yet, but he begins to read a little.—Do you read as much as the Russians?—We read more than they, but the French read the most (*più di tutti*).—Do the Americans write more than we?—They write less than we, but the Italians write the least (*meno di tutti*).—Are they as rich as the Americans?—They are less rich than they.—Are your birds as fine as those of the Irish?—They are less fine than theirs, but those of the Spaniards are the least fine.—Do you sell your bird?—I do not sell it; I like it too much to sell it.

THIRTY-FIRST LESSON.

Lezione Trentesima prima.

THE PAST PARTICIPLE.

The past participle, when it is regular¹, always terminates in *to*. It is formed from the infinitive, whose termination is for the first conjugation changed into *ato*, thus: *parlare*—*parlato*; for the second into *uto*, thus: *vendere*—*venduto*; and for the third into *ito*, thus: *servire*—*servito*. Examples:—

FIRST CONJUGATION.		SECOND CONJUGATION.	
<i>Inf.</i>	<i>P. P.</i>	<i>Inf.</i>	<i>P. P.</i>
Parlare, to speak,	<i>parlato</i> .	Vendere, to sell,	<i>venduto</i> .
Comprare, to buy,	<i>comprato</i> .	Credere, to believe,	<i>creduto</i> .
Studiare, to study,	<i>studiato</i> .	Ricevere, to receive,	<i>ricevuto</i> .

THIRD CONJUGATION.		
<i>Inf.</i>		<i>P. P.</i>
Servire,	to serve,	<i>servito</i> .
Sentire,	to hear,	<i>sentito</i> .
Dormire,	to sleep,	<i>dormito</i> .

<i>To be</i> — <i>been</i> .	<i>Essere</i> *— <i>stato</i> . ²
Have you been to market?	È Ella stata al mercato?

¹ When it is irregular, it will be separately noted.

² The pupils, in repeating the irregular verbs already given, must not fail to mark in their lists the past participles of those verbs.

Obs. In Italian the auxiliary verb *essere** is conjugated in its compound tenses with the help of the same auxiliary, and not as in English.³

I have been there.	Vi sono stato.
I have not been there.	Non vi sono stato.
Have I been there?	Vi sono stato?
You have been there.	{ Vi siete stato.
	{ Ella vi è stata.
You have not been there.	{ Ella non vi è stata.
	{ Non vi siete stato.
Has he been there?	Vi è stato egli?
He has been there.	Egli vi è stato.
He has not been there.	Egli non vi è stato.

<i>Ever.</i>	<i>Mai.</i>
<i>Never.</i>	<i>Non—mai.</i>
Have you been at the ball?	{ Siete stato al ballo (alla festa da ballo)?
	{ È Ella stata al ballo (alla festa da ballo)?
Have you ever been at the ball?	{ Siete mai stato al ballo?
	{ È Ella stata mai alla festa da ballo?
I have never been there.	Non vi sono mai stato.
Thou hast never been there.	Tu non vi sei mai stato.
He has never been there.	Non vi è mai stato.
You have never been there.	{ Non vi siete mai stato.
	{ Ella non vi è mai stata.

<i>Already or yet.</i>	<i>Già, di già.</i>
Have you already been at the play?	È Ella già stata allo spettacolo?
I have already been there.	Vi sono già stato.
You have already been there.	{ Ella vi è già stata.
	{ Vi siete già stato.

<i>Not yet.</i>	<i>Non — ancora (non per anco).</i>
I have not yet been there.	Non vi sono stato ancora.
Thou hast not yet been there.	Non vi sei per anco stato.
He has not yet been there.	Egli non vi è ancora stato.
You have not yet been there.	{ Non vi siete stato ancora.
	{ Ella non vi è per anco stata.
We have not yet been there.	Non vi siamo per anco stati.

³ The same is the case in German. Ex.: *Ich bin da gewesen*, I have been there. (See German Method, Lesson XLIII.)

Have you already been at my father's?	È Ella già stata da mio padre?
I have not yet been there.	Non vi sono per anco stato.

Where have you been this morning?	Ove è Ella stata stamane?
I have been in the garden.	Sono stato nel giardino.
Where has thy brother been?	Ove è stato tuo fratello?
He has been in the warehouse.	Egli è stato nel magazzino.
Has he been there as early as I?	Vi è stato così presto come io?
He has been there earlier than you.	Vi è stato più presto di Lei.

EXERCISES.

97.

Where have you been?—I have been at the market.—Have you been at the ball?—I have been there.—Have I been to the play?—You have been there.—Hast thou been there?—I have not been there.—Has your son ever been at the theatre?—He has never been there.—Hast thou already been in my warehouse?—I have never been there.—Do you intend to go there?—I intend to go there.—When will you go thither?—I will go thither to-morrow.—At what o'clock?—At twelve o'clock.—Has your brother already been in my large garden?—He has not yet been there.—Does he intend to see it?—He does (intend to see it).—When will he go thither?—He will go thither to-day.—Does he intend to go to the ball this evening?—He intends to go thither.—Have you already been at the ball?—I have not yet been there.—When do you intend to go thither?—I intend to go thither to-morrow.—Have you already been in the Frenchman's garden?—I have not yet been in it.—Have you been in my warehouses?—I have been there.—When did you go there?—I went there this morning.—Have I been in your counting-house or in that of your friend?—You have neither been in mine nor in that of my friend, but in that of the Englishman.

98.

Has the Italian been in our warehouses or in those of the Dutch?—He has neither been in ours nor in those of the Dutch, but in those of the Germans.—Hast thou already been at the market?—I have not yet been there, but I intend to go thither.—Has our neighbour's son been there?—He has been there.—When has he been there?—He has been there to-day.—Does the son of our gardener intend to go to the market?—He intends to go thither.—What does he wish to buy there?—He wishes to buy there some chickens, oxen, corn, wine, cheese, and cider.—Have you already been at my brother's?—I have already been there.—Has your friend already been there?—He has not yet been there.—Have we

already been at our friends' ?—We have not yet been there.—Have our friends ever been at our house ?—They have never been there.—Have you ever been at the theatre ?—I have never been there.—Have you a mind to write an exercise ?—I have a mind to write one.—To whom do you wish to write a note ?—I wish to write one to my son.—Has your father already been at the concert ?—He has not yet been there, but he intends to go there.—Does he intend to go there to-day ?—He intends to go there to-morrow.—At what o'clock will he set out ?—He will set out at half-past six.—Does he intend to leave (*partire*) before he breakfasts ?—He intends to breakfast before he leaves.

99.

Have you been to the play as early as I ?—I have been there earlier than you.—Have you often been at the concert ?—I have often been there.—Has our neighbour been at the theatre as often as we ?—He has been there oftener than we.—Do our friends go to their counting-house too early ?—They go thither too late.—Do they go thither as late as we ?—They go thither later than we.—Do the English go to their warehouses too early ?—They go thither too early.—Is your friend as often in the counting-house as you ?—He is there oftener than I.—What does he do there ?—He writes.—Does he write as much as you ?—He writes more than I.—Where does your friend remain ?—He remains in his counting-house.—Does he not go out ?—He does not go out.—Do you remain in the garden ?—I remain there.—Do you go to your friend's every day ?—I go to his house every day.—When does he come to yours ?—He comes to my house every evening.—Do you go anywhere in the evening ?—I go nowhere; I stay at home.—Do you send for any one ?—I send for my physician.—Does your servant go for anything ?—He goes for some wine.—Have you been anywhere this morning ?—I have been nowhere.—Where has your father been ?—He has been nowhere.—When do you drink tea ?—I drink some every morning.—Does your son drink coffee ?—He drinks tea.—Have you been to drink some coffee ?—I have been to drink some.

THIRTY-SECOND LESSON.

Lezione Trentesima seconda.

<i>To have—had.</i>	<i>Avere *—avuto.</i>
Have you had my book?	Ha Ella avuto il mio libro?
I have not had it.	Non l' ho avuto.
Have I had it?	L' ho avuto io?
You have had it.	L' ha avuto.
You have not had it.	Non l' ha avuto.
Thou hast not had it.	Non l' hai avuto.
Has he had it?	L' ha egli avuto?
He has had it.	Egli l' ha avuto.
He has not had it.	Egli non l' ha avuto.
Hast thou had the coat?	Hai avuto l' abito?
I have not had it.	Non l' ho avuto.

Have you had the books? | Ha Ella avuto i libri?

✿ The past participle in Italian (the same as the adjective, *Obs.* A. Lesson XXII.), when it is preceded by its object, must agree with it in number; that is, if the object is in the plural, the past participle must be put in the same number. It may, however, also agree when followed by its object; but the past participle of *essere*, to be, must always agree in number and gender with its subject. Ex.

I have had them.	Li ho avuti.
I have not had them.	Non li ho avuti.
Have I had them?	Li ho avuti?
You have had them.	Li ha avuti.
You have not had them.	Non li ha avuti.
Has he had them?	Li ha egli avuti?
He has had them.	Egli li ha avuti.
He has not had them.	Non li ha avuti.

Have you had any bread?	Ha Ella avuto del pane?
I have had some.	Ne ho avuto.
I have not had any.	Non ne ho avuto.
Have I had any?	Ne ho avuto?
You have had some.	Ne ha avuto.
You have not had any.	Non ne ha avuto.
Has he had any?	Ne ha egli avuto?
He has not had any.	Egli non ne ha avuto.

Have you had any knives ?		Ha Ella avuto dei coltelli ?
I have had some.		Ne ho avuti.
I have not had any.		Non ne ho avuti.

What has he had ?		Che ha egli avuto ?
He has had nothing.		Egli non ha avuto niente.

Have you been hungry ?		† Ha Ella avuto fame ?
I have been afraid.		† Ho avuto paura.
He has never been either right or wrong.		† Egli non ha mai avuto torto nè ragione.

<i>To take place.</i>		† <i>Aver luogo.</i>
<i>That</i> (meaning <i>that thing</i>).		<i>Ciò, quello.</i>
Does the ball take place this evening ?		† Ha luogo stassera la festa da ballo ?
It does take place.		† Ha luogo.
It takes place this evening.		† Essa ha luogo questa sera.
It does not take place to-day.		† Non ha luogo quest' oggi.

When did the ball take place ?		† Quando ha avuto luogo la festa da ballo ?
It took place yesterday.		† Ha avuto luogo ieri.

<i>Yesterday.</i>		<i>Ieri.</i>
<i>The day before yesterday.</i>		<i>L' altro ieri.</i>

How many times (how often) ?	{	Quante volte ?
Once.	{	Quante fiate ?
Twice.		Una volta.
Thrice (three times).		Due volte (fiate).
Many times.		Tre volte.
Several times.		Molte volte.
		Varie volte (diverse volte).

<i>Formerly.</i>	{	<i>Altre volte (altra volta).</i>
	{	<i>Altre fiate.</i>
<i>Sometimes.</i>	{	<i>Qualche volta.</i>
	{	<i>Talvolta.</i>
	{	<i>Talora.</i>

Do you go sometimes to the ball ?	Va Ella qualche volta alla festa da ballo ?
I go sometimes.	Vi vado qualche volta.

Gone.	Andato.
Gone thither.	Andatoci (andatovi).
Have you gone there sometimes ?	Vi è Ella andata qualche volta ?
I have gone there often.	Ci sono andato spesso.
Often than you.	Più spesso di Lei.

Have the men had my trunk ?	Hanno avuto il mio baule gli uomini ?
They have not had it.	Non lo hanno avuto.
Who has had it ?	Chi l' ha avuto ?
Have they had my knives ?	Hanno avuto i miei coltelli ?
They have not had them.	Non li hanno avuti.

Have I been wrong in buying books.	Ho avuto torto di comprare libri ?
You have not been wrong in buying some.	Non ha avuto torto di comprarne.
Singing rejoices.	Il cantare rallegra.

Obs. The infinitives and adverbs are sometimes used in Italian substantively, and preceded by the article.

Jesting is permitted.	<i>Lo scherzare</i> è permesso.
Flattery is despicable.	<i>L' adulare</i> è cosa vile.
I do not know either when or how.	Io non so nè <i>il quando</i> , nè <i>il come</i> .

EXERCISES.

100.

Have you had my pocket-book ?—I have had it.—Have you had my glove ?—I have not had it.—Hast thou had my umbrella ?—I have not had it.—Have I had your knife ?—You have had it.—When have I had it ?—You have had it yesterday.—Have I had your gloves ?—You have had them.—Has your brother had my wooden hammer ?—He has had it.—Has he had my golden ribbon ?—He has not had it.—Have the English had my beautiful ship ?—They have had it.—Who has had my linen (*di lino*) handkerchiefs ?—Your servants have had them.—Have we had our good neighbour's iron trunk ?—We have had it.—Have we had his fine gun ?—We have not had it.—Have we had the mattresses of the foreigners ?—We have not had them.—Has the American had my good book ?—He has had it.—Has he had my silver knife ?—He has not had it.—Has the young man had the

first volume of my work?—He has not had the first, but the second.—Has he had it?—Yes, Sir, he has had it.—When has he had it?—He has had it this morning.—Have you had any sugar?—I have had some.—Have I had any pepper?—You have not had any.—Has the Russian captain's cook had any chickens?—He has had some.—He has not had any.

101.

Has the Frenchman had good wine?—He has had some, and he has still (*ancora*) some.—Hast thou had large books?—I have had some.—Has thy brother had any?—He has not had any.—Has the son of our gardener had any butter?—He has had some.—Have the Poles had good tobacco?—They have had some.—What tobacco have they had?—They have had tobacco and snuff.—Have the English had as much sugar as tea?—They have had as much of the one as of the other.—Has the physician been right?—He has been wrong.—Has the Dutchman been right or wrong?—He has never been either right or wrong.—Have I been wrong in buying honey?—You have been wrong in buying some.—What has the painter had?—He has had fine pictures.—Has he had fine gardens?—He has not had any.—Has your servant had my boots?—He has not had them.—What has the Spaniard had?—He has had nothing.—Who has had courage?—The English sailors have (had some).—Have the Germans had many friends?—They have had many.—Have we had more friends than enemies?—We have had more of the latter than of the former.—Has your son had more wine than cider?—He has had more of the latter than of the former.—Has the Turk had more pepper than corn?—He has had less of the latter than of the former.—Has the Italian painter had any thing?—He has had nothing.

102.

Have I been right in writing to my brother?—You have not been wrong in writing to him.—Have you had a sore foot?—I have had a sore eye.—Have you had any thing good?—I have had nothing bad.—Did the ball take place yesterday?—It did not take place.—Does it take place to-day?—It takes place to-morrow.—When does the ball take place?—It takes place this evening?—Did it take place the day before yesterday?—It did (take place).—At what o'clock did it take place?—It took place (*ha avuto luogo*) at eleven o'clock.—Did you go to my brother's?—I went thither.—How many times have you been at my friend's house?—I have been there twice.—Do you go sometimes to the theatre?—I go thither sometimes (*talvolta*).—How many times have you been at the theatre?—I have been there only once.—Have you sometimes been at the ball?—I have often been there.—Has your brother ever gone to the ball?—He has never gone thither.—Has your father sometimes gone to the ball?—He went thither formerly.—Has he gone thither as often

as you?—He has gone thither oftener than I.—Dost thou go sometimes into the garden?—I go thither sometimes.—Hast thou often been there?—I have often been there.—Does your old cook often go to the market?—He goes thither often.—Does he go thither as often as my gardener?—He goes thither oftener than he.—Did that take place?—It did (take place).—When did that take place?

103.

Did you formerly go to the ball?—I went thither sometimes.—When hast thou been at the concert?—I was there (*vi sono stato*) the day before yesterday.—Didst thou find any body there?—I found (*non vi ho trovato*) nobody there.—Hast thou gone to the ball oftener than thy brothers?—I have not gone thither so often as they.—Has your friend often been at the play?—He has been there many times.—Have you sometimes been hungry?—I have often been hungry.—Has your valet (*il cameriere*) often been thirsty?—He has never been either hungry or thirsty.—Did you go to the play early?—I went thither late.—Did I go to the ball as early as you?—You went thither earlier than I.—Did your brother go thither too late?—He went thither too early.—Have your brothers had anything?—They have had nothing.—Who has had my stick and gloves?—Your servant has had both.—Has he had my hat and gun?—He has had both.—Hast thou had my horse or my brother's?—I have had neither yours nor your brother's.—Have I had your note or the physician's?—You have had neither the one nor the other.—What has the physician had?—He has had nothing.—Has anybody had my gold candlestick?—Nobody has had it.—Has anybody had my silver knives?—Nobody has had them.

THIRTY-THIRD LESSON.

Lezione Trentesima terza.

OF THE PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

(PASSATO PROSSIMO.)

This tense is formed as the perfect tense is in English, viz. from the present of the auxiliary and the past participle of the verb you conjugate. Examples:—

I have studied this morning.

I studied yesterday.

I studied last month.

I have studied this month.

Last month.

Ho studiato questa mattina.

Ho studiato ieri.

{ Ho studiato il mese passato
(scorso).

Questo mese ho studiato.

{ Il mese passato.

{ Il mese scorso.

To make, to do—made, done.

What have you done?

I have done nothing.

Fare—fatto.*

Che ha Ella fatto?

Non ho fatto niente.

Has that shoemaker made my boots?

He has made them.

He has not made them.

Ha fatto i miei stivali cotesto calzolaio?

Li ha fatti.

Non li ha fatti.

To put—put.

To put on—put on.

Have you put on your boots?

I have put them on.

Mettere—messo.*

Mettersi—messosi.*

†Si è Ella messi gli stivali?

†Me li sono messi.

To lift—lifted.

To take off—taken off.

Have you taken off your gloves?

I have taken them off.

Levare—levato.

Levarsi—levatosi.

†Si è Ella levati i guanti?

†Me li sono levati.

To tell, to say—told, said.

Have you said the mottoes?

I have said them.

Have you told me the motto?

I have told you the motto.

I have told it you.

Dire—detto.*

Ha Ella detto i motti?

Li ho detti.

Mi ha Ella detto il motto?

Le ho detto il motto.

Glìel' ho detto.

The motto.

Il motto.

That (meaning that thing).

This (meaning this thing).

Has he told you that?

He has told me that.

Have I told you that?

You have told me that.

Ciò.

Questo.

Le ha detto ciò?

Mi ha egli detto ciò.

Le ho detto io questo?

Ella mi ha detto questo.

It.

Have you told it me?

Lo, l'.

Me l' ha Ella detto?

Obs. A. Whenever the pronouns *mi, ci, ti, vi, si*, are followed by *lo, la, li, gli, le, ne*, the letter *i* is changed into *e*; and instead of saying *mi lo, mi la, mi li, &c.*, we must say *me lo, me la, me li, ce lo, &c.* These pronouns are separated when used before the verb, but joined together when they stand after it. Examples:

I imagine it.
 I promise it thee.
 You may assure yourself of it.
 I have told it you.
 I have not told it you.
 Has he told it you?
 He has told it me.
 He has not told it me.
 Have you told him that?
 I have told it him.

Me lo figuro.
Te lo prometto.
Potete assicurarvene.
Gliel' ho detto.
Non gliel' ho detto.
Gliel' ha egli detto?
Egli me l' ha detto.
Egli non me l' ha detto.
Gli ha detto ciò?
Gliel' ho detto.

Obs. B. When the pronoun *gli* is followed by *lo, la, li, le, ne*, it takes an *e*, and forms but one word with the pronoun that follows it. *Gli* always precedes *lo, la, li, le, ne*, thus: *glielo, gliela*, it to him; *glieli, gliele*, them to him; *gliene*, some to him; and not *lo gli*, &c.

I beg of you to speak to him of it.
 Have you told it them?
 I have told it them.

Vi prego di parlargliene.
L' ha Ella detto loro?
L' ho detto loro.

Have you spoken to the men?
 I have spoken to them.
 To whom did you speak?

Ha Ella parlato agli uomini?
Ho parlato loro.
A chi ha Ella parlato?

Are you the brother of my friend? | *È Ella fratello del mio amico?*

So.

| *Lo.*

Obs. C. The pronoun *lo*, which is sometimes expressed in English by *so*, and more elegantly omitted, may in Italian relate to a substantive, an adjective, or even a whole sentence. It alters neither gender nor number, when it relates to an adjective or a whole sentence. Sometimes *il* is used instead of *lo*, as: *il so*, I know it, instead of *lo so*. Ex.

I am.
 Are you rich?
 I am not.
 Is he learned?
 He is.
 He is not.
 Are our neighbours as poor as they say?
 They are so.
 Did your brother go to the ball the day before yesterday?
 I do not know.

Lo sono (il sono).
È Ella ricca?
Non lo sono.
È Egli dotto?
Egli l' è (or, lo è).
Egli non l' è (or, non lo è).
Sono così poveri i nostri vicini come lo dicono (or, il dicono)?
Lo sono.
È stato alla festa da ballo il dì
Lei fratello l' altro ieri?
Non lo so.

To write—written.

Which notes have you written?
 I have written these.
 Which mottoes has he written?
 He has written those which you
 see.

Scrivere—scritto.*

Quai biglietti ha Ella scritti?
 Ho scritto questi.
 Quai motti ha egli scritti?
 Egli ha scritto quelli ch' Ella
 vede.

To drink, — drunk.
 To see, — seen.
 To read, — read (*past part.*).
 To be acquainted—been acquaint-
 with. ed with.

Bere* (bevere), — bevuto.
 Vedere*, — veduto (visto).
 Leggere*, — letto.
 Conoscere*, — conosciuto.

Which men have you seen?
 I have seen those.
 Which books have you read?
 I have read those which you have
 lent me.
 Have you been acquainted with
 those men?
 I have not been acquainted with
 them.
 Have you seen any sailors?
 I have seen some.
 I have not seen any.

Che uomini ha Ella veduti (visti)?
 Ho veduto (visto) quelli.
 Quai libri ha Ella letti?
 Ho letto quelli ch' Ella mi ha
 prestati.
 Ha Ella conosciuto quegli uo-
 mini?
 Non li ho conosciuti.
 Ha Ella veduto dei marinai?
 Ne ho veduti (visti).
 Non ne ho veduti.

*To call.**To throw.**To throw away.*

Who calls me?
 Your father calls you.
 Have you called the men?
 I have called them.
 Do you throw your money away?
 I do not throw it away.
 Who throws away his books?
 Have you thrown away anything?
 I have thrown away my gloves.
 Have you thrown them away?
 I have thrown them away.

*Chiamare l.**Gettare l.**Gettar via.*

Chi mi chiama?
 La chiama il di Lei padre.
 Ha Ella chiamato gli uomini?
 Li ho chiamati.
 Getta Ella via il suo danaro?
 Non lo getto via.
 Chi getta via i propri libri?
 Ha Ella gettato via qualcosa?
 Ho gettato via i miei guanti.
 Li ha Ella gettati via?
 Li ho gettati via.

EXERCISES.

104.

Have you anything to do?—I have nothing to do.—What hast
 thou done?—I have done nothing.—Have I done anything?—You

have done something.—What have I done?—You have torn my books.—What have your children done?—They have torn their clothes.—What have we done?—You have done nothing; but your brothers have burnt my fine books.—Has the tailor already made your coat?—He has not yet made it.—Has your shoemaker already made your boots?—He has already made them.—Have you sometimes made a hat?—I have never made one.—Have our neighbours ever written books?—They wrote some formerly.—How many coats has your tailor made?—He has made twenty or thirty.—Has he made good or bad coats?—He has made (both) good and bad.—Has your father put on his coat?—He has not yet put it on, but he is going to put it on.—Has your brother put his boots on?—He has put them on.—Have our neighbours put on their boots and their gloves?—They have put on neither (*nè questi nè quelli*).—What has the physician taken away?—He has taken nothing away.—What have you taken off?—I have taken off my large hat.—Have your children taken off their gloves?—They have taken them off.—When did the ball take place?—It took place the day before yesterday.—Who has told you that?—My servant has told it me.—What has your brother told you?—He has told me nothing.—Did I tell you that?—You did not tell it me.—Has he told it you?—He has told it me.—Who has told it your neighbour?—The English have told it him.—Have they told it to the French?—They have told it them.—Who has told it you?—Your son has told it me.—Has he told it you?—He has told it me.—Are you willing to tell your friends that?—I am willing to tell it them.

105.

Are you the brother of that young man?—I am.—Is that young man your son?—He is.—Are your friends as rich as they say?—They are so.—Are these men as learned as they say?—They are not so.—Do you often sweep the warehouse?—I sweep it as often as I can.—Has our neighbour money enough to buy some coals?—I do not know.—Did your brother go to the ball yesterday?—I do not know.—Has your cook gone to the market?—He has not gone thither.—Is he ill (*malato*)?—He is.—Am I ill?—You are not.—Are you as tall as I?—I am.—Are you as fatigued as your brother?—I am more so than he.—Have you written a note?—I have not written a note, but an exercise.—What have your brothers written?—They have written their exercises.—When did they write them?—They wrote them yesterday.—Have you written your exercises?—I have written them.—Has your friend written his?—He has not written them yet.—Which exercises has your little brother written?—He has written his own.—Have you spoken to my father?—I have spoken to him.—When did you speak to him?—I spoke to him the day before yesterday.—How many times have you spoken to the captain?—I have spoken to him many times.—Have you often spoken to his son?—I have often spoken to him.—To which men has your friend spoken?—He has spoken to these and to those.

106.

Have you spoken to the Russians?—I have spoken to them.—Have the English ever spoken to you?—They have often spoken to me.—What has the German told you?—He told me the words.—Which words has he told you?—He has told me these words.—What have you to tell me?—I have a few words to tell you.—Which exercises has your friend written?—He has written those.—Which men have you seen at the market?—I have seen these.—Which books have your children read?—They have read those which you have lent them.—Have you seen these men or those?—I have seen neither these nor those.—Which men have you seen?—I have seen those to whom (*a cui*) you have spoken.—Have you been acquainted with those men?—I have been acquainted with them.—With which boys has your brother been acquainted?—He has been acquainted with those of our merchant.—Have I been acquainted with these Frenchmen?—You have not been acquainted with them.—Which wine has your servant drunk?—He has drunk mine.—Have you seen my brothers?—I have seen them.—Where have you seen them?—I have seen them at their own house (*in casa loro*).—Have you ever seen Greeks?—I have never seen any.—Has your brother seen any?—He has sometimes seen some.—Do you call me?—I do (call you).—Who calls your father?—My brother calls him.—Dost thou call any one?—I call no one.—Have you thrown away your hat?—I have not thrown it away.—Does your father throw away anything?—He throws away the notes which he receives.—Have you thrown away your nails?—I have not thrown them away.—Dost thou throw away thy book?—I do not throw it away; I want it to study Italian.

THIRTY-FOURTH LESSON.

Lezione Trentesima quarta.

To light (kindle),—lighted or lit.	Accendere*	— acceso.
To extinguish, — extinguished.	Spegnere*	— spento.
To open, — opened.	Aprire*	— aperto.
To conduct, — conducted.	Condurre*	— condotto.
To pick up — picked-up (gather), (gathered).	Raccorre*	— raccolto.
To answer, — answered.	Rispondere*	— risposto.
To take, — taken.	Prendere*	— preso.
To break, — broken.	Rompere*	— rotto.

To know,	— known.	Sapere*	— saputo.
To be able (can),	— been able (could).	Potere*	— potuto.
To be willing,	— been willing.	Volere*	— voluto.
To give,	— given.	Dare*	— dato.

NEUTER VERBS.

In neuter verbs the action is intransitive; that is, it remains in the agent. They are conjugated like the active. The latter, however, always form their past tenses with the auxiliary *avere**, to have; the neuter verbs, on the contrary, take *essere**, to be; and their past participle must agree in gender and number with the subject. (See Lesson XXXII.) Those neuter verbs, which are conjugated with the auxiliary *to have* in English, and *essere* in Italian, will always be marked.

To go,	— gone.	Andare*	— andato.
To stay,	— stood.	Stare*	— stato.
To remain,	— remained.	Rimanere*	— { rimasto, or rimasto.
To set out — set out (<i>past part.</i>). (to leave),		Partire	— partito.
To go out,	— gone out.	Uscire*	— uscito.
To come,	— come (<i>past part.</i>).	Venire*	— venuto.

Did you stay long in this country?

È Ella stata molto tempo in questo paese?

When did you go to the ball?

Quando è Ella andata alla festa da ballo?

I went thither at midnight.

Vi sono andato a mezzanotte.

Did he remain long in Paris?

È egli rimasto molto in Parigi?

He remained there a year.

Ci (or vi) è rimasto un anno.

Has your father left?

È partito il di Lei padre?

Have your friends left?

Sono partiti i di Lei amici?

They have not left.

Non sono partiti.

When did your brothers go out?

Quando sono usciti i di Lei fratelli?

They went out at ten o'clock.

Sono usciti alle dieci.

Did the men come to your father's?

Sono venuti dal di Lei padre gli uomini?

They did (come to him).

Sì, essi son venuti da lui.

Which fires have you extinguished?

Quai fuochi ha Ella spenti?

Which warehouses have you opened?

Che magazzini ha Ella aperti?

Have you conducted them to the storehouse?

Li ha Ella condotti al magazzino?

I have conducted them thither.

Ce li ho condotti.

Which books have you taken?
How many notes have you received?

I have received but one.

Which fires has he lighted?

Have you opened the trunks?

I have opened them.

Which nails has the carpenter picked up?

To pick up—picked up.

Which notes have you answered?

To answer a note.

Which books has he taken?

Have they broken the glasses?

They have not broken them.

Have you the gloves which I gave you?

I have had them, but have them no longer.

Quai libri ha Ella presi?

Quanti biglietti ha Ella ricevuti?

Ne ho ricevuto solamente uno.

Quai fuochi ha egli accesi?

Ha Ella aperto i bauli?

Li ho aperti.

Quai chiodi ha raccattati il legnaiuolo?

Raccattare—raccattato.

† A quai biglietti ha Ella risposto?

† Rispondere* a un biglietto.

Quai libri ha egli presi?

Hanno rotto i bicchieri?

Non li hanno rotti.

Ha Ella i guanti che Le ho dati?

Li ho avuti, ma non li ho più.

Upon.

The bench.

Upon the bench.

Upon it.

{ *Su,*
Sopra,
Sovra.

Il banco (lo scanno).

{ Sopra il banco.

{ Sul banco.

{ Sopra (*dissopra*).

Under.

Under the bench.

Under it (underneath).

Where is my hat?

It is upon the bench.

Are my gloves on the bench?

They are under it.

Sotto.

Sotto il banco.

Sotto (*dissotto*).

Ov' è il mio cappello?

È sopra il banco.

Sono sopra il banco (*or* sul banco) i miei guanti?

Sono sotto (*dissotto*) ad esso.

Do you learn to read?

I do (learn it).

I learn to write.

Have you learnt to speak?

I have (learnt it).

Impara Ella a leggere?

Sì, lo imparo.

Imparo a scrivere.

Ha Ella imparato a parlare?

Sì, l' ho imparato.

In the storehouse.
The stove.
In the stove.
In it *or* within.

Nel magazzino.
Il fornello (la stufa).
Nel fornello (nella stufa).
Dentro (al di dentro).

To wash.

To get *or* to have — got *or* had
mended, mended.
To get *or* to have — got *or* had
washed, washed.
To get *or* to have — got *or* had
made, made.
To get *or* to have — got *or* had
swept, swept.
To get *or* to have — got *or* had
sold, sold.

Lavare 1.

† Far rassettare, — fatto rasset-
tare.
† Far raccomo- — fatto racco-
dare, modare.
† Far lavare, — fatto lavare.
† Far fare, — fatto fare.
† Far spazzare, — fatto spaz-
zare.
† Far vendere, — fatto ven-
dere.

To get the coat mended.
To have it mended.
To get them mended.
To get some mended.

† Far raccomandare l' abito.
† Farlo raccomandare.
† Farli raccomandare.
† Farsene raccomandare.

Are you getting a coat made (do
you order a coat)?
I am getting one made (I order
one).
I have had one made.
Have you had your coat mended?
I have had it mended.
I have not had it mended.
I have had my boots mended.
I have had them mended.

† Si fa fare un abito?
† Me lo faccio fare.
† Me ne son fatto fare uno.
† Ha Ella fatto raccomandare il
suo abito?
† L' ho fatto raccomandare.
† Non l' ho fatto raccomandare.
† Ho fatto raccomandare i miei
stivali.
† Me li ho fatti raccomandare.

To wipe.

Have you not seen my book?
I have seen it.
When?—Where?
When did you see my brother?

Asciugare 1.

Non ha Ella veduto il mio libro?
L' ho veduto (visto).
Quando? { Dove?
Ove?
Quando ha Ella veduto mio fra-
tello?

¹ Learners ought now to use in their exercises the adverbs of time, place, and number, mentioned in Lessons XIX., XXII., XXIII., XXXII.

I saw him the day before yesterday.	L' ho veduto l' altro ieri.
Where did you see him?	Dove l' ha Ella veduto?
I saw him at the theatre.	L' ho veduto al teatro.

EXERCISES.

107.

Where are your brothers gone?—They are gone to the theatre.—Have your friends left (*partire*)?—They have not yet left.—When do they set out?—This evening.—At what o'clock?—At half-past nine.—When did the French boys come to your brother's?—They came to his house yesterday.—Did their friends come also?—They came also.—Has any one come to us?—The good Germans have come to us.—Who has come to the English?—The French have come to them.—When did you drink some wine?—I drank some yesterday, and to-day.—Has the servant carried my note?—He has carried it.—Where has he carried it?—He has carried it to your friend.—Which notes have you carried?—I have carried those which you have given me to carry.—To whom have you carried them?—I have carried them to your father.—Which books has your servant taken?—He has taken those which you do not read.—Have your merchants opened their warehouses?—They have opened them.—Which warehouses have they opened?—They have opened those which you have seen.—When have they opened them?—They have opened them to-day.—Have you conducted the foreigners to the storehouses?—I have conducted them thither.—Which fires have the men extinguished?—They have extinguished those which you have perceived (*scorti*).—Have you received any notes?—We have received some.—How many notes have you received?—I have received only one; but my brother has received more than I: he has received six.

108.

Where is my coat?—It is on the bench.—Are my boots upon the bench?—They are under it.—Are the coals under the bench?—They are in the stove.—Have you put some coals into the stove?—I have put some into it.—Are you cold?—I am not cold.—Are the coals which I have seen in the stove?—They are in it.—Are my notes upon the stove?—They are in it (within).—Have you not been afraid to burn my notes?—I have not been afraid to burn them.—Have you sent your little boy to the market?—I have sent him thither.—When did you send him thither?—This morning.—Have you written to your father?—I have written to him.—Has he answered you?—He has not yet answered me.—Are you getting your floor swept?—I am getting it swept.—Have you had your counting-house swept?—I have not had it swept yet, but I intend to have it swept to-day.—Have you wiped your feet?—I have

wiped them.—Where did you wipe them?—I wiped them upon the carpet.—Have you had your benches wiped?—I have had them wiped.—What does your servant wipe?—He wipes the knives.—Have you ever written to the physician?—I have never written to him.—Has he sometimes written to you?—He has often written to me.—What has he written to you?—He has written something to me.—How many times have your friends written to you?—They have written to me more than twenty times.—Have you seen my sons?—I have never seen them.

109.

Have you ever seen any Greeks?—I have never seen any.—Have you already seen a Syrian?—I have already seen one.—Where have you seen one?—At the theatre.—Have you given the book to my brother?—I have given it to him.—Have you given money to the merchant?—I have given him some.—How much have you given to him?—I have given him fourteen crowns.—Have you given any gold ribbons to the children of our neighbours?—I have given them some.—Wilt thou give me some wine?—I have given you some already.—When didst thou give me some?—I gave you some formerly.—Wilt thou give me some now?—I cannot give you any; I have none.—Has the American lent you money?—He has lent me some.—Has he often lent you some?—He has sometimes lent me some.—Has the Italian ever lent you money?—He has never lent me any.—Is he poor?—He is not poor; he is richer than you.—Will you lend me a crown?—I will lend you two.—Has your boy come to mine?—He has come to him.—When?—This morning.—At what o'clock?—Early.—Has he come earlier than I?—At what o'clock did you come?—I came at half-past five.—He came earlier than you.

110.

Has the concert taken place?—It has taken place.—Did it take place late?—It took place early.—At what o'clock?—At twelve.—At what o'clock did the ball take place?—It took place at midnight.—Does your brother learn to write?—He does (learn).—Does he know how to read?—He does not yet know how.—Do you know the Frenchman whom I know?—I do not know the one whom you know, but I know another.—Does your friend know the same (*i medesimi*) merchants as I know?—He does not know the same (*i medesimi*), but he knows others.—Have you ever had your coat mended?—I have sometimes had it mended.—Hast thou already had thy boots mended?—I have not yet had them mended.—Has your brother sometimes had his waistcoats mended?—He has had them mended several times (*alcune volte*).—Hast thou had thy hat or thy waistcoat mended?—I have neither had the one nor the other mended.—Have you had your gloves or your handkerchiefs mended?—I have had neither the ones nor the others mended.—Has

your father had anything made?—He has not had anything made.—Have you looked for my gloves?—I have looked for them.—Where have you looked for them?—I have looked for them upon the bed, and have found them under it.—Have you found my notes in the stove?—I have found them in it.—Have you found my boots under the bed?—I have found them upon it.—How long did you stay in that country?—I stayed there two years.—Did your father remain long at the ball?—He remained there only a few minutes.

THIRTY-FIFTH LESSON.

Lezione Trentesima quinta.

<i>To promise</i>	— <i>promised.</i>	<i>Promettere*</i>	— <i>promesso.</i>
<i>To understand</i>	— <i>understood.</i>	<i>Comprendere*</i>	— <i>compreso.</i>
		<i>Intendere*</i>	— <i>inteso.</i>
		<i>Capire*</i>	— <i>capito.</i>
<i>To wait</i>	— <i>waited.</i>	<i>Attendere*</i>	— <i>atteso.</i>
		<i>Aspettare*</i>	— <i>aspettato.</i>
<i>To understand</i>	— <i>understood</i>	<i>Intendere*</i>	— <i>inteso.</i>
(<i>to hear</i>).	(<i>heard</i>).	<i>Capire*</i>	— <i>capito.</i>
		<i>Sentire</i>	— <i>sentito.</i>

Obs. Compound and derivative verbs are generally conjugated like their primitives: thus the verb *promettere** is conjugated like *mettere** to put (Lesson XXXIII.), *comprendere**, like *prendere** to take (Lessons XXXIV.), *attendere** and *intendere**, like *tendere** to tend.

Do you promise me to come?	Mi promette Ella di venire?
I do promise you.	Glielo prometto.
What have you promised the man?	Che ha Ella promesso all' uomo?
I have promised him nothing.	Non gli ho promesso nulla.

<i>To lose</i> — <i>lost.</i>	<i>Perdere*</i> — <i>perduto.</i>
How much has your brother lost?	Quanto danaro ha perduto il di Lei fratello?
He has lost about a crown.	Ha perduto circa uno scudo.
About.	Circa, incirca.
I have lost more than he.	Ho perduto più di lui.

Have you ever learnt Italian?	Ha Ella imparato mai l' italiano?
I have learnt it formerly.	L' ho imparato altra volta.

<i>To wear, to use.</i>	<i>Usare.</i>
<i>To wear out.</i>	<i>Logorare</i> I.
This coat is worn out.	Questo abito è logorato.
The worn-out coat.	L' abito logoro.
<i>To refuse.</i>	<i>Rifutare (ricusare).</i>
<i>To spell.</i>	<i>Compitare.</i>
<i>How?</i>	<i>Come?</i>
<i>Well.</i>	<i>Bene.</i>
<i>Badly.</i>	<i>Malé.</i>
<i>So, thus.</i>	<i>Così, in questo modo.</i>
<i>So so.</i>	<i>Così così.</i>
<i>In this manner.</i>	<i>In questa maniera.</i>
How has your brother written his exercise?	Come ha scritto il suo tema il di Lei fratello?
He has written it well.	L' ha scritto bene.
<i>To dry.</i>	<i>Asciugare (seccare).</i>
Do you put your coat to dry?	Mette Ella ad asciugare il suo abito?
I do (put it to dry).	Lo metto ad asciugare.
How old are you?	{ † Che età ha Ella?
I am twelve years old.	{ † Quanti anni ha Ella?
	{ † Ho dodici anni.
How old is your brother?	{ † Quanti anni ha il di Lei fratello?
He is thirteen years old.	{ † Che età ha il di Lei fratello?
	{ † Egli ha tredici anni.
<i>Almost.</i>	<i>Quasi, incirca (all' incirca).</i>
He is almost fourteen years old.	† Egli ha incirca quattordici anni.
<i>About.</i>	<i>Circa, incirca (all' incirca).</i>
I am about fifteen years old.	† Ho circa quindici anni.
<i>Nearly.</i>	<i>Presso a poco, quasi, incirca.</i>
He is nearly fifteen years old.	{ † Ha quasi quindici anni.
	{ † Si avvicina ai quindici anni.
<i>To draw near.</i>	<i>Avvicinare, avvicinarsi.</i>
<i>Hardly.</i>	<i>Appena.</i>
You are hardly seventeen years old.	† Ella ha appena diciassette anni.

. <i>Not quite.</i>	{ <i>Non intieramente.</i> <i>Non del tutto.</i> <i>Non tutt' affatto.</i>
I am not quite sixteen years old.	{ † Non ho tutt' affatto sedici anni. † Non ho ancor compito il sedicesimo anno. <i>Compire 3.</i>
<i>To complete.</i>	† Sei maggiore di tuo fratello?
Art thou older than thy brother?	{ Sono più giovane di lui. Sono minore di lui. <i>Vecchio.</i>
I am younger than he.	{ <i>Attempato.</i> <i>Avanzato in età.</i> <i>Giovane.</i>
Old (in years).	
Aged.	
Young.	

<i>There is.</i>	<i>C' è, vi è (vi ha, avvi).</i>
<i>There are.</i>	<i>Ci sono, or vi sono.</i>

How many francs are there in a crown?	† Quanti franchi ci vogliono per fare uno scudo?
Three.	Tre.
There are twenty sous, or a hundred centimes, in one franc.	† Venti soldi, o cento centesimi fanno un franco.
There are five centimes in a sou.	† Cinquecentesimi fanno un soldo.
A <i>or</i> one hundred.	Cento.
The centime.	Il centesimo.

The gold sequin.	Lo zecchino d' oro.
The livre (a coin).	La lira (<i>a feminine noun</i>).
The crown.	Lo scudo.
The sou.	Il soldo.
A sequin has four crowns.	Quattro scudi fanno uno zecchino d' oro.
There are seven livres (or francs) in a crown.	Sette lire fanno uno scudo.
There are twenty sous in a livre.	Venti soldi fanno una lira.

To understand—understood.	Capire* — capito.
I understand, thou understandest, he understands.	Capisco, capisci, capisce.
We, you, they understand.	Capiamo, capite, capiscono.

The noise.	Lo strepito, il rumore.
The wind.	Il vento.
The noise (roaring) of the wind.	Lo strepito del vento.
Do you hear the roaring of the wind?	Intende Ella lo strepito del vento?
I do hear it.	L' intendo.

<i>To bark.</i>	<i>Latrare, abbaiare</i> 1.
The barking.	Il latrato.
Have you heard the barking of the dogs?	Ha Ella inteso il latrato dei cani?
I have heard it.	L' ho inteso.

<i>To wait for some one or something.</i>	} <i>Aspettare qualcuno o qualche cosa.</i>
<i>To expect some one or something.</i>	
Are you waiting for my brother?	Aspetta Ella mio fratello?
I am waiting for him.	Lo aspetto.
Do you expect some friends?	Aspetta Ella degli amici?
I expect some.	Ne aspetto alcuni.

The nobleman.	Il gentiluomo (il nobile).
Noblemen.	I gentiluomini (i nobili).
Of good manners, pretty.	Gentile, grazioso.
Where has the nobleman remained?	Or' è rimasto il gentiluomo?
He has remained at home.	È rimasto in casa.
Have you remained with him?	È Ella rimasta con lui (seco)?
With.	Con.
With him.	Seco, con lui (secolui).

EXERCISES.

111.

Do you promise me to come to the ball?—I promise you.—Have I promised you anything?—You have promised me nothing.—What has my brother promised you?—He has promised me a fine book.—Have you received it?—Not yet.—Do you give me what you have promised me?—I give it you.—Has your friend received much money?—He has received but little.—How much has he received?—He has received but one crown.—How much money have you given to my son?—I have given him thirty francs.—Did you not promise him more?—I have given him what I promised him.—Have you (any) Italian money?—I have some.—What money have you?—I have some sequins, crowns, livres, and sous.—How many

crowns are there in a gold sequin?—There are four crowns in a gold sequin.—Have you any French money?—I have some; I have French and Italian money.—What kind of (*che*) French money have you?—I have some francs, sous, and centimes.—How many sous are there in a franc?—There are twenty sous in a franc.—Have you any centimes?—I have several.—How many centimes are there in a sou?—There are five.—And how many centimes are there in a franc?—One hundred (*cento*).—Will you lend me your coat?—I will lend it you, but it is worn out.—Are your boots worn out?—They are not worn out.—Will you lend them to my brother?—I will lend them to him.—To whom have you lent your hat?—I have not lent it; I have given it to somebody.—To whom have you given it?—I have given it to a poor man (*a un povero*).

112.

Does your little brother already know how to spell?—He does (know).—Does he spell well?—He spells well.—How has your little brother spelt?—He has spelt so so.—How have your children written their exercises?—They have written them badly.—Has my neighbour lent you his gloves?—He has refused to lend them to me.—Do you know Spanish?—I know it.—Does your son speak Italian?—He speaks it well.—How do your friends speak?—They do not speak badly.—Do they listen to what you tell them?—They listen to it.—How hast thou learnt English?—I have learnt it in this manner.—Did you call me?—I have not called you, but I have called your brother.—Is he come?—Not yet.—Where did you wet your clothes?—I wetted them in the garden.—Will you put them to dry?—I have already put them to dry.—Does the nobleman wish to give me anything to do?—He wishes to give you something to do.—How old are you?—I am hardly eighteen years old.—How old is your brother?—He is twenty years old.—Are you as old as he?—I am not so old.—How old art thou?—I am about twelve years old.—Am I younger than you?—I do not know.—How old is our neighbour?—He is not quite thirty years old.—Are our friends as young as we?—They are older than we.—How old are they?—The one is nineteen, and the other twenty years old.—Is your father as old as mine?—He is older than yours.

113.

Have you read my book?—I have not quite read it yet.—Has your friend finished his books?—He has almost finished them.—Do you understand me?—I understand you.—Does the Frenchman understand us?—He understands us.—Do you understand what we are telling you?—We understand it.—Dost thou understand Italian?—I do not understand it yet, but I am learning it.—Do we understand the English?—We do not understand them.—Do the English understand us?—They understand us.—Do we understand them?—We hardly understand them.—Do you hear any noise?—I hear

nothing.—Have you heard the roaring of the wind?—I have heard it.—What do you hear?—I hear the barking of the dogs.—Whose dog is this?—It is the Scotchman's dog.—Have you lost your stick?—I have not lost it.—Has your servant lost my notes?—He has lost them.—Did you go to the ball?—I did not go.—Where did you remain?—I remained at home.—Where did the noblemen remain?—They remained in the garden.—Has your father lost as much money as I?—He has lost more than you.—How much have I lost?—You have hardly lost one crown.—Did your friends remain at the ball?—They remained there.—Do you know as much as the English physician?—I do not know as much as he.—How many books have you read?—I have read hardly two.—Do you wait for any one?—I wait for no one.—Do you wait for the man whom I saw this morning?—I wait for him.—Art thou waiting for thy book?—I am waiting for it.—Do you expect your father this evening?—I expect him.—Do you expect some friends?—I expect some.—Where is your little brother?—He is gone with the nobleman (*col signore*).—Is he gone to the play with him?—He is gone there with him.

THIRTY-SIXTH LESSON.

Lezione Trentesima sesta.

<i>To bite—bitten.</i>	<i>Mordere *—morso.</i>
<i>To beat.</i>	<i>Battere 2.</i>
Why do you beat the dog?	Perchè batte Ella il cane?
<i>Why?</i>	<i>Perchè?</i>
<i>Because.</i>	<i>Poichè, perchè.</i>
I beat it, because it has bitten me.	Lo batto perchè mi ha morso.
<i>To owe—owed.</i>	<i>Dovere *—dovuto.</i>
How much do you owe me?	Quanto mi deve Ella?
I owe you fifty crowns.	Le devo cinquanta scudi.
How much does the man owe you?	Quanto Le deve l' uomo?
He owes me sixty francs.	Mi deve sessanta franchi.
Do our neighbours owe as much as we?	Debbono i nostri vicini quanto noi?
We owe more than they.	Dobbiamo più di loro.
How much dost thou owe?	Quanto devi?
Two hundred crowns.	Due cento scudi.
Eighty francs.	Ottanta franchi.
Two hundred and fifty sequins.	Due cento cinquanta zecchini.

Are you to . . . ?	† Deve Ella . . ?
I am to	† Devo
Where are you to go to this morning?	† Ove deve Ella andare stamane?
I am to go to the warehouse.	† Devo (debbo) andare al magazzino.
Is your brother to come hither to-day?	† Il di Lei fratello deve venire quì oggi?

<i>Soon, shortly.</i>	{ <i>Quanto prima, fra poco, bentosto.</i>
He is to come hither soon.	{ <i>Presto, subito.</i>
	† Deve venire quì quanto prima.

<i>To return (to come back).</i>	<i>Ritornare 1.</i>
At what o'clock do you return from the market?	A che ora ritorna Ella dal mercato?
I return from it at twelve o'clock.	Ne ritorno { alle dodici. a mezzodì. a mezzo giorno.
<i>From it, from there, thence.</i>	<i>Ne.</i>
Does the servant return early from the warehouse?	Il servitore ritorna per tempo dal magazzino?
He returns from it at ten o'clock in the morning.	{ Ne ritorna alle dieci antimeridiane. Ne ritorna alle dieci del mattino. Ne ritorna alle dieci della mattina.
At nine o'clock in the morning.	† Alle nove antimeridiane.
At five o'clock in the evening.	† Alle cinque della sera (pomeridiane).
At eleven o'clock at night.	† Alle undici della sera (pomeridiane).

<i>How long?</i>	<i>Quanto tempo?</i>
<i>During, for.</i>	<i>Durante, per lo spazio di.¹</i>
How long has he remained there?	Quanto tempo vi è egli restato (rimasto)?
A minute.	Durante un minuto.
An hour.	Per lo spazio di un' ora.
A day.	Durante un giorno.
A month.	Per lo spazio di un mese.
A year.	Durante un anno.

¹ *Durante* or *per lo spazio di*, when it signifies *for*, may be left out in Italian as in English, but it is then understood.

The summer.	{ L' estate (<i>fem.</i>).
The winter.	{ La state (<i>fem.</i>).
During the summer.	L' inverno.
	Durante la state.

<i>To dwell, to live, to reside, to remain.</i>	<i>Stare di casa ; dimorare.</i>
<i>To lodge.</i>	<i>Stare*.</i>
Where do you live?	<i>Alloggiare, abitare.</i>
I live in William-street, number twenty-five.	Dove sta Ella di casa? (Ove alloggia?)
Where did your brother live?	Alloggio nella contrada Gu- glielmo (<i>or via</i> Guglielmo), numero venti cinque.
He lived in Rivoli-street, number forty-nine.	Dove ha alloggiato il di Lei fratello?
Dost thou live at thy brother's house?	Ha alloggiato contrada (<i>or via</i>) di Rivoli, numero quaranta nove.
I do not live at his, but at my father's house.	Stai da tuo fratello?
Does your friend still live where I lived?	Non istò da lui, ma in casa di mio padre.
He lives no longer where you lived.	Il di Lei amico sta (alloggia) ancora ove ho alloggiato (sono stato) io?
	Non istà più dove ha alloggiato Ella.

<i>No longer.</i>	<i>Non—più.</i>
The number.	Il numero.
How long were you speaking to the man?	Quanto tempo ha Ella parlato all' uomo?
I spoke to him for two hours.	Gli ho parlato per il corso di due ore.
Did you remain long with my father?	È Ella restata molto tempo con mio padre (col padre mio)?
I remained with him an hour.	Vi son restato un' ora.
Long.	Molto tempo.

EXERCISES.

114.

Why do you not drink?—I do not drink, because. I am not thirsty.—Why do you pick up this ribbon?—I pick it up, because I want it.—Why do you lend money to this man?—I lend him some, because he wants some.—Why does your brother study?—He studies, because he wishes to learn French.—Has your cousin

drunk already?—He has not drunk yet, because he has not yet been thirsty.—Does the servant show you the floor which he sweeps?—He does not show me that which he sweeps now, but that which he swept yesterday.—Why do you love that man?—I love him because he is good.—Why does your neighbour beat his dog?—Because it has bitten his boy.—Why do our friends love us?—They love us, because we are good.—Why do you bring me wine?—I bring you some, because you are thirsty.—Why does the sailor drink?—He drinks, because he is thirsty.—Do you see the sailor who is in the (*sul*, upon the) ship?—I do not see the one who is in the ship, but the one who is in the (*al*) market.—Do you read the books which my father has given you?—I read them.—Do you understand them?—I understand them so so.—Do you know the Italians whom we know?—We do not know those whom you know, but we know others.—Does the shoemaker mend the boots which you have sent him?—He does not mend them, because they are worn out (*non sono più buoni*).

115.

Is your servant returned from the market?—He has not yet returned from it.—At what o'clock did your brother return from the ball?—He returned from it at one o'clock in the morning (*al tocco dopo mezza notte*).—At what o'clock didst thou come back from thy friend's?—I came back at eleven o'clock in the morning.—Didst thou remain long with him?—I remained with him about an hour.—How long do you intend to remain at the ball?—I intend to remain there a few minutes.—How long did the Frenchman remain with you?—He remained with me for two hours.—How long did your brothers remain in town (*nella città*)?—They remained there during the winter.—Do you intend to remain long with us?—I intend to remain with you during the summer.—How much do I owe you?—You do not owe me much.—How much do you owe your tailor?—I owe him eighty sequins.—How much dost thou owe thy shoemaker?—I owe him already eighty-five sequins.—Do I owe you anything?—You do not owe me anything.—How much does the Englishman owe you?—He owes me more than you.—Do the English owe as much as the Spaniards?—Not quite so much.—Do I owe you as much as my brother?—You owe me more than he.—Do our friends owe you as much as we?—They owe me less than you.—How much do they owe you?—They owe me two hundred and fifty sequins.—How much do we owe you?—You owe me three hundred sequins.

116.

Why do you give money to the merchant?—I give him some, because he has sold me something.—Where are you going?—I am to go to the market.—Is your friend to come hither to-day?—He is to come here.—When is he to come here?—He is to come here soon.—When are our sons to go to the play?—They are to go

thither to-night (*stassera*).—When are they to return from it?—They are to return from it at half-past ten.—When are you to go to the physician's?—I am to go to him at ten o'clock at night.—When is your son to return from the painter's?—He is to return (from him) at five o'clock in the evening.—Where do you live?—I live in Rivoli Street, number forty-seven.—Where does your father live?—He lives in his friend's house.—Where do your brothers live?—They live in William Street, number one hundred and twenty.—Dost thou live at thy brother's?—I live in his house.—Do you still live where you lived (*dove è stata dapprima*)?—I still live there.—Does your friend still live where he did (*dove è stato altre volte*)?—He no longer lives where he did.—Where does he live at present?—He lives in his father's house.

THIRTY-SEVENTH LESSON.

Lezione Trentesima settima.

<i>How long?</i>	{ <i>Fino a quando? Fin quando?</i>
<i>Till, until.</i>	{ <i>Insino a quando? Fino, insino.</i>
Till twelve o'clock (till noon).	{ <i>Fino a mezzo giorno.</i>
Till to-morrow.	{ <i>Fino a mezzodì.</i>
Till the day after to-morrow.	<i>Fino a domani.</i>
Till Sunday.	<i>Fino a { domani l' altro.</i>
Till Monday.	<i>Fino a { posdomani.</i>
Till this evening.	<i>Fino a domenica.</i>
Till evening.	<i>Fino a lunedì.</i>
Until morning.	<i>Fino a stassera.</i>
Until the next day.	{ <i>Fino alla sera.</i>
Until this day.	{ <i>Fino a sera.</i>
Until that moment.	{ <i>Fino al mattino.</i>
Till now—hitherto.	{ <i>Fino alla mattina.</i>
Until then.	<i>Fino all' indomani.</i>
Then.	<i>Fino a questo giorno.</i>
	<i>Fino a questo momento.</i>
	<i>Fino adesso—fin qui.</i>
	<i>Fino allora.</i>
	<i>Allora.</i>
Tuesday, Wednesday.	<i>Martedì, mercoledì.</i>
Thursday, Friday.	<i>Giovedì, venerdì.</i>
Saturday.	<i>Sabato.</i>

Obs. A. The names of the days and months are masculine, except *la domenica*, Sunday, which is feminine. Of the seasons, *la Pri-*

mavera, Spring, and *l' Estate*, Summer, are feminine; *l' Autunno*, Autumn, and *l' Inverno*, Winter, are masculine.

Till I return (till my return).	Fino al mio ritorno.
Till my brother returns (till my brother's return).	Fino al ritorno di mio fratello.
Till four o'clock in the morning.	{ Fino alle quattro del mattino.
Till midnight (till twelve o'clock at night).	{ Fino a quattr' ore del mattino.
The return or coming back.	Fino a mezza notte (fino alle dodici di notte).
How long did you remain at my father's house?	Il ritorno.
I remained at his house till eleven o'clock at night.	Fino a quando è Ella restata da mio padre?
	Ci sono restato fino alle undici pomeridiane.

<i>They, the people, any one, or one.</i>	<i>Si.</i>
It is said— <i>people say</i> .	<i>Si dice, dicono.</i>
They are known— <i>people</i> or <i>they know them</i> .	<i>Si conoscono.</i>
I am told— <i>they tell me</i> .	† <i>Mi si dice</i> (mi vien detto, mi dicono).
It is not said— <i>people do not say</i> .	<i>Non si dice.</i>
I am not told— <i>they do not tell me</i> .	† <i>Non mi si dice</i> (non mi vien detto).
They do not speak of it.	<i>Non se¹ ne parla.</i>
A great many people are seen there (that is, <i>one</i> sees there a great many people).	<i>Vi si vede molta gente.</i>

Obs. B. *They, the people, any one, or one*, are generally not expressed in the compound tenses, or even in simple tenses, when they are followed by a personal pronoun. Ex.

I am expected (that is, <i>they expect me</i>).	Sono aspettato (<i>Mi aspettano</i>).
Here are the books which he was asked for (that is, which <i>they</i> asked him for).	Ecco i libri che gli sono stati domandati.
It has been said (that is, <i>people</i> said).	È stato detto (<i>Hanno detto</i>).
It has been written (that is, <i>people</i> wrote).	È stato scritto (<i>Hanno scritto</i>).
I was told (that is, <i>they</i> told me).	† <i>Mi è stato detto</i> (<i>Mi hanno detto</i>).
<i>They</i> wrote to me.	† <i>Mi è stato scritto</i> (<i>Mi hanno scritto</i>).

¹ *Si* is here changed into *se*, because it is followed by *ne*, (See Lesson XXXIII. *Obs. A.*)

Have <i>they</i> brought my boots?	{ † Sono stati portati i miei stivali?
<i>They</i> have brought them.	{ † Hanno portato i miei stivali?
<i>They</i> have not brought them yet.	{ † Sono stati portati.
What have <i>they</i> said?	{ † Li hanno portati.
<i>They</i> have said nothing.	{ † Non sono ancora stati portati.
What have <i>they</i> done?	{ † Non li hanno peranco portati.
<i>They</i> have done nothing.	{ † Che è stato detto? (Che hanno detto?)
	{ † Non è stato detto niente.
	{ † Non hanno detto niente.
	{ † Che è stato fatto? (Che hanno fatto?)
	{ † Non è stato fatto niente.
	{ † Non hanno fatto niente.

To be willing (wish)—been willing (wished).

Have *they* been willing to mend my coat?

They have not been willing to mend it.

Have *they* been willing to mend my coats?

They have not been willing to mend them.

To be able (can)—been able (could).

Have *they* been able to find the books?

They could not find them.

Can *they* find them now?

They cannot find them.

Volere—voluto.*

† Hanno voluto raccomandare il mio abito?

† Non hanno voluto raccomandarlo.

† Hanno voluto raccomandare i miei abiti?

† Non hanno voluto raccomandarli.

Potere—potuto.

† Hanno potuto trovare i libri?

{ † Non li hanno potuto trovare.

{ † Non si son potuti trovare.

† Si possono trovare adesso?

† Non si possono trovare.

Can *they* do what *they* wish?

They do what *they* can, but *they* do not do what *they* wish.

† Si può fare ciò che si vuole?

† Si fa ciò che si può, ma non si fa ciò che si vuole.

What do *they* say?

What do *they* say new?

They say nothing new.

Something or anything new.

Nothing or not anything new.

{ † Che si dice?

{ † Che dicono?

{ † Che si dice di nuovo?

{ † Che dicono di nuovo?

{ † Non si dice niente di nuovo.

{ † Non dicono niente di nuovo.

Qualcosa di nuovo.

Niente di nuovo.

New.	Nuovo.
My new coat.	Il mio abito nuovo.
My new horse.	Il mio nuovo cavallo.
My fine horse.	Il mio bel cavallo.
My new friend.	Il mio nuovo amico.
My handsome coat.	Il mio bell' abito.

To brush.	Spazzare, spazzolare l.
This fine man.	Questo bell' uomo.
These fine men.	Questi begli uomini.
This fine tree.	Questo bell' albero.
My new friends.	I miei nuovi amici.
Those fine trees.	Questi begli alberi.

Do they believe that?	{ Si crede ciò?
	{ Credono ciò?
They do not believe it.	{ Non si crede.
	{ Non lo credono.
Do they speak of that?	{ Si parla di ciò?
	{ Parlano di ciò?
They speak of it.	{ Se ne parla (see Lesson XXXIII. Obs. A.).
	{ Ne parlano.
They do not speak of it.	{ Non se ne parla.
	{ Non ne parlano.

EXERCISES.

117.

How long have you been writing?—I have been writing until midnight.—How long did I work?—You worked till four o'clock in the morning.—How long did my brother remain with you?—He remained with me until evening.—How long hast thou been working?—I have been working till now.—Hast thou still long to write?—I have to write till the day after to-morrow.—Has the physician still long to work?—He has to work till to-morrow.—Am I to remain here long?—You are to remain here till Sunday.—Is my brother to remain long with you?—He is to remain with us till Monday.—How long are we to work?—You are to work till the day after to-morrow.—Have you still long to speak?—I have still an hour to speak.—Did you speak long?—I spoke till the next day.—Did you remain long in my counting-house?—I remained in it till this moment.—Have you still long to live at the Frenchman's house?—I have still long to live at his house.—How long have you to remain at his house?—Till Tuesday.—Has the servant brushed my clothes?—He has brushed them.—Has he swept the floor?—He has swept it.—How long did he remain

here?—Till noon (*mezzo giorno*).—Does your friend still live with you?—He lives with me no longer.—How long did he live with you?—He lived with me only a year.—How long did you remain at the ball?—I remained there till midnight.—How long did you remain in the ship?—I remained an hour in it.—Have you remained in the garden till now?—I have remained there till now (*fino ad ora*).

118.

What do you do in the morning?—I read.—And what do you do then?—I breakfast and study.—Do you breakfast before you read?—No, Sir, I read before I breakfast.—Dost thou play instead of studying?—I study instead of playing.—Does thy brother go to the play instead of going into the garden?—He goes neither to the play nor into the garden.—What do you do in the evening?—I study.—What hast thou done this evening?—I have brushed your clothes, and have gone to the theatre.—Didst thou remain long at the theatre?—I remained there but a few minutes.—Are you willing to wait here?—How long am I to wait?—You are to wait till my father returns.—Has anybody come?—Somebody has come.—What did they want?—They wanted to speak to you.—Would they not wait?—They would not wait.—Have you waited for me long?—I have waited for you two hours.—Have you been able to read my note?—I have been able to read it.—Have you understood it?—I have understood it.—Have you shown it to anybody?—I have shown it to nobody.—Have they brought my fine clothes?—They have not brought them yet.—Have they swept my floor and brushed my clothes?—They have done both.—What have they said?—They have said nothing.—What have they done?—They have done nothing.—Has your little brother been spelling?—He has not been willing to spell.—Has the merchant's boy been willing to work?—He has not been willing.—What has he been willing to do?—He has not been willing to do anything.

119.

Has the shoemaker been able to mend my boots?—He has not been able to mend them.—Why has he not been able to mend them?—Because he has had no time.—Have they been able to find my gold buttons?—They have not been able to find them.—Why has the tailor not mended my coat?—Because he has no good thread.—Why have you beaten the dog?—Because it has bitten me.—Why do you drink?—Because I am thirsty.—What have they wished to say?—They have not wished to say anything.—Have they said anything new?—They have not said anything new.—What do they say new in the market?—They say nothing new (there).—Did they wish to kill a man?—They wished to kill one.—Do they believe that?—They do not believe it.—Do they speak of that?—They speak of it.—Do they speak of the man that

has been killed?—They do not speak of him.—Can they do what they wish?—They do what they can, but they do not do what they wish.—What have they brought?—They have brought your new coat.—Has my servant brushed my fine carpets?—He has not brushed them yet.—Have you bought a new horse?—I have bought two new horses.—How many fine trees have you seen?—I have seen but one fine tree.—Have you seen a fine man?—I have seen several fine men.—Have you a new friend?—I have several.—Do you like your new friends?—I like them.

THIRTY-EIGHTH LESSON.

Lezione Trentesima ottava.

<i>How far?</i>	<i>Fin dove?</i>
<i>Up to, as far as.</i>	<i>Fino, sino.</i>
As far as my brother's.	{ Fin da mio fratello.
As far as here, hither.	{ Fino a casa di mio fratello.
As far as there, thither.	Fin quì (or quà).
As far as London.	Fin là.
As far as Paris.	Fino a (or in) Londra.
	Fino a Parigi.
To, at, or in Paris.	A Parigi, in Parigi.
To, „ „ Berlin.	A Berlino, — Berlino.
To, „ „ London.	A Londra, — Londra.
To, „ „ Rome.	A Roma, — Roma.
To, at, or in France.	In Francia.
To, „ „ Italy.	In Italia.
To, „ „ England.	In Inghilterra.
As far as England.	Fino in Inghilterra.
As far as Italy.	Fino in Italia.
As far as Germany.	Fino in Germania (Alemagna).
As far as France.	Fino in Francia.
As far as Spain.	Fino in Ispagna.
As far as my house.	{ Fino a casa mia (or in casa mia).
As far as the warehouse.	{ Fino da me.
As far as the corner.	Fino al magazzino.
As far as the end of the road.	Fino al canto (all' angolo).
	Fino in fondo alla strada (a capo della strada).
As far as the middle of the road.	{ Fino alla metà della via.
	{ Fino in mezzo della via.

<i>Above or up stairs.</i>	<i>Sopra, in alto, dissopra.</i>
<i>Below—down stairs.</i>	<i>Giù, abbasso.</i>
As far as above.	Fino dissopra, fino in alto.
As far as below.	Fin giù, fin' abbasso.
As far as the other side of the road.	Fino all' altra parte della via.
This side.	{ Da questo lato.
	{ Da questa parte (da questo canto).
That side.	{ Da quella (cotesta) parte.
On this side of the road.	{ Di quà della via.
	{ Al di quà della via.
On that side of the road.	{ Al di là della via.
	{ Di là della via.

Germany.	L' Alemagna, la Germania.
America.	L' America.
Holland.	L' Olanda.
Italy.	L' Italia.
England.	L' Inghilterra.
France.	La Francia.
Spain.	La Spagna.

The middle.	Il mezzo (la metà, a fem. noun).
The well.	Il pozzo.
The cask.	La botte (a fem. noun).
The river.	Il fiume.
The lake.	Il lago.
The castle.	Il castello.
The corner.	Il canto, l' angolo.

<i>To travel.</i>	<i>Viaggiare l.</i>
Do you go to Paris?	{ Va Ella a Parigi?
Do you travel to Paris?	{ Va Ella a Firenze?
Do you go to Florence?	{ Va Ella a Roma?
Do you go to Rome?	{ Ci vado.
I do (go thither).	{ È egli andato in Inghilterra?
Is he gone to England?	{ Ci è andato.
He is gone there.	{ Fin dove è egli andato?
How far is he gone?	{ Fin dove ha egli viaggiato?
How far has he travelled?	{ Egli è andato fino in America.
He has gone as far as America.	{ Egli è andato fino in Italia.
He has gone as far as Italy.	

<i>To steal.</i>	<i>Rubare l.</i>
<i>To steal something from some one.</i>	{ <i>Rubare qualcosa ad uno.</i>
	{ <i>Portar via qualcosa ad uno.</i>

Have they stolen your hat from you?	{ Le è stato rubato il cappello? Le hanno portato via il cap- pello?
They have stolen it from me.	{ Mi è stato rubato. Me l' hanno portato via.
Has the man stolen the books from thee?	{ T' ha rubato i tuoi libri l' uomo? Ha portato via i tuoi libri l' uomo?
He has stolen them from me.	Me li ha portati via.
What have they stolen from you?	Che Le è stato rubato?
What have they stolen from your friend?	Che è stato rubato al di Lei amico?
They have stolen all his good wine from him.	Gli è stato rubato tutto il suo buon vino.

All.

All the wine.
All the good wine.
All his good wine.
All the books.
All his good books.
All the men.

Tutto.

Tutto il vino.
Tutto il buon vino.
Tutto il suo buon vino.
Tutti i libri.
Tutti i suoi buoni libri.
{ Tutti gli uomini.
Ogni uomo.

How do you spell this word?
How is this word written?

{ Come si scrive questo vocabolo
(questa parola)?
{ Come scrivesi questa parola?
{ Si scrive in questo modo (or
così).
{ Si scrive in questa maniera.

To dye (to colour)—dyed.

I dye, thou dyest, he dyes.

We dye, you dye, they dye.

To dye black.
To dye red.
To dye green.
To dye blue.
To dye yellow.

Tignere or tingere*—tinto.*

Tingo, tingi, tigne or
tinge.

Tigniamo, tignete, tingono.

Tignere nero.
Tignere rosso.
Tignere verde.
Tignere azzurro (turchino).
Tignere giallo.

My blue coat.

This white hat.

His round hat.

His yellow waistcoat.

I have a three-cornered hat.

Il mio abito turchino.

Questo cappello bianco.

Il suo cappello tondo.

Il suo giubbettino giallo.

Ho un cappello a tre corni (a tre punte).

Do you dye your coat blue?
 I dye it green.
 What colour will you dye your
 cloth?
 I will dye it red.
 The dyer.

Tigne il di Lei abito turchino?
 Lo tingo verde.
 Come vuole tingere il di Lei
 panno?
 Voglio tingerlo rosso.
 Il tintore.

To get dyed—got dyed.
 What colour do you get your
 coat dyed?
 I get it dyed green.
 What colour have you had your
 hat dyed?
 I have had it dyed black.
 Red.
 Brown.
 Grey.
 I have had my waistcoat dyed
 yellow.

Far tingere—fatto tingere.
 Come fa Ella tingere il di Lei
 vestito?
 Lo faccio tingere verde.
 Come ha fatto tingere il di Lei
 cappello?
 L' ho fatto tingere nero.
 Rosso.
 Bruno.
 Grigio (bigio),
 Ho fatto tingere giallo il mio
 giubbettino.

EXERCISES.

120.

How far have you travelled?—I have travelled as far as Germany.—Has he travelled as far as Italy?—He has travelled as far as America.—How far have the Spaniards gone?—They have gone as far as London.—How far has that poor man come?—He has come as far as here.—Has he come as far as your house?—He has come as far as my father's.—Have they stolen any thing from you?—They have stolen all the good wine from me.—Have they stolen anything from your father?—They have stolen all his good books.—Dost thou steal anything?—I steal nothing.—Hast thou ever stolen anything?—I have never stolen anything.—Have they stolen your good clothes from you?—They have stolen them from me.—What have they stolen from me?—They have stolen all the good books from you?—When did they steal the money from you?—They stole it from me the day before yesterday.—Have they ever stolen anything from us?—They have never stolen anything from us.—How far did you wish to go?—I wished to go as far as the wood.—Have you gone so far (as there)?—I have not gone so far (as there).—How far does your brother wish to go?—He wishes to go as far as the end of that road.—How far does the wine go (*arriva*)?—It goes (*arriva*) as far as the bottom of the cask (*della botte*).—Whither art thou going?—I am going to the market.—How far are we going?—We are going as far as the theatre.—Art thou going as far as the well?—I am going as far as the castle.—Has the carpenter drunk all the wine?—He has drunk it all.—Has his

little boy torn all his books?—He has torn them all.—Why has he torn them?—Because he does not wish to study.

121.

How much have you lost?—I have lost all my money.—Do you know where my father is?—I do not know.—Have you not seen my book?—I have not seen it.—Do you know how this word is written?—It is written thus.—Do you dye anything?—I dye my hat.—What colour do you dye it?—I dye it black.—What colour do you dye your clothes?—I dye them yellow.—Do you get your trunk dyed?—I get it dyed.—What colour do you get it dyed?—I get it dyed green.—What colour dost thou get thy gloves dyed?—I get them dyed blue.—Does your boy get his ribbon dyed?—He gets it dyed.—Does he get it dyed red?—He gets it dyed grey.—What colour have your friends got their clothes dyed?—They have got them dyed green.—What colour have the Italians had their hats dyed?—They have had them dyed brown.—Have you a white hat?—I have a black one.—What hat has the nobleman?—He has two hats; a white (one) and a black one.—What hat has the American?—He has a round hat.—Have I a white hat?—You have several white and black hats.—Has your dyer already dyed your cloth?—He has dyed it.—What colour has he dyed it?—He has dyed it green.—Do you travel sometimes?—I travel often.—Where do you intend to go this summer (*quest' estate*)?—I intend to go to Paris.—Do you not go to Italy?—I do (go thither).—Hast thou sometimes travelled?—I have never travelled.—Have your friends a mind to go to Holland?—They have a mind to go there.—When do they intend to leave?—They intend to leave the day after to-morrow.

122.

Has your brother already gone to Spain?—He has not yet gone there.—Have you travelled in Spain?—I have travelled there.—When do you go?—I go to-morrow.—At what o'clock?—At five o'clock in the morning.—Have you worn out all your boots?—I have worn them all out.—What have the Spaniards done?—They have burnt all our good ships.—Have you finished all your exercises?—I have finished them all.—How far has the Frenchman come?—He has come as far as the middle of the road.—Where does your friend live?—He lives on this side of the road.—Where is your warehouse?—It is on that side of the road.—Where is our friend's counting-house?—It is on that side of the theatre.—Is your friend's garden on this or that side of the wood?—It is on that side.—Is not our warehouse on this side of the road?—It is on this side.—Where have you been this morning?—I have been at the castle.—How long did you remain at the castle?—I remained there an hour.—Is your brother above or below?—He is above.—How far has your servant carried my trunk?—He has carried it as

far as my warehouse.—Has he come as far as my house?—He has come so far (as there).—How far does the green carpet go?—It goes as far as the corner of the counting-house.—Have you been in France?—I have been there several times.—Have your children already been in Germany?—They have not yet been there, but I intend to send them there in the spring.—Will you go on this or that side of the road?—I will go neither on this nor on that side; I will go in the middle of the road.—How far does this road lead?—It leads as far as London.

THIRTY-NINTH LESSON.

Lezione Trentesima nona.

To be necessary (must)—been necessary.	}	<i>Esser* d'uopo—stato d'uopo.</i> <i>Bisognare —bisognato.</i> <i>Abbisognare —abbisognato.</i>
--	---	--

Is it necessary?

Must I, he, we, you, they, or she?

It is necessary.

Bisogna? È d' uopo?

È d' uopo. Bisogna.

Obs. A. All verbs expressing necessity, obligation, or want, as *to be obliged, to want, to be necessary, must*, are generally rendered in Italian by *esser* d' uopo* or *bisognare*.

Is it necessary to go to the market?

It is not necessary to go thither.

What must one do to learn Italian?

It is necessary to study a great deal.

{	Bisogna andare al mercato?
{	È d' uopo andare al mercato?
{	Non bisogna andarci.
{	Non è d' uopo andarci.
{	Ch' è d' uopo (che bisogna) fare per imparare l' italiano?
{	È d' uopo (bisogna) studiar molto.

What must I do?

{	Che <i>m' è</i> (<i>mi è</i>) d' uopo fare?
{	Che debbo fare?

Obs. B. The English nominative, or subject of the verb *must*, is rendered in the Italian by the indirect cases in the dative: *mi, ti, gli, le, ci, vi, loro* (see the Personal Pronouns, Lesson XX.), according to number and person.

You must stay still.

Whither must he go?

{	Le è d' uopo restar quieta.
{	Ove <i>gli</i> è d' uopo andare?
{	Ove <i>gli</i> bisogna andare?

He must go for his book.

What must *they* buy?

They must buy some beef.

What must we read?

Gli è d' uopo andare in cerca del suo libro.

Che è *loro* d' uopo comprare?

È *loro* d' uopo comprar del manzo.

{ Che *ci* è d' uopo leggere?

{ Che *ci* bisogna leggere?

† Che *ci* convien leggere?

What must *you* have?

I must have some money.

Must you have a sou?

Must you have a great deal?

I must have a great deal.

I only want one sou.

Is that all *you* want?

That is all *I* want.

How much must you have? }

How much dost thou want? }

I only want a livre.

How much must *your brother* have?

He only wants two livres.

{ Che *Le* è d' uopo?

{ Che *vi* è d' uopo?

{ Che *Le* bisogna?

Mi fa d' uopo del danaro.

Le è d' uopo d' un soldo?

Gl'iene è d' uopo molto?

Me n' è d' uopo molto.

Mi è d' uopo solamente d' un soldo.

Non *Le* bisogna che questo?

Non *mi* bisogna che questo.

Quanto *ti* è d' uopo?

{ Non *mi* è d' uopo che una lira.

{ Non *mi* bisogna che una lira.

Mi è d' uopo solamente d' una lira.

Quanto bisogna al di Lei fratello?

{ Non *gli* bisognano che due lire.

{ Non *gli* è d' uopo che due lire.

Gli è d' uopo solamente di due lire.

Have you what you want?

I have what *I* want.

He has what *he* wants.

They have what *they* want.

Ha Ella ciò { che *Le* bisogna?

{ che *Le* è d' uopo?

Ho ciò che *m'* è d' uopo.

Ha ciò che *gli* è d' uopo.

Hanno ciò che *loro* è d' uopo.

More.

No—more.

Do *you* not want more?

I do not want more.

He does not want more.

Di più (più).

Non—di più (non—più).

Non *Le* abbisogna di più?

Non *mi* abbisogna di più.

Non *gli* abbisogna di più.

Have *you* been obliged to work much to learn Italian?

I have been obliged to work much.

Le è stato d' uopo studiar molto per imparare l' italiano?

Mi è stato d' uopo studiar molto.

What am I to do?
 You must work.
 Am I to go thither?
 You may go thither.

Che debbo fare?
 Deve lavorare.
 Devo andarvi?
 Può andarvi.

To be worth—been worth.
 How much may that horse be worth?
 It may be worth a hundred sequins.

Are you worth?
 I am worth.
 Thou art worth.
 He is worth.

We are worth—they are worth.

How much is that gun worth?
 It is worth but one sequin.
 How much is that worth?

That is not worth much.
 That is not worth anything.

Valere—valuto (valso).*
 Quanto può valere questo cavallo?
 Può valere cento zecchini.

Vale Ella (vate)?
 Valgo.
 Vali.
 Vale.
 Vagliamo—vagliano or valgono.

Quanto vale questo fucile?
 Vale solamente uno zecchino.
 Quanto val ciò?
 { Ciò non val molto.
 { Ciò non val gran cosa.
 { Ciò non val niente.

This is worth more than that.
 The one is not worth so much as the other.

Questo val più di quello.
 L' uno non vale quanto l' altro.

To be better.
 To cost more.
 Am I not as good as my brother?
 You are better than he.
 I am not so good as you.

Valer* più.
 Costar più.
 Non valgo quanto mio fratello?
 Ella val più di lui.
 Non valgo quanto Ella.

To give back, to restore.
Given back, restored.
 Does he restore you your book?
 He restores it to me.
 Has he given you back your gloves?
 He has given them me back.

Rendere—reso.*
 Le rende il di Lei libro?
 Me lo rende.
 Le ha reso i di Lei guanti?
 Me li ha resi.

Has your brother already commenced his exercises?

Il di Lei fratello ha già cominciato i suoi temi?

Not yet.

He has not yet commenced them.

The present.

Have you received a present?

I have received several.

Have you received the books?

I have received them.

*Non—ancora ; non—per
anco.*

Non li ha ancora incominciati.

Il regalo.

Ha ricevuto un regalo?

Ne ho ricevuti parecchi.

Ha Ella ricevuto i libri?

Li ho ricevuti.

*From whom?*From whom have you received
presents?

From my friends.

Da chi?

Da chi ha ricevuto dei regali?

Dai miei amici.

Whence? Where from?

Where do you come from?

I come from the garden.

Where is he come from?

He is come from the theatre.

Where did they come from?

They are come from home.

{ *Da dove?
D' onde?*

D' onde (da dove) viene?

Vengo dal giardino.

Da dove è venuto?

È venuto dal teatro.

Da dove son venuti?

Son venuti da casa loro.

EXERCISES.

123.

Is it necessary to go to the market?—It is not necessary to go there.—What must you buy?—I must buy some beef.—Must I go for some wine?—You must go for some.—Am I to go to the ball?—You must go there.—When must I go there?—You must go there this evening.—Must I go for the carpenter?—You must go for him.—What must be done to learn Russian?—It is necessary to study a great deal.—Is it necessary to study a great deal to learn German?—It is necessary to study a great deal.—What must I do?—You must buy a good book.—What is he to do?—He must sit still.—What are we to do?—You must work.—Must you work much in order to learn the Arabic?—I must work much to learn it.—Why must I go to the market?—You must go thither to buy some beef and wine.—Must I go anywhere?—Thou must go into the garden.—Must I send for anything?—Thou must send for some wine.—What must I do?—You must write an exercise.—To whom must I write a note?—You must write one to your friend.—What do you want, Sir?—I want some cloth.—How much is that hat worth?—It is worth four crowns.—Do you want any boots?—I want some.—How much are these boots worth?—They are worth twenty livres.—Is that all you want?—That is all I want.—Do you

not want any gloves?—I do not want any.—Dost thou want much money?—I want much.—How much must thou have?—I must have five sequins.—How much does your brother want?—He wants but six francs.—Does he not want more?—He does not want more.—Does your friend want more?—He does not want so much as I.—What do you want?—I want money and clothes.—Have you now what you want?—I have what I want.—Has your father what he wants?—He has what he wants.

124.

Have the neighbour's children given you back your books?—They have given them me back.—When did they give them you back?—They gave them me back yesterday.—Has your little boy received a present?—He has received several.—From whom has he received any?—He has received some from my father and from yours.—Have you received any presents?—I have received some.—What presents have you received?—I have received fine presents.—Do you come from the garden?—I do not come from the garden, but from the warehouse.—Where are you going?—I am going to the garden.—Whence does the Irishman come?—He comes from the garden.—Does he come from the garden from which (*dal quale*) you come?—He does not come from the same (*dal medesimo*).—From which (*da qual*) garden does he come?—He comes from that of our old friend.—Whence comes our boy?—He comes from the play.—How much may that horse be worth?—It may be worth five hundred crowns.—Is this book worth as much as that?—It is worth more.—How much is my gun worth?—It is worth as much as that of your friend.—Are your horses worth as much as those of the English?—They are not worth so much.—How much is that knife worth?—It is worth nothing.

125.

Is your servant as good as mine?—He is better than yours.—Are you as good as your brother?—He is better than I.—Art thou as good as thy friend?—I am as good as he.—Are we as good as our neighbours?—We are better than they.—Is your umbrella worth as much as mine?—It is not worth so much.—Why is it not worth so much as mine?—Because it is not so fine as yours.—How much is that gun worth?—It is not worth much.—Do you wish to sell your horse?—I wish to sell it.—How much is it worth?—It is worth two hundred crowns.—Do you wish to buy it?—I have bought one already.—Does your father intend to buy a horse?—He intends to buy one, but not (*ma non*) yours (*il di Lei proprio*).—Have your brothers commenced (*incominciato*) their exercises?—They have commenced them.—Have you received your notes?—We have not yet received them.—Have we what we want?—We have not what we want.—What do we want?—We want fine horses, several servants, and much money.—Is that all we want?—That is

all we want.—What must I do?—You must write.—To whom must I write?—You must write to your friend.—Where is he?—He is in America.—Whither am I to (*debbo*) go?—You may go to France.—How far must I (*mi è d' uopo*) go?—You may go as far as Paris.—Which (*a quai*) notes has your brother answered?—He has answered those of his friends.—Which (*quai*) dogs have your servants beaten?—They have beaten those that have made much noise.

FORTIETH LESSON.

Lezione Quarantesima.

<i>To eat—eaten.</i>	<i>Mangiare</i> 1 — <i>mangiato.</i>
<i>To dine (eat dinner).</i>	{ <i>Desinare</i> 1 — <i>desinato.</i>
	{ <i>Pranzare</i> 1 — <i>pranzato.</i>
The dinner.	Il pranzo.
The breakfast.	La colazione (a fem. noun).
<i>To eat supper (to sup).</i>	<i>Cenare</i> 1 — <i>cenato.</i>
The supper.	La cena (a fem. noun).

<i>After.</i>	<i>Dopo.</i>
After me.	Dopo di me.
After him.	Dopo di lui.
After you.	Dopo di Lei (di voi).
After my brother.	Dopo mio fratello.

Obs. The preposition *dopo* requires the genitive before a personal pronoun, otherwise it governs the accusative.

After having spoken. | † *Dopo aver parlato.*

☞ When the present participle is used in English after a preposition, it is rendered in Italian by the infinitive.

<i>After having sold his horse.</i>	† <i>Dopo aver venduto il suo cavallo.</i>
<i>After having been there.</i>	† <i>Dopo esserci stato.</i>
<i>I broke your knife after cutting the beef.</i>	† <i>Ho rotto il di Lei coltello dopo aver tagliato il manzo.</i>

<i>I have dined earlier than you.</i>	<i>Ho desinato più di buon' ora di Lei.</i>
<i>You have supped late.</i>	<i>Ella ha cenato tardi.</i>

<i>To hold—held.</i>	<i>Tenere*—tenuto.</i>
I hold, thou holdest, he holds.	Tengo, tieni, tiene.
Do you hold my stick?	Tiene Ella il mio bastone?
I hold it.	Lo tengo.
We hold.	Teniamo.
You hold.	Tenete.
They hold.	Tengono.

Are you looking <i>for</i> any one?	† Cerca Ella qualcuno?
Whom are you looking <i>for</i> ?	† Chi cerca Ella?
I am looking <i>for</i> a brother of mine.	† Cerco un mio fratello.

My uncle.	Mio zio.
My cousin.	Mio cugino.
My relation.	Il mio parente : <i>pl.</i> i miei parenti.
The parents (father and mother).	I genitori (padre e madre).

A brother of mine.	† Un mio fratello.
A cousin of yours.	† Un di Lei cugino.
A relation of his (or hers).	† Un suo parente.
A friend of ours.	† Un nostro amico.
A neighbour of theirs.	† Un loro vicino.

He tries to see you.	Cerca vederla.
Does he try to see me?	Cerca vedermi?
He tries to see an uncle of his.	Cerca vedere un suo zio.

<i>To inquire after some one.</i>	{ <i>Domandare di qualcuno.</i>
After whom do you inquire?	{ <i>Chiedere di qualcuno.</i>
I inquire after a friend of mine.	Di chi domanda Ella?
They inquire after you.	Domando di un mio amico.
Do they inquire after me?	{ Domandano di Lei.
	{ † Si domanda di Lei.
	{ Domandano di me?
	{ † Si domanda di me?

<i>Properly.</i>	}	<i>Benissimo.</i>
<i>Very well.</i>		<i>A perfezione.</i>
<i>Perfectly.</i>		
You write properly.		Ella scrive benissimo (a perfezione).
These men do their duty properly.		Questi uomini fanno il dover loro a maraviglia.

The duty.	Il dovere.
The task.	Il dovere (il lavoro).
Have you done your task?	Ha Ella fatto il di Lei dovere?
I have done it.	L' ho fatto.
Have ye done your task?	Hanno fatto il loro dovere?
We have done it.	L' abbiamo fatto.

A glass of wine.	Un bicchier di vino.
A piece of bread.	{ Un pezzo } di pane.
	{ Un tozzo }

EXERCISES.

126.

Have you paid for the gun?—I have paid for it.—Has your uncle paid for the books?—He has paid for them.—Have I paid the tailor for the clothes?—You have paid him for them.—Hast thou paid the merchant for the horse?—I have not yet paid him for it.—Have we paid for our gloves?—We have paid for them.—Has your cousin already paid for his boots?—He has not yet paid for them.—Does my brother pay you what he owes you?—He pays it me.—Do you pay what you owe?—I pay what I owe.—Have you paid the baker?—I have paid him.—Has your uncle paid the butcher for the beef?—He has paid him for it.—Who has broken my knife?—I have broken it after cutting the bread.—Has your son broken my glasses?—He has broken them after drinking the wine.—When has your cousin broken my penknife?—He has broken it after writing his notes.—Have you paid the merchant for the wine after drinking it?—I have paid for it after drinking it?—What did you do after finishing your exercises?—I went to my cousin, in order to conduct him to the play.—How do I speak?—You speak properly (*benissimo*).—How has my cousin written his exercises?—He has written them properly (*a perfezione*).—How have my children done their task?—They have done it well.—Does this man do his duty?—He always does it.—Do these men do their duty?—They always do it.—Do you do your duty?—I do what I can.—What do you ask this man for?—I ask him for some money.—What does this boy ask me for?—He asks you for some money.—Do you ask me for anything?—I ask you for a crown.—Do you ask me for the bread?—I ask you for it.—Which man do you ask for money?—I ask him whom you ask for some.—Which merchants do you ask for gloves?—I ask those (for some) who live in William Street.—What do you ask the baker for?—I ask him for some bread.

127.

Do you ask the butchers for some meat?—I ask them for some. Dost thou ask me for the stick?—I ask thee for it.—Does he ask

thee for the book?—He asks me for it.—What have you asked the Englishman for?—I have asked him for my leather trunk.—Has he given it you?—He has given it me.—Whom have you asked for some sugar?—I have asked the merchant for some.—Whom does your brother pay for his boots?—He pays the shoemaker for them.—Whom have we paid for the bread?—We have paid our bakers for it.—How old art thou?—I am not quite ten years old.—Dost thou already learn French?—I do (already learn it).—Does thy brother know German?—He does not know it.—Why does he not know it?—Because he has not had time to learn it.—Is your father at home?—No, Sir, he is gone (*partito*), but my brother is at home.—Where is your father gone?—He is gone to England.—Have you sometimes been there?—I have never been there.—Do you intend going to France this summer?—I do (intend going thither).—Do you intend to stay there long?—I intend to stay there during the summer.—How long does your brother remain at home?—Till twelve o'clock.—Have you had your gloves dyed?—I have had them dyed.—What (colour) have you had them dyed?—I have had them dyed yellow.—Have you already dined?—Not yet.—At what o'clock do you dine?—I dine at six o'clock.—At whose house (*da chi* or *in casa di chi*) do you dine?—I dine at the house of a friend of mine.—With whom did you dine yesterday?—I dined with a relation of mine.—What did you eat?—We eat good bread, good beef, and petty-patties.—What did you drink?—We drank good wine and excellent cider.—Where does your uncle dine to-day?—He dines with us.—At what o'clock does your father sup?—He sups at nine o'clock.—Do you sup earlier than he?—I sup later than he.

123.

Where are you going?—I am going to a relation of mine, in order to dine with him.—Art thou willing to hold my gloves?—I am willing to hold them.—Who holds my hat?—Your son holds it.—Dost thou hold my stick?—I hold it.—Do you hold anything?—I hold your gun.—Who has held my book?—Your servant has held it.—Will you try to speak?—I will try.—Has your little brother ever tried to do exercises?—He has tried.—Have you ever tried to make a hat?—I have never tried to make one.—Whom are you looking for?—I am looking for the man who has sold me a horse.—Is your relation looking for anybody?—He is looking for a friend of his.—Are we looking for anybody?—We are looking for a neighbour of ours.—Whom dost thou look for?—I look for a friend of ours.—Are you looking for a servant of mine?—No, I am looking for one of mine.—Have you tried to speak to your uncle?—I have tried to speak to him.—Have you tried to see my father?—I have tried to see him.—Has he received you?—He has not received me.—Has he received your brothers?—He has received them.—Have you been able to see your relation?—I have not been able to see him.—What did you do after writing your exercises?—I wrote my note after writing my exercises.—After whom (*di chi*) do you inquire (*domandare*)?—I inquire after the tailor.—Does this

man inquire after any one?—He inquires after you (*di Lei*).—Do they inquire (*si domanda*) after you?—They inquire after me.—Do they inquire after me?—They do not inquire after you, but after a friend of yours (*di un di Lei amico*).—Do you inquire after the physician?—I inquire after him.—What does your little brother ask for?—He asks for a small piece of bread.—Has he not yet breakfasted?—He has breakfasted, but he is still hungry.—What does your uncle ask for?—He asks for a glass of wine.—Has he not drunk already?—He has drunk already, but he is still thirsty.

FORTY-FIRST LESSON.

Lezione Quarantesima prima.

To perceive (to discover).

Him who.

Those who.

Scorgere—scorto.*

{ *Quello, il quale (or che).*
 { *Colui, il quale (or che).*
 { *Quelli, i quali (or che).*
 { *Coloro, i quali (or che).*

Obs. Colui and coloro relate only to persons, quello and quelli to persons and things.

Do you perceive the man who is coming?

I perceive him who is coming.

Do you perceive the men who are going into the warehouse?

I perceive those who are going into it.

Scorge Ella l' uomo che viene?

Scorgo quello che viene.

Scorge Ella gli uomini che vanno al magazzino?

Scorgo coloro (quelli) che vi vanno.

How is the weather?

What kind of weather is it?

It is fine weather at present.

How was the weather yesterday?

What kind of weather was it yesterday?

Was it fine weather yesterday?

It was bad weather yesterday.

It is fine weather this morning.

† Che tempo fa?

† Adesso fa bel tempo.

† Che tempo ha fatto ieri?

† Ha fatto bel tempo ieri?

† Ieri ha fatto cattivo tempo.

† Stamane fa bel tempo.

Is it warm?

It is warm.

† Fa caldo?

† Fa caldo.

Very.

It is very warm.

It is cold.

It is very cold.

It is neither warm nor cold.

Molto.

† Fa molto caldo (*or* fa un tempo caldissimo).

† Fa freddo.

† Fa un tempo freddissimo (*or* fa molto freddo).

† Non fa nè caldo nè freddo.

Dark.

Obscure.

Dusky, gloomy.

Clear, light.

It is dark in your warehouse.

Is it dark in his granary?

It is dark there.

Nuvoloso, oscuro.

Oscuro, fosco.

Buio, oscuro.

Chiaro.

† Fa oscuro nel di Lei magazzino.

† Fa oscuro nel suo granaio?

† Vi fa oscuro.

Wet, damp.

Dry.

Umido.

Asciutto.

Is the weather damp?

It is not damp.

It is dry weather.

The weather is too dry.

The moonlight, moonshine.

The sun.

It is moonlight.

We have too much sun.

È umido il tempo?

Non è umido.

È asciutto.

È troppo asciutto.

Il chiaro di luna.

Il sole.

È chiaro di luna (la luna splende).

† Fa troppo sole.

To taste.

Have you tasted that wine?

I have tasted it.

How do you like it?

I like it well.

I do not like it.

{ *Gustare* l.

{ *Assaggiare* l.

{ Ha Ella assaggiato questo vino?

{ L' ho assaggiato.

{ Come lo trova?

{ Come Le piace?

{ Come Le pare?

{ Lo trovo buono

{ Mi piace.

{ Mi par buono.

{ Non mi par buono.

{ Non mi piace.

{ Non lo trovo buono.

To appear—appeared.

I appear, thou appearest, he appears.
We, you, they appear.

*Parere**—*paruto* (or *parso*)
(an impersonal verb governing the dative).

Paio, pari, pare.
Pariamo, parete, paiono.

To like—liked.

I like, thou likest, he likes.
We, you, they like.

*Piacere** — *piaciuto* (an impersonal verb governing the dative).

Mi, ti, gli, piace.
Ci, vi piace, piace loro.¹

I like fish.
He likes fowl.
Do you like cider?
No, I like wine.
The fish.

† Mi piace il pesce.
† Gli piace il pollastro.
† Le piace il cidro?
† No, mi piace il vino.
† Il pesce; *pl.* i pesci.

Do you like to see my brother?
I like to see him.
I like to do it.
He likes to study.

Le piace vedere mio fratello?
Mi piace vederlo.
† Mi piace farlo.
† Gli piace studiare.

To learn by heart.

The scholar.
The pupil.
The master (teacher).
The professor.
Do your scholars like to learn by heart?
They do not like learning by heart.
Have you learnt your exercises by heart?
We have learnt them.

Imparare a memoria.

Lo scolaro.
Il discepolo.
Il maestro.
Il professore.
I di Lei scolari imparano volentieri a memoria?
Non imparano volentieri a memoria.
Hanno imparato i loro temi a memoria?
Li abbiamo imparati.

Once a day.
Thrice, or three times a month.
So much a year.
So much a head.
So much a soldier.
Six times a year.

† Una volta al giorno.
† Tre volte al mese.
† Tanto all' anno.
† Tanto a testa.
† Tanto per soldato.
{ † Sei volte all' anno.
{ † Sei volte l' anno.

¹ *Piacere*, in the signification of *to please*, is conjugated thus: *Piaccio, piaci, piace; piacciamo, piacete, piacciono.*

Early in the morning.
We go out early in the morning.
When did your father go out?

† *Di buon mattino.*
Usciamo di buon mattino.
Quando è uscito il di Lei padre?

To speak of some one or something.
Of whom do you speak?
We speak of the man whom you know.
Of what are they speaking?
They are speaking of the weather.

The weather.
The soldier.
Also.

Parlare di uno o di qualche cosa.
Di chi parla Ella?
Parliamo dell' uomo che Ella conosce.
Di che parlano (di che si parla)?
Parlano del tempo (si parla del tempo).
Il tempo.
Il soldato.
Anche (ancora).

To be content (satisfied) with some one or something.

Are you satisfied with this man?
I am satisfied with him.
Are you content with your new coat?
I am contented with it.
With what are you contented?

Discontented.
I am discontented *with him or it.*

Essere contento (soddisfatto) di uno o di qualche cosa.

È Ella contenta (soddisfatta) di costui?
Ne son contento (soddisfatto).
È Ella soddisfatta del di Lei nuovo abito?
Ne son soddisfatto.
Di che cosa è Ella contenta (soddisfatta)?
Scontento, malcontento.
Ne sono scontento.

They speak of your friend.
They speak of him.
They are speaking of your book.
They are speaking of it.

{ Si parla del di Lei amico.
{ Parlano del di Lei amico.
{ Se ne parla.
{ Ne parlano.
{ Si parla del di Lei libro.
{ Parlano del di Lei libro.
{ Se ne parla.
{ Ne parlano.

If.

I intend paying you, if I receive my money.
Do you intend to buy coals?
I intend to buy some, if they pay me what they owe me.

Se.

Intendo pagarla, se ricevo il mio danaro.
Intende comprar del carbone?
Intendo comprarne, se mi pagano ciò che mi debbono.

How was the weather yesterday?	† Che tempo ha fatto ieri?
Was it fine weather yesterday?	† Ha fatto bel tempo ieri?
It was bad weather.	† Ha fatto cattivo tempo.
I intend to take a walk, if the weather is fair.	† Penso passeggiare, se fa bel tempo.
If the weather is fine, I intend to go to the country.	† Se fa bel tempo, intendo andare alla campagna.
To take a walk (go a walking).	Passeggiare l.

EXERCISES.

129.

Do you perceive the man who is coming?—I do not perceive him.—Do you perceive the soldier's children?—I perceive them.—Do you perceive the men who are going into the garden?—I do not perceive those who are going into the garden, but those who are going to the market.—Does your brother perceive the man who has lent him money?—He does not perceive the one who has lent him some, but the one to whom he has lent some.—Dost thou see the children who are studying?—I do not see those who are studying, but those who are playing.—Dost thou perceive anything?—I (*non*) perceive nothing.—Have you perceived my parents' warehouses?—I have perceived them.—Where have you perceived them?—I have perceived them on that side of the road.—Do you like a large hat?—I do not like a large hat, but a large umbrella.—What do you like to do?—I like to write.—Do you like to see these little boys?—I like to see them.—Do you like wine?—I like it.—Does your brother like cider?—He does not like it.—What do the soldiers like?—They like wine.—Dost thou like tea or coffee?—I like both.—Do these children like to study?—They like to study and to play.—Do you like to read and to write?—I like to read and to write.—How many times a day do you eat?—Four times.—How often do your children drink a day?—They drink several times a day.—Do you drink as often as they?—I drink oftener.—Do you often go to the theatre?—I go thither sometimes.—How often in a month do you go thither?—I go thither but once a month.—How many times a year does your cousin go to the ball?—He goes twice a year.—Do you go there as often as he?—I never go.—Does your cook often go to the market?—He goes there every morning (*ogni mattina*).

130.

Do you often go to my uncle's?—I go to him six times a year.—Do you like fowl?—I like fowl, but I do not like fish.—What do you like?—I like a piece of bread and a glass of wine.—Do you learn by heart?—I do not like learning by heart.—Do your pupils like learning by heart?—They like to study, but they do not like

learning by heart.—How many exercises do they do a day?—They only do two, but they do them properly.—Were you able to read the note which I wrote to you?—I was able to read it.—Did you understand it?—I did (understand it).—Do you understand the man who is speaking to you?—I do not understand him.—Why do you not understand him?—Because he speaks too badly.—Does this man know French?—He knows it, but I do not know it.—Why do you not learn it?—I have no time to learn it.—Do you intend going to the theatre this evening?—I intend going there, if you go.—Does your father intend to buy that horse?—He intends buying it, if he receives his money.—Does your friend intend to go to England?—He intends going thither, if they pay him what they owe him.—Do you intend going to the concert?—I intend going there, if my friend goes.—Does your brother intend to study Italian?—He intends studying it, if he finds a good master.

131.

How is the weather to-day?—It is very fine (weather).—Was it fine weather yesterday?—It was bad weather yesterday.—How was the weather this morning?—It was bad weather, but now it is fine weather.—Is it warm?—It is very warm.—Is it not cold?—It is not cold.—Is it warm or cold?—It is neither warm nor cold.—Did you go to the garden the day before yesterday?—I did not go there.—Why did you not go there?—I did not go because it was bad weather.—Do you intend going there to-morrow?—I intend going (there) if the weather is fine.—Is it light in your counting-house?—It is not light in it.—Do you wish to study in mine?—I wish to study in it.—Is it light there?—It is very light there.—Why cannot your brother work in his warehouse?—He cannot work there because it is too dark (*perchè vi fa troppo buio*).—Where is it too dark?—In his warehouse.—Is it light in that hole?—It is dark there.—Is the weather dry?—It is very dry.—Is it damp?—It is not damp. It is too dry.—Is it moonlight?—It is not moonlight; it is very damp.—Of what does your uncle speak?—He speaks of the fine weather.—Of what do those men speak?—They speak of fair and bad weather.—Do they not speak of the wind?—They speak of it also.—Dost thou speak of my uncle?—I do not speak of him.—Of whom dost thou speak?—I speak of thee and thy parents.—Do you inquire after any one?—I inquire after your cousin; is he at home?—No, he is at his best friend's.

132.

Have you tasted that wine?—I have tasted it.—How do you like it?—I like it well.—How does your cousin like that cider?—He does not like it.—Which wine do you wish to taste?—I wish to taste that which you have tasted.—Will you taste (*sentire*) this tobacco?—I have tasted (*sentito*) already.—How do you like it (*come Le pare*)?—I like it well (*mi par buono*).—Why do you not

taste that cider?—Because I am not thirsty.—Why does your friend not taste this beef?—Because he is not hungry.—Of whom have they spoken (*si è parlato*)?—They have spoken of your friend.—Have they not spoken of the physicians?—They have not spoken of them.—Do they not speak of the man of whom we have spoken?—They speak of him.—Have they spoken of the noblemen?—They have spoken of them.—Have they spoken of those of whom we speak?—They have not spoken of those of whom we speak, but they have spoken of others.—Have they spoken of our children, or of those of our neighbours?—They have neither spoken of ours, nor of those of our neighbours.—Which children have been spoken of?—Those of our master have been spoken of.—Do they speak of my book?—They speak of it.—Are you satisfied with your pupils?—I am satisfied with them.—How does my brother study?—He studies well.—How many exercises have you studied?—I have already studied forty-one.—Is your master satisfied with his scholar?—He is satisfied with him.—Is your master satisfied with the presents which he has received?—He is satisfied with them.—Have you received a note?—I have received one.—Will you answer it?—I am going to answer it (*ora ci rispondo*).—When did you receive it?—I received it early this morning.—Are you satisfied with it?—I am not satisfied with it.—Does your friend ask you for money?—He asks me for some.

FORTY-SECOND LESSON.

Lezione Quarantesima seconda.

OF PASSIVE VERBS.

Passive verbs represent the subject as receiving or suffering from others the action expressed by the verb. They are conjugated by means of the auxiliary verb *essere*, to be, joined to the past participle of the active verb, in Italian as well as in French and English.¹ Thus any active verb may be changed into the passive voice.

		<i>Active voice.</i>	<i>Passive voice.</i>
I love.	I am loved.	Amo.	Sono amato.
Thou praisest.	Thou art praised.	Lodi.	Sei lodato.
He believes.	He is believed.	Crede.	È creduto.
We beat.	We are beaten.	Battiamo.	Siamo battuti.
You punish.	You are punished.	Punite.	Siete puniti.
They serve.	They are served.	Servono.	Sono serviti.

¹ With this difference only, that in English and French we say: I have been esteemed, *J'ai été estimé*; and in Italian: *Sono stato stimato* (I am been esteemed, *Je suis été estimé*), for the compound tenses of *essere* are formed by means of the same verb.

To praise.
To blame.
To punish.
To serve.

Lodare 1.
Biasimare 1.
Punire 3.
Servire 3.

By.

By me, — by us.
By thee, — by you.

By him, — by them.

I am loved by him.
Who is punished?
The naughty boy is punished.
By whom is he punished?
He is punished by his father.
Which man is praised, and which
is blamed?

Da.

Da me, — da noi.
Da te, — da voi.

Da lui, — da $\begin{cases} \text{loro.} \\ \text{essi.} \end{cases}$

Sono amato da lui.
Chi è punito?
Il cattivo fanciullo è punito.
Da chi è egli punito?
È punito da suo padre.
Qual uomo è lodato, e quale è
biasimato?

A DIMINUTIVE

of tenderness, of contempt.

Naughty.
Skilful, diligent, clever.
Awkward.
Assiduous, industrious, studious.
Idle.
Ignorant.

Cattivo, cattivello, cattivaccio.
Abile, destro.
Inabile, incapace.
Assiduo, diligente, studioso.
Pigro, poltrone.
Ignorante.

The idler, the lazy fellow. | Il pigro, il poltrone.

To reward.
To esteem.
To despise.
To hate.

Ricompensare 1.
Stimare 1.
Disprezzare 1. Sprezzare 1.
Odare 1.

Good (wise).

These children are loved, because
they are studious and good.

Buono (savio).

Questi fanciulli sono amati,
perchè sono diligenti e buoni.

To travel to a place.

Where has he travelled to?
He has travelled to Vienna.

† Andare* 1.

† Dove è andato?
† È andato a Vienna.

Is it good travelling?
It is good travelling.
It is bad travelling.

† Si viaggia bene?
† Si viaggia bene.
† Si viaggia male.

In the winter.	Nell' inverno.
In the summer.	Nella state.
In the spring.	Nella (or in) primavera.
In the autumn.	Nell' autunno.
It is bad travelling in the winter.	† Si viaggia male in inverno.

To drive, to ride in a carriage.	Andare in carrozza (in vettura, in legno).
To ride (on horseback).	{ Andare a cavallo.
To go on foot.	{ Montare a cavallo.
Do you like to ride?	Andare a piedi.
I like to drive.	Le piace andare a cavallo.
	Mi piace andare in legno.

<i>To live—lived.</i>	<i>Vivere*—vissuto.</i>
Is it good living in Paris?	{ † Si vive bene a Parigi?
Is the living good in Paris?	
It is good living there.	
The living is good there.	{ † Ci si vive bene.
<i>Dear.</i>	<i>Caro.</i>
Is the living dear in London?	Si vive a caro prezzo in Londra?
Is it dear living in London?	È caro il vivere in Londra?
The living is dear there.	{ Ci si vive a caro prezzo.
	{ Il vivere vi è caro.

Thunder.	Il tuono, il fulmine.
The storm.	Il temporale, la tempesta (<i>fem.</i>).
The fog.	La nebbia (<i>fem.</i>).
Is it windy? Does the wind blow?	† Fa vento? Tira vento?
It is windy. The wind blows.	† Fa vento. Tira vento.
It is not windy.	† Non fa vento.
It is very windy.	† Fa molto vento.
Does it thunder?	Tuona?
<i>To thunder.</i>	<i>Tuonare l. Fulminare l.</i>
Is it foggy?	† Fa nebbia?
It is stormy.	† Fa burrasca. Fa temporale.
It is not stormy.	† Non fa burrasca (temporale).
Does the sun shine?	C'è sole?
It thunders very much.	Tuona molto.

Afterwards.

As soon as.

As soon as I have eaten, I drink.

As soon as I have taken off my boots, I take off my coat.

What do you do in the evening?

To sleep.

Does your father still sleep?

He still sleeps.

Poi, di poi.

Subito che, appena.

Subito che ho mangiato, bevo.

Subito che ho levato i miei stivali, mi levo l' abito.

Che fa Ella la sera?

Dormire 3.

Dorme ancora il di Lei padre?

Dorme ancora.

Without.

Without money.

Without speaking.

Senza.

Senza danaro.

Senza parlare.

Obs. *Without* requires in English the present participle; in Italian *senza* is followed by the infinitive.

Without saying anything. | *Senza* dir niente.

At last.

To arrive.

Has he arrived at last?

He has not arrived yet.

Is he coming at last?

He is coming.

Alfine, finalmente.

Arrivare 1. Ritornare 1.

È arrivato alfine?

Non è ancor arrivato.

Viene finalmente?

Viene.

And then.

And then he sleeps.

As soon as he has supped he reads, and then he sleeps.

He comes in at ten o'clock, sups, reads a little, takes tea, and then he goes to bed.

To enter.

To go to bed—gone to bed.

Poi, di poi, indi.

Poi dorme.

Subito che ha cenato, legge; poi dorme.

Entra alle dieci, cena, legge un poco, prende il tè; indi si corica.

Entrare 1.

Coricarsi—coricati.

EXERCISES.

133.

Are you loved?—I am loved.—By whom are you loved?—I am loved by my uncle.—By whom am I loved?—Thou art loved by thy parents.—By whom are we loved?—You are loved by your friends.—By whom are those children loved?—They are loved by their friends.—By whom is this man conducted?—He is conducted by me.—Where do you conduct him to?—I conduct him home.—By whom are we blamed?—We are blamed by our enemies.—Why

are we blamed by them?—Because they do not love us.—Are you punished by your master?—I am not punished by him, because I am good and studious.—Are we heard?—We are.—By whom are we heard?—We are heard by our neighbours.—Is thy master heard by his pupils?—He is heard by them.—Which children are praised?—Those that are good.—Which are punished?—Those that are idle and naughty.—Are we praised or blamed?—We are neither praised nor blamed.—Is our friend loved by his masters?—He is loved and praised by them, because he is studious and good; but his brother is despised by his, because he is naughty and idle.—Is he sometimes punished?—He is (*L'è*) every morning and every evening.—Are you sometimes punished?—I never am (*non lo sono mai*); I am loved and rewarded by my good masters.—Are these children never punished?—They never are (*non lo sono mai*), because they are industrious and good; but those are so (*lo sono*) very often, because they are idle and naughty.—Who is praised and rewarded?—Skilful children (*i fanciulli abili*) are praised, esteemed, and rewarded; but the ignorant are blamed, despised, and punished.—Who is loved, and who is hated?—He who is studious and good is loved, and he who is idle and naughty is hated.—Must one be (*è mestieri esser*) good in order to be loved?—One must be so (*è d'uopo esserlo*).—What must one do (*che bisogna fare*) in order to be loved?—One must be good and industrious.—What must one do in order to be rewarded?—One must be (*bisogna esser*) skilful, and study much.

134.

Why are those children loved?—They are loved because they are good.—Are they better than we?—They are not better, but more studious than you.—Is your brother as assiduous as mine?—He is as assiduous as he, but your brother is better than mine.—Do you like to drive?—I like to ride.—Has your brother ever been on horseback?—He has never been on horseback.—Does your brother ride on horseback as often as you?—He rides on horseback oftener than I.—Did you go on horseback the day before yesterday?—I went on horseback to-day.—Do you like travelling?—I like travelling.—Do you like travelling in the winter?—I do not like travelling in the winter; I like travelling in the spring and in autumn.—Is it good travelling in the spring?—It is good travelling in the spring and in autumn, but it is bad travelling in the summer and in the winter.—Have you sometimes travelled in the winter?—I have often travelled in the winter and in the summer.—Does your brother often travel?—He travels no longer; he formerly travelled much.—When do you like to ride?—I like to ride in the morning.—Have you been in London?—I have been there.—Is the living good there?—The living is good there, but dear.—Is it dear living in Paris?—It is good living there, and not dear.—Do you like travelling in France?—I like travelling there, because one finds (*ci si trova*) good people there.—Does your friend like travelling in Hol-

land?—He does not like travelling there, because the living is bad (there).—Do you like travelling in Italy?—I like travelling there, because the living is good, and one finds (*e vi si trova*) good people; but the roads are not very good there.—Do the English like to travel in Spain (*in Ispagna*)?—They like to travel there; but they find the roads too bad.—How is the weather?—The weather is very bad.—Is it windy?—It is very windy.—Was it stormy yesterday?—It was very stormy.

135.

Do you go to the market this morning?—I do, if it is not stormy.—Do you intend going to France this year?—I intend going there, if the weather is not too bad.—Do you like to go on foot?—I do not like to go on foot, but I like going in a carriage when I am travelling.—Will you go on foot?—I cannot go on foot, because I am tired.—What sort of weather is it?—It thunders.—Does the sun shine?—The sun does not shine; it is foggy.—Do you hear the thunder?—I hear it.—Is it fine weather?—The wind blows hard, and it thunders much.—Of whom have you spoken?—We have spoken of you.—Have you praised me?—We have not praised you; we have blamed you.—Why have you blamed me?—Because you don't study (*non istudiu*) well.—Of what has your brother spoken?—He has spoken of his books, his horses, and his dogs.—What do you do in the evening?—I work as soon as I have supped.—And what do you do afterwards?—Afterwards I sleep.—When do you drink?—I drink as soon as I have eaten.—When do you sleep?—I sleep as soon as I have supped.—Have you spoken to the merchant?—I have spoken to him.—What has he said?—He has left (*è partito*) without saying anything.—Can you work without speaking?—I can work, but not study French without speaking.—Wilt thou go for some wine?—I cannot go for wine without money.—Have you bought any horses?—I do not buy without money.—Has your father arrived at last?—He has arrived.—When did he arrive?—This morning at four o'clock.—Has your cousin set out at last?—He has not set out yet.—Have you at last found a good master?—I have at last found one.—Are you at last learning Italian?—I am at last learning it.—Why have you not already learnt it?—Because I have not been able to find a good master.

FORTY-THIRD LESSON.

Lezione Quarantesima terza.

OF REFLECTIVE VERBS.

When the action falls upon the agent, and the objective case refers to the same person as the nominative, the verb is called reflexive. In reflexive verbs, therefore, the pronoun of the object is of the same person as that of the subject.

In such verbs each person is conjugated with a double pronoun, thus:—

I,	myself.	Io,	mi.
Thou,	thyself.	Tu,	ti.
He,	himself.	Egli,	} si.
She,	herself.	Ella,	
It,	itself.	Esso,	
One,	one's self.	Uno,	
They,	} themselves.	Taluno,	} si.
The people,		Alcuno,	
We,	ourselves.	Altri,	} ci.
You,	yourself.	Alcuni,	
Ye,	yourselves. }	Noi,	vi.
They,	themselves.	Voi,	vi.
		Eglio,	} si.
		Essi, Esse,	
		Elleno,	

Obs. A. It will be remarked that the third person is always *si*, whatever may be its number or gender.

To cut yourself.	Tagliarvi.
To cut myself.	Tagliarmi.
To cut ourselves.	Tagliarci.
To cut { himself.	} Tagliarsi.
{ herself.	
{ itself.	
{ one's self.	

Do you burn yourself? | Si brucia Ella (vi bruciate)?

Obs. B. In Italian, however, the first pronoun is often not expressed, but understood.

I do not burn myself.	Non mi brucio.
You do not burn yourself.	Non si brucia (non vi bruciate).
I see myself.	Mi vedo.
Do I see myself?	Mi vedo?
He sees himself.	Si vede.
We see ourselves.	Ci vediamo (<i>or</i> veggiamo).
They see themselves.	Eglino si vedono (<i>or</i> veggono).

Do you wish to warm yourself?	Si vuol Ella scaldare (volete scaldarvi)?
I do wish to warm myself.	Voglio scaldarmi.
Does he wish to warm himself?	{ Si vuol egli scaldare?
He does wish to warm himself.	{ Vuol egli scaldarsi?
They wish to warm themselves.	Egli vuol scaldarsi (<i>or</i> Egli si vuol scaldare).
	Si vogliono scaldare (<i>or</i> Vogliono scaldarsi).

<i>To enjoy, to divert, to amuse one's self.</i>	{ <i>Divertirsi—divertitosi.</i>
In what do you amuse yourself?	{ <i>Dilettarsi—dilettatosi.</i>
	+ A che si diletta (si diverte) Ella?
I amuse myself in reading.	+ Mi diletto a leggere.
He diverts himself in playing.	+ Si diverte a giuocare.

<i>Each.</i>	<i>Qualunque, ogni.</i>
<i>Each one.</i>	<i>Ciascuno, ognuno.</i>
<i>Each man.</i>	<i>Qualunque uomo.</i>
Each man amuses himself as he likes.	Ciascuno si diverte come gli piace.
Each one amuses himself in the best way he can.	{ Ciascuno si diverte alla meglio.
The taste.	{ Ciascuno si diverte a modo suo.
Each man has his taste.	Il piacere, il gusto.
Each of you.	Ognuno ha il suo gusto.
The world, the people.	Ciascuno di voi (di Loro).
Every one, every body.	La gente.
Every body speaks of it.	Tutta la gente, tutti.
Every one is liable to error.	{ Tutti ne parlano.
	{ Ciascuno ne parla.
	Ognuno è soggetto ad ingannarsi.

<i>To mistake, to be mistaken.</i>	<i>Ingannarsi.</i>
You are mistaken.	Ella s' inganna (<i>v'</i> ingannate).
He is mistaken.	Egli s' inganna.

To deceive, to cheat.

He has cheated me.

He has cheated me of a hundred sequins.

Ingannare 1.

M' ha ingannato.

Mi ha ingannato di cento zecchini.

You cut your finger.

Ella si taglia il dito (vi tagliate il dito).

Obs. C. When an agent performs an act upon one part of himself the verb is made reflexive.

I cut my nails.

Mi taglio le unghie (a fem. noun, the sing. of which is *l' unghia*).

Un capello.

A hair.

To pull out.

He pulls out his hair.

He cuts his hair.

The piece.

A piece of bread.

Strappare 1.

Egli si strappa i capelli.

Egli si taglia i capelli.

Il pezzo.

Un pezzo di pane.

To go away.

Are you going away?

I am going away.

Is he going away?

He is going away.

Are we going away?

We are going away.

Are these men going away?

They are not going away.

Andarsene *.

Se ne va (ve ne andate)?

Me ne vado.

Se ne va egli?

Egli se ne va.

Ce ne andiamo noi?

Ce ne andiamo.

Se ne vanno questi uomini?

Non se ne vanno.

To feel sleepy.

Do you feel sleepy?

I feel sleepy.

Aver voglia di dormire.

Ha Ella voglia di dormire?

Ho voglia di dormire.

*To soil.**To fear, to dread.*

He fears to soil his fingers.

Do you dread to go out?

I dread to go out.

He is afraid to go thither.

{ *Insudiciare* 1.{ *Sporcare* 1.*Aver paura, temere* 2.

Ha paura d' insudiciarsi le dita.

Ha Ella paura d' uscire?

Ho paura d' uscire.

Ha paura d' andarci.

To fear some one.	{ <i>Temere uno (qualcuno).</i> <i>Aver paura d' uno (di qualcuno).</i>
I do not fear him.	Non lo temo.
Do you fear that man?	Teme costui (temete questi)?
What do you fear?	{ <i>Che teme Ella?</i> <i>Di che cosa ha Ella paura?</i>
Whom do you fear?	{ <i>Chi teme Ella?</i> <i>Di chi ha Ella paura?</i>
I fear nobody.	Non temo nessuno.
I fear nothing.	Non temo niente.

EXERCISES.

136.

Do you see yourself?—I see myself.—Do you see yourself in that small looking-glass (*nello specchietto*)?—I see myself in it.—Can your friends see themselves in that large looking-glass (*nello specchio*)?—They can see themselves therein (*vedersi*).—Why does your brother not light the fire?—He does not light it, because he is afraid of burning himself.—Why do you not cut your bread?—I do not cut it, because I fear to cut my finger.—Have you a sore finger (*Le duole il dito*)?—I have a sore finger and a sore foot (*e anche il piede*).—Do you wish to warm yourself?—I wish to warm myself, because I am very cold.—Why does that man not warm himself?—Because he is not cold.—Do your neighbours warm themselves?—They warm themselves, because they are cold.—Do you cut your hair?—I cut my hair.—Does your friend cut his nails?—He cuts his nails and his hair.—What does that man (*costui*) do?—He pulls out his hair.—In what (*a che cosa*) do you amuse yourself?—I amuse myself in the best way I can (*alla meglio*).—In what do your children amuse themselves?—They amuse themselves in studying, writing, and playing.—In what does your cousin amuse himself?—He amuses himself in reading good books, and in writing to his friends.—In what do you amuse yourself when you have nothing to do at home?—I go to the play, and to the concert. I often say: Every one (*ciascuno*) amuses himself as he likes. Every man (*ciascuno*) has his taste; which is yours?—Mine is to study (*lo studiare*), to read a good book (*il leggere*, &c.), to go to the theatre, the concert (*indi al concerto*), and the ball, and to ride.

137.

Why does your cousin not brush his coat?—He does not brush it, because he is afraid of soiling his fingers (*le dita*).—What does my neighbour tell you?—He tells me that you wish to buy his horse; but I know that he is mistaken, because you have no money to buy it.—What do they say (*che si dice*, or *che dicono*) at the market?

—They say that the enemy is beaten.—Do you believe that (*lo*)?—I believe it, because every one says so.—Why have you bought that book?—I have bought it, because I want it (*perchè ne ho bisogno*) to learn Italian, and because every one speaks of it.—Are your friends going away?—They are going away.—When are they going away?—They are going away to-morrow.—When are you going away (*se ne vanno Loro*)?—We are going away to-day.—Am I going away?—You are going away, if you like.—What do our neighbours say?—They are going away without saying anything.—How do you like this wine?—I do not like it.—What is the matter with you?—I feel sleepy.—Does your friend feel sleepy?—He does not feel sleepy, but he is cold.—Why does he not warm himself?—He has no coals to make a fire.—Why does he not buy some coals?—He has no money to buy any.—Will you lend him some?—If he has none, I will lend him some.—Are you thirsty?—I am not thirsty, but very hungry?—Is your servant sleepy?—He is sleepy.—Is he hungry?—He is hungry.—Why does he not eat?—Because he has nothing to eat.—Are your children hungry?—They are hungry, but they have nothing to eat.—Have they anything to drink?—They have nothing to drink.—Why do you not eat?—I do not eat when I am not hungry.—Why does the Russian not drink?—He does not drink when he is not thirsty.—Did your brother eat anything yesterday evening?—He ate a piece of beef, a small bit (*un pezzetto*) of fowl, and a piece of bread.—Did he not drink?—He also (*anche*) drank.—What did he drink?—He drank a glass of wine. (See end of Lesson XXIV.)

FORTY-FOURTH LESSON.

Lezione Quarantesima quarta.

PERFECT OF REFLECTIVE VERBS.

In Italian, all reflective verbs, without exception, take in their compound tenses the auxiliary *essere**, whilst in English they take *to have*.

Have you cut yourself?
I have cut myself.
Have I cut myself?
You have cut yourself.
You have not cut yourself.
Hast thou cut thyself?
I have not cut myself.
Has your brother cut himself?
He has cut himself.

Si è Ella tagliata?
Mi son tagliato.
Mi son tagliato?
Si è tagliata.
Ella non s' è tagliata.
Ti sei tagliato?
Non mi son tagliato.
Il di Lei fratello s' è tagliato?
Egli s' è tagliato.

The sunrise.	Lo spuntar del sole.
The sunset.	Il tramontar del sole.
At what time did you go to bed?	A che ora s'è Ella coricata?
At three o'clock in the morning.	Alle tre del mattino.
At what o'clock did he go to bed yesterday?	A che ora s'è coricato ieri?
He went to bed late.	S'è coricato tardi.

<i>To rejoice at something.</i>	{ † <i>Rallegrarsi per qualcosa.</i> <i>Rallegrarsi di qualche cosa.</i>
I rejoice at your happiness.	Mi rallegro per la di Lei felicità.
At what does your uncle rejoice?	Per che cosa (perchè) si rallegra il di Lei zio?
I have rejoiced.	Mi son rallegtrato.
They have rejoiced.	Si sono rallegrati.
You have mistaken.	† Ella s'è ingannata.
We have mistaken.	† Ci siamo ingannati.

At what did your uncle rejoice?	} Per che cosa s'è rallegtrato il di Lei zio?
What was your uncle delighted with?	
<i>For the.</i>	{ SING. <i>Pel</i> (contraction of <i>per il</i>).
	{ PLUR. <i>Pei</i> (contraction of <i>per i</i>).
He rejoiced at (was delighted with) the horse which you have sent him.	† S'è rallegtrato <i>pel</i> cavallo che Ella gli ha mandato.
At what did your children rejoice? (What were your children delighted with?)	† Per che cosa si sono rallegrati i di Lei fanciulli?
They rejoiced at (they were delighted with) the fine clothes which I had made for them.	† Si son rallegrati <i>pei</i> bei vestiti che ho fatti far loro.

The rapidity of pronouncing has led to a contraction of the definite article with certain prepositions which precede it: thus *pel* is used instead of *per il*, *pei* instead of *per i*, &c.

According to this contraction we say and write:

Singular.	Plural.
<i>Del</i> , of the, for <i>di il</i> .	<i>Dei</i> , or <i>de'</i> , for <i>di</i>
<i>Al</i> , to the, — <i>a il</i> .	<i>Ai</i> , or <i>a'</i> , — <i>a i</i> .
<i>Dal</i> , from the, — <i>da il</i> .	<i>Dai</i> , or <i>da'</i> , — <i>da i</i> .
<i>Nel</i> , in the, — <i>in il</i> .	<i>Nei</i> , or <i>ne'</i> , — <i>in i</i> .
<i>Col</i> , with the, — <i>con il</i> .	<i>Coi</i> , or <i>co'</i> , — <i>con i</i> .
<i>Pel</i> , for the, — <i>per il</i> .	<i>Pei</i> , or <i>pe'</i> , — <i>per</i> .
<i>Sul</i> , upon the, — <i>su il</i> .	<i>Sui</i> , or <i>su'</i> , — <i>su i</i> .

Singular.
Dello, of the, for *di lo*.
Allo, to the, — *a lo*.
Dallo, from the, — *da lo*.
Nello, in the, — *in lo*.
Collo, with the, — *con lo*.
Pello, for the, — *per lo*.
Sullo, upon the, — *su lo*.

Plural.
Degli, for *di gli*.
Agli, — *a gli*.
Dagli, — *da gli*.
Negli, — *in gli*.
Cogli, — *con gli*.
Pegli, — *per gli*.
Sugli, — *su gli*.

To hurt somebody.
The evil, the pain, the harm.

Have you hurt this man?

I have hurt this man.

Why did you hurt this man?

I have not hurt him.

Does that hurt you?

That hurts me.

To do good to anybody.
 Have I ever done you any harm?

On the contrary.
 No, on the contrary, you have done me good.
 I have never done harm to any one.

{ *Apportar danno ad uno.*
 { *Far del male ad uno.*
Il male, il danno.
 { Ha Ella apportato danno a costui?
 { Ha Ella fatto male a questi?
 { Ho apportato danno a costui.
 { Ho fatto male a costui.
 { Perchè ha apportato danno a quest' uomo?
 { Non gli ho apportato danno alcuno.
 { Non gli ho fatto alcun male.
 { Ciò Le fa male?
 { Ciò Le apporta danno?
 { Ciò m' apporta danno.
 { Ciò mi fa male.
Far bene ad uno.
 Le ho giammai apportato danno?
Al contrario.
 No, al contrario, Ella mi ha fatto del bene.
 Non ho giammai apportato danno a nessuno.

Have I hurt you?
 You have not hurt me.

Le ho fatto male?
 Ella non mi ha fatto male.

That does me good.

Ciò mi fa bene.

To do with, to dispose of.
 What does the tailor make with the cloth?
 He makes coats with it.
 What does the painter do with his brush?

Far di.
 Che fa il sarto del panno?
 Ne fa degli abiti.
 Che fa il pittore col suo pennello?

He makes a picture with it.	Fa un quadro.
What does he wish to make of this wood?	Che vuol far di questo legno?
He does not wish to make anything of it.	Non vuol farne niente.
He is flattered, but he is not beloved.	{ † Lo adulano, ma non l' amano. È adulato, ma non è amato.
<i>That</i> (conjunction).	<i>Che.</i>
I am told that he is arrived.	Mi si dice (mi dicono) ch' è arrivato.
A knife was given to him to cut his bread, and he cut his finger.	Gli hanno dato (gli è stato dato) un coltello per tagliare il suo pane, e si è tagliato il dito.
<i>To flatter some one.</i>	<i>Adulare qualcuno.</i>
<i>To flatter one's self.</i>	<i>Adularsi, lusingarsi di.</i>
He flatters himself that he knows French.	† Si lusinga di sapere il francese.
<i>Nothing but.</i>	<i>Non—che.</i>
He has nothing but enemies.	Non ha che nemici.

<i>To become.</i>	{ <i>Diventare—diventato.</i> <i>Divenire*—divenuto.</i>
He has turned a soldier.	† S' è fatto soldato.
Have you turned a merchant?	† È diventata mercante?
I have turned (become a lawyer).	† Son diventato avvocato.
What has become of your brother?	{ † Che n' è stato del di Lei fratello? † Che cosa è stato del di Lei fratello?
What has become of him?	† Che ne è stato?
I do not know what has become of him.	† Non so che ne sia divenuto (<i>subjunctive</i> , of which hereafter).

<i>To enlist, to enrol.</i>	{ <i>Ingaggiarsi.</i> <i>Farsi soldato, arruolarsi.</i>
He has enlisted.	{ Si è fatto soldato. S' è ingaggiato (si è arruolato).

<i>For</i> (meaning <i>because</i>).	<i>Perchè, poichè.</i>
I cannot pay you, for I have no money.	Non posso pagarla, perchè non ho danaro.
He cannot give you any bread, for he has none.	Non può darle pane, poichè non ne ha.

<i>To believe some one.</i>	† <i>Credere a qualcuno.</i>
Do you believe that man?	† <i>Crede a costui?</i>
I do not believe him.	† <i>Non gli credo.</i>
I believe what that man says.	† <i>Credo a quest' uomo ciò che dice.</i>

<i>To believe in God.</i>	<i>Credere in Dio.</i>
I believe in God.	Credo in Dio.

<i>To utter a falsehood, to lie.</i>	<i>Mentire—mentito.</i>
The story-teller, the liar.	Il bugiardo, il mentitore.
I do not believe that man, for I know him to be a story-teller.	Non credo a colui, perchè so che è un bugiardo.

EXERCISES.

138.

Why has that child been praised?—It has been praised because it has studied well.—Hast thou ever been praised?—I have often been praised.—Why has that other child been punished?—It has been punished, because it has been naughty and idle.—Has this child been rewarded?—It has been rewarded because it has studied well.—What must one do (*che è bisogno fare*) in order not to be despised?—One must be studious and good.—What has become of your friend?—He has become a lawyer.—What has become of your cousin?—He has enlisted.—Has your neighbour enlisted?—He has not enlisted.—What has become of him?—He has turned a merchant.—What has become of his children?—His children have become men.—What has become of your son?—He has become a great man.—Has he become learned?—He has become learned.—What has become of my book?—I do not know what has become of it.—Have you torn it?—I have not torn it.—What has become of our friend's son?—I do not know what has (*che sia*, subj.) become of him.—What have you done with your money?—I have bought a book with it (*con quello*).—What has the joiner done with his wood?—He has made a bench of it.—What has the tailor done with the cloth which you gave him?—He has made clothes of it for your children and mine.—Has that man hurt you?—No, Sir, he has not hurt me.—What must one do (*ch' è d' uopo fare*) in order to (*per*) be loved?—One must do good to those that have done us harm.—Have we ever done you harm?—No; you have, on the contrary, done us good.—Do you do harm to any one?—I do no one any harm.—Why have you hurt these children?—I have not hurt them.—Have I hurt you?—You have not hurt me, but your children have (*me ne hanno fatto*).—What have they done to you?—They have beaten me.—Is it (*è*) your brother who has hurt you?

—No, Sir, it is not (*non è*) my brother, for he has never hurt any one.

139.

Have you drunk that wine?—I have drunk it.—How did you like it?—I liked it very well.—Has it done you good?—It has done me good.—Have you hurt yourself?—I have not hurt myself.—Who has hurt himself?—My brother has hurt himself, for he has cut his finger.—Is he still ill (*malato*)?—He is better (*sta meglio*).—I rejoice to hear (*mi rallegra l' intendere*) that he is no longer ill, for I love him.—Why does your cousin pull out his hair?—Because he cannot pay what he owes.—Have you cut your hair?—I have not cut it (myself), but I have had it cut (*me li son fatti tagliare*).—What has this child done?—He has cut his foot.—Why was a knife given to him?—A knife was given him to (*per*) cut his nails, and he has cut his finger and his foot.—Do you go to bed early?—I go to bed late, for I cannot sleep when I go to bed early.—At what o'clock did you go to bed yesterday?—Yesterday I went to bed at a quarter past eleven.—At what o'clock do your children go to bed?—They go to bed at sunset.—Do they rise early?—They rise at sunrise.—At what o'clock did you rise to-day?—To-day I rose late, because I went to bed late yesterday evening (*ieri sera*).—Does your son rise late?—He rises early, for he never goes to bed late.—What does he do when he gets up?—He studies, and then he breakfasts.—Does he go out before he breakfasts?—No, Sir, he studies and breakfasts before he goes out.—What does he do after breakfasting?—As soon as he has breakfasted he comes to me, and we take a ride.—Didst thou rise this morning as early as I?—I rose earlier than you, for I rose before sunrise.

140.

Do you often go out walking?—I go out walking when I have nothing to do at home.—Do you wish to take a walk?—I cannot take a walk, for I have too much to do.—Has your brother taken a ride?—He has taken an airing in a carriage.—Do your children often go out walking?—They go out walking every morning after breakfast (*dopo la colazione*).—Do you take a walk after dinner (*dopo il pranzo*)?—After dinner I drink tea, and then I take a walk.—Do you often take your children out walking?—I take them out walking every morning and every evening.—Can you go (*venire*) with me?—I cannot go (*venire*) with you, for I am to take my little brother out walking.—Where do you walk?—We walk in our uncle's garden.—Did your father rejoice to see you?—He did (rejoice to see me).—What did you rejoice at?—I rejoiced at seeing my good friends.—What was your uncle delighted with?—He was delighted with the horse which you have sent him.—What were your children delighted with?—They were delighted with the fine clothes which I had made for them (*che lor ho fatti fare*).—Why does this man rejoice so much (*tanto*)?—Because he flatters himself he has good friends.—

Is he not right in rejoicing (*di rallegrarsi*)?—He is wrong, for he has nothing but enemies.—Is he not loved?—He is flattered, but he is not loved.—Do you flatter yourself that you know Italian?—I flatter myself that I know it, for I can speak, read, and write it.—Has the physician done any harm to your son?—He has cut his finger (*gli ha tagliato il dito*), but he has not done him any harm; so (*e*) you are mistaken, if you believe that he has (*che gli abbia*) done him any harm.—Why do you listen to that man?—I listen to him, but I do not believe him; for I know that he is a story-teller (*un bugiardo*).—How do you know that he is (*che sia*, subj.) a story-teller?—He does not believe in God; and all those (*e tutti quelli*) who do not believe in God are story-tellers.—Are we story-tellers?—You are not story-tellers, for you believe in God (*in Dio*) our Lord (*nostro Signore*).

FORTY-FIFTH LESSON.

Lezione Quarantesima quinta.

OF IMPERSONAL VERBS.

We have already seen (Lessons XLI. and XLII.) some expressions belonging to the impersonal verbs. These verbs having no determinate subject, are only conjugated in the third person singular.

To rain,—it rains.	Piovare 2,—piove.
It has rained.	È piovuto (<i>or</i> ha piovuto).
To snow,—it snows.	Nevicare 1,—nevic.
It has snowed.	È nevicato (<i>or</i> ha nevicato).
To hail,—it hails.	Grandinare 1 (tempestare),— grandina (tempesta).
It has hailed.	È grandinato (tempestato), <i>or</i> ha tempestato. ¹

The three substantives belonging to these verbs are feminine, as will be seen when we come to such nouns; but as in Italian any infinitive may be used as a masculine noun, we may say also: *il piovere*, the rain; *il nevicare*, the snow; *il grandinare*, the hail.

To lighten.	Lampeggiare 1.
Does it lighten?	Lampeggia?
It lightens.	Lampeggia.
The lightning.	Il lampo, il baleno.
The parasol.	Il parasole, l' ombrellino.

¹ From these examples it may be seen, that in Italian impersonal verbs relating to the weather may take either *essere* or *avere* in their compound tenses.

It rains very hard.	Piove dirottamente.
It lightens much.	Lampeggia molto.
Does it snow?	Nevica?
It snows much.	Nevica molto.
It hails much.	Grandina molto.
The sun does not shine.	† Non c'è sole.
The sun is in my eyes.	† Il sole mi dà agli occhi.
To thunder,—it thunders.	Tuonare 1,—tuona.
It has thundered.	È tuonato or ha tuonato.
To shine, to glitter,—shone.	{ Riverberare 1,—riverberato.
	{ Risplendere 2,—risplenduto.

To shut.
Shut the door.

*Chiudere**, past part. *chiuso*.
Chiudete la porta.

Have you done?

| † Ha Ella finito?

Is the walking good?
In this country.
The country.
He has made many friends in
this country.
To walk, to travel.

† Si cammina bene?
In questo paese.
Il paese.
Si è fatto molti amici in questo
paese.
Camminare 1, passeggiare 1.

Of which, of whom, whose.

I see the man of whom you
speak.

I have bought the horse of which
you spoke to me.

I see the man whose brother has
killed my dog.

I see the man whose dog you
have killed.

Do you see the child whose father
set out yesterday?

I see it.

Whom have you seen?

I have seen the merchant whose
warehouse you have taken.

I have spoken to the man whose
warehouse has been burnt.

{ *Di cui (onde).*
 { *Del quale (plur. dei quali).*
 Vedo l' uomo di cui (del quale)
 Ella parla.
 Ho comprato il cavallo di cui
 (del quale) Ella mi ha par-
 lato.
 Veggo (vedo) l' uomo il di cui
 fratello ha ammazzato il mio
 cane.
 Veggo l' uomo di cui Ella ha
 ammazzato il cane.
 † Vede Ella il fanciullo il cui
 padre è partito ieri?
 Lo vedo.
 Chi ha Ella visto?
 Ho visto il mercante di cui
 Ella ha preso il magazzino.
 † Ho parlato all' uomo il di cui
 magazzino è stato bruciato.

<i>That of which.</i>	{ <i>Ciò di che, quanto.</i>
<i>That, or the one of which.</i>	{ <i>Quello di che.</i>
<i>Those, or the ones of which.</i>	{ <i>Quello di cui.</i>
	{ <i>Quelli di cui.</i>
I have that of which I have need.	{ Ho quanto mi abbisogna.
I have what I want.	{ Ho <i>ciò di che</i> ho bisogno.
He has what he wants.	{ Ho <i>ciò che</i> mi è d' uopo.
	{ Egli ha <i>ciò di che</i> ha bisogno.
	{ Egli ha <i>ciò che</i> gli è d' uopo.

Have you the book <i>of which</i> you are in need?	Ha Ella il libro <i>di cui</i> ha bisogno.
I have <i>that of which</i> I am in need.	Ho <i>quello di cui</i> ho bisogno.
Has the man the nails <i>of which</i> he is in need?	Ha l' uomo i chiodi <i>di cui</i> ha bisogno?
He has <i>those of which</i> he is in need.	Ha <i>quelli di cui</i> ha bisogno.

<i>To need, to want.</i>	{ <i>Aver bisogno di.</i>
<i>To have need of.</i>	{ <i>Aver bisogno di qualche cosa.</i>
<i>To be in want of something.</i>	{ <i>Aver bisogno di questo libro.</i>
I am in want <i>of this</i> book.	{ Ha Ella trovato il libro <i>di cui</i> ha bisogno?
Did you find the book which you want?	

Which men do you see?	Quali uomini vede Ella?
I see those <i>of whom</i> you have spoken to me.	Vedo quelli <i>di cui</i> Ella mi ha parlato.
Do you see the pupils <i>of whom</i> I have spoken to you?	Vede Ella gli scolari <i>di cui</i> Lei ho parlato?
I see them.	Li vedo.

	<i>Masc. and Fem.</i>
	<i>Sing. and Plur. Masc. Plur.</i>
<i>To whom.</i>	<i>A chi. Ai quali.</i>
I see the children <i>to whom</i> you have given some petty-patties.	Veggio i fanciulli <i>ai quali</i> Ella ha dato dei pasticcini.
<i>To which</i> men do you speak?	<i>A quali</i> uomini parla Ella?
I speak to those to whom you have applied.	Parlo <i>a quelli ai quali</i> Ella si è indirizzata.

<i>To apply to.</i>	{ <i>Indirizzarsi a—indirizzato a.</i>
	{ <i>Dirigersi* a—diretto a.</i>
<i>To meet with some one.</i>	{ <i>Incontrare uno.</i>
	{ <i>Rincontrare uno.</i>
I have met with the men to whom you have applied.	Ho incontrato gli uomini ai quali Ella si è diretta.
Of which men do you speak?	Di quali uomini parla Ella?
I speak of those whose children have been studious and obedient.	Parlo di quelli i di cui fanciulli sono stati studiosi ed obbedienti.
Obedient, disobedient.	{ Obbediente, disobbediente.
	{ Ubbidiente, disubbidiente.
<i>So that.</i>	{ <i>In guisa che.</i>
	{ <i>Di modo che, per cui.</i>
	{ <i>Di maniera che.</i>
I have lost my money, so that I cannot pay you.	Ho perduto il mio danaro, in guisa che non posso pagarla.
<i>Ill.</i>	{ <i>Malato, ammalato.</i>
I am ill, so that I cannot go out.	Sono malato, in guisa che non posso uscire.

EXERCISES.

141.

Have you at last learnt Italian?—I was ill, so that I could not learn it.—Has your brother learnt it?—He has not learnt it, because he has not yet been able to find a good master.—Do you go to the ball this evening?—I have sore feet, so that I cannot go to it.—Did you understand that German?—I do not know German, so that (*per cui*) I could not understand him.—Have you bought the horse of which you spoke to me?—I have no money, so that (*di modo che*) I could not buy it.—Have you seen the man from whom I received a present?—I have not seen him.—Have you seen the fine gun of which I spoke to you?—I have seen it.—Has your uncle seen the books of which you spoke to him?—He has seen them.—Hast thou seen the man whose children have been punished?—I have not seen him.—To whom have you been speaking at the theatre?—I have been speaking to the man whose brother (*il cui fratello*) has killed my fine dog.—Have you seen the little boy whose father has become a lawyer?—I have seen him.—Whom have you seen at the ball?—I have seen (there) the men

whose horses, and those whose coach you have bought (*e quelli dei quali ha comprato la carrozza*).—Whom do you see now?—I see the man whose servant has broken my looking-glass.—Have you heard the man whose friend has lent me money?—I have not heard him.—Whom have you heard?—I have heard the French captain, whose son is my friend.—Hast thou brushed the coat of which I spoke to thee?—I have not yet brushed it.—Have you received the money which you were wanting?—I have received it.—Have I the sugar of which I have need?—You have it.—Has your brother the books which he wants?—He has them.—Have you spoken to the merchants whose warehouse we have taken?—We have spoken to them.—Have you spoken to the physician whose son has studied German?—I have spoken to him.—Hast thou seen the poor men whose warehouses have been burnt?—I have seen them.—Have you read the books which we have lent you?—We have read them.—What do you say of them (*ne*)?—We say that they are very fine.—Have your children what they want (*quello che loro abbisogna*)?—They have what they want.

142.

Of which man do you speak?—I speak of the one (*di quello*) whose brother has turned soldier.—Of which children have you spoken?—I have spoken of those whose parents are learned.—Which book have you read?—I have read that of which I spoke to you yesterday.—Which book has your cousin?—He has that of which he is in need.—Which fishes has he eaten?—He has eaten those which you do not like.—Of which books are you in want?—I am in want of those of which you have spoken to me.—Are you not in want of those which I am reading?—I am not in want of them.—Do you see the children to whom I have given petty-patties?—I do not see those to whom you have given petty-patties, but those whom you have punished.—To whom have you given some money?—I have given some to those who have been skilful.—To which children must one give (*e mestieri dare*) books?—One must give some to those who are good and obedient.—To whom do you give to eat and to drink?—To those that are hungry and thirsty.—Do you give anything to the children who are idle?—I give them nothing.—Did it snow yesterday?—It did snow, hail, and lighten.—Did it rain?—It did (rain).—Did you go out?—I never go out, when it is bad weather.—Have the captains at last listened to the man?—They have refused to listen to him; all those to whom he applied (*si è indirizzato*) have refused to hear him.—With whom have you met this morning (*questa mane*)?—I have met with the man by whom I am esteemed.—Have you given petty-patties to your pupils?—They have not studied well, so that I have given them nothing.

FORTY-SIXTH LESSON.

Lezione Quarantesima sesta.

OF THE FUTURE.

RULE.—The first or simple future is formed, in all Italian verbs, from the infinitive, by changing for the second and third conjugations *re* into:—

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
1	2	3	1	2	3
<i>rò,</i>	<i>rai,</i>	<i>rà.</i>	<i>remo,</i>	<i>rete,</i>	<i>ranno.</i>
And for the first <i>are</i> into:—					
<i>erò,</i>	<i>erai,</i>	<i>erà.</i>	<i>eremo,</i>	<i>erete,</i>	<i>eranno.</i>

EXAMPLES.

To love.	<i>Inf. Amare</i> 1.
I shall <i>or</i> will love, &c. <i>Future.</i>	{ <i>Amerò,</i> <i>amerai,</i> <i>amerà.</i> <i>Ameremo,</i> <i>amerete,</i> <i>ameranno.</i>
To speak.	<i>Parlare</i> 1.
I shall <i>or</i> will speak, &c. „	{ <i>Parlerò,</i> <i>parlerai,</i> <i>parlerà.</i> <i>Parleremo,</i> <i>parlerete,</i> <i>parleranno.</i>
To receive.	<i>Ricevere</i> 2.
I shall <i>or</i> will receive, &c. „	{ <i>Riceverò,</i> <i>riceverai,</i> <i>riceverà.</i> <i>Riceveremo,</i> <i>riceverete,</i> <i>riceveranno.</i>
To believe.	<i>Credere</i> 2.
I shall <i>or</i> will believe, &c. „	{ <i>Crederrò,</i> <i>crederrai,</i> <i>crederrà.</i> <i>Crederremo,</i> <i>crederrete,</i> <i>crederranno.</i>
To punish.	<i>Punire</i> 3.
I shall <i>or</i> will punish, &c. „	{ <i>Punirò,</i> <i>punirai,</i> <i>punirà.</i> <i>Puniremo,</i> <i>punirete,</i> <i>puniranno.</i>
To serve.	<i>Servire</i> 3.
I shall <i>or</i> will serve, &c. „	{ <i>Servirò,</i> <i>servirai,</i> <i>servirà.</i> <i>Serviremo,</i> <i>servirete,</i> <i>serviranno.</i>

Obs. A. It will be remarked, that in all Italian verbs the first and third persons singular of the future have the grave accent (').

EXCEPTIONS.

	<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Future.</i>
To have. I shall <i>or</i> will have, &c.	Avere*	Avrò, avrai, avrà. Avremo, avrete, avranno.
To be. I shall <i>or</i> will be, &c.	Essere*	Sarò, sarai, sarà. Saremo, sarete, saranno.

Obs. B. The following eighteen verbs, besides the auxiliaries *avere** and *essere**, form all the exceptions to our rule on the formation of the future. We need not give all the persons, as the first person singular of the exceptions being once known, all the others are, as may be seen from the above, the same in all verbs of the Italian language.

	<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Future.</i>
To go. I shall <i>or</i> will go.	Andare* 1.	Andrò (<i>also regular</i>).
To fall. I shall <i>or</i> will fall.	Cadere* 2.	Cadrò.
To gather. I shall <i>or</i> will gather.	Cogliere* 2.	Corrò.
To give. I shall <i>or</i> will give.	Dare* 1.	Darò.
To complain. I shall <i>or</i> will complain.	Dolere* 2.	Dorrò.
To owe. I shall <i>or</i> will owe.	Dovere* 2.	Dovrò.
To do. I shall <i>or</i> will do.	Fare* 1.	Farò.
To die. I shall <i>or</i> will die.	Morire* 3..	Morrò <i>or</i> morirò.
To appear. I shall <i>or</i> will appear.	Parere* 2.	Parrò.
To put. I shall <i>or</i> will put.	Porre* 2.	Porrò (<i>regular</i>).
To be able. I shall <i>or</i> will be able.	Potere* 2.	Potrò.
To remain. I shall <i>or</i> will remain.	Rimanere* 2.	Rimarò.
To know. I shall <i>or</i> will know.	Sapere* 2.	Saprò.
To hold. I shall <i>or</i> will hold.	Tenere* 2.	Terrò.
To be worth. I shall <i>or</i> will be worth.	Valere* 2.	Varrò.
To see. I shall <i>or</i> will see.	Vedere* 2.	Vedrò.
To come. I shall <i>or</i> will come.	Venire* 3.	Verrò.
To be willing. I shall <i>or</i> will be willing.	Volere* 2.	Vorrò.

Shall *or* will he have money?
 He will have some.
 He will not have any.
 Shall you soon have done writing?
 I shall soon have done.
 He will soon have done his exercise.

Avrà egli danaro?
 Ne avrà.
 Non ne avrà.
 † Quanto prima avrà (avrete) finito di scrivere?
 † Quanto prima avrà finito.
 Quanto prima avrà finito il suo tema.

Soon (ere long).
 When shall you do your exercises?
 I will do them soon (ere long).
 My brother will do his exercises to-morrow.

Quanto prima, fra poco.
 Quando farà Ella i di Lei temi?
 Quanto prima li farà.
 Mio fratello farà i suoi temi domani.

Next Monday.
 Last Monday.
 Next month.
 This month.
 This country.

Lunedì venturo.
 Lunedì passato.
 † Il mese venturo.
 Questo mese.
 Questo paese.

When will your cousin go to the concert?
 He will go next Tuesday.
 Shall you go anywhere?
 We shall go no where.

Quando andrà al concerto il di Lei cugino?
 Egli vi andrà martedì venturo.
 { Andrà Ella } in qualche luogo?
 { Andranno }
 Non andremo in verun luogo.

Will he send me the book?
 He will send it you, if he has done with it.
 Shall you be at home this evening?
 I shall be there.
 Will your father be at home?
 He will be there.
 Will your cousins be there?
 They will be there.

Mi manderà il libro?
 { Glielo manderà, se l' ha finito.
 { Se l' ha finito glielo manderà.
 { Sarà Ella in casa questa sera?
 { Questa sera sarà Ella in casa?
 Vi sarò.
 Sarà in casa il di Lei padre?
 Vi sarà.
 I di Lei cugini vi saranno?
 Vi saranno.

Will he send me the books?
 He will send them you.
 Will he send some ink to my counting-house?
 He will send some thither.

Mi manderà i libri?
 Glieli manderà.
 Manderà dell' inchiostro al mio banco (studio)?
 Ve ne manderà.

Shall you be able to pay your shoemaker?
I have lost my money, so that I shall not be able to pay him.
My friend has lost his pocket-book, so that he will not be able to pay for his boots.

Potrà pagare il di Lei calzolaio?
Ho perduto il danaro, di modo che non potrò pagarlo.
Il mio amico ha perduto il portafoglio, in guisa che non potrà pagare i suoi stivali.

Will you hold anything?
I shall hold your umbrella.
Will your friend come to my concert?
He will come.
Shall you come?
I shall come.
Will it be necessary to go to the market?
It will be necessary to go thither to-morrow morning.
It will not be necessary to go thither.
Shall you see my father to-day?
We shall see him.

Terrà Ella qualche cosa?
Terrò il di Lei ombrello.
Il di Lei amico verrà al mio concerto?
Verrà.
Verrà Ella?
Verrò.
{ Sarà d' uopo andar al mercato?
Bisognerà andare al mercato?
Sarà d' uopo andarci domani nella mattina (domani mattina, domattina).
Non sarà d' uopo andarci.
Vedranno mio padre quest' oggi?
Lo vedremo.

To foresee—foreseen.

Prevedere* 2 { *prevèduto.*
previsto.

To restore—restored.

Rendere*—reso.

EXERCISES.

143.

Shall you have any books?—I shall have some.—Who will give you any?—My uncle will give me some.—When will your cousin have money?—He will have some next month.—How much money shall you have?—I shall have thirty-five sequins.—Who will have good friends?—The English will have some.—Will your father be at home this evening?—He will be at home (*ci sarà*).—Will you be there?—I shall also be there (*anch' io*).—Will your uncle go out to-day?—He will go out, if it is fine weather.—Shall you go out?—I shall go out, if it does not rain.—Will you love my son?—I shall love him if he is good.—Will you pay your shoemaker?—I shall pay him, if I receive my money.—Will you love my children?—If they are good and assiduous, I shall love them; but if they are idle and naughty, I shall despise and punish them.—Am I right in speaking (*di parlare*) thus?—You are not wrong.—Is your friend

still writing?—He is still writing.—Have you not done speaking?—I shall soon have done.—Have your friends done reading?—They will soon have done.—Has the tailor made my coat?—He has not made it yet; but he will soon make it.—When will he make it?—When he has time.—When will you do your exercises?—I shall do them when I have time.—When will your brother do his?—He will do them next Saturday.—Wilt thou come to my house?—I shall come.—When wilt thou come?—I shall come next Friday.—When have you seen my uncle?—I saw him last Sunday.—Will your cousins go to the ball next Tuesday?—They will go.—Will you come to my concert?—I shall come, if I am not ill.

144.

When will you send me the money which you owe me?—I shall send it you soon.—Will your brothers send me the books which I have lent them?—They will send them you.—When will they send them to me?—They will send them to you next month.—Will you be able to pay me what you owe me?—I shall not be able to pay it you, for I have lost all my money.—Will the American be able to pay for his boots?—He has lost his pocket-book, so that he will not be able to pay for them.—Will it be necessary (*bisognerà*) to send for the physician?—Nobody is ill, so that (*per cui*) it will not be necessary to send for him.—Will it be necessary to go to the market to-morrow?—It will be necessary to go thither, for we want (*c' è d' uopo*) some beef, some bread and some wine.—Shall you see your father to-day?—I shall see him.—Where will he be?—He will be at his counting-house.—Will you go to the ball to-night (*questa sera*)?—I shall not go, for I am too ill to go (to it).—Will your friend go?—He will go, if you go.—Where will your neighbours go?—They will go no where; they will remain at home, for they have a good deal to do.

 FORTY-SEVENTH LESSON.
*Lezione Quarantesima settima.**To belong.*

Do you belong?
 I do belong.
 Does that horse belong to your brother?
 It belongs to him.
 To whom do these gloves belong?

*Appartenere** (is conjugated like its primitive *tenere**, Lesson XL.).

Appartiene Ella?
 Appartengo.
 Questo cavallo appartiene al di Lei fratello?
 Sì, appartiene a lui.
 A chi appartengono questi guanti?
 Di chi son questi guanti?

They belong to the captains.	{ Appartengono ai capitani.
Do these horses belong to the captains?	{ Sono dei capitani.
They belong to them.	{ Questi cavalli appartengono ai capitani?
	{ Appartengono loro.

<i>To suit.</i>	<i>Piacere* (esser* di gusto).</i>
Does that cloth suit your brother?	{ Piace questo panno al di Lei fratello?
It suits him.	{ Questo panno è di gusto del di Lei fratello?
Do these boots suit your brothers?	{ Gli piace (è di suo gusto).
They suit them.	{ Piacciono questi stivali ai di Lei fratelli?
	{ Questi stivali sono di gusto dei di Lei fratelli?
	{ Piaccion loro (sono di lor gusto).

<i>To suit.</i>	<i>Convenire*, addirsi*, esser convenevole or dicevole.</i>
Does it suit you to do that?	Le piace di far ciò?
It suits me to do it.	Mi piace di farlo.
Does it suit your cousin to come with us?	Piace al di Lei cugino di venire con noi?
It does not suit him to go out.	Non gli piace d' uscire.
It does not suit me to go to him, for I cannot pay him what I owe him.	Non mi è convenevole d' andare da lui, poichè non posso pagargli ciò che gli debbo.

<i>To succeed.</i>	<i>Riuscire*, riuscito (conjugated like uscire*).</i>
	<i>Pervenire*, pervenuto (conjugated like its primitive venire*).</i>
Do you succeed in learning Italian?	Riesce Ella ad imparar l' italiano?
I succeed in it.	Vi riesco.
I do succeed in learning it.	Pervengo ad impararlo.
<i>To succeed.</i>	<i>Riuscire*—riuscito.</i>
I succeed, thou succeedest, he succeeds.	Riesco, riesci, riesce.
We, you, they succeed.	Riusciamo, riuscite, riescono.
Do these men succeed in selling their horses?	Riescono cotesti uomini a vendere i loro cavalli?
They do succeed therein.	Vi riescono.
Do you succeed in doing that?	Riesce Ella a far ciò?
I succeed in it.	Vi riesco.

To forget.

I forgot to do it.

To clean.

The inkstand.

Dimenticare 1 (takes *di* before the infinitive).Ho dimenticato di farlo (*or* ho dimenticato farlo).{ *Pulire* 3—*pulito*.{ *Ripulire* 3—*ripulito*.{ *Nettare* 1—*nettato*.

Il calamaio.

Immediately, directly.

This instant, instantly.

Presently.

I am going to do it.

I will do it immediately.

I am going to work.

Subito.

Immantinente, all'istante.

A momenti, fra poco.

Lo faccio subito. Sto per farlo.

Lo faccio immantinente.

Lavorerò fra poco.

*Is there?**Are there?*

There is not.

There are not.

Will there be?

There will be.

Was there *or* has there been?Were there *or* have there been?

There has been.

There have been.

Is there any wine?

There is some.

There is not any.

Are there any men?

There are some.

There are not any.

*C'è? V'è? Harvi?**Ci sono? Vi sono? Sonvi?*Non c'è *or* non v'è.Non ci sono *or* vi sono.Vi sarà *or* ci sarà?Ci sarà *or* vi sarà.C'è stato *or* v'è stato?Ci sono stati *or* vi sono stati?C'è stato *or* v'è stato.Ci sono stati *or* vi sono stati.

C'è del vino?

Ce n'è.

Non ce n'è.

Sonvi degli uomini?

Ve ne sono.

Non ve ne sono.

There are men who will not study.

Is there any one?

There is no one.

Are there to be many people at the ball?

There are to be a great many people there.

Vi sono degli uomini che non hanno voglia di studiare (*or* che non vogliono studiare).

V'è qualcuno?

Non v'è nessuno.

Ci deve essere molta¹ gente alla festa da ballo?

Ce ne deve essere molta.

¹ *Molta* here agrees with *gente*, people, which is feminine.

On credit.

To sell on credit.
The credit.
Ready money.

To buy for cash.
To sell for cash.
To pay down.

Will you buy for cash?

Does it suit you to sell to me on credit?

A credenza, a credito.

Vendere a credenza (a credito).
Il credito.
Danaro in contante (danaro contante).

Comprare a contanti.
Vendere a contanti.
Pagare a contanti (pagar a danaro contante).

Vuole Ella comprare a contanti?

Le conviene vendermi a credenza?

To fit.

Does that coat fit me?
It fits you.
That hat does not fit your brother.

It does not fit him.
Do these boots fit you?
They fit me.
That fits you very well.

Star bene.*

Mi sta bene questo abito?
Le sta bene.

Cotesto cappello non istà bene al di Lei fratello.

Non gli sta bene.
Le stanno bene questi stivali?
Mi stanno bene.

Ciò (questa cosa) Le sta benissimo (a maraviglia).

To keep.

You had better.
I had better.
He had better.

Instead of keeping your horse, you had better sell it.

Instead of selling his hat, he had better keep it.

Tenere, ritenere*, — tenuto.*

† Ella farà meglio (di).
† Farò meglio (di).
† Egli farà meglio (di).

† In vece di tenere il di Lei cavallo, farà meglio di venderlo.

† In vece di vendere il suo cappello, farà meglio di tenerlo.

Will you keep the horse?
I shall keep it.

You must not keep my money.

Terrà Ella il cavallo?
Lo terrò.

Non è d' uopo ritenere il mio danaro.

To please, to be pleased.

To please some one.

Does that book please you?
It pleases me much.

Piacere (Lesson XLI.).*

Piacere a qualcuno.*

Le piace questo libro?
Mi piace molto.

I will do what you please.
You are pleased to say so.

What is your pleasure?
What do you want?
What do you say?

† Farò ciò che vorrò.
† Ciò Le piace di dire (a familiar expression).
Che desidera, Signore?
Che vuole, Signore?
Che dice?

To please one's self.

How do you please yourself here?

I please myself very well here.

{ *Piacersi*—piaciutosi.*
 Trovarsi—trovatosi.*
Come si piace (si trova) qui?
Mi ci piaccio (trovo) benissimo.

Whose book is this?

It is his.

Whose boots are these?

They are ours.

It is they who have seen him.

It is your friends who are in the right.

It is we who have done it.

It is you who say so.

It is of you that I speak.

Di chi è questo libro?

È il suo.

Di chi sono questi stivali?

Sono i nostri.

Sono essi che l' hanno veduto.

Sono i di Lei amici che hanno ragione.

Siamo noi che l' abbiamo fatto.

È Lei che lo dice (Lo dice Lei).

È di Lei che parlo (parlo di Lei).

EXERCISES.

145.

To whom does that horse belong?—It belongs to the English captain whose son has written a note to you.—Does this money belong to you?—It belongs to me.—From whom have you received it?—I have received it from the men whose children you have seen.—Whose horses are those?—They are ours.—Have you told your brother that I am waiting for him here?—I have forgotten to tell him so (*dirglielo*).—Is it your father or mine who is gone to Berlin?—It is mine.—Is it your baker, or that of our friend, who has sold you bread on credit?—It is ours.—Is that your son?—He is not mine; he is my friend's.—Where is yours?—He is at Paris.—Have you brought me the book which you promised me?—I have forgotten it.—Has your uncle brought you the pocket-books which he promised you?—He has forgotten to bring them to me.—Have you already written to your friend?—I have not yet (*peranco*) had time to write to him.—Have you forgotten to write to your relative?—I have not forgotten to write to him.—Does this cloth suit you?—It does not suit me; have you no other?—I have some other; but it is dearer than this.—Will you show it me?—I will show it you.—Do these boots suit your uncle?—They do not suit him, because they are too dear.—Are these the boots of which

you have spoken to us?—They are the same (*i medesimi*, or *gli stessi*).—Whose books are these?—They belong to the gentleman whom you have seen this morning in my warehouse.—Does it suit you to come with us?—It does not suit me.—Does it suit you to go to the market?—It does not suit me to go thither.—Did you go on foot to Germany?—It does not suit me to go on foot, so that (*per cui*) I went thither in a coach.

146.

What is your pleasure (*che desidera*), Sir?—I am inquiring after your father. Is he at home?—No, Sir, he is gone out.—What do you say?—I tell you that he is gone out.—Will you wait till he comes back?—I have no time to wait.—Does that merchant sell on credit?—He does not sell on credit.—Does it suit you to buy for cash?—It does not suit me.—Where did you buy these pretty knives (*coltellini*)?—I bought them at the merchant's (*dal mercante*), whose warehouse you saw yesterday.—Has he sold them you on credit?—He has sold them to me for cash.—Do you often buy for cash?—Not so often as you.—Have you forgotten anything here?—I have forgotten nothing.—Does it suit you to learn this (*ciò*) by heart?—I have not much time to study, so that (*di modo che*) it does not suit me to learn it by heart.—Has that man tried to speak to your father?—He has tried to speak to him, but he has not succeeded in it.—Have you succeeded in writing an exercise?—I have succeeded (in it).—Have those merchants succeeded in selling their horses?—They have not succeeded.—Have you tried to clean my inkstand?—I have tried, but I have not succeeded (in it).—Do your children succeed in learning English?—They do (succeed in it).—Is there any wine in this cask (*in questo barile*)?—There is some in it.—Is there any vinegar in this glass?—There is none in it.—Is there wine or cider in it?—There is neither wine nor cider in it.—What is there in it?—There is some vinegar in it.

147.

Are there any men in your warehouse?—There are some there.—Is there any one in the warehouse?—There is no one there.—Were there many people in the theatre?—There were many there.—Will there be many people at your ball (*alla di Lei festa da ballo*)?—There will be many (there).—Are there many children that will not play?—There are many that will not study, but all will play.—Hast thou cleaned my trunk?—I have tried to do it, but I have not succeeded.—Do you intend buying an umbrella?—I intend buying one, if the merchant sells it me on credit.—Do you intend to keep mine?—I intend to give it you back (*renderglielo*), if I buy one.—Have you returned the books to my brother?—I have not returned them to him yet.—How long do you intend to keep them?—I intend to keep them till next Saturday.—How long do you

intend keeping my horse?—I intend keeping it till my father returns.—Have you cleaned my knife?—I have not had time yet, but I will do it this instant.—Have you made a fire?—Not yet, but I will make one presently.—Why have you not worked?—I have not yet been able.—What had you to do?—I had to clean your carpet, and to mend your linen handkerchiefs.—Do you intend to sell your coat?—I intend keeping it, for I want it.—Instead of keeping it, you had better sell it.—Do you sell your horses?—I do not sell them.—Instead of keeping them, you had better sell them.—Does your friend keep his parasol?—He keeps it; but instead of keeping it he had better sell it, for it is worn out.—Does your son tear his book?—He tears it; but he is wrong in doing so: instead of tearing it, he had better read it.

FORTY-EIGHTH LESSON.

Lezione Quarantesima ottava.

To go away.

When will you go away?
I will go soon.

By and by.

He will go away soon (by and by).

We shall go away to-morrow.

They will go away to-morrow.

Thou wilt go away immediately.

Andarsene (Less. XLIII.).*

Quando se ne andrà Ella?
Me ne andrò quanto prima.
Fra poco.

Se ne andrà fra poco.

Ce ne andremo domani.

Se ne andranno domani.

Te ne andrai immantinente.

When.

Quando (allorchè, allora, quando).

To become.

What will become of you, if you lose your money?

I do not know what will become of me.

What will become of him?

What will become of us?

What will become of them?

I do not know what will become of them.

† *Esser* mai (diventare, divenire*, Lesson XLIV.).*

† Che sarà mai di Lei, se perde il suo danaro?

† Non so che sarà di me.

† Che sarà mai di lui?

† Che sarà mai di noi?

† Che sarà mai di loro?

† Non so cosa sarà di loro.

The turn.

My turn.

In my turn.

In his turn.

In my brother's turn.

Each in his turn.

When it comes to your turn.

Our turn will come.

La volta.

† La mia volta.

† Alla mia volta (tocca a me *or* spetta a me).

† Alla sua volta (spetta a lui *or* tocca a lui).

† Alla volta di mio fratello (tocca *or* spetta a mio fratello).

† Ciascuno alla sua volta.

Quando verrà la di Lei volta (quando toccherà a Lei *or* quando spetterà a Lei).

Avremo la nostra volta (spetterà a noi *or* toccherà a noi).

A turn, a tour, a walk.

To take a turn.

To take a walk.

He is gone to take a walk.

To walk round the garden.

Un giro.

Far un giro.

Far una passeggiata.

{ È andato a fare un giro.

{ È andato a fare una passeggiata.

Far un giro nel giardino.

To run—run (past part.).

Do you run?

I do run.

Shall *or* will you run?

I shall *or* will run.

Correre *—*corso*.

Corre Ella?

Corro.

Correrà Ella?

Correrò.

Behind.

Behind him.

Behind the castle.

Dietro (or di dietro).

Dietro a lui.

Dietro al castello.

A blow, a stroke, a clap.

Have you given that man a blow?

I have given him one.

A blow with a stick.

A kick (with the foot).

A blow with the fist.

A stab of a knife.

Un colpo, una botta (a fem. noun).

Ha Ella dato un colpo a costui?

Gl'el' ho dato.

Una bastonata, un colpo di bastone.

Un calcio.

Un pugno.

Una coltellata, un colpo di coltello.

A shot (*or* the report of a gun).

{ Una schioppettata (una fucilata).

{ Un colpo di fucile.

A shot of a pistol.	Una pistolettata, un colpo di pistola.
A glance of the eye.	Un' occhiata, un colpo d' occhio.
A clap of thunder.	Un colpo di fulmine.
To give a cut with a knife.	Dare una coltellata.
To give a man a blow with a stick.	Dare una bastonata ad un uomo.
To give a man a kick.	Dare un calcio ad un uomo.
To give a man a blow with the fist.	Dare un pugno ad un uomo.
<i>To pull, to draw.</i>	} <i>Tirare l. Sparare l. Far fuoco.</i>
<i>To shoot, to fire.</i>	
To fire a gun.	} Sparare un fucile. Tirare una fucilata. Tirare un colpo di pistola. Tirare un colpo di fucile a qualcuno.
To fire a pistol.	
To fire at some one.	
I have fired at that bird.	Ho tirato una schioppettata a quell' uccello.
I have fired twice.	Ho fatto fuoco due volte.
I have fired three times.	Ho sparato tre colpi.
I have fired several times.	Ho sparato varie volte.
How many times have you fired?	Quanti colpi di fucile ha tirati?
I have fired six times.	Ne ho tirati sei.
How many times have you fired at that bird?	Quante volte ha tirato a quell' uccello?
I have fired at it several times.	Ho tirato parecchie volte sopra di lui.
I have heard a shot.	Ho udito un colpo di fucile.
He has heard the report of a pistol.	Ha udito una pistolettata.
We have heard a clap of thunder.	Abbiamo udito un colpo di fulmine.
The fist.	Il pugno.
<i>To cast an eye upon some one or something.</i>	<i>Gettare un' occhiata sopra uno, o qualcosa.</i>
Have you cast an eye upon that book?	Ha Ella gettato un' occhiata su questo libro?
I have cast an eye upon it.	Vi ho gettato un' occhiata.
Has that man gone away?	Se n' è andato costui?
He has gone away.	Egli se n' è andato.
Have your brothers gone away?	I di Lei fratelli se ne sono andati?

They have gone away.	Se ne sono andati.
They have not gone away.	Non se ne sono andati.
Have they gone away?	Se ne sono andati?
They were not willing to go away.	Non hanno voluto andarsene.

To ask some one, that is, to question, to interrogate him. | Interrogare qualcuno.

EXERCISES.

148.

Are you going away already?—I am not going yet.—When will that man go away?—He will go away presently.—Will you go away soon?—I shall go away next Thursday.—When will your friends go away?—They will go away next month.—When wilt thou go away?—I will go away instantly.—Why has your father gone away so soon (*così tosto*)?—He has promised his friend to be at his house at a quarter to nine, so that (*dì modo che*) he went away early in order to keep (*per mantenere*) what he has promised.—When shall we go away?—We shall go away to-morrow.—Shall we start early?—We shall start at five o'clock in the morning.—When will you go away?—I shall go away as soon as I have done writing.—When will your children go away?—They will go as soon as they have done their exercises.—Will you go when I go?—I shall go away when you go.—Will our neighbours soon go away?—They will go away when they have done speaking.—What will become of your son, if he does not study?—If he does not study, he will learn nothing.—What will become of you, if you lose your money?—I do not know what will become of me.—What will become of your friend, if he loses his pocket-book?—If he loses it, I do not know what will become of him.—What has become of your son?—I do not know what has become of him.—Has he enlisted?—He has not enlisted.—What will become of us, if our friends go away?—If they go away, I do not know what will become of us.—What has become of your relations?—They have gone away.

149.

Do you intend buying a horse?—I cannot buy one, for I have not yet received my money.—Must I go (*Mi è d'uopo andare*) to the theatre?—You must not go there, for it is very bad weather.—Why do you not go to my brother's?—It does not suit me to go to his house, for I cannot yet pay him what I owe him.—Why does your servant give that man a cut with his knife?—He gives him a cut, because the man has given him a blow with his fist.—Which of these two pupils begins to speak?—The one who is studious,

begins to speak.—What does the other do who is not so?—He also (*anch' egli*) begins to speak, but he knows neither how to write nor to read.—Does he not listen to what you tell him?—He does not listen to it, if I do not give him a beating (*dei colpi*).—Why do those children not study?—Their master has given them blows, so that (*di maniera che*) they will not study.—Why has he given them blows with his fist?—Because they have been disobedient.—Have you fired a gun?—I have fired three times.—At what did you fire?—I fired at a bird.—Have you fired a gun at that man?—I have fired a pistol at him.—Why have you fired a pistol at him?—Because he has given me a stab with his knife.—How many times have you fired at that bird?—I have fired at it twice.—Have you killed it?—I have killed it at the second shot (*al secondo colpo*).—Have you killed that bird at the first shot?—I have killed it at the fourth (*al quarto colpo*).—Do you fire at the birds which you see upon the trees, or at those which you see in the gardens?—I fire neither at those which I see upon the trees, nor at those which I see in the gardens; but at those which I perceive on the castle behind the wood.

150.

How many times have the enemies fired at us (*su di noi*)?—They have fired at us several times.—Have they killed anybody?—They have killed nobody.—Have you a wish to fire at that bird?—I have a wish to fire at it.—Why do you not fire at those birds?—I cannot, for I have a sore finger.—When did the captain fire?—He fired when his soldiers fired.—How many birds have you shot at?—I have shot at all that I have perceived, but I have killed none, because my gun is good for nothing.—Have you cast an eye upon that man?—I have cast an eye upon him.—Has he seen you?—He has not seen me, for he has sore eyes.—Have you drunk of that wine?—I have drunk of it, and it has done me good.—What have you done with my book?—I have put it upon your trunk.—Am I (*debbo*) to answer you?—You will answer me when it comes to your turn (*quando verrà la di Lei volta*).—Is it my brother's turn (*tocca a mio fratello*)?—When it comes to his turn I shall ask him (*lo interrogherò*), for each in his turn.—Have you taken a walk this morning?—I have taken a walk round the garden.—Where is your uncle gone?—He is gone to take a walk.—Why do you run?—I run because I see my best friend.—Who runs behind us (*dietro a noi*)?—Our dog runs behind us.—Do you perceive that bird?—I perceive it behind the tree.—Why have your brothers gone away?—They have gone away, because they did not wish to be seen by the man whose dog they have killed. (See end of XXIVth Lesson.)

FORTY-NINTH LESSON.

*Lezione Quarantesima nona.**To hear—heard.*

I hear, thou hearest, he hears.
 We hear, you hear. they hear.

Udire 3—udito.*

Odo, odi, ode.
 Udiamo, udite, odono.

To hear of.

Have you heard of your brother?

I have heard of him.

Is it long since you breakfasted?

How long is it since you breakfasted?

It is not long since I breakfasted.

It is a great while since.

It is a short time since.

How long is it since you heard of your brother?

It is a year since I heard of him.

{ *† Udire* parlare.*{ *† Sentir parlare.*

Ha Ella udito parlare del di Lei fratello?

Ne ho udito parlare.

È molto tempo che Ella ha fatto colazione?

Quanto è che Ella ha fatto colazione?

Non è molto tempo che ho fatto colazione.

È moltissimo tempo che.

È poco tempo che.

Quanto tempo è che ha udito parlare del di Lei fratello?

È un anno che ho udito parlare di lui.

È un anno che *ne* ho udito parlare.

It is only a year since.

It is more than a year since.

È solamente un anno che.

È più d' un anno che.

Obs. A. Than, when before a number, is rendered by di.

More than nine.

More than twenty times.

It is hardly six months since.

A few hours ago.

Half an hour ago.

Two years ago.

Più *di* nove.Più *di* venti volte.

Sono appena sei mesi che.

È qualche ora (sono alcune ore).

È una mezz' ora (mezz' ora fa).

Sono due anni.

Obs. B. The word *fa*, third person singular of the verb *fare*, is used in Italian wherever there is in English *ago*, relating to the singular.

I have seen him a month ago.	L' ho veduto un mese <i>fa</i> .
Two hours and a half ago.	Sono due ore e mezzo.
Three centuries ago.	Tre secoli sono.
A fortnight ago.	† Sono quindici giorni.
Ten years ago.	Dieci anni sono.
A fortnight.	Quindici giorni. ¹

Have you long been in France? | † È molto tempo ch' Ella è in Francia?

Obs. C. In English the state of existence or of action, when in its duration, is always expressed in the preterperfect tense; whilst in Italian, as well as in French, it is expressed by the present tense.

He has been in Paris these three years. | † Son tre anni ch' è in Parigi.

I have been living here these two years. | Son due anni che sto quì.

How long have you had that horse? | Quanto tempo è ch' Ella ha co-
testo cavallo?

I have had it these five years. | Sono cinque anni che l' ho.

<i>How long (since when)?</i>	{ <i>Da quando in quà?</i>
How long has he been here?	{ <i>Da quanto tempo?</i>
<i>Since.</i>	{ <i>Da quanto tempo è egli quì?</i>
	{ <i>Dacchè (che).</i>
	{ <i>Da.</i>
These three days.	Da tre giorni.
This month.	Da un mese.
I have seen him more than twenty times.	L' ho veduto più di venti volte.

It is six months since I spoke to him. | Sono sei mesi che *non* gli ho parlato.

Obs. D. The negative *non* in this and similar expressions is necessary in Italian, though the English use no negative in such instances.

It is more than a year since I heard of him. | È più d' un anno che non ne ho udito parlare.

Since I saw you it has rained very often. | Da che l' ho veduta ha piovuto spessissimo.

¹ In Italian, as well as in French, we say fifteen days for a *fort-night*.

Just.

I have just seen your brother.
He has just done writing.
The men have just arrived.
Has that man been waiting long?
He has but just come.
I have just seen him.
I have just received it.
I have just written to him.

*Poco fa, poc' anzi, testè.
Ora, or ora, in questo punto.
Appunto.
Ho visto il di Lei fratello, poco fa.
Ha finito di scrivere poc' anzi.
Gli uomini sono appunto arrivati.
È molto tempo che questi aspetta?
È arrivato in questo punto.
L' ho veduto testè.
L' ho ricevuto ora.
Gli ho scritto poc' anzi.*

To do one's best.

I will do my best.
He will do his best.

*† Fare il possibile.
† Farà il possibile (ciò che potrò).
† Farà il possibile (ciò che potrà).*


To spend money—spent.

How much have you spent to-day?
He has fifty sequins a month to live upon.

Spendere 2—speso.
Quanto ha Ella speso oggi?
Egli ha cinquanta zecchini al mese da spendere.*

Have the horses been found?

Sono stati trovati i cavalli?

 The passive participle agrees with the nominative in number; that is, when the nominative is plural, the participle must also be in the plural.

They have been found.

Sono stati trovati.

Where? When?

Ove or Dove? Quando?

The men have been seen.

Gli uomini sono stati veduti.

Our children have been praised and rewarded, because they have been good and studious.

I nostri fanciulli sono stati lodati e ricompensati, poichè sono stati savii e studiosi.

By whom have they been rewarded?

Da chi sono stati ricompensati?

By whom have we been blamed?

Da chi siamo stati biasimati?

To pass.

Passare 1.

Before.

*{ Davanti.
Innanzi.*

Obs. E. Before is expressed in Italian by *prima*, when it denotes priority (Lesson XXVIII.), and by *davanti, innanzi*, when it signifies in presence of. Ex.

To pass before some one.	Passar davanti a qualcuno.
To pass before a place.	Passar davanti un luogo.
A place.	Un luogo.
I have passed before the theatre.	Son passato davanti al teatro.
He passed before me.	È passato innanzi a me (or davanti me).

I breakfasted before you.	Ho fatto colazione prima di Lei.
---------------------------	----------------------------------

To spend time in something. | *Passare il tempo a far qualche cosa.*

What do you spend your time in?	† Come passa il tempo?
I spend my time in studying.	† Passo il tempo a studiare.
What has he spent his time in?	† Come ha egli passato il tempo?
What shall we spend our time in?	† Come passeremo il tempo?

To miss, to fail.

The merchant has failed to bring the money.

You have missed your turn.

You have failed to come to my house this morning.

Mancare l.

Il mercante ha mancato di portare il danaro.

Ella ha mancato alla di Lei volta.

Ella ha mancato di venire da me questo mane.

To be good for something.

Of what use is that?

It is good for nothing.

The good-for-nothing fellow.

Is the gun which you have bought a good one?

No, it is worth nothing.

Essere buono a qualcosa.*

† A che serve ciò?

† Ciò non serve a niente (non val niente).

Il discolo.

Il fucile ch' Ella ha comprato è buono?

No, Signore, non è buono a niente.

To throw away.

Have you thrown away anything?

I have not thrown away anything.

Have you used the books which you have bought?

Gettar via.

Ha Ella gettato via qualche cosa?

Non ho gettato via niente.

Si è Ella servita dei libri che ha comprati?

I have not used them, I have examined them, and found them very bad, so that I have thrown them away.

To examine.

Non me ne son servito; li ho esaminati, e li ho trovati cattivissimi, di maniera che li ho gettati via.

Esaminare.

EXERCISES.

151.

Have you heard of any one?—I have not heard of any one, for I have not gone out this morning.—Have you not heard of the man who has killed a soldier?—I have not heard of him.—Have you heard of my brothers?—I have not heard of them.—Of whom has your cousin heard?—He has heard of his friend who is gone to America.—Is it long since he heard of him?—It is not long since he heard of him.—How long is it?—It is only a month.—Have you been long in Paris?—These three years.—Has your brother been long in London?—He has been there these ten years.—How long is it since you dined?—It is long since I dined, but it is not long since I supped.—How long is it since you supped?—It is half an hour.—How long have you had these books?—I have had them these three months.—How long is it since your cousin set out?—It is more than a year since he set out.—What has become of the man who has lent you money?—I do not know what has become of him, for it is a great while since I saw him.—Is it long since you heard of the soldier who gave your friend a cut with the knife?—It is more than a year since I heard of him.—How long have you been learning French?—I have been learning it only these two months.—Do you know already how to speak it?—You see (*Ella sente*) that I am beginning to speak it.—Have the children of the English noblemen been learning it long?—They have been learning it these three years, and they do not yet begin to speak.—Why do they not know how to speak it?—They do not know how to speak it, because they are learning it badly.—Why do they not learn it well?—They have not a good master, so that they do not learn it well.

152.

Is it long since you saw the young man who learnt German with the (*dal*) master with whom (*presso il quale*) we learnt it?—I have not seen him for nearly a year.—How long is it since the child ate?—It ate a few minutes ago.—How long is it since those children drank?—They drank a quarter of an hour ago.—How long has your friend been in Spain?—He has been there this month.—How often have you seen the king?—I saw him more than ten times when I was in Paris.—When did you meet my brother?—I met him a fortnight ago.—Where did you meet him?—I met him before the theatre.—Did he do you any harm?—He did me no

harm, for he is a good boy.—Where are my gloves?—They have thrown them away.—Have the horses been found?—They have been found.—Where have they been found?—They have been found behind the wood, on this side of the road.—Have you been seen by any one?—I have been seen by no one.—Do you expect any one?—I expect my cousin the captain.—Have you not seen him?—I have seen him this morning; he has passed before my warehouse.—What does this young man wait for?—He waits for money.—Art thou waiting for anything?—I am waiting for my book.—Is this young man waiting for his money?—He is waiting for it.—Has the king passed here?—He has not passed here, but before the theatre.—Has he not passed before the castle?—He has passed there, but I have not seen him.

153.

What do you spend your time in?—I spend my time in studying.—What does your brother spend his time in?—He spends his time in reading and playing.—Does this man spend his time in working?—He is a good-for-nothing fellow; he spends his time in drinking and playing.—What do your children spend their time in?—They spend their time in learning.—Can you pay me what you owe me?—I cannot pay it you, for the merchant has failed to bring me my money.—Why have you breakfasted without me?—You failed to come at nine o'clock, so that we have breakfasted without you.—Has the merchant brought you the gloves which you bought at his house (*da lui*)?—He has failed to bring them to me.—Has he sold them you on credit?—He has sold them me, on the contrary, for cash.—Do you know those men?—I do not know them: but I believe that they are (*che siano*, subjunctive) good-for-nothing fellows, for they spend their time in playing.—Why did you fail to come to my father's this morning?—The tailor did not bring me the coat which he promised me, so that I could not go to him.—Who is the man who has just spoken to you?—He is a merchant.—What has the shoemaker just brought?—He has brought the boots which he has made us.—Who are the men who have just arrived?—They are Russians.—Where did your uncle dine yesterday?—He dined at home.—How much did he spend?—He spent five francs.—How much has he a month to live upon?—He has a hundred sequins a month to live upon.—Do you throw your hat away?—I do not throw it away, for it fits me very well.—How much have you spent to-day?—I have not spent much; I have only spent one sequin.—Do you spend every day as much?—I sometimes spend more than that.—Has that man been waiting long?—He has but just come.—What does he wish?—He wishes to speak to you.—Are you willing to do that?—I am willing to do it.—Shall you be able to do it well?—I will do my best.—Will this man be able to do that?—He will be able to do it, for he will do his best.

FIFTIETH LESSON.

Lezione Cinquantesima.

<i>Far.</i>	<i>Lontano, lungi.</i>
How far (meaning <i>What distance</i>)?	{ Qual distanza?
	{ Quanto è lontano?
How far is it from here to Paris?	{ Qual distanza v' è da (or di) qui a Parigi?
	{ Qual distanza corre da (or di) qui a Parigi?
Is it far from here to Paris?	C' è molto da (or di) qui a Parigi?
It is far.	C' è molto. È lontano.
It is not far.	Non c' è molto. Non è lontano.
A mile.	Un miglio. ¹
How many miles is it?	Quante miglia vi sono?
It is twenty miles.	Vi sono venti miglia.
It is almost two hundred miles from here to Paris.	Vi son circa due cento miglia da qui a Parigi.
It is nearly five hundred miles from Paris to Vienna.	Vi son circa cinque cento miglia da Parigi a Vienna.

<i>From.</i>	<i>Da.</i>
From Venice.	Da Venezia.
From London.	Da Londra.
From Rome.	Da Roma.
From Florence.	Da Firenze.
What countryman are you?	† Di qual paese è Ella?
Are you from France?	† È Ella di Francia?
I am.	Lo sono.
The Parisian.	Il Parigino.
He is a Parisian (from Paris).	È Parigino.
The king.	Il re.
The philosopher.	Il filosofo. ²
The preceptor, the tutor.	Il precettore, ³ l' aio.
The actor.	L' attore. ⁴

¹ *Miglio* is one of the nouns in *o*, which, though masculine in the singular, take in the plural the form of the feminine singular, as *le miglia*, miles. We shall see hereafter a list of such nouns.

² Whenever *ph* occurs in English, it is in Italian changed into *f*.

³ } In Italian *c* or *p* is never put before *t*, but they are changed

⁴ } into *t*.

The professor.
The landlord, the innkeeper.

Il professore.
L' oste, il locandiere, l' alber-
gatore.

Are you an Englishman?
Are you an Italian?

È Ella Inglese?
È Ella Italiano?

Whence?

Da dove? D' onde?

Whence do you come?
I come from Rome.
I come from Paris.

Da dove viene? D' onde viene?
Vengo da Roma.
Vengo da Parigi.

To fly, to run away.

{ *Fuggire* 3.
{ *Fuggirsene*.

To run away, to escape.

Scappare 1.

I run away, thou runnest away,
he runs away.

Fuggo, fuggi, fuggi.

We run away, you run away,
they run away.

Fuggiamo, fuggite, fuggono.

Why do you fly?

Perchè fuggi?

I fly, because I am afraid.

Fuggo, perchè ho paura.

To assure.

Assicurare 1.

I assure you that he is arrived.

L' assicurato ch' è arrivato.

To arrive.

Arrivare 1.

To hear—heard.

Intendere—inteso.*

Have you heard nothing new?

Non ha Ella inteso niente di nuovo?

I have heard nothing new.

Non ho inteso niente di nuovo.

What do they say of our prince?

Che si dice (che dicono) del nostro principe?

They say he is wise and generous.

† Lo dicono saggio e magnanimo.

To happen—happened.

{ *Accadere*—accaduto.*
{ *Sopraggiungere*—soprag-*
giunto.
{ *Succedere*—successo.*
{ *Arrivare* 1.

The happiness, fortune.
 The unhappiness, misfortune.
 A great misfortune has happened.
 He has met with a great misfortune.
 What has happened to you?
 Nothing has happened to me.
 I have met with your brother.

La felicità (*a fem. noun*).
 La disgrazia (*a fem. noun*).
 È sopraggiunta una gran disgrazia.
 Gli è sopraggiunta una gran disgrazia.
 Che Le è sopraggiunto?
 Non mi è sopraggiunto niente.
 Ho incontrato il di Lei fratello.

The poor man.
 I have cut his finger.
 You have broken the man's neck.
 He broke his leg.

Il povero.
 † Gli ho tagliato il dito.
 † Ella ha rotto il collo all' uomo.
 † Si è rotta la gamba.
 La gamba (*a fem. noun*).

To pity—pitied.

I pity, thou pitiest, he pities.

We, you, they pity.

{ *Compiangere*—*compianto*.
Compatire (*a*)—*compatito*.
Aver compassione (*di*)—
avuto compassione.
 Compatisco, compatisci, compatisce.
 Compattiamo, compatite, compatiscono.

Obs. Most verbs of the third conjugation terminate in the three first persons of the present indicative in: *isco, isci, isce*, and in the third person plural in *iscono*, just as *compatire*. As there are a great many of them (some grammarians make their number amount to nearly four hundred), we shall content ourselves with marking them thus: (*isco*), as they will occur in the course of the Method.

Do you pity that man?
 I pity him with all my heart.
 With all my heart.

Compiange Ella costui?
 Lo compiangio di tutto cuore.
 Di tutto cuore.

To complain.

Do you complain?
 I do not complain.
 Do you complain of my friend?
 I complain of him.
 I do not complain of him.

† *Lamentarsi, lagnarsi*.
 † Si lamenta?
 † Non mi lamento.
 † Si lagna del mio amico?
 † Me ne lagno.
 † Non me ne lagno.

To dare—dared or durst.

I dare, thou darest, he dares.
 We, you, they dare.

{ *Osare*—*osato*.
Ardire—*ardito*.
 Ardisco, ardisci, ardisce.
 Osiamo,^s ardite, ardiscono.

^s The first person plural of *osare* is substituted for the first

<i>To spoil.</i> You have spoiled my knife.	<i>Guastare</i> 1. Ha guastato il mio coltello.
<i>To serve, to wait upon.</i> <i>To serve some one, to wait upon some one.</i> Has he been in your service? Has he served you? How long has he been in your service? The service.	<i>Servire</i> 3. { <i>Servire qualcuno.</i> <i>Essere* al servizio di qualcuno.</i> È stato al di Lei servizio? L' ha servita? † Quanto tempo è che La serve? † Quanto tempo è che trovasti al di Lei servizio? † Da quanto tempo è al di Lei servizio? Il servizio.
<i>To offer.</i> Do you offer? I offer. Thou offerest. He offers.	<i>Offrire*</i> — <i>offerto.</i> Offre Ella? Offro. Offri. Offre.
<i>To confide, to trust with, to entrust.</i> Do you trust me with your money? I trust you with it. I have entrusted that man with a secret. The secret. To keep anything secret. I have kept it secret.	{ <i>Dare* in custodia.</i> <i>Confidare</i> 1. Mi confida Ella il di Lei denaro? Glielo confido. Ho confidato un segreto a costui. Il segreto. * { Tenere qualche cosa segreto. Osservare il segreto su qualche cosa. L' ho tenuto segreto.
<i>To take care of something.</i> Do you take care of your clothes? I take care of them. Will you take care of my horse? I will (take care of it).	<i>Aver cura di qualcosa.</i> Ha Ella cura dei di Lei abiti? Ne ho cura. Vuole aver cura del mio cavallo? { Voglio averne cura, <i>or</i> Ne voglio aver cura.

person plural of *ardire*, not to confound this with the first person plural of *ardere*, to burn.

To leave—left.

To squander, to dissipate.

He has squandered all his wealth.

He has left nothing to his children.

Lasciare 1—lasciato.

Dissipare 1—dissipato.

Ha dissipato ogni suo avere.

Non ha lasciato niente ai suoi fanciulli.

To hinder, to keep from.

I hinder, thou hinderest, he hinders.

We, you, they hinder.

You hinder me from sleeping.

He has hindered me from writing.

Impedire—impedito.*

Impedisco, impedisce, impedisco.

Impediamo, impediti, impedite, impedite.

Ella m' impedisce di dormire.

Mi ha impedito di scrivere.

To purchase, to spend.

What have you purchased to-day?

I have purchased two handkerchiefs.

Have you purchased anything to-day?

I have.

Far spesa, far compera (la spesa, la compera, the expense, fem. nouns).

Far delle spese.

Far delle compere.

Cosa ha comprato oggi?

Ho comprato due fazzoletti.

Ha fatto delle spese (delle compere) oggi?

Né ho fatto.

Most lovely, charming.

Admirably.

That hat fits you admirably.

That coat fits him very well.

It is charming.

Grazioso, leggiadro, vago.

A meraviglia.

Questo cappello Le sta a meraviglia.

Quest' abito gli sta benissimo.

È grazioso.

EXERCISES.

154.

How far is it from Paris to London?—It is nearly three hundred miles from Paris to London.—Is it far from here to Berlin?—It is far.—Is it far from here to Vienna?—It is nearly five hundred miles from here to Vienna.—Is it farther from Paris to Blois than from Orleans to Paris?—It is farther from Orleans to Paris than from Paris to Blois.—How far is it from Paris to Berlin?—It is

almost five hundred and thirty miles from Paris to Berlin.—Do you intend to go to Paris soon?—I intend to go there soon.—Why do you wish to go this time (*questa volta*)?—In order to buy good books and good gloves, and to see my good friends.—Is it long since you were there?—It is nearly a year since I was there.—Do you not go to Italy this year (*quest' anno*)?—I do not go thither, for it is too far from here to Italy.—Who are the men that have just arrived?—They are philosophers.—Of what country are they?—They are from London.—Who is the man who has just left?—He is an Englishman who has squandered away (*dissipato*) all his fortune (*ogni suo avere*) in France.—What countryman are you?—I am a Spaniard, and my friend is an Italian.—Are you from Tours?—No, I am a Parisian.—How much money have your children spent to-day?—They have spent but little; they have spent but one crown.—Where did you dine yesterday?—I dined at the innkeeper's.—Did you spend a great deal?—I spent a crown and a half.—Has the king passed here (*di qui*)?—He has not passed here (*di qui*), but before the theatre.—Have you seen him?—I have seen him.—Is it the first time (*è la prima volta*) you have seen him?—It is not the first time, for I have seen him more than twenty times.

155.

Why does that man run away?—He runs away because he is afraid.—Why do you run away?—I run away because I am afraid.—Of whom are you afraid?—I am afraid of the man who does not love me.—Is he your enemy?—I do not know whether he is (*s' è*) my enemy; but I fear all those who do not love me, for if they do me no harm they will do me no good.—Do you fear my cousin?—I do not fear him, for he has never done any body harm.—You are wrong to run away before that man, for I assure you that he is (*l' assicuro esser egli*) a very good man (*un bravo uomo*), who has never done harm to any one.—Of whom has your brother heard?—He has heard of a man to whom (*al quale*) a misfortune has happened (*è accaduta una disgrazia*).—Why have your scholars not done their exercises?—I assure you that they have done them, and you are mistaken if you believe that they have (*abbiano*, subj.) not done them.—What have you done with my book?—I assure you that I have not seen it.—Has your son had my knives?—He assures me that he has not had them.—Is your uncle arrived already?—He is not arrived yet (*per anco*).—Will you wait till he returns?—I cannot wait, for I have a good deal (*molto*) to do.—Have you not heard anything new?—I have heard nothing new.—Is the king arrived?—They say he is (*che sia*) arrived.—What has happened to you?—A great misfortune (*una gran disgrazia*) has happened to me.—What (*quale*)?—I have met with my greatest enemy, who has given me a blow with a stick.—Then I pity you with all my heart (*di tutto cuore*).—Why do you pity that man (*costui*)?—I pity him because you have broken his neck.—Why do

you complain of my friend?—I complain of him because he has cut my finger.—Does that man (*costui*) serve you well?—He serves me well, but he spends too much.—Are you willing to take this servant?—I am willing to take him, if he will serve me.—Can I take that servant?—You can take him, for he has served me very well.—How long is it since he has left your service (*che ha lasciato il di Lei servizio*)?—It is but two months since.—Has he served you long?—He has served me for (*durante*) six years.

156.

Do you offer me anything?—I have nothing to offer you.—What does my friend offer you?—He offers me a book.—Have the Parisians offered you anything?—They have offered me wine, bread, and good beef.—Why do you pity our neighbour?—I pity him, because he has trusted (*perchè ha dato in custodia*) a merchant of Paris with his money, and the man (*e questi*) will not return it to him.—Do you trust this man with anything?—I do not trust him with anything.—Has he already kept anything from you?—I have never trusted him with anything, so that he has never kept anything from me.—Will you trust my father with your money?—I will (trust him with it).—What secret has my son entrusted to you?—I cannot entrust you with that which he has entrusted to me, for he has desired me (*m' ha pregato*) to keep it secret.—Whom do you entrust with your secrets?—I entrust nobody with them, so that nobody knows them.—Has your brother been rewarded?—He has, on the contrary, been punished; but I beg of you to keep it secret, for nobody knows it.—What has happened to him?—I will tell you what has happened to him, if you promise me to keep it secret (*di osservarne il segreto*).—Do you promise me to keep it secret?—I promise you, for I pity him with all my heart.—Will you take care of my clothes?—I will take care of them.—Are you taking care of the book which I lent you?—I am taking care of it.—Who will take care of my servant?—The landlord will take care of him.—Do you throw away your hat?—I do not throw it away, for it fits me admirably (*a meraviglia*).—Does your friend sell his coat?—He does not sell it, for it fits him most beautifully.—Who has spoiled my book?—No one has spoiled it, because no one has dared to touch it.—Do you hinder any one from studying?—I hinder no one from studying, but I hinder you from doing harm to this boy.

THIRD MONTH.

Terzo Mese.

FIFTY-FIRST LESSON.

Lezione Cinquantesima prima.

The people.	La gente (<i>a fem. noun</i>).
Will the people come soon?	La gente verrà quanto prima?
They will come soon.	Verrà quanto prima.
<i>Soon, very soon.</i>	<i>Tosto, per tempo, quanto prima.</i>
A violin.	Un violino.
The flute.	Il flauto.
The horn.	Il corno.
To play upon the violin. }	Suonare il violino.
To play the violin. }	

Obs. The verb *to play* is rendered by *suonare* with the accusative, when a musical instrument is spoken of, and by *giuocare* with the dative, when a game is spoken of. Ex. To play at cards, *giuocare alle carte*; to play at chess, *giuocare agli scacchi*.

The harpsichord.	Il cembalo.
The piano-forte.	Il pianoforte.
To play the harpsichord. }	Suonare il cembalo.
To play upon the harpsichord. }	
To play the, or upon the, flute.	Suonare il flauto.
What instrument do you play?	Che strumento suona.

<i>To touch.</i>	<i>Suonare l.</i>
I play upon the piano.	† Suono il pianoforte.

<i>Near.</i>	<i>Vicino a, presso a.</i>
Near me.	Vicino a me.
Near them.	Vicino a loro.

Near the fire.
Near the trees.
Near going.
Where do you live?
I live near the castle.
What are you doing near the fire?

Vicino al fuoco, presso al fuoco.
Vicino agli alberi.
Vicino ad andare.
Ove sta Ella?
Sto vicino al castello.
Che fa Ella vicino al fuoco?

To dance.
To fall.
To drop (to let fall).
Has he dropt anything?
He has not dropt anything.
I dropt my gloves.

Ballare 1.
Cadere*—caduto.
Lasciar cadere.
+ Gli è caduto qualche cosa?
+ Non gli è caduto niente.
+ Mi son caduti i guanti.

To retain, to hold back.

Ritenere* (is conjugated like its primitive *tener**, Lesson XL.).

To approach, to draw near.

Do you approach the fire?
I do (approach it).

Avvicinarsi (gov. the dative).
S' avvicina Ella al fuoco?
Mi vi avvicino (or *merely* m' avvicino).

To approach, to have access to.

He is a man difficult of access.

{ Accostarsi ad uno.
Avvicinare uno.
È un uomo che non si può avvicinare.
È un uomo che nessuno può accostare.

I go away (withdraw) from the fire.

To withdraw from. }
To go away from. }
Why does that man go away from the fire?
He goes away from it, because he is not cold.
I go away from it.

M' allontanano dal fuoco.

Allontanarsi da (gov. the ablative).
Perchè s' allontana costui dal fuoco?
Se ne allontana perchè non ha freddo.
Me ne allontanano.

To recollect.

Do you recollect that?
 I recollect it.
 Does your brother recollect that?

He recollects it.
 Do you recollect the mottoes?
 I recollect them.

Have you recollected the mottoes?
 I have recollected them.
 I have not recollected them.
 Have you recollected them?
 You have recollected them.
 Has he recollected them?
 He has recollected them.
 We have recollected them.
 They have recollected them.

Ricordarsi 1. (gov. the genitive).
Rammentarsi.¹
 Si rammenta di ciò?
 Me ne rammento.
 Si rammenta di ciò il di Lei fratello?
 Se ne rammenta.
 Si rammenta dei motti?
 Me ne rammento. Me ne ricordo.
 Si è Ella rammentata dei motti?
 Me ne son rammentato.
 Non me ne son rammentato.
 Si è Ella rammentata di quelli?
 Ella se n'è ricordata.
 Se n'è egli rammentato?
 Se n'è rammentato.
 Ce ne siamo rammentati.
 Se ne sono rammentati.

To remember, to recollect.

Do you remember that man?
 I remember him.
 Do you remember that?
 I remember it.
 What do you remember?
 I remember nothing.

Ricordarsi 1. (gov. the genitive).
 Si ricorda di costui?
 Me ne ricordo, or lo ricordo.
 Si ricorda di ciò?
 Me ne ricordo.
 Di che si ricorda Ella?
 Non mi ricordo di niente.

To sit down.

I sit down, thou sittest down, he sits down.
 We, you, they sit down.
 Do you sit down?
 I do (sit down).
 Thou art sitting down.
 He is sitting down.
 I shall or will sit down.

*Sedere**—*seduto*.
Mettersi a sedere.
Porsi a sedere.
 Seggo, siedi, siede.
 Sediamo, sedete, seggono.
 Siede Ella (Si mette Ella a sedere)?
 Seggo (mi metto a sedere).
 Siedi (ti metti a sedere).
 Siede (si mette a sedere).
 Sederò (mi metterò a sedere).

¹ *Ricordare, rammentare*, when they are not reflexive, govern the accusative.

He sits near the fire.

He sat down near the fire.

È seduto vicino al fuoco.

S' è messo a sedere vicino al fuoco.

S' è posto a sedere vicino al fuoco.

To like better, to prefer.

Do you like to stay here better than going out?

I like staying here better than going out.

He likes to play better than to study.

Do you like to write better than to speak?

I like to speak better than to write.

Piacer meglio (più), preferire (isco).

Aver più caro.

Amar meglio (più).

Le piace meglio restar qui o uscire?

Mi piace meglio restar qui che uscire.

Ama meglio giuocare che studiare.

Le piace più scrivere o parlare?

Preferisco il parlare allo scrivere.

Il parlar mi piace più che lo scrivere.

Better than.

I like beef better than mutton.

Do you like bread better than cheese?

He likes to do both.

I like neither the one nor the other.

I like tea as much as coffee.

Just as much.

Some veal.

A calf, calves.

Meglio che.

Più.

Mi piace più il manzo che il montone.

Le piace più il pane che il cacio?

Gli piace fare l' uno e l' altro.

Non mi piace nè l' uno nè l' altro.

Mi piace altrettanto il tè quanto il caffè.

Altrettanto.

Del vitello.

Un vitello, dei vitelli.

Quick, fast.

Slow, slowly.

Aloud.

Does your master speak aloud?

He speaks aloud.

In order to learn Italian one must speak aloud.

Quicker, faster.

Presto.

Lentamente, adagio.

Forte, ad alta voce.

Il di Lei maestro parla forte?

Parla forte.

Per imparar l' italiano bisogna parlar forte.

Più presto.

Not so quick, less quick.

As fast as you.

He eats quicker than I.
Do you learn as fast as I?

I learn faster than you.
I do not understand you, because
you speak too fast.

*Non tanto presto, meno
presto, più adagio.*

Così presto come Lei.

Mangia più presto di me.
Impara presto come io (al pari
di me)?

Imparo più presto di Lei.
Non La capisco, perchè parla
troppo presto.

To sell cheap.

To sell dear.

Does he sell cheap? ,
He does not sell dear.
He has sold me very dear.

So.

This man sells everything so
dear that one cannot buy any
thing of him.
You speak so fast that I cannot
understand you.

*To buy something from some
one.*

I have bought it of him.
I have bought that horse of your
brother.
I have bought a cake for my
child.
I have bought it for him.

Vendere a buon mercato.

Vender caro.

Vende a buon mercato?

Non vende caro.

M' ha venduto a carissimo
prezzo.

Così.

Questi vende tutto così caro che
non si può comprar niente da
lui.

Ella parla così presto che non
posso comprenderla.

*Comprar qualche cosa da
qualcuno.*

L' ho comprato da lui.

Ho comprato questo cavallo dal
di Lei fratello.

Ho comprato un pasticcino a
mio figlio.

Gliel' ho comprato.

So much ; plur. so many.

I have written so many notes
that I cannot write any more.

Tanto ; plur. tanti.

Ho scritto tanti biglietti che
non ne posso scriver più.

Do you fear to go out?
I fear to go out.

To run away, to fly.

Did you run away?
I did not run away.
Why did that man run away?
He ran away because he was
afraid.

Teme Ella d' uscire?
Temo d' uscire.

Salvarsi l. Scappare l.

È Ella scappata?

Non sono scappato.

Perchè è scappato costui?

È scappato, perchè ha avuto
paura.

Who has run away?

He has run away.

{ Chi è scappato?
 { Chi s' è salvato?
 { Egli è scappato.
 { Egli è fuggito.

EXERCISES.

157.

Do you play the violin?—I do not play the violin, but the harpsichord.—Shall we have a ball to-night?—We shall have one.—At what o'clock?—At a quarter to eleven.—What o'clock is it now?—It is almost eleven, and the people will soon come.—What instrument will you play?—I shall play the violin.—If you play the violin, I shall play the harpsichord.—Are there to be a great many people at our ball?—There are to be a great many.—Will you dance?—I shall dance.—Will your children dance?—They will dance if they please (*se piace loro*).—How do you spend your time in this country?—I spend my time in playing on the harpsichord, and in reading.—In what does your cousin divert himself?—He diverts himself in playing upon the violin.—Does any one dance when you play?—A great many people dance when I play.—Who?—At first (*in primo luogo*) our children, then our cousins, at last (*in fine*) our neighbours.—Do you amuse yourself?—I assure you that we amuse ourselves very much.—Whom do you pity?—I pity your friend.—Why do you pity him?—I pity him because he is ill.—Has any one pitied you?—Nobody has pitied me, because I have not been ill.—Do you offer me anything?—I offer you a fine gun.—What has my father offered you?—He has offered me a fine book.—To whom have you offered your fine horses?—I have offered them to the English captain.—Dost thou offer thy pretty little dog to these children?—I offer it to them, for I love them with all my heart.—Why have you given that boy a blow with your fist?—Because he has hindered me from sleeping.—Has anybody hindered you from writing?—Nobody has hindered me from writing, but I have hindered somebody from hurting your cousin.

158.

Have you dropt anything?—I have dropt nothing, but my cousin dropt some money.—Who has picked it up?—Some men have picked it up.—Was it returned to him (*Gli è stato reso*)?—It was returned to him, for those who picked it up did not wish to keep it.—Is it cold to day?—It is very cold.—Will you draw near the fire?—I cannot draw near it, for I am afraid of burning myself.—Why does your friend go away from the fire?—He goes away from it, because he is afraid of burning himself.—Art thou coming near the fire?—I am coming near it, because I am very cold.—Do you go away from the fire?—I go away from it.—Why do you go

away from it?—Because I am not cold.—Are you cold or warm?—I am neither cold nor warm.—Why do your children approach the fire?—They approach it because they are cold.—Is anybody cold?—Somebody is cold.—Who is cold?—The little boy, whose father has lent you a horse, is cold.—Why does he not warm himself?—Because his father has no money to buy coals.—Will you tell him to come to me to warm himself?—I will tell him so (*dirglielo*).—Do you remember anything?—I remember nothing.—What does your uncle recollect?—He recollects what you have promised him.—What have I promised him?—You have promised him to go to Italy with him next winter.—I intend to do so, if it is not too cold.—Why do you withdraw from the fire?—I have been sitting near the fire this hour and a half, so that I am no longer cold.—Does not your friend like to sit near the fire?—He likes, on the contrary, much (*molto*) to sit near the fire, but only when he is cold.—May one (*si può*) approach your uncle?—One may approach him, for he receives everybody (*tutti*).—Will you sit down?—I will sit down.—Where does your father sit down?—He sits down near me.—Where shall I sit down?—You may (*può*) sit near me.—Do you sit down near the fire?—I do not sit down near the fire, for I am afraid of being too warm.—Do you recollect my brother?—I recollect him.

159.

Do your parents recollect their old friends?—They recollect them.—Do you recollect these mottoes?—I do not recollect them.—Have you recollect that?—I have recollect it.—Has your uncle recollect those mottoes?—He has recollect them.—Have I recollect my exercise?—You have recollect it.—Have you recollect your exercises?—I have recollect them, for I have learnt them by heart; and my brothers have recollect theirs, because they have learnt them by heart.—Is it long since you saw your friend from Paris?—I saw him a fortnight ago.—Do your scholars like to learn by heart?—They do not like to learn by heart; they like reading and writing better than learning by heart.—Do you like cider better than wine?—I like wine better than cider.—Does your brother like to play?—He likes to study better than to play.—Do you like veal better than mutton?—I like the latter better than the former.—Do you like to drink better than to eat?—I like to eat better than to drink; but my uncle likes to drink better than to eat.—Does the Frenchman like fowl better than fish?—He likes fish better than fowl.—Do you like to speak better than to write?—I like to do both.—Do you like honey better than sugar?—I like neither.—Does your father like coffee better than tea?—He likes neither.—Can you understand me?—No, Sir, for you speak too fast.—Will you be kind enough (*aver la bontà*) not to speak so fast?—I will not speak so fast, if you will listen to me.

160.

Can you understand what my brother tells you?—He speaks so fast that I cannot understand him.—Can your pupils understand you?—They understand me when I speak slowly; for, in order to be understood, one must speak slowly.—Is it necessary to speak aloud (*forte*, or *ad alta voce*) to learn Italian?—It is necessary to speak aloud.—Does your master speak aloud?—He speaks aloud and slowly.—Why do you not buy anything of that merchant?—He sells so dear that I cannot buy anything of him.—Will you take me to another?—I will take you to the son of the one whom you bought of last year.—Does he sell as dear as this?—He sells cheaper (*a miglior mercato*).—Do your children like to learn Italian better than Spanish?—They do not like to learn either; they only like to learn German.—Do you like mutton?—I like beef better than mutton.—Do your children like cake better than bread?—They like both.—Has he read all the books which he bought?—He bought so many (*tanti*) that he cannot read them all.—Do you wish to write some exercises?—I have written so many that I cannot write any more.—Why does that man run away?—He runs away because he is afraid.—Will any one do him harm?—No one will do him harm; but he dares not stay, because he has not done his task, and is afraid of being punished.—Will any one touch him?—No one will touch him, but he will be punished by his master for not having (*per non aver*) done his task. (See end of Lesson XXIV.)

FIFTY-SECOND LESSON.

*Lezione Cinquantesima seconda.**By the side of.*

	{ † <i>Accanto a.</i>
	{ † <i>Allato a.</i>
To pass by the side of some one.	† <i>Passare accanto ad uno.</i>
I have passed by the side of you.	† <i>Son passato accanto a Lei.</i>
Have you passed by the side of my brother?	† <i>È Ella passata accanto a mio fratello?</i>
I have passed by the side of him.	† <i>Son passato accanto a lui.</i>

To pass by a place.

	{ † <i>Passare accanto ad un luogo.</i>
	{ † <i>Passare vicino ad un luogo.</i>

I have passed by the theatre.
 He has passed by the castle.
 You have passed before my warehouse.

† Son passato vicino al teatro.
 † È passato vicino al castello.
 † Ella è passata davanti al mio magazzino.

To dare.

I dare not go thither.
 He dares not do it.
 I did not dare to tell him so.

Ardire (see Lesson L.).

Non ardisco andarci.
 Non ardisce di farlo.
 Non ho ardito dirglielo.

To make use of, to use.

Do you use my horse?
 I use it.
 Does your father use it?
 He uses it.
 Have you used my gun?

I have used it.
 They have used your books.
 They have used them.

Servirsi di, adoperare l.

† Si serve Ella del mio cavallo?
 † Me ne servo.
 † Se ne serve il di Lei padre?
 † Se ne serve.
 † S' è Ella servita del mio schioppo?
 † Me ne son servito.
 † Hanno adoperato i di Lei libri.
 † Li hanno adoperati.

To instruct.

I instruct, thou instructest, he
 instructs.
 We, you, they instruct.

Ammaestrare—ammaestra-
to.

Instruire, or istruire (isco)
—istruito, or istruito.

Istruisco, istruisci, istruisce.

Istruiamo, istruite, istruiscono.

To teach.

To teach some one something.

He teaches me arithmetic.

I teach you Italian.
 I have taught him Italian.

Insegnare l.

Insegnare qualcosa a qualcuno.

M' insegna l' aritmetica (*a fem. noun*).

Le insegno l' italiano.

Gli ho insegnato l' italiano.

To teach some one to do something.

He teaches me to read.
 I teach him to write.

Insegnar a qualcuno a far qualche cosa.

M' insegna a leggere.

Gl' insegno a scrivere.

The French master (meaning the master of the French language).	Il maestro di francese.
The French master (meaning that the master is a Frenchman, whatever he teaches).	Il maestro francese.

<i>To shave.</i>	{ † <i>Sbarbarsi.</i>
	{ † <i>Farsi la barba.</i>
<i>To get shaved.</i>	{ † <i>Farsi far la barba.</i>
	{ † <i>Farsi sbarbare.</i>

<i>To dress.</i>	<i>Vestire—vestito.</i>
<i>To undress.</i>	<i>Spogliare—spogliato.</i>
<i>To dress one's self.</i>	<i>Vestirsi.</i>
<i>To undress one's self.</i>	<i>Spogliarsi.</i>
Have you dressed yourself?	S' è Ella vestita?
I have not yet dressed myself.	Non mi sono ancor vestito.
Have you dressed the child?	Avete vestito il bambino?
I have dressed it.	L' ho vestito.

<i>To undo.</i>	<i>Disfare.</i>
<i>To get rid of.</i>	<i>Disfarsi di.</i>
Are you getting rid of your damaged sugar?	Si disfa Ella del di Lei zucchero avariato?
I am getting rid of it.	Me ne disfaccio.
Did you get rid of your old ship?	S' è Ella disfatta del di Lei vecchio bastimento?
I did (get rid of it).	Me ne son disfatto.

<i>To part with.</i>	<i>Disfarsi.</i>
The design, the intention.	L' intenzione (<i>a fem. noun</i>), il disegno.
<i>To intend, or to have the intention.</i>	<i>Designare, o aver intenzione di.</i>
I intend to go thither.	Ho intenzione di andarci.
We have the intention to do it.	Abbiamo intenzione di farlo.
Do you intend to part with your horses?	Ha Ella intenzione di disfarsi dei di Lei cavalli?
I have already parted with them.	Me ne sono già disfatto.
He has parted with his gun.	S' è disfatto del suo schioppo.
<i>To discharge.</i>	{ <i>Licenziare l.</i>
Have you discharged your servant?	{ <i>Mandar via.</i>
I have discharged him.	Ha Ella licenziato il di Lei servitore?
	L' ho licenziato.

To get rid of some one.
 I did get rid of him.
 Did your father get rid of that man?
 He did (get rid of him).

{ *† Sbarazzarsi di qualcuno.*
Sbrogliarsi di qualcuno.
 Mi sono sbrogliato di lui.
 Il di Lei padre s' è sbrogliato di costui?
 Se n' è sbrogliato.

To wake.
To awake.
 I generally awake at six o'clock in the morning.
 My servant generally wakes me at six o'clock in the morning.
 The least noise wakes me.
 A dream has waked me.
 I do not make a noise in order not to wake him.

Svegliare 1. Risvegliare 1.
Svegliarsi 1. Risvegliarsi 1.
 Ordinariamente mi sveglio alle sei del mattino.
 Il mio servitore ordinariamente (per solito) mi sveglia alle sei del mattino.
 Il minimo strepito mi risveglia.
 Un sogno m' ha risvegliato.
 Non faccio strepito per non risvegliarlo.

A dream.
 Generally.

Un sogno.
 Per solito, ordinariamente.

To come down.
To alight from one's horse, to dismount.

Scendere 2 ; past part. sceso.*
Smontare da cavallo.

To conduct one's self.
To behave.
 I conduct myself well.
 How does he conduct himself?

*Condursi * (Lesson XXXIV.).*
Comportarsi 1.
 Mi conduco bene.
 Come si conduce?

Towards.
 He behaves ill towards that man.
 He has behaved ill towards me.

Verso, or inverso di.
 Si comporta male verso costui.
 S' è comportato male verso di me.

To be worth while.
 Is it worth while?
 It is worth while.
 It is not worth while.

{ *Valer la pena.*
Meritare il conto.
 Val la pena?
 Ciò val la pena.
 Ciò non val la pena.

Is it worth while to do that?	Val la pena di farlo?
Is it worth while to write to him?	Val la pena di scrivergli?
It is worth nothing.	{ Ciò non val niente. Non val niente.

Is it better?	È meglio?
It is better.	È meglio.
Will it be better?	Sarà meglio?
It will not be better.	Non sarà meglio.
It is better to do this than that.	È meglio far questo che quello.
It is better to stay here than go out walking.	È meglio restar qui che passeggiare.
It is better to read a good book than to go to the theatre.	È meglio legger un buon libro che andare al teatro.

EXERCISES.

161.

Have your books been found?—They have been found.—Where?—Under the bed.—Is my coat on the bed?—It is under it.—Are your brother's clothes under the bed?—They are upon it.—Have I been seen by anybody?—You have been seen by nobody.—Have you passed by anybody?—I passed by the side of you, and you did not see me.—Has anybody passed by the side of you?—Nobody has passed by the side of me.—Where has your son passed?—He has passed by the theatre.—Shall you pass by the castle?—I shall pass there.—Why have you not cleaned my trunk?—I was afraid to soil my fingers.—Has my brother's servant cleaned his master's (*il padrone*) guns?—He has cleaned them.—Has he not been afraid to soil his fingers?—He has not been afraid to soil them, because his fingers are never clean (*pulite*).—Do you use the books which I have lent you?—I use them.—May I (*posso*) use your knife?—Thou mayest use it, but thou must not (*non devi*) cut thyself.—May my brothers use your books?—They may (use them).—May we use your gun?—You may use it, but you must not spoil it (*non dovete guastarlo*).—What have you done with my coats?—I have used them to warm myself.—Has your brother used my horse?—He has (used it).—Have our neighbours used our clothes?—They have not used them, because they did not want them.—Who has used my hat?—Nobody has used it.—Have you told your brother to come down?—I did not dare to tell him.—Why have you not dared to tell him?—Because I did not wish to wake him.—Has he told you not to wake him?—He has told me not to wake him when he sleeps.

162.

Have you shaved to-day?—I have (shaved).—Has your brother shaved?—He has not shaved himself, but he got shaved.—Do you

shave often?—I shave every morning, and sometimes also in the evening.—When do you shave in the evening?—When I do not dine at home.—How many times a day does your father shave?—He shaves only once a day, but my uncle shaves twice a day.—Does your cousin shave often?—He shaves only every other day (*ogni due giorni*).—At what o'clock do you dress in the morning?—I dress as soon as I have breakfasted, and I breakfast every day at eight o'clock, or a quarter past eight.—Does your neighbour dress before he breakfasts?—He breakfasts before he dresses.—At what o'clock in the evening dost thou undress?—I undress as soon as I return from the theatre.—Dost thou go every evening to the theatre?—I do not go every evening, for it is better to study than to go to the theatre.—At what o'clock dost thou undress when thou dost not go to the theatre?—Then I undress as soon as I have supped, and go to bed at ten o'clock.—Have you already dressed the child (*il bambino*)?—I have not dressed it yet, for it is still asleep (*dorme ancora*).—At what o'clock does it get up?—It gets up as soon as it is waked.—Do you rise as early as I?—I do not know at what o'clock you rise (*si levi*, subj.), but I rise as soon as I wake.—Will you tell my servant to wake me to-morrow at four o'clock?—I will tell him.—Why have you risen so early?—My children have made such a noise (*tanto strepito*) that they awoke me.—Have you slept well?—I have not slept well, for you made too much noise.—At what o'clock did the good captain awake?—He awoke at a quarter past five in the morning.

163.

How did my child behave?—He behaved very well.—How did my brother behave towards you?—He behaved very well towards me, for he behaves well towards everybody.—Is it worth while to write to that man?—It is not worth while to write to him.—Is it worth while to dismount from my horse in order to buy a cake?—It is not worth while, for it is not long since you ate.—Is it worth while to dismount from my horse in order to give something to that poor man (*a questo povero*)?—Yes, for he seems (*pare*) to want it; but you can give him something without dismounting from your horse.—Is it better to go to the theatre than to study?—It is better to do the latter than the former.—Is it better to learn to read French than to speak it?—It is not worth while to learn to read it without learning to speak it.—Is it better to go to bed than to go out walking?—It is better to do the latter than the former.—Is it better to go to France than to Germany?—It is not worth while to go to France or to Germany when one has no wish to travel.—Did you at last get rid of that man?—I did (get rid of him).—Why has your father parted with his horses?—Because he did not want them any more.—Has your merchant succeeded at last in getting rid of his damaged sugar?—He has succeeded in getting rid of it.—Has he sold it on credit?—He was able to sell it for cash, so that he did not sell it on credit.—Who has taught you to read?—I

have learnt it with (*da*) a French master.—Has he taught you to write?—He has taught me to read and to write.—Who has taught your brother arithmetic (*l'aritmética*)?—A French master has taught it him (*insegnata*).—Do you call me?—I call you.—What do you wish (*desiderare*)?—Why do you not rise? do you not know that it is already late?—What do you want me for (*che vuol Ella*)?—I have lost all my money, and I came to beg you to lend me some.—What o'clock is it?—It is already a quarter past six, and you have slept long enough (*dormito abbastanza*).—Is it long since you rose?—It is an hour and a half since I rose.—Do you wish to take a walk with me?—I cannot go out walking, for I am waiting for my Italian master.

FIFTY-THIRD LESSON.

Lezione Cinquantesima terza.

<i>To change.</i>	<i>Cambiare, far cambio di.</i>
To change one thing for another.	Cambiare qualche cosa con qualche cosa.
	Far cambio di qualche cosa con qualche cosa.
I change my hat for his.	Faccio cambio del mio cappello col suo.
	Cambio il mio cappello col suo.
The change (exchange).	Il cambio (concambio).
<i>To change</i> (meaning <i>to put on other things</i>).	<i>Mutare</i> l.
Do you change your hat?	Muta Ella il cappello?
I do change it.	Lo muto.
He changes his boots.	Egli muta gli stivali.
They change their clothes.	Eglino mutano i vestiti.
<i>To mix.</i>	† <i>Mischarsi</i> l.
I mix among the men.	† Mi mischio fra gli uomini.
He mixes among the soldiers.	† Si mischia fra i soldati.
Among.	Fra, tra.

<i>To recognize or to acknowledge.</i>	<i>Riconoscere*</i> (is conjugated like its primitive <i>conoscere*</i> , Lessons XXVIII. & XXXIII.).
Do you recognize that man?	Riconosce Ella quest' uomo?

It is so long since I saw him,
that I do not recollect him.

È sì lungo tempo che non l' ho
visto, che non lo riconosco
più.

Obs. A. When there is a comparison between two sentences, *than* is rendered by *di quello che*, followed by *non*. Ex.

I have more bread than I shall
eat.

† Ho più pane di quello che non
potrò mangiarne.

That man has more money than
he will spend.

† Quest' uomo ha più danaro di
quello che non spenderà.

There is more wine than will be
necessary.

† Vi è più vino di quello che non
farà d' uopo (*or non sarà bi-
sogno*).

You have more money than you
will want.

† Ella ha più danaro di quello
che non gliene farà di bi-
sogno.

We have more clothes than we
want.

† Abbiamo più vestiti di quello
che non ce ne abbisognerà.

That man has fewer friends than
he imagines.

† Quest' uomo ha meno amici di
quello che non pensi (*sub-
junctive, of which hereafter*).

To fancy.

{ *Imaginare or immaginare.*
Imaginarsi, credersi.

To think.

Pensare l.

To hope, to expect.

Do you expect to find him there?
I do expect it.

Sperare l. *Aspettarsi.*

Crede Ella trovarcelo?

Lo spero.

To earn, to gain, to get.
How much have you gained?

Guadagnare l.

Quanto ha Ella guadagnato?

Has your father already started
(departed)?

È già partito il di Lei padre?

He is ready to depart.

È pronto a partire.

Ready.

Pronto (takes a before the
infinitive).

To make ready.

Preparare, allestire (*isco*).

To make one's self ready.

Prepararsi, allestirsi a.

To keep one's self ready.

Tenersi pronto a.

I am ready to set out.

{ *Mi tengo pronto a partire.*
Son pronto a partire.

To rend, to split.
To break some one's heart.
 You break that man's heart.
 Whose heart do I break ?

Squarciare l. *Spezzare* l.
Squarciare il cuore ad uno.
 A quest' uomo Ella squarcia il cuore.
 A chi squarcio il cuore ?

To spill.
 To spill ink upon the book.
To spread, extend.
To expatiate, to lay stress upon.
 That man is always expatiating upon that subject.
 The subject.
 Always.

*Spargere**; past part. *sparso.*
Spargere dell' inchiostro sul libro.
*Stendere**; past part. *steso.*
*Estendersi** *sopra.*
 Quest' uomo si estende sempre su questo soggetto.
 Il soggetto.
 Sempre.

To stretch one's self.
 To stretch one's self along the floor.
 The sofa, the bed.
 He stretches himself upon the sofa.

{ *Sdraiarsi.*
Stendersi.
Sdraiarsi (stendersi) sul pavimento.
 Il sofà, il canapè, il letto.
 Si stende (si sdraia) sul canapè.

To hang on or upon.
 The wall.
 I hang my coat on the wall.
 He hangs his hat upon the tree.
 We hang our clothes upon the nails.
 The thief has been hanged.
 The thief.
 The robber, the highwayman.

{ *Appendere** *a*; past part. *appeso.*
Appicare l.
 Il muro.
 Appendo il mio abito al muro.
 Egli appende il suo cappello all' albero.
 Appendiamo i nostri vestiti ai chiodi.
 Il ladro è stato appiccato.
 Il ladro.
 Il ladro da strada, il masnadiero.

You have always been studious, and will always be so.
 Your brother is, and will always be good.

Ella è sempre stata studiosa e lo sarà sempre.
 Il di Lei fratello è sempre savio e lo sarà sempre.

A well-educated son never gives his father any grief; he loves, honours, and respects him.	Un figlio ben educato non dà mai dolore a suo padre; l'ama, l'onora, e lo rispetta.
--	---

If I can, I will receive him willingly.	† Se potrò, lo riceverò volentieri.
---	-------------------------------------

Obs. B. The conditional conjunction *se*, if, may in Italian be followed by the future.

If you go there, we shall see each other.	Se andrà, ci vedremo.
---	-----------------------

If our affairs permit us, we shall take a short journey.	Se i nostri affari ce lo permetteranno, andremo a fare un piccolo viaggio.
--	--

Willingly.	Volentieri or volentieri.
------------	---------------------------

The affair, the occupation.	L'affare.
-----------------------------	-----------

To allow, to permit.	Permettere* (is conjugated like its primitive <i>mettere</i> *, Lessons XXIV. and XXXIII.).
----------------------	---

The voyage, the journey.	Il viaggio.
--------------------------	-------------

EXERCISES.

164.

Do you hope to receive a note to-day?—I hope to receive one.—From whom?—From a friend of mine.—What dost thou hope?—I hope to see my parents to-day, for my tutor has promised me to take me to them.—Does your friend hope to receive anything?—He hopes to receive something, for he has studied well.—Do you hope to arrive early in Paris?—We hope to arrive there at a quarter past eight, for our father is waiting for us this evening.—Do you expect to find him at home?—We expect it.—For what have you changed your coach, of which you have spoken to me?—I have changed it for a fine Arabian horse.—Do you wish to exchange your book for mine?—I cannot, for I want it to study Italian.—Why do you take off your hat?—I take it off because I see my old master coming (*vedo venire*).—Do you put on another (*mutare*) hat to go to the market?—I do not put on another to go to the market, but to go to the concert.—When will the concert take place?—It will take place the day after to-morrow.—Why do you go away? Do you not amuse yourself here?—You are mistaken, Sir, when you say that I do not amuse myself here; for I assure you that I find a great deal of pleasure in conversing (*a conversare*) with you; but I am going, because I am expected at my relation's ball.—Have you promised to go?—I have promised.—Have you changed your hat in order to go to the English captain's?—I have changed my hat, but I have not changed my coat or my boots.—How many times a day dost thou change thy clothes?—I change them to dine and to go to the theatre.

165.

Why do you mix among these men?—I mix among them in order to know what they say of me.—What will become of you if you always mix among the soldiers?—I do not know what will become of me, but I assure you that they will do me no harm, for they do not hurt anybody.—Have you recognized your father?—It was so long since I had seen him, that I did not recognize him.—Did he recognize you?—He recognized me instantly.—How long have you had this coat?—It is a long time since I have had it.—How long has your brother had that gun?—He has had it a great while.—Do you still speak French?—It is so long since I spoke it, that I have nearly forgotten it all.—How long is it since your cousin has been learning French?—It is only three months since.—Does he know as much as you?—He knows more than I, for he has been learning it longer.—Do you know why that man does not eat?—I believe he is not (*che non abbia*, subj.) hungry, for he has more bread than he can (*possa*, subj.) eat.—Have you given your son any money?—I have given him more than he will spend (*che non isponderà*).—Will you give me a glass of cider?—You need not drink cider, for there is more wine than will be necessary.—Am I to (*debbo io*) sell my gun in order to buy a new hat?—You need not sell it, for you have more money than you will want.—Do you wish to speak to the shoemaker?—I do not wish to speak to him, for we have more boots than we shall want.—Why do the French rejoice?—They rejoice because they flatter themselves they have many good friends.—Are they not right in rejoicing (*di rallegrarsi*)?—They are wrong, for they have fewer friends than they imagine (*che pensino*, subj.).

166.

Are you ready to depart with me?—I am (so).—Does your uncle depart with us?—He departs with us, if he pleases (*se vuole*).—Will you tell him to be ready (*di tenersi pronto*) to start to-morrow at six o'clock in the evening?—I will tell him so.—Is this young man ready to go out?—Not yet, but he will soon be ready.—Why have they hanged that man?—They have hanged him, because he has killed somebody.—Have they hanged the man who stole the horse from your brother?—They have punished him, but they have not hanged him; they only hang highwaymen in our country (*nel nostro paese*).—What have you done with my coat?—I have hanged (*appeso*) it on the wall.—Will you hang my hat upon the tree?—I will hang it there (*appendervelo*).—Have you not seen my gloves?—I found them under your bed, and have hanged them upon the nails.—Has the thief who stole your gun been hanged?—He has been punished, but he has not been hanged.—Why do you expatiate so much upon that subject?—Because it is necessary to speak on all subjects.—If it is necessary to listen to you, and to answer you when you expatiate upon that subject, I will hang my hat upon

the nail, stretch myself along the floor, listen to you, and answer you as well as I can (*alla meglio*).—You will do well.—Shall you go to Italy this year?—If I prosper (*se farò buoni affari*), I shall go there.—Shall you go to the captain's?—I will go, if you go.—Will you lend me a book?—If I can (*se potrò*), I will lend you one.—Will your son receive a present?—If he is (*se sarà*) good and industrious, he will receive one; but if he is idle, he will receive nothing.—Shall you go out?—If it is (*sarà*) fine weather, I shall go out; but if it rains, I shall remain at home.

FIFTY-FOURTH LESSON.

Lezione Cinquantesima quarta.

To be well.
How do you do?
I am well.

Star bene.
Come sta?
Sto bene (or simply *bene*).

Obs. A. The verbs *to be*, and *to do*, are both expressed in Italian by the verb *stare**, when they are used in English to inquire after, or to speak of a person's health.

To serve you.

Per ubbidirla.
Per servirla (an expression commonly used in Italian, in answer to an inquiry after one's health).

How is your father?

Come sta il di Lei signor padre?

Obs. B. The qualifications of *Signore*, Mr., *Signora*, Mrs., and *Signorina*, Miss, usually follow the possessive pronouns in Italian, when we speak to a person respecting his parents, relations, or friends, and we mean to pay them some respect.

He is ill.
Your father.
Your brother.
Your cousin.
Your cousins.
Your uncles.

Sta male.
† Il di Lei signor padre.
† Il di Lei signor fratello.
† Il di Lei signor cugino.
† I di Lei signori cugini.
† I di Lei signori zii.

To doubt a thing.
To question anything. }
Do you doubt that?
I doubt it.

Dubitare di qualche cosa.
Dubita Ella di ciò?
Ne dubito.

I do not doubt it.	
I make no question, have no doubt of it.	} Non ne dubito.
What do you doubt?	
I doubt what that man has told me.	Di che dubita Ella?
The doubt.	Dubito di ciò che m' ha detto quest' uomo.
Without doubt, no doubt.	Il dubbio.
There is no doubt about it.	Senza dubbio.
	Non v' ha dubbio.

To agree to a thing.

Convenire di qualche cosa*
(conjugated like its primitive *venire**: Lessons XXIV., XXXIV., and XLVI.).
Conviene Ella in ciò?
Ne convengo.

Do you agree to that?
I agree to it.

How much have you paid for that hat?	† Quanto Le ha costato questo cappello?
I have paid three crowns for it.	† Mi ha costato tre scudi.
I have bought this horse for five hundred francs.	Ho comprato questo cavallo per cinque cento franchi.
The price.	Il prezzo.
Have you agreed about the price?	Sono Elleno convenute del prezzo?
We have agreed about it.	Ne siamo convenuti.
About what have you agreed?	Di che sono Elleno convenute?
About the price.	Del prezzo.

To agree, to compose a difference. *Accordarsi.*

To feel (to perceive).

Sentire 3.

To consent.

{ *Consentire (di before Inf.).*
Acconsentire (di before Inf.).

I consent to go thither.
He consents to pay it me.
However.

Acconsento d' andarvi.
Acconsente di pagarmelo.
Pure, però.

To wear (meaning to wear garments).

Portare 1.

What garments does he wear?
He wears beautiful garments.

Che vestimenti porta egli?
Porta bei vestimenti.

The garment.

{ Il vestimento.
Plur. I vestimenti and le vestimenta.

Against my custom.
As customary.
My partner.

Contro il mio solito (costume).
Come al solito.
Il mio socio.

To observe something.
To take notice of something. }
Do you take notice of that?
I do (take notice of it).
Did you observe that?
Did you notice what he did?

*Accorgersi** 2; di qualche
cosa. Past part. *accortosi*.
Si accorge Ella di questo?
Me ne accorgo.
Si è Ella accorta di questo?
Si è Ella accorta di ciò che ha
fatto?
Me ne son accorto.

I did notice it.

To expect (to hope).

Do you expect to receive a note
from your uncle?
I expect it.
He expects it.
We expect it.
Have we expected it?
We have expected it.

† *Attendersi** 2; past part.
attesi.
S' attende Ella di ricevere un
biglietto dal di Lei zio?
Mi vi attendo.
Vi si attende. Vi s' attende.
Vi ci attendiamo.
Vi ci siamo attesi?
Vi ci siamo attesi.

To get (meaning to procure).

I cannot procure any money.

He cannot procure anything to
eat.

† *Procurarsi*.
Non posso procurarmi danaro.
Non posso procurarmi del
danaro.
Non può procurarsi di che
mangiare.

*To make fun of some one, to
laugh at some one.*
To laugh at something.

He laughs at everybody.
He criticizes everybody.
Do you laugh at that man?
I do not laugh at him.

† *Beffarsi* (1) di qualcuno.

*Ridersi** (2) di qualche
cosa, past part. *risosi*.

Ei si beffa di tutti.
Si beffa Ella di quell' uomo?
Non me ne beffo.

To stop, to stay.

Have you stayed long at Berlin?

I stayed there only three days.

Fermarsi 1.

La si è fermato molto tempo a
Berlino?
È rimasta Ella lungo tempo
a Berlino?
Non mi vi son fermato che tre
giorni.

<i>To sojourn, to stay.</i>	<i>Soggiornare</i> 1. <i>Stare</i> *.
Where does your brother stay at present?	Ove soggiorna attualmente il di Lei signor fratello?
<i>At present, actually.</i>	<i>Attualmente.</i>
He stays at Florence.	Soggiorna a Firenze.
The residence, stay, abode.	Il soggiorno.
Paris is a fine place to live in.	† Parigi è un bel soggiorno.

After reading.	† Dopo aver letto.
After cutting myself.	† Dopo essermi tagliato.
<i>Obs. C.</i> See Lesson XL.	
After dressing yourself.	† Dopo essersi vestita.
After dressing himself.	† Dopo essersi vestito.
After shaving ourselves.	† Dopo esserci sbarbati.
After warming themselves.	† Dopo essersi scaldati (riscaldati).
I returned the book after reading it.	† Ho restituito il libro dopo averlo letto.
I threw the knife away after cutting myself.	† Ho gettato il coltello dopo essermi tagliato.
You went to the concert after dressing yourself.	† Ella è andata al concerto dopo essersi vestita.
He went to the theatre after dressing himself.	† Egli è andato a teatro ¹ dopo essersi vestito.
We breakfasted after shaving ourselves.	† Abbiamo fatto colazione dopo esserci sbarbati.
They went out after warming themselves.	† Sono usciti dopo essersi scaldati.
<i>To return (to restore).</i>	<i>Restituire</i> 3.

The sick person (the patient).	Il malato.
Tolerably well.	Mediocremente (abbastanza bene).
It is rather late.	E molto tardi.
It is rather far.	E molto lontano.

EXERCISES.

167.

How is your father (*il di Lei signor padre*)?—He is (only) so-so (*così così*).—How is your patient?—He is a little better to-day than yesterday (*d' ieri*).—Is it long since you saw your brothers (*i*

¹ There is a difference between *andare al teatro*, and *andare a teatro*. The former determines the theatre we are going to, whilst the latter implies to go to the play merely. Ex. *Vado al teatro reale*, I am going to the royal theatre.

di Lei signori fratelli)?—I saw them two days ago.—How art thou?—I am tolerably well (*abbastanza bene*).—How long has your cousin been learning French?—He has been learning it only these three months.—Does he already speak it?—He already speaks, reads, and writes it better than your brother, who has been learning it these two years.—Is it long since you heard of my uncle?—It is hardly a fortnight (*quindici giorni*) since I heard of him.—Where is he staying now?—He is staying at Berlin, but my father is in London.—Did you stay long at Vienna?—I stayed there a fortnight.—How long did your cousin stay at Paris?—He stayed there only a month.—Do you like to speak to my uncle?—I like much to speak to him, but I do not like him to laugh (*che si beffi*, subj.) at me.—Why does he laugh at you?—He laughs at me, because I speak badly.—Why has your brother no friends?—He has none, because he criticizes everybody.—Why are you laughing at that man?—I do not intend (*non ho intenzione*) to laugh at him.—I beg (*pregare*) you not to do it, for you will break his heart if you laugh at him.—Do you doubt what I am telling you?—I do not doubt it.—Do you doubt what that man has told you?—I doubt it, for he has often told stories (*mentire*).—Have you at last bought the horse which you wished (*che voleva*) to buy last month?—I have not bought it, for I have not been able to procure money.

168.

Has your uncle at last bought the garden?—He has not bought it, for he could not agree about the price (*nel prezzo*).—Have you at last agreed about the price of that picture?—We have agreed about it.—How much have you paid for it?—I have paid fifteen hundred (*mille cinque cento*) francs for it.—What hast thou bought to-day?—I have bought two fine horses, three beautiful pictures, and a fine gun.—For how much hast thou bought the pictures?—I have bought them for seven hundred francs.—Do you find them dear?—I do not find them dear.—Have you agreed with your partner?—I have agreed with him (*con lui*).—Does he consent to pay you the price of the ship?—He consents to pay it me.—Do you consent to go to France?—I consent to go there.—Have you seen your old friend again (*rivedere**)?—I have (seen him again).—Did you recognize him?—I could hardly (*non l'ho quasi più*) recognize him, for, contrary to his custom, he wears a large hat.—How is he?—He is very well.—What garments does he wear?—He wears beautiful new garments.—Have you taken notice of what your boy has done?—I have taken notice of it.—Have you punished him for it?—I have punished him for it.—Has your father already written to you?—Not yet; but I expect to receive (*mi attendo*) a note from him to-day.—Of what do you complain?—I complain of not being able to procure some money.—Why do these poor men complain?—They complain because they cannot procure anything to eat.—How are your parents?—They are as usual (*come al solito*) very well.—Is your uncle well?—He is better than he usually is (*del solito*).—

Have you already heard of your friend who is in Germany?—I have already written to him several times (*parecchie volte*); however (*ma*), he has not answered me yet.

169.

What have you done with the books which the English captain has lent you?—I have returned them to him, after reading them.—Have you thrown away your knife?—I have thrown it away, after cutting myself.—When did I go to the concert?—You went (thither) after dressing yourself.—When did your brother go to the ball?—He went (thither) after dressing himself.—When did you breakfast?—We breakfasted after shaving ourselves.—When did our neighbours go out?—They went out after warming themselves.—Why have you punished your boy?—I have punished him because he has broken my finest glass. I gave him some wine, and, instead of drinking it, he spilt it on the new carpet, and broke (*e ha rotto*) the glass.—What did you do this morning?—I shaved after rising, and went out after breakfasting.—What did your father do last night (*ieri sera*)?—He supped after going to the play, and went to bed after supping.—Did he rise early?—He rose at sunrise. (See end of Lesson XXIV.)

FIFTY-FIFTH LESSON.

Lezione Cinquantesima quinta.

FEMININE SUBSTANTIVES AND ADJECTIVES.

DECLENSION OF THE ARTICLE FEMININE.

		<i>Nom.</i>	<i>Gen.</i>	<i>Dat.</i>	<i>Acc.</i>	<i>Abl.</i>
The	<i>Singular</i>	La,	della,	alla,	la,	dalla.
	<i>Plural</i>	Le,	delle,	alle,	le,	dalle.

EXAMPLE.

		<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
The house	„ the houses.	<i>Nom.</i> La casa	„ Le case.
Of the house	„ of the houses.	<i>Gen.</i> Della casa	„ Delle case.
To the house	„ to the houses.	<i>Dat.</i> Alla casa	„ Alle case.
The house	„ the houses.	<i>Acc.</i> La casa	„ Le case.
From the house	„ from the houses.	<i>Abl.</i> Dalla casa	„ Dalle case.

The contraction of the feminine article with certain prepositions is as follows (see Lesson XLIV.):

<i>Singular.</i>		<i>Plural.</i>
<i>Della</i> , of the,	for <i>di la</i> .	<i>Delle</i> , for <i>di le</i> .
<i>Alla</i> , to the,	— <i>a la</i> .	<i>Alle</i> , — <i>a le</i> .
<i>Dalla</i> , from the,	— <i>da la</i> .	<i>Dalle</i> , — <i>da le</i> .
<i>Nella</i> , in the,	— <i>in la</i> .	<i>Nelle</i> , — <i>in le</i> .
<i>Colla</i> , with the,	— <i>con la</i> .	<i>Colle</i> , — <i>con le</i> .
<i>Pella</i> , for the,	— <i>per la</i> .	<i>Pelle</i> , — <i>per le</i> .
<i>Sulla</i> , upon the,	— <i>su la</i> .	<i>Sulle</i> , — <i>su le</i> .

Obs. A. When the definite article stands before a vowel, it is in the singular alike for both genders, and in the plural the feminine article does not vary, as :

	<i>Nom.</i>	<i>Gen.</i>	<i>Dat.</i>	<i>Acc.</i>	<i>Abl.</i>
The { <i>Singular</i>	<i>L'</i> ,	<i>dell'</i> ,	<i>all'</i> ,	<i>l'</i> ,	<i>dall'</i> .
{ <i>Plural</i>	<i>Le</i> ,	<i>delle</i> ,	<i>alle</i> ,	<i>le</i> ,	<i>dalle</i> .

Obs. B. The plural of the article *la* is never abridged, except, however, when the noun begins with an *e*, as :

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
The eloquence.	<i>L' eloquenza</i> ,	<i>l' eloquenze</i> .
The eminence.	<i>L' eminenza</i> ,	<i>l' eminenze</i> .
The execution.	<i>L' esecuzione</i> ,	<i>l' esecuzioni</i> .
Of the eminences, of the executions.	<i>Dell' eminenze</i> ,	<i>dell' esecuzioni</i> .

Obs. C. When, however, the noun beginning with *e* has in the plural the same termination as in the singular, the article cannot be abridged. Ex.

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
The image.	<i>L' effigie</i> ,	<i>Le effigie</i> .
The emphasis.	<i>L' enfasi</i> ,	<i>Le enfasi</i> .
Ecstasy.	<i>L' estasi</i> ,	<i>Le estasi</i> .
The age.	<i>L' età</i> ,	<i>Le età</i> .
The extremity.	<i>L' estremità</i> ,	<i>Le estremità</i> .

RULE 1.—Nouns and adjectives ending in *a* are feminine,¹ and form their plural by changing *a* into *e*. Ex.

¹ From this rule must be excepted some nouns of dignity and of professions belonging to men, and some nouns derived from the Greek, such as :

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Il papa</i> ,	the pope,	<i>i papi</i> .
<i>Il clima</i> ,	the climate,	<i>i climi</i> .
<i>Il diadema</i> ,	the diadem,	<i>i diademi</i> .
<i>Il diploma</i> ,	the diploma,	<i>i diplomi</i> .
<i>Il dogma (or domma)</i> ,	the doctrine,	<i>i dogmi (or dommi)</i> .
<i>Il dramma</i> ,	the drama,	<i>i drammi</i> .
<i>L' enigma (or enimma)</i> ,	the enigma,	<i>gli enigmi (or animmi)</i> .
<i>L' idioma</i> ,	the idiom,	<i>gl' idiomi</i> .
<i>Il poema</i> ,	the poem,	<i>i poemi</i> .
<i>Il tema</i> ,	the exercise,	<i>i temi, &c.</i>

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
The woman—women.	La donna,	le donne.
The table.	La tavola,	le tavole.
The shoe.	La scarpa,	le scarpe.
The stocking.	La calza,	le calze.
The pencil.	La matita,	le matite.
The stone.	La pietra,	le pietre.
The brush.	La spazzola,	le spazzole.
The broom.	La scopa,	le scope.
The pistol.	La pistola,	le pistole.
The daughter.	La figlia,	le figlie.
The sister.	La sorella,	le sorelle.
The candle.	La candela,	le candele.
The bottle.	La bottiglia,	le bottiglie.
The shirt.	La camicia,	le camicie.
The amiable woman.	La donna amabile,	le donne amabili.
The straight stocking.	La calza stretta,	le calze strette.
The barbarous law.	La legge barbara,	le leggi barbare.
The soul.	L' anima,	le anime.
The island.	L' isola,	le isole.
The shade.	L' ombra,	le ombre.

RULE 2.—All nouns and adjectives, masculine and feminine, terminated in *e* form their plural in *i*. Ex.

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
The mother.	La madre,	le madri.
The key.	La chiave,	le chiavi.
The invention.	L' invenzione,	le invenzioni.
The nut.	La noce,	le noci.

RULE 3.—Nouns ending in *i*, *ie*, an accented vowel, and monosyllables, have in the plural the same termination as in the singular. Ex.

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
The metropolis.	La metropoli,	le metropoli.
The crisis.	La crisi,	le crisi.
The foot—feet.	Il piè (or piede),	i piè (or piedi).
The king.	Il rè,	i rè.
The crane (a bird).	La gru,	le gru.
The town.	La città,	le città.
Virtue.	La virtù,	le virtù.
Order—series.	La serie,	le serie.
Sort—species.	La specie,	le specie.

Obs. D. La moglie, the wife, is in the plural le mogli, wives.

RULE 4.—Nouns and adjectives, masculine and feminine, terminated in *ca, ga, co* or *go*, generally take an *h* in the plural, to keep the hard sound. *Ex.*

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
The sleeve.	La manica,	le maniche.
The witch.	La strega,	le streghe.
The monarch.	Il monarca,	i monarchi.
The wood <i>or</i> forest.	Il bosco,	i boschi.
The lake.	Il lago,	i laghi.
The inn.	L' albergo,	gli alberghi.
The refreshment.	Il rinfresco,	i rinfreschi.
Rich.	Ricco,	ricchi.
Ancient.	Antico,	antichi.
The parish-priest.	Il parroco,	i parrochi.
The obligation.	L' obbligo,	gli obblighi.
The punishment.	Il castigo,	i castighi.

Obs. E. All feminine nouns terminated in *ca* and *ga* take, without exception, an *h* in the plural. *Ex.*

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
The female friend.	L' amica,	le amiche.
The league.	La lega,	le leghe, &c.

The following masculine nouns are a few of the exceptions to the above rule:—

The physician.	Il medico,	i medici.
The friend.	L' amico,	gli amici.
The monk.	Il monaco,	i monaci.
The hog.	Il porco,	i porci.
The Greek.	Il Greco,	i Greci.
Asparagus.	L' asparago,	gli asparagi.

RULE 5.—Some masculine nouns form their plural in *a*, and become feminine; others have a masculine plural in *i*, and a feminine plural in *a*, of which the latter is most in use.

a) The following masculine nouns always form their plural in *a*:—

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
A thousand.	Un migliaio,	le migliaia.
A hundred.	Un centinaio,	le centinaia.
An egg.	Un uovo,	le uova.
A mile.	Un miglio,	le miglia.
A pair.	Un paio,	le paia.
A bushel.	Uno staio,	le staia.
A sort of measure.	Un moggio,	le moggia.

b) The following have a masculine and a feminine plural, but the latter is used in preference:—

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
The ring.	L' anello,	le anella.
The arm.	Il braccio,	le braccia.
The gut.	Il budello,	le budella.
The heel.	Il calcagno,	le calcagna.
The castle.	Il castello,	le castella.
The eye-brow.	Il ciglio,	le ciglia.
The horn.	Il corno,	le corna.
The finger.	Il dito,	le dita.
The thread.	Il filo,	le fila.
The basis.	Il fondamento,	le fondamenta.
The fruit. ²	Il frutto,	le frutta.
The spindle.	Il fuso,	le fusa.
The action. ³	Il gesto,	le gesta.
The knee.	Il ginocchio,	le ginocchia.
The elbow. ⁴	Il gomito,	le gomita.
The cry.	Il grido,	le grida.
The lip.	Il labbro,	le labbra.
The wood. ⁵	Il legno,	le legna.
The sheet.	Il lenzuolo,	le lenzuola.
The limb. ⁶	Il membro,	le membra.
The wall. ⁷	Il muro,	le mura.
The bone.	L' osso,	le ossa.
The apple.	Il pomo,	le poma.
The arrow.	Il quadrello,	le quadrella.
The laughter.	Il riso,	le risa.
The sack.	Il sacco,	le sacca.
The shriek.	Lo strido,	le strida.

CONTINUATION OF THE FIFTY-FIFTH LESSON.

Continuazione della Lezione Cinquantesima quinta.

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>She—they.</i>	<i>Ella</i> —	<i>elle</i> or <i>elleno</i> .
	<i>Essa</i> —	<i>esse</i> .
	<i>Dessa</i> —	<i>desse</i> (See Table of the Personal Pronouns, Lesson XX.).

² *Il frutto* is employed for fruit in general, but *la frutta* and *le frutta*, for dessert-fruit only.

³ *Il gesto* means also gesture, and then its plural is *gesti*.

⁴ *Il gomito* is also a measure, and its plural is then *i gomiti*.

⁵ *Il legno* means wood for timber, or anything else: but wood for fuel is *la legna* and *le legna*.

⁶ *Membro*, a member of an assembly, is in the plural *i membri*.

⁷ *Muro*, a rampart, is in the plural *i muri*.

Obs. A. In the plural, *elleno*, *esse*, and *desse*, are more frequently used than *elle*.

Has she?	Ha dessa?
She has.	Essa ha.
She has not.	Essa non ha.

Have they (<i>feminine</i>)?	Hanno desse?
They have.	Esse hanno.
They have not.	Esse non hanno.

	<i>Nom.</i>	<i>Gen.</i>	<i>Dat.</i>	<i>Acc.</i>	<i>Abbl.</i>
My, mine. <i>Fem. Sing.</i>	La mia,	della mia,	alla mia,	la mia,	dalla mia.
Thy, thine.	La tua,	della tua,	alla tua,	la tua,	dalla tua.
Her, hers.	La sua,	della sua,	alla sua,	la sua,	dalla sua.
My, mine. <i>Fem. Plur.</i>	Le mie,	delle mie,	alle mie,	le mie,	dalle mie.

The father and <i>his</i> son, or <i>his</i> daughter.	Il padre e <i>suo</i> figlio, o <i>sua</i> figlia.
The mother and <i>her</i> son, or <i>her</i> daughter.	La madre e <i>suo</i> figlio, o <i>sua</i> figlia.
The child and <i>its</i> brother, or <i>its</i> sister.	Il fanciullo e <i>suo</i> fratello, o <i>sua</i> sorella.

Obs. B. See Rule, Lesson IV., about the possessive pronoun taking no article in the singular, when it is immediately followed by a name of quality or kindred.

RULE 1.—The English possessive adjectives or pronouns are in the gender of the possessor; in Italian and French they must be in the gender of the thing possessed. My, thy, his, her, its, must be expressed by *il mio*, *il tuo*, *il suo*, when the thing possessed is masculine, and by *la mia*, *la tua*, *la sua*, when it is feminine, without considering in the least the gender of the possessor, as may be seen from the above examples.

		<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
My pen,	my pens.	La mia penna,	le mie penne.
Thy letter,	thy letters.	La tua lettera,	le tue lettere.
His or her fork,	his or her forks.	La sua forchetta,	le sue forchette.
Our nut,	our nuts.	La nostra noce,	le nostre noci.
Your mouth,	your mouths.	La vostra bocca,	le vostre bocche.
Their door,	their doors.	{ La loro porta,	le loro porte.
Their hand,	their hands.	{ Il loro uscio,	i loro usci.
		La loro <i>mano</i> ,	le loro <i>mani</i> .

RULE 2.—All nouns terminated in *o* are masculine, except *la mano*, the hand. As for the poetical words *imago* and *Cartago*, they are abridged from *imagine*, image, *Cartagine*, Carthage, and are of course feminine.

		<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
The pretty woman,	the pretty women.	La vezzosa donna,	le vezzose donne.
The small candle,	the small candles.	La piccola candela,	le piccole candele.
		La candeletta,	le candelette.
The large bottle,	the large bottles.	La gran bottiglia,	le grandi bottiglie.
Which woman? which women?		Che donna?	che donne?
Which daughter? which daughters?		Che figlia?	che figlie?

This or that woman, these or those women.	Questa donna, queste donne.
---	-----------------------------

This young lady, these young ladies.	Questa signorina, queste signorine.
That young lady, those young ladies.	Quella signorina, quelle signorine.

The right hand.	La mano destra (dritta or diritta).
The left hand.	La mano manca (mancina).
I have a sore hand.	Ho male alla mano.
My hand hurts me.	} Mi sento male alla mano.
My hand aches.	
The tooth, the teeth.	Il dente, i denti.
Have you the tooth-ache?	{ Ha Ella mal di denti?
	{ Le dolgono i denti?
	{ † Ho male al capo. Mi duole la testa.
I have the head-ache.	{ † Mi fa male il capo. Mi fa male la testa.
I feel a pain in my side.	Ho male a un lato.
His feet are sore.	Egli ha male ai piedi.
His feet ache.	Si sente male ai piedi.

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
The face.	La faccia, il viso,	le facce, i visi,
	il volto,	i volti.
The cheek.	La guancia,	le guance. ^s

^s Feminine words, ending in *cia*, *gia*, *scia*, reject in the plural the letter *i*, as: *la guancia*, plur. *le guance*; *la spiaggia*, the coast: plur. *le spiagge*; *la coscia*, the thigh: plur. *le cosce*. Except, however, where *i* has the accent. Ex. *la bugia*, the lie: plur. *le bugie*.

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
The tongue, the language.	La lingua,	le lingue.
The window.	La finestra,	le finestre.
The street.	La contrada,	le contrade.
The town.	La città,	le città.
The linen.	La tela,	le tele.
The old woman, the little old woman.	La vecchia donna,	le vecchie donne.
	La vecchietta (vecchierella),	le vecchiette (vecchierelle).

Obs. C. From what precedes, it may be seen that Italian adjectives terminate either in *o* or *e*. The adjectives in *o*, which form their masculine plural in *i*, are made feminine by changing their termination into *a* for the singular, and into *e* for the plural. Those terminated in *e* are of both genders, and form their plural by changing *e* into *i*. Ex.

An industrious boy.	Un ragazzo attivo.
Industrious boys.	Dei ragazzi attivi.
An industrious young woman.	Una ragazza attiva.
Industrious young women.	Delle ragazze attive.
An amiable man.	Un uomo amabile.
Amiable men.	Degli uomini amabili.
An amiable woman.	Una donna amabile.
Amiable women.	Delle donne amabili.

The room.	La stanza, la camera.
The front room.	† La camera verso strada.
The back room.	† La camera sopra la corte.
The upper room.	† La camera in alto (la camera al piano superiore).

Obs. D. Adjectives terminated in *ore*, which are generally also substantives, change, for the feminine, *ore* into *trice*.

	<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
Traitorous.	Traditore,	traditrice.
Enchanting.	Incantatore,	incantatrice.
Deceitful.	Ingannatore,	ingannatrice.
Avenger.	Vendicatore,	vendicatrice.

PARTITIVE ARTICLE FEMININE.

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Some.	<i>Nom.</i> Della, dell'.	Delle.
Of some.	<i>Gen.</i> Di.	Di.
To some.	<i>Dat.</i> A della, a dell'.	A delle.
Some.	<i>Acc.</i> Della, dell'.	Delle.

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Some silk.	Della seta,	delle sete.
Some meat.	Della carne,	delle carni.
Some good soup.	Della buona zuppa.	delle buone zuppe.

Bring lights.	Portate dei lumi.
Strike a light.	Fatemi lume.

INDEFINITE ARTICLE FEMININE.

A, one.	{ <i>Nom.</i> } Una. <i>Gen.</i> D' una.
	{ <i>Acc.</i> }
	{ <i>Dat.</i> } Ad una. <i>Abbl.</i> Da una.

A virtuous woman.	Una donna virtuosa.
An active young woman.	Una ragazza attiva.
A happy young lady.	Una signorina felice.
A new gown.	Una gonna (veste) nuova.
An ingenious proposal.	Una proposizione ingegnosa.
A dumb woman.	Una donna muta.
A good truth.	Una buona verità.
A cruel certainty.	Una crudele certezza.
Such a promise.	Una simile promessa.
An old acquaintance.	Un' antica conoscenza.

Have you my pen?	Ha Ella la mia penna?
No, Madam, I have it not.	No, Signora, non l' ho.
Which bottles have you broken?	Che (quali) bottiglie ha Ella rotte?
Which door have you opened?	Che (qual) porta ha Ella aperta?
Which water have you drunk?	Che (quale) acqua ha Ella bevuto or bevuta?

Obs. E. With the auxiliary *avere* the past participle may or may not agree with the noun in gender and number, but it must always agree when the auxiliary *essere* is employed.

Which letters have you written?	Che (or quali) lettere ha Ella scritte (or scritto)?
Which windows have you opened?	Che (quali) finestre ha Ella aperte?
Which young ladies have you conducted to the ball?	Che (quali) signorine ha Ella condotte al ballo?

These.	Queste or queste qui.
Those.	Quelle or quelle là.

Have you this pen or that?
I have neither this nor that.

Ha Ella questa penna, o quella?
Non ho nè questa nè quella.

It or her—them.
Do you see that woman?
I see her.
Have you seen my sisters?
No, (Miss N.), I have not seen them.

La—le.
Vede Ella quella donna?
La vedo.
Ha Ella vedute le mie sorelle?
No, Signorina, non le ho vedute.

To her—to them.
Do you speak to my sisters?
I speak to them.
Some coarse linen.
Some good water.
A napkin, a towel.

Le—loro.
Parla Ella alle mie sorelle?
Parlo loro.
Della grossa tela.
Della buon' acqua.
Una salvietta (un tovagliolo).

Some beautiful linen shirts.
Some fine silk stockings.
The Christian.
The Jew.
The negro.

A companion.

A friend.
To celebrate, to feast.
Do you wish to go to Spain?
Have you paper to write a letter?

Delle belle camicie⁹ di tela.
Delle belle calze di seta.
Il Cristiano, *Fem.* la Cristiana.
L' Ebreo, „ l' Ebreo.
Il nero, il „ la nera, la negro, negra.
Un com- „ una compagno, pagna.
Un amico, „ un amico.
Celebrare l. Festeggiare l.
Vuol Ella andar in Ispagna?
Ha Ella della carta per iscrivere una lettera?

Obs. F. Of two words, the first of which ends in *n* or *r*, and the second begins with *s*, followed by a consonant, the letter *i* is prefixed to the second.

I have some to write one.
Who does not study does not learn.
What have you found in the street?
A book to study Italian.

Ne ho per iscrivere una.
Chi non istudia non impara.
Che ha Ella trovato per istrada?
Un libro per istudiare l' italiano.

⁹ In *camicia* the letter *i* is not suppressed in the plural, to prevent mistaking it for *camice*, a priest's garment. (See note ⁸, p. 259.)

EXERCISES.

170.

How are your brothers?—They have been very well for these few days.—Where do they reside?—They reside in Paris.—Which day of the week do the Turks celebrate?—They celebrate Friday (*il venerdì*), but the Christians celebrate Sunday (*la domenica*), the Jews Saturday, and the Negroes their birthday (*il giorno della loro nascita*).—“Amongst you, country people, (*Fra voi altre genti della campagna*), there are many fools, are there not (*non è vero*)?” asked (*domandò*) a philosopher lately (*l'altro giorno*) of a peasant (*ad un contadino*).—The latter answered (*rispose*): “Sir, they are to be found (*se ne trovano*) in all stations (*gli stati*).”—“Fools sometimes tell the truth (*la verità*),” said (*disse*) the philosopher.—Has your sister my gold ribbon?—She has it not.—What has she?—She has nothing.—Has your mother anything?—She has a fine gold fork.—Who has my large bottle?—Your sister has it.—Do you sometimes see my mother?—I see her often.—When did you see your sister?—I saw her a fortnight ago.—Who has my fine nuts?—Your good sister has them.—Has she also my silver forks?—She has them not.—Who has them?—Your mother has them.—What fork have you?—I have my iron fork.—Have your sisters had my pens?—They have not had them, but I believe that their children have (*abbiano*, subj.) had them.—Why does your brother complain?—He complains because his right hand aches.—Why do you complain?—I complain because my left hand aches.

171.

Is your sister as old (*così attempata*) as my mother?—She is not so old, but she is taller.—Has your brother purchased anything (*fare delle compre*)?—He has purchased something (*ne ha fatto*).—What has he bought?—He has bought fine linen and good pens.—Has he not bought some silk stockings?—He has bought some.—Is your sister writing?—No, Madam, she is not writing (*non iscrive*).—Why does she not write?—Because she has a sore hand.—Why does not the daughter of your neighbour go out?—She does not go out, because she has sore feet.—Why does not my sister speak?—Because she has a sore mouth.—Hast thou not seen my silver pen?—I have not seen it.—Hast thou a front room?—I have one behind, but my brother has one in the front.—Is it an upper room?—It is (one) (*n'è una*).—Does the wife of our shoemaker go out already?—No, Madam (*Signora no*), she does not go out yet, for she is still very ill (*essendo essa ancor molto ammalata*).—Which bottle has your little sister broken?—She broke the one (*quella*) which my mother bought yesterday.—Have you eaten of my soup, or of my mother's?—I have eaten neither of yours nor your mother's (*nè di quella di sua madre*), but of that of my good

sister.—Have you seen the woman who was with me this morning?—I have not seen her.—Has your mother hurt herself?—She has not hurt herself.—Have you paper to write a letter?—I have some, but to whom must I write?—You must write to your mother's friend.—What has your sister to do?—She has to write to her friend.—Why does she not write to her?—Because she has no pen to write to her.—Can she not write with her pencil?—She can write with it (*con quello*), but does not wish to do so (*non vuole*).

172.

Have you a sore nose?—I have not a sore nose, but I have the tooth-ache.—Have you cut your finger?—No, Madam, I have cut my hand.—Will you give me a pen?—I will (give you one).—Will you have this or that?—I will have neither.—Which (*quale*) do you wish to have?—I wish to have that which your sister has.—Do you wish to have my mother's good black silk (*la buona seta nera*), or my sister's?—I wish to have neither your mother's nor your sister's, but that which you have.—Can you write with this pen?—I can (write with it).—Each woman (*ogni donna*) thinks herself amiable, and each (*ciascuna*) is conceited (*ha dell' amor proprio*).—The same as (*del pari che*) men, my dear friend. Many a one (*tal*) thinks himself (*si crede*) learned who is not so (*non lo è*), and many men surpass women in vanity.—What is the matter with you?—Nothing is the matter with me.—Why does your sister complain?—Because she has a pain in her cheek.—Has your brother a sore hand?—No, but he feels a pain in his side.—Do you open the window?—I open it, because it is too warm.—Which windows has your sister opened?—She has opened those of the front room.—Have you been at the ball of my old acquaintance?—I have been there.—Which young ladies did you take to the ball?—I took my sister's friends there.—Did they dance?—They danced a good deal.—Did they amuse themselves?—They amused themselves.—Did they remain long at the ball?—They remained there two hours.—Is this young lady a Turk?—No, she is a Greek.—Does she speak French?—She speaks it.—Does she not speak English?—She speaks it, but she speaks French better.—Has your sister a companion?—She has one.—Does she like her?—She likes her very much, for she is very amiable.

FIFTY-SIXTH LESSON.

Lezione Cinquantesima sesta.

To go to the country.	Andare in <i>or</i> alla campagna.
To be in the country.	Essere in — alla campagna.
To go to church.	Andare in — alla chiesa.
To be at church.	Essere in chiesa.
To go to school.	Andare in iscuola <i>or</i> alla scuola.
To be at school.	Essere in iscuola.
To go to the Italian school.	Andare alla scuola d'italiano.
To be at the Italian school.	Essere nella <i>or</i> alla scuola d'italiano.
To go to the dancing school.	Andare alla scuola di ballo.
To be at the dancing school.	Essere nella scuola di ballo.
To <i>or</i> at the bank.	Alla banca.
To <i>or</i> at the exchange.	Alla borsa.
To <i>or</i> in the kitchen.	In cucina.
To <i>or</i> in the cellar.	In cantina.
The play (the comedy).	La commedia.
The opera.	L' opera.
The river.	Il fiume.
The hunt.	La caccia.
The fishing.	La pesca.
To go out hunting.	Andar a (<i>or</i> alla) caccia.
To be out hunting.	Esser a (<i>or</i> alla) caccia.
To go out fishing.	Andar a (<i>or</i> alla) pesca.
To be out fishing.	Esser a (<i>or</i> alla) pesca. ¹
To hunt.	Cacciare l.
To fish.	Pescare l.
<hr/>	
The whole day, all the day.	Tutto il giorno (tutta la giornata).
The whole morning.	Tutto il mattino (tutta la mattina).
The whole evening.	Tutta la sera.
The whole night, all the night.	Tutta la notte (tutta notte).

¹ When the hunting is determined, the article must be made use of. Ex. *Andar o esser alla caccia del cervo*, to go or be out stag-hunting; *andar o essere alla pesca delle perle, del corallo*, to go or be pearl or coral-fishing.

The whole year.	Tutto l' anno.
The whole week.	Tutta la settimana.
The whole society.	Tutta la società.
All at once.	{ Tutto ad un tratto.
Suddenly, all of a sudden.	{ Tutto in una volta.
	Repentinamente (repente).

This week.	Questa settimana.
This year.	Quest' anno.
Last week.	La settimana scorsa (passata).
Next week.	La settimana ventura (prossima).
Every woman.	Tutte le donne, ogni donna.
Every time.	Tutte le volte, ogni volta.
Every week.	Tutte le settimane, ogni settimana.

Your mother.	La di Lei signora madre.
Your sister.	La di Lei signora sorella.
Your sisters.	Le di Lei signore sorelle.
A person.	Una persona.
A word.	Una parola.

The ear-ache.	Il male agli orecchi.
The nausea.	La nausea.
The belly-ache.	Il mal di ventre.
The stomach-ache.	Il mal di stomaco.

She has the stomach-ache.	† Ella ha un dolore allo stomaco.
His sister has a violent head-ache.	† Sua sorella ha un mal di testa violento.
I have the stomach-ache.	† Ho male di stomaco.

Our <i>or</i> ours, your <i>or</i> yours, } (fem. sing.) { La nostra, la vostra, la loro.
their <i>or</i> theirs, } (fem. plur.) { Le tue, le sue.
Thy <i>or</i> thine, his, her <i>or</i> hers, its, } " " { Le nostre, le vostre, le loro.
Our <i>or</i> ours, your <i>or</i> yours, } " " { Le nostre, le vostre, le loro.
their <i>or</i> theirs, } " " { Le nostre, le vostre, le loro.

Have you my pen or hers?	Ha Ella la mia penna, o la sua?
I have hers.	Ho la sua.
What do you wish to send to your aunt?	Che vuol Ella mandare alla di Lei zia?
I wish to send her a tart.	Voglio mandarle una torta.

Will you send her some fruit also?	Vuol mandarle anche delle frutta?
I will send her some.	Voglio mandargliene (inviar-gliene).
Have you sent the books to my sisters?	Ha Ella inviato i libri alle mie sorelle?
I have sent them to them.	Li ho inviati loro.

The ache.	Il dolore.
The tart.	La torta.
The peach.	La pesca.
The strawberry.	La fragola.
The cherry.	La ciliegia.
The newspaper.	Il giornale.
The gazette.	La gazzetta.
The merchandize. }	La mercanzia.
The goods. }	
The maid-servant.	La cameriera.

Obs. A. Some substantives have the same termination for both genders, and are only distinguished by the article, such as :

The husband.	Il consorte.
The wife.	La consorte.
The heir.	L' erede.
The heiress.	L' erede.
The nephew.	Il nipote.
The niece.	La nipote.
The relation.	Il parente.
The female relation.	La parente, &c.

Obs. B. Others change their masculine ending in *o* into *a*, such as :

		<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>
The uncle,	the aunt.	Lo zio,	la zia.
The cousin.		Il cugino,	la cugina.
The brother-in-law,	the sister-in-law.	Il cognato,	la cognata.
The cook,	the female cook.	Il cuoco,	la cuoca.
The neighbour,	the female neighbour.	Il vicino,	la vicina.
The lad,	the lass.	Il giovinetto,	la giovinetta.
The heathen.		Il pagano,	la pagana.
A peasant,	a country-woman.	{ Uncontadino,	una contadina.
		{ Un paesano,	una paesana, &c.

Obs. C. Substantives (the same as adjectives, preceding Lesson) terminated in *tore*, are generally made feminine by changing *tore* into *trice*. Ex.

The accuser.
 The actor.
 The ambassador.
 The benefactor.
 The hunter.
 The elector.
 The emperor.
 The founder.
 The protector.
 The painter.
 The author.
 The victor.
 The conqueror.

<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>
L' accusatore,	l' accusatrice.
L' attore,	l' attrice.
L' ambasciatore,	l' ambasciatrice.
Il benefattore,	la benefattrice.
Il cacciatore,	la cacciatrice.
L' elettore,	l' elettrici.
L' imperatore,	l' imperatrice.
Il fondatore,	la fondatrice.
Il protettore,	la protettrice.
Il pittore,	la pittrice.
L' autore,	l' autrice.
Il vincitore,	la vincitrice.
Il conquistatore,	la conquistatrice, &c.

Obs. D. Some have a distinct form for individuals of the female sex, such as :

The abbot.

The baron.
 The shepherd.
 The canon.
 The singer.
 The count.
 God.
 The god.
 The duke.
 The lion.

The marquis.

The prince.
 The peacock.
 The prior.
 The king.
 The poet.
 The philosopher.
 The merchant.
 The landlord.
 The cock.
 The elephant.
 The dog.
 The prophet.
 The lord mayor.
 The doctor.
 The manager.
 The master.

<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>
L' abate,	l' abbadessa (la badessa).
Il barone,	la baronessa.
Il pastore,	la pastorella.
Il canonico,	la canonichessa.
Il cantante,	la cantatrice.
Il conte,	la contessa.
Dio or Iddio.	
Il dio,	la dea.
Il duca,	la duchessa.
Il leone,	la leonessa.
Il marchese,	la marchesa.
{ <i>Plur. I mar-Plur. Le marchesi.</i>	
Il principe,	la principessa.
Il pavone,	la pavonessa.
Il priore,	la priora.
Il rè,	la regina.
Il poeta,	la poetessa.
Il filosofo,	la filosofessa.
Il mercante,	la mercantessa.
L' oste,	l' ostessa.
Il gallo,	la gallina.
L' elefante,	l' elefantessa.
Il cane,	la cagna.
Il profeta,	la profetessa.
Il podestà,	la podestaressa.
Il dottore,	la dottoressa.
Il fattore,	la fattora.
Il padrone,	la padrona.

Obs. E. The names of trees are commonly masculine, and the

same words with the feminine termination in *a* designate the fruits of the same trees. Ex.

The chestnut-tree,	the chestnut.	Il castagno,	la castagna.
The cherry-tree,	the cherry.	Il ciliegio, or ciriegio,	la ciliegia, or ciriegia.
The pear-tree,	the pear.	Il pero,	la pera.
The plum-tree,	the plum.	Il prugno,	la prugna.
The walnut-tree,	the walnut.	Il noce,	la noce.

The following, however, are always masculine, and designate the tree as well as the fruit: *il fico*, the fig-tree, and the fig; *il cedro*, the citron-tree, and citron; *il dattero*, the date-tree, and the date; *il pomo*, the apple-tree, and the apple.

Obs. F. Of the names of animals several become feminine by changing *o* into *a*, as: *il cavallo*, the horse; *la cavalla*, the mare; *il gatto*, the cat; *la gatta*, the she-cat, &c.

Others have for each gender particular denominations, as: *il bue*, the ox; *la vacca*, the cow; *il becco*, the buck; *la capra*, the goat; *il montone*, the ram; *lo pecora*, the sheep, &c.

Others, again, though they are used for both genders, are always masculine, as: *il tordo*, the thrush; *il corvo*, the raven; *lo scarafaggio*, the beetle, &c. Others, again, are always feminine, as: *la rondine*, the swallow; *la pantera*, the panther; *la vipera*, the viper; *l'anguilla*, the eel. Finally, there are some which it is indifferent to make masculine or feminine, such as: *il* or *la lepre*, the hare; *il* or *la serpe*, the serpent, &c.

To hire.

To let.

Have you already hired a room?

{ *Prendere in affitto* (or *a pigione*).
 { *Prendere a nolo*.
 { *Affittare* l, or *dar in affitto*
 { (or *a pigione*).
 { *Dare a nolo*.
 Ha Ella già preso a pigione una camera?

To admit or grant a thing. }

To confess a thing. }

Do you grant that?

I do grant it.

Do you confess your fault?

I confess it.

I confess it to be a fault.

To confess, avow, own, acknowledge.

Convenire di qualche cosa.*

Conviene Ella di ciò (or in ciò)?

Ne convengo.

Conviene Ella del di Lei errore?

Ne convengo.

Convengo eh' è un errore.

Confessare l.

So much.

She has so many candles that she
cannot burn them all.

Tanto.

Ella ha tante candele che non
può consumarle tutte.

*To catch a cold.**To make sick.*

If you eat so much it will make
you sick.

Does it suit you to lend your
gun?

It does not suit me to lend it.

It does not suit me.

Where did you catch cold?

I caught cold in coming from the
opera.

To have a cold.

The cold.

The cough.

I have a cold in my head.

You have a cough.

The brain.

The chest.

Raffreddarsi 1. *Infreddarsi* 1.*Rendere malato.*

Se Ella mangia troppo ciò La
renderà malata.

Le conviene di prestare il di Lei
schiozzo?

Non mi conviene prestarlo.

Non mi conviene.

Ove si è Ella raffreddata?

Mi son raffreddato nell' uscire
dal teatro dell' opera.

Esser raffreddato (or infreddato).

Il raffreddore (l' infreddatura).

La tosse.

Ho un' infreddatura di testa.

Ella ha la tosse.

Il cervello.

Il petto.

EXERCISES.

173.

Where is your cousin?—He is in the kitchen.—Has your cook (fem.) already made the soup?—She has made it, for it is already upon the table.—Where is your mother?—She is at church.—Is your sister gone to school?—She is gone there.—Does your mother often go to church?—She goes there every morning and every evening.—At what o'clock in the morning does she go to church?—She goes there as soon as she gets up.—At what o'clock does she get up?—She gets up at sunrise.—Dost thou go to school to-day?—I do (go there).—What dost thou learn at school?—I learn to read, write, and speak (there).—Where is your aunt?—She is gone to the play with my little sister.—Do your sisters go this evening to the opera?—No, Madam, they go to the dancing school.—Do they go to the French school?—They go there in the morning, but not in the evening.—Is your father gone out hunting?—He has not been able to go out hunting, for he has a cold.—Do you like to go out hunting?—I like to go out fishing better than hunting (*che non a caccia*).—Is your father still in the country?—Yes, Madam, he is still there.—What is he doing there?—He goes out hunting and fishing.—Did you hunt in the country?—I hunted the whole day.—How long did you stay with my mother?—I

stayed with her the whole evening.—Is it long since you were at the castle?—I was there last week.—Did you find many people there?—I found only three persons there; the count, the countess, and their daughter.

174.

Are these girls as good (*savio*) as their brothers?—They are better than they.—Can your sisters speak German?—They cannot, but they are learning it.—Have you brought anything to your mother?—I have brought her some fine fruit and a fine tart.—What has your niece brought you?—She has brought us good cherries, excellent strawberries, and very good peaches.—Do you like peaches?—I like them much.—How many peaches has your neighbour (fem.) given you?—She has given me more than twenty.—Have you eaten many cherries this year?—I have eaten many.—Did you give any to your little sister?—I gave her so many that she cannot eat them all.—Why have you not given any to your good neighbour (fem.)?—I wished to give her some, but she would not take any, because she does not like cherries.—Were there many pears last year?—There were not many.—Has your cousin (fem.) many strawberries?—She has so many that she cannot eat them all.

175.

Why do your sisters not go to the play?—They cannot go (there) because they have a cold, and that makes them very ill.—Where did they catch cold?—They caught cold in coming from the opera (*nell' uscire dal teatro dell' opera*) last night.—Does it suit your sister to eat some peaches?—It does not suit her to eat any, for she has already eaten a good many, and if she eats so much it will make her ill.—Did you sleep well last night?—I did not sleep well, for my children made too much noise (*il rumore*) in my room.—Where were you last night?—I was at my brother-in-law's.—Did you see your sister-in-law?—I saw her.—How is she?—She is better than usual (*meglio del solito*).—Did you play?—We did not play, but we read some books; for my sister-in-law likes to read better than to play.—Have you read the gazette to-day?—I have read it.—Is there anything new in it?—I have not read anything new in it.—Where have you been since I saw you?—I have been at Vienna, Paris, and Berlin.—Did you speak to my aunt?—I did (speak to her).—What does she say?—She says that she wishes to see you.—Where have you put my pen?—I have put it upon the bench.—Do you intend to see your niece to-day?—I intend to see her, for she has promised me to dine with us.—I admire (*ammirare*) that family (*la famiglia*), for the father is the king and the mother is the queen of it. The children and the servants are the subjects (*il suddito*) of the state (*lo stato*). The tutors of the children are the ministers (*il ministro*) who share (*dividere**) with the king and the queen the care (*la cura*) of the government (*il governo*).

The good education (*l'educazione*) which is given to children is the crown (*la corona*) of monarchs (*il monarca*, plur. *i*).

176.

Have you already hired a room?—I have already hired one.—Where have you hired it?—I have hired it in William-street (*nella contrada Guglielmo*), number one hundred and fifty-two.—At whose house (*da chi*) have you hired it?—At the house of the man whose son has sold you a horse.—For whom has your father hired a room?—He has hired one for his son, who has just arrived from France.—Why have you not kept your promise (*la promessa*)?—I do not remember what I promised you.—Did you not promise us to take us to the concert last Tuesday?—I confess that I was wrong in promising you; the concert, however (*pure*), has not taken place.—Does your brother confess his fault?—He confesses it.—What does your uncle say to (*di*) that note?—He says that it is written very well, but he admits that he has been wrong in sending it to the captain.—Do you confess your fault now?—I confess it to be a fault.—Where have you found my coat?—I have found it in the blue room.—Will you hang my hat on the tree?—I will hang it there (*appendervelo*).—How are you to-day?—I am not (*non istò*) very well.—What is the matter with you?—I have a violent head-ache and a cold (*un'infreddatura di testa*).—Where did you catch cold?—I caught it last night in coming (*nell'uscire*) from the play.

FIFTY-SEVENTH LESSON.

Lezione Cinquantesima settima.

OF THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE.


The present participle is in Italian formed from the infinitive by changing, for the first conjugation, *are* into *ando*, and for the two others *ere* and *ire* into *endo*¹. Ex.

To speak, — speaking.	1. Parlare, — parlando.
To sell, — selling.	2. Vendere, — vendendo.
To serve, — serving.	3. Servire, — servendo.

¹ There is another present participle, which is also formed from the infinitive, and terminates for the first conjugation in *ante*, and for the two others in *ente*, as: *parlante*, speaking; *vendente*, selling; *servente*, serving. It is not much used in Italian, and in its stead the present or imperfect of the indicative is often employed.

To have, — having.
To be, — being.

Avere, — *avendo*.
Essere, — *essendo*.

Obs. A. This form of the verb is not so often used in Italian as in English, for whenever it is used in English after a preposition it is rendered in Italian by the infinitive. (See  Lessons XL. and XLIV.) Moreover, the infinitive is often substituted for it with one of the prepositions, *a*, *con*, *in*, *nel*, as: *col comprare*, in buying; *nel vendere*, in selling; *nel servire*, in serving. Ex.

In teaching one learns.

He was drowned *in passing* the river.

In seeing him I judged that he was not satisfied.

Having come too late he found no more room.

To be drowned. To pass the river.

To infer.

Found.

I tremble only in thinking of it.
I perceived it in reading the letter.

She gets a livelihood by spinning and weaving.

In going out of the church.

Coll' insegnare s' impara.

Egli si è annegato *nel valicare* il fiume.

Al vederlo argomentai che non era contento.

Per esser venuto tardi non trovò più posto.

Annegarsi. *Valicare* il fiume.

Argomentare (*argomentai* is its preterite definite).

Trovò (is the preterite definite of *trovare*).

Tremo solamente in pensarvi.

Me ne accorsi nel legger la lettera.

Ella si guadagna il vitto col filare e col tessere.

All' uscir dalla chiesa.

Obs. B. Yet the present participle is used when an agent performs two actions at the same time.

The man eats while running.

I correct while reading.

I question while speaking.

You speak while answering me.

L' uomo mangia correndo.

Correggo leggendo.

Interrogo parlando.

Ella parla rispondendomi.

Obs. C. The personal pronouns, the relative *ne*, and the local adverbs *ci* and *vi*, are joined to the present participle in the same manner as to the infinitive (*Obs. Lesson XVII.*).

I read your exercises while correcting them.

I question you while speaking to you.

You ride while fighting.

He fights while retiring.

You speak while dancing.

I extemporize while eating.

He walks while reading.

Leggo i di Lei temi correggendoli.

La interrogo parlando.

Ella cavalca battendosi.

Egli si batte ritirandosi.

Ella parla ballando.

Improvviso mangiando.

Passeggia leggendo.

Obs. D. When a certain continuation or succession of time is to be expressed, the present participle is made use of with the verbs *andare, mandare, stare, venire*. Ex.

I am writing.
 Thou art reading.
 He is telling me.
 He is telling me his misfortunes.
 I am gathering flowers in my garden.
 He was crying all day and all night.
 I was thinking of the things that had just happened.
 Her grief is consuming her by degrees.
 They were descending the hill slowly.
 I am beginning to perceive that I was mistaken.
 What I am doing now, thou wilt know when it is time.
 They were conversing together for an hour, when . . .

Io sto scrivendo.
Tu vai (or stai) leggendo.
Egli vien raccontandomi.
Egli sta raccontandomi le sue sventure.²
Vo cogliendo fiori nel mio giardino.³
Andò gridando⁴ tutto il giorno e tutta la notte.
Io andava pensando alle cose or ora accadute.⁵
Il suo dolore la va struggendo lentamente.⁶
Venivano scendendo lentamente il colle.⁷
Vado vedendo che mi sono ingannato.
Quello che ora sto facendo, lo saprai a suo tempo.
Se la stavano discorrendo insieme da un' ora, quando . . .⁸

You are thinking.
 I was perceiving.
 He is saying.
 What were you doing when I arrived?
 I was dining.

Voi state pensando.
Io andava accorgendomi.
Egli va dicendo.⁹
Che andavate (or stavate) facendo, quando son giunto¹⁰?
Io pranzava (io stava pranzando).

² *Raccontare*, to tell, to relate; *la sventura*, the misfortune.

³ *Cogliere fiori*, to gather flowers; *il fiore*, the flower.

⁴ *Andò* is the third person singular of the preterite definite of the verb *andare*, to go; *gridare*, to cry.

⁵ *Andava* is the first person singular of the imperfect indicative of the verb *andare*; *accadute* is the past participle in the plural feminine of the verb *accadere*, to happen.

⁶ *Struggendo* is the present participle of *struggere*, to consume, to kill, to destroy.

⁷ *Venivano* is the third person plural of the imperfect indicative of *venire*.

⁸ *Discorrere*, to converse.

⁹ *Dicendo* is the present participle of *dire*, to say.

¹⁰ *Andavate* is the second person plural of the imperfect indicative of *andare*, and *stavate* is the same of *stare*. *Giunto* is the past participle of *giungere*, to arrive.

To question.

The cravat.
The carriage.
The family.
The promise.
The leg.
The sore throat.
The throat.

I have a sore throat.

Interrogare 1.

La cravatta.
La carrozza.
La famiglia.
La promessa,
La gamba.
Il mal di gola.
La gola.
Mi fa mal la gola, or ho mal di gola.

The meat.
Salt meat.
Fresh meat.
Fresh beef.
Cool water.
The food (victuals).
The dish (mess).
Salt meats.
Milk food.

La carne.
Carne salata.
Carne fresca.
Manzo fresco.
Acqua fresca.
L' alimento.
La vivanda, il cibo.
Virande salate.
{ Il latticino } *Plur.* Dei lat-
{ Un latticino } ticiui.

The traveller.

Il viaggiatore ; *fem.* la viaggiatrice.

To march, to walk, to step.

I have walked a good deal to-day.

Camminare 1.

Ho camminato molto oggi.

Obs. E. Camminare must not be mistaken for *passaggiare*.
The former means to walk, and the latter to walk for pleasure (Lesson XLIV.).

I have been walking in the garden with my mother.

Ho passeggiato nel giardino con mia madre.

To walk or travel a mile—two miles.

† Far un miglio—due miglia.

To walk or travel a league—two leagues.

† Far una lega—due leghe.

To walk a step.

† Far un passo.

To take a step.

† Far un passo (presso di).

To go on a journey.

† Far un viaggio.

To make a speech.

Far un discorso.

A piece of business, an affair.

Un affare ; *plur.* i: una faccenda.

To transact business.

Far degli affari.

To meddle with something.

{ *Mischinarsi di qualche cosa.*
Immischinarsi di qualche cosa.

What are you meddling with ?

Di che si mischia Ella ?

I am meddling with my own business.

Mi mischio de' miei propri affari.

That man always meddles with
other people's business.
I do not meddle with other peo-
ple's business.

Others, other people.

He employs himself in painting.

The art of painting.

Chemistry.

The chemist.

The art.

Strange.

Surprising.

It is strange.

To employ one's self in.

Quest' uomo s' immischia sem-
pre negli affari degli altri.

Non m' immischio negli affari
altrui.

Altrui.

Si occupa di pittura.

La pittura.

La chimica.

Il chimico.

L' arte.

Strano.

Sorprendente.

È strano.

† *Occuparsi di qualche cosa.*

To concern some one.

To look at some one.

I do not like to meddle with
things that do not concern me.

That concerns nobody.

*To concern one's self about
something.*

*To trouble one's head about
something.*

*Concernere, riguardare
qualcuno.*

Riguardare qualcuno.

Non mi piace immischiarmi di
ciò che non mi concerne.

Ciò non riguarda nessuno.

*Curarsi di qualche cosa, or
Prendersi cura di qualche
cosa.*

To attract.

I attract, thou attractest, he at-
tracts.

We, you, they attract.

Loadstone attracts iron.

Her singing attracts me.

To charm.

To enchant.

I am charmed with it.

The beauty.

The harmony.

The voice.

The power.

{ *Attrarre* 2* } p.p. *attratto.*
{ *Attraere* 2* }
Attirare 1, „ *attirato.*
Attraggo, attrai, attrae.

Attraiamo, attraete, attraggono.
*La calamita attrae (attira) il
ferro.*

Il suo canto m' attrae.

Incantare.

Dilettare.

*Ne sono felice, ne sono incan-
tato.*

La bellezza.

L' armonia.

La voce.

La potenza, il potere.

<i>To repeat.</i>	<i>Ripetere 2.</i>
The repetition.	La ripetizione.
The commencement, beginning.	Il principio.
The wisdom.	La saviezza.
Study.	Lo studio.
The lord.	Il signore.
A good memory.	Una buona memoria.
A memorandum.	Un memoriale, un promemoria, una memoria.
The nightingale.	Il rosignuolo, l' usignuolo.
All beginnings are difficult.	Tutti i principii sono difficili.

<i>To create.</i>	<i>Create 1.</i>
Creation.	La creazione.
The Creator.	Il Creatore.
The benefit, the benefactor.	Il beneficio, il benefattore ; <i>fer-</i> <i>trice.</i>
The fear of the Lord.	Il timore di Dio.
Heaven.	Il cielo.
The earth.	La terra.
The solitude.	La solitudine.
The lesson.	La lezione.
The goodness.	La bontà.
Flour, meal.	La farina.
The mill.	Il mulino.

Obs. F. We have seen (Lesson XLIV.) that all reflective verbs are, in Italian, as well as in French, conjugated with the auxiliary *essere**, to be, in their compound tenses. There are besides some other verbs, which, in Italian, are likewise compounded with the auxiliary *essere**, to be, though they are not reflective, and generally take *to have* for their auxiliary in English. The principal are the following :—

To go.	Andare* 1.
To stop.	Arrestarsi 1, fermarsi 1.
To arrive.	Arrivare 1.
To decay.	Decadere* 2.
To die.	Morire* 3, trapassare 1.
To come in.	Entrare 1.
To be born.	Nascere* 2.
To set out.	Partire 3.
To go out.	Uscire* 3.
To fall.	Cadere* 2.
To come.	Venire* 3.
To become.	{ Divenire* 3.
	{ Diventare 1.
To disagree.	Non convenire* 3.
To intervene.	Intervenire* 3.

To attain.	Pervenire* 3.
To come back.	Ritornare 1.
To happen.	Sopraggiugnere* 2.

Has your mother come? | È venuta la di Lei madre?

☞ The past participle of these verbs must agree in gender and number with the nominative of the verb *essere**, to be.

She has not come yet.	Non è ancor venuta.
Have the women already come?	Sono già arrivate le donne?
They have not come yet.	Non sono ancor arrivate.
Has your sister arrived?	È arrivata la di Lei sorella?

EXERCISES.

177.

Will you dine with us to-day?—With much pleasure.—What have you for dinner (*che ha Ella da pranzo*)?—We have good soup, some fresh and salt meat, and some milk food.—Do you like milk food?—I like it better than (*Li preferisco a*) all other food.—Are you ready to dine?—I am ready.—Do you intend to set out soon?—I intend setting out next week.—Do you travel alone (*sola*)?—No, Madam, I travel with my uncle.—Do you travel on foot or in a carriage?—We travel in a carriage.—Did you meet any one in your last journey (*nel di Lei ultimo viaggio*) to Berlin?—We met many travellers.—What do you intend to spend your time in this summer?—I intend to take a short (*piccolo*) journey.—Did you walk much in your last journey?—I like much to walk, but my uncle likes to go in a carriage.—Did he not wish to walk?—He wished to walk at first (*da principio*), but he wished to get into the coach after having taken a few steps (*poi fatti appena alcuni passi volle montar in legno*), so that I did not walk much.—What have you been doing at school to-day?—We have been listening to our professor.—What did he say?—He made a long speech on the goodness of God.—After saying: “Repetition is the mother of studies, and a good memory is a great benefit of God,” he said (*egli disse*), “God is the Creator of heaven and earth; the fear of the Lord is the beginning of all wisdom.”—What are you doing all day in this garden?—I am walking in it.—What is there in it that attracts you (*che mai L’attira colà*)?—The singing of the birds attracts me (*mi vi attrae*).—Are there nightingales in it?—There are some in it, and the harmony of their singing enchants me (*mi rapisce*).—Have those nightingales (*forse gli usignuoli hanno*) more power over you (*sopra di Lei*) than painting, or the voice of your tender (*tenero*) mother, who loves you so much?—I confess the harmony of the singing of those little birds (*di questi augellini*) has more power over me than the most tender words of my dearest friends.

178.

What does your niece amuse herself with in her solitude?—She reads a good deal, and writes letters to her mother.—What does your uncle amuse himself with in his solitude?—He employs himself in painting and chemistry.—Does he no longer do any business?—He no longer does any, for he is too old to do any.—Why does he meddle with your business?—He does not generally (*ordinariamente*) meddle with other people's business, but he meddles with mine, because he loves me.—Has your master made you repeat your lesson to-day?—He has (made me repeat it).—Did you know it?—I knew it pretty well (*discretamente*).—Have you also done some exercises?—I have done some, but, pray, what is that to you (*ma che Le fa questo, ne La prego*)?—I do not generally meddle with things that do not concern me, but I love you so much that I concern myself much about (*che io m'interesso molto a*) what you are doing.—Does any one trouble his head (*havvi alcuno che si cura*) about you?—No one troubles his head about me, for I am not worth the trouble (*non ne valgo la pena*).—Who corrects your exercises?—My master corrects them.—How (*come*) does he correct them?—He corrects them in reading them; and in reading them he speaks to me.—How many things (*quante cose*) does your master at the same time (*in una volta*)?—He does four things at the same time.—How so (*come ciò*)?—He reads and corrects my exercises, speaks to me and questions me all at once (*al tempo stesso*).—Does your sister sing (*cantare*) while dancing?—She sings while working, but she cannot sing while dancing.—Has your mother left?—She has not left yet.—When will she set out?—She will set out to-morrow evening.—At what o'clock?—At a quarter to seven.—Have your sisters arrived?—They have not arrived yet, but we expect them this evening.—Will they spend (*passare*) the evening with us?—They will spend it with us, for they have promised me to do so.—Where have you spent the morning?—I have spent it in the country.—Do you go every morning to the country?—I do not go every morning, but twice a week.—Why has your niece not called upon me (*venir a vedere qualcuno*)?—She is very ill, and has spent the whole day in her room.

FIFTY-EIGHTH LESSON.

Lezione Cinquantesima ottava.

OF THE PAST FUTURE.

The past or compound future is formed from the future of the auxiliary, and the past participle of the verb you conjugate. Ex.

I shall have loved.	Avrò amato.
Thou wilt have loved.	Avrai amato.
He will have loved.	Egli avrà amato.
She will have loved.	Ella avrà amato.
We shall have loved.	Avremo amato.
You will have loved.	Avrete amato.
They will have loved.	{ <i>Mas.</i> Egliino } avranno amato. { <i>Fem.</i> Elleno }

I shall have come.	Sarò venuto.	<i>Fem.</i> venuta.
Thou wilt have come.	Sarai venuto.	„ venuta.
He will have come.	Sarà venuto.	
She will have come.	Sarà venuta.	
We shall have come.	Saremo venuti.	<i>Fem.</i> venute.
You will have come.	Sarete venuti.	„ venute.
They will have come.	{ Saranno venuti. Saranno venute.	

I shall have been praised.	Sarò stato lodato.	<i>Fem.</i> stata lodata.
Thou wilt have been praised.	Sarai stato lodato.	„ stata lodata.
He will have been praised.	Sarà stato lodato.	
She will have been praised.	Sarà stata lodata.	
We shall have been praised.	Saremo stati lodati.	<i>Fem.</i> state lodate.
You will have been praised.	Sarete stati lodati.	„ state lodate.
They will have been praised.	{ Saranno stati lodati. Saranno state lodate.	

To have left.	† Rimanere* 2.
When I have paid for the horse I shall have only ten crowns left.	Quando avrò pagato il cavallo non mi rimarranno che dieci scudi.

How much money have you left?	Quanto danaro Le rimane?
I have one crown left.	Mi rimane uno scudo.
I have only one crown left.	{ Non mi rimane che uno scudo.
How much has your brother left?	{ Mi rimane solamente uno scudo.
He has one crown left.	Quanto rimane al di Lei fratello?
How much has your sister left?	Gli rimane uno scudo.
She has only three sous left.	Quanto rimane alla di Lei sorella?
How much have your brothers left?	Non le rimangono che tre soldi.
They have one gold sequin left.	Quanto rimane ai di Lei fratelli?
When they have paid the tailor, they will have a hundred Italian livres left.	Rimane loro uno zecchino d'oro.
	Quando avranno pagato il sartore, resteranno loro cento lire italiane.

Obs. In English the present, or the compound of the present, is used after the conjunctions, *when*, *as soon as*, or *after*, when futurity is to be expressed; but in Italian, as well as in French, the future must in such instances always be employed. *Ex.*

When I am at my aunt's, will you come to see me?	Quando sarò da mia zia, verrà Ella a vedermi?
After you have done writing, will you take a turn with me?	Quando avrà finito di scrivere, verrà Ella meco a far una passeggiata?
You will play when you have finished your exercise.	Ella giuocherà quando avrà finito il di Lei temi (esercizio).
What will you do when you have dined?	Che farà Ella quando avrà pranzato?
When I have dined, I will take a turn with my sister in the garden of the marchioness.	Quando avrò pranzato, andrò a far una passeggiata con mia sorella nel giardino della marchesa.
When I have spoken to your brother, I shall know what I have to do.	Quando avrò parlato al di Lei fratello, saprò ciò che ho da fare.

Does it rain?	Piove?
It rains.	Piove.
Does it snow?	Nevica?
It snows.	Nevica.
Is it muddy?	{ † Vi è del fango?
	{ † V'è fango?

It is muddy.
Is it muddy out of doors?
It is very muddy.
Is it dusty?
It is very dusty.

Is it smoky?
It is too smoky.
Out of doors.

† C' è del fango.
† C' è del fango in istrada?
† È cattivo andare.
V' ha della polvere?
Fa molta polvere. V' ha molta polvere?
V' è del fumo? V' è fumo?
V' è troppo fumo.
Fuori. In istrada.

To enter, to go in, to come in.
Will you go into my room?

I will go in.
Will you go in?
I shall go in.

Entrare 1, *in*.
Vuol Ella entrar nella mia camera?
Voglio entrarvi.
Vi entrerà Ella?
Vi entrerò.

To sit down.

To sit, to be seated.
He is seated upon the large chair.
She is seated upon the bench.
I sit down near you.

Sedere*, mettersi a sedere (Lesson LI.).

Essere seduto; fem. *seduta*.
Egli è seduto sulla gran sedia.
Essa è seduta sulla panca.
{ Seggo presso di Lei.
{ Mi metto a sedere vicino a Lei.

To fill with.

To fill the bottle with wine.
Do you fill that bottle with water?

I fill my purse with money.
He fills his belly with meat.

The pocket.

{ *Empire* or *riempire* (isco) 3.
{ *Empiere* or *riempiere* 2.
Riempire di vino la bottiglia.
Riempie Ella d' acqua quella bottiglia?
Riempio di danaro la mia borsa.
S' empie il ventre di carne (a vulgar expression).
La tasca.

Have you come quite alone?
No, I have brought all my men with me.
He has brought all his men with him.
Have you brought your brother with you?
I have brought him with me.
Have you told the groom to bring me the horse?

The groom.

È Ella venuta del tutto sola?
No, ho condotto meco tutta la mia gente.
Egli ha condotto seco tutta la sua gente.
Ha Ella condotto seco il di Lei fratello?
L' ho condotto meco.
Avete detto al palafreniere di condurmi il cavallo?
Il palafreniere.

I have brought you a fine horse
from Germany.
Are you bringing me my books?
I am bringing them to you.

Le ho condotto d' Alemagna un
bel cavallo.
Mi porta Ella i miei libri?
Glieli porto.

To take, to carry.
Will you take that dog to the
stable?
I will take it there.
Are you carrying this gun to my
father?
I carry it to him.
The cane, stick.
The stable.

Menare 1.
Volete menare questo cane alla
stalla?
Voglio menarvelo.
Porta Ella a mio padre questo
schioppo?
Glielo porto.
La canna.
La stalla.

To come down, to go down.
To go down into the well.
To go or come down the hill.
To go down the river.
To alight from one's horse, to
dismount.
To alight, to get out from the
ship.

{ *Scendere** 2—*sceso*.
*Discendere** 2; past part.
disceso.
Discendere nel pozzo.
Scendere la montagna.
Discendere il fiume.
Smontare da cavallo (Lesson
LII.).
Scendere *or* discendere dal
legno.

To go up, to mount, to ascend.
To go up to the mountain.
Where is your brother gone?
He has ascended the hill.
To mount the horse.
To get into the coach.
To get on board the ship.

{ *Montare, salire**, *ascen-*
*dere**.
Salire il monte. Salire il colle.
Montare sulla collina.
Ove è andato il di Lei fratello?
È montato sulla collina.
Montare a cavallo.
Montare in legno (in carrozza).
{ Entrar nella nave.
Ascendere il naviglio.

To desire, to beg, to pray, to
request.
Will you desire your brother to
come down?
I beg of you to call on me to-day.
The beard.
The river.

Pregare 1 (*di* before Inf.).
Vuol Ella pregare il di Lei fra-
tello di scendere?
La prego di venirmi a vedere
oggi.
La barba.
Il fiume, la riviera.

The stream, torrent.
To go or come up the river.

The stream.
To go or come down the river.

Il torrente.
Andar contro la corrente del
fiume.
La corrente.
Discendere il fiume.

EXERCISES.

179.

Will your parents go to the country to-morrow?—They will not go, for it is too dusty.—Shall we take a walk to-day?—We will not take a walk, for it is too muddy out of doors (*perchè c'è troppo fango in istrada, or perchè le strade sono troppo fangose*).—Do you see the castle of my relation behind (*dietro*) yonder mountain (*quella montagna*)?—I see it.—Shall we go in?—We will go in if you like.—Will you go into that room?—I shall not go into it, for it is smoky.—I wish you a good morning, Madam.—Will you not come in? Will you not sit down?—I will sit down upon that large chair.—Will you tell me what has become of your brother?—I will tell you.—Where is your sister?—Do you not see her? She is sitting upon the bench.—Is your father seated upon the bench?—No, he sits upon the chair.—Hast thou spent all thy money?—I have not spent all.—How much hast thou left?—I have not much left. I have but five Italian livres (*la lira italiana*) left.—How much money have thy sisters left?—They have but three crowns left.—Have you money enough left to pay your tailor?—I have enough left to pay him; but if I pay him I shall have but little left.—How much money will your brothers have left?—They will have a hundred sequins left.—When shall you go to Italy?—I shall go as soon as (*subito che*) I have learnt Italian.—When will your brothers go to France?—They will go there as soon as they know French.—When will they learn it?—They will learn it when they have found a good master.—How much money shall we have left when we have paid for our horses?—When we have paid for them we shall have only a hundred crowns left.

180.

Do you gain (*guadagnare*) anything by (*in*) that business?—I do not gain much by it (*gran che*), but my brother gains a good deal by it. He fills his purse with money.—How much money have you gained?—I have gained only a little, but my cousin has gained much. He has filled his pocket with money.—Why does not that man work?—He is a good-for-nothing fellow (*disutilaccio*), for he does nothing but eat all the day long. He continually fills (*si riempie mai sempre*) his belly with meat, so that he will make himself (*diverrà*) ill, if he continues (*continuare*) to eat so much.—With what have you filled that bottle?—I have filled it with wine.—Will this man take care of my horse?—He will (take

care of it).—Who will take care of my servant?—The landlord will take care of him, for he will give him to eat and to drink; he will also give him a good bed to sleep in (*per coricarsi*).—Does your servant take care of your horses?—He takes care of them.—Is he taking care of your clothes?—He is taking care of them, for he brushes them every morning.—Have you ever drunk French wine?—I have never drunk any.—Is it long since you ate Italian bread?—It is almost three years since I ate any.—Have you hurt my brother-in-law?—I have not hurt him, but he has cut my finger.—What has he cut your finger with?—With the knife which you have lent him.

181.

Is your father arrived at last?—Everybody says that he is arrived, but I have not seen him yet.—Has the physician hurt your son?—He has hurt him, for he has cut his finger.—Have they cut off (*tagliare*) that man's leg?—They have cut it off.—Are you pleased (*soddisfatto*) with your servant?—I am much pleased with him, for he is fit for anything (*buono a tutto*).—What does he know?—He knows everything (*tutto*).—Can he ride (*andar a cavallo*)?—He can.—Has your brother returned at last from England?—He has returned (thence), and has brought you a fine horse.—Has he told his groom to bring it to me (*di condurmelo quà*)?—He has told him to bring it you.—What do you think (*che dice Ella*) of that horse?—I think (*dico*) that it is a fine and good one (*ch'è bello e buono*), and beg you to lead it into the stable (*in istalla*).—In what did you spend your time yesterday?—I went to the concert, and afterwards (*e poi*) to the play.—When did that man go down into the well?—He went down this morning.—Has he come up again yet (*già risalito*)?—He came up an hour ago.—Where is your brother?—He is in his room.—Will you tell him to come down?—I will tell him so, but he is not yet dressed.—Is your friend still on the mountain?—He has already come down.—Did you go up or down the river?—We went down (it).—Did my cousin speak to you before he started?—He spoke to me before he got into the coach.—Have you seen my brother?—I saw him before I went on board the ship.—Is it better to get into a coach than to go on board the ship (*o salir la nave*)?—It is not worth while to get into a coach, or to go on board the ship, when one has no wish to travel.

FIFTY-NINTH LESSON.

Lezione Cinquantesima nona.

OF THE IMPERFECT.

(Imperfetto).

The imperfect of the indicative is formed in all Italian verbs by changing the termination *re* of the infinitive into *va*.¹ Ex.

<i>Infinitives.</i>		<i>Imperfects.</i>		
To speak—I spoke, &c.	1. Parlare.	{	Parlava, parlavi, parlava.	
			Parlavamo, parlavate, parlavano.	
To believe—I believed, &c.	2. Credere.	{	Credeva, credevi, credeva.	
			Credevamo, credevate, credevano.	
To hear—I heard, &c.	3. Sentire.	{	Sentiva, sentivi, sentiva.	
			Sentivamo, sentivate, sentivano.	
To have—I had, &c.	2. Avere.	{	Aveva, avevi, aveva.	
			Avevamo, avevate, avevano.	

Obs. A. There is but one exception to this rule; it is the verb *essere*, to be:

To be—I was, &c.	Essere.	{	Era, eri, era.	
			Eravamo, eravate, erano.	

Obs. B. The imperfect is a past tense, which was still present at the time spoken of, and may always be recognized by using the two terms, "WAS DOING," or "USED TO DO." Ex.

When I was at Berlin, I often went to see my friends.	Quando io era a Berlino, andava spesso a vedere i miei amici.
When you were in Paris, you often went to the Champs-Élysées.	Quando Ella era (voi eravate) in Parigi, Ella andava (voi andavate) spesso ai Campi Elisi.
Rome was at first governed by kings.	Roma era da principio governata dai re.

¹ The termination of the first person of the imperfect indicative in *o* has grown obsolete. Besides, the best authors, and the Academy della Crusca, have rejected it, as being contrary to its Latin origin; *eram, amabam, legebam, audiebam, &c.*

Cæsar was a great man.
 Cicero was a great orator.
 Our ancestors went out hunting every day.
 The Romans cultivated the arts and sciences, and rewarded merit.
 Were you walking?

I was not walking.
 Were you in Paris when the king was there?
 I was there when he was there.
 Where were you when I was in London?
 At what time did you breakfast when you were in Germany?

I breakfasted when my father breakfasted.
 Did you work when he was working?
 I studied when he was working.

Some fish.
 Some game.
 To live.

When I lived at my father's, I rose earlier than I do now.

When we lived in that country, we often went out fishing.

When I was ill, I kept in bed all day.

Last summer, when I was in the country, there was a great deal of fruit.

Cesare era un grand' uomo.
 Cicerone era un grand' oratore.
 I nostri antenati andavano tutti i giorni a caccia.
 I Romani coltivavano le arti e le scienze, e ricompensavano il merito.

Passeggiava Ella (passeggiavate voi)?

Non passeggiava.
 Era Ella (eravate voi) a Parigi quando vi era il re?

V' era quando v' era egli.
 Ove era (eravate voi) quando io era a Londra?

Quando faceva Ella (facevate voi) colazione allorchè Ella era (eravate) in Alemagna?

Faceva colazione quando la faceva mio padre.

Lavorava Ella (lavoravate voi) quando lavorava egli?

Io studiava quando egli lavorava.

Del pesce.
 Della cacciagione.
 Dimorare l.

Quando io dimorava da mio padre, mi alzava più presto che nol² faccio adesso.

Quando stavamo (dimoravamo) in quel paese, andavamo spesso a pesca.

Quando era malato, stava a letto tutto il giorno.

L' estate (or nell' estate) scorsa, essendo io alla campagna, v' era gran copia di frutti.

A thing.
 The same thing.

The same man.

It is all one (the same).

Una cosa.
 La medesima cosa (la stessa cosa).

Il medesimo uomo (lo stesso uomo).

{ † È lo stesso.
 È tutt' uno.

² *Nol* is a contraction of *non lo*.

Such.
 Such a man.
 Such men.
 Such a woman.
 Such things.
 Such men merit esteem.

Tale, simile.
 Un tal uomo.
 Tali uomini.
 Una tal donna.
 Tali cose.
 Tali uomini meritano della stima.

Out of.
 Out of the city (the town).
 Without, or out of doors.
 The church stands outside the town.
 I shall wait for you before the town gate.
 The town or city gate.
 The barrier, the turnpike.

Fuori di.
 Fuori della città.
 Fuori.
 La chiesa è fuori della città.
 L' aspetterò innanzi alla porta della città.
 La porta della città.
 La barriera, la porta, la tariffa.

Seldom (rarely).
 Some brandy.
 The life, the livelihood.

Raramente, or di rado.
 Dell' acquavite.
 La vita, il vitto.

To get one's livelihood—by.

Guadagnarsi il vitto (il pane)—col.

I get my livelihood by working.
 He gets his living by writing.

Mi guadagno il vitto lavorando.
 Egli si guadagna il vitto collo scrivere.

I gain my money by working.

Guadagno il mio danaro col lavorare.

By what does that man get his livelihood?

Con che si guadagna quest' uomo il vitto?

To continue, to proceed, to go on.

Continuare 1, Proseguire 3, Seguitare 1.

I continue to write.
 He continues his speech.
 A good appetite.
 The narrative, the tale.
 The edge, the border, the shore.
 The edge of the brook.
 The sea-shore.
 On the sea-shore.
 The shore, the water-side, the coast, the bank.

Continuo a scrivere.
 Egli continua il suo discorso.
 Un buon appetito.
 Il racconto, la novella.
 La riva.
 La riva del ruscello.
 La spiaggia del mare.
 Sulla spiaggia del mare.
 La ripa, il lido.

People or folks.
They are good people.
They are wicked people.

La gente.
Sono buona gente.
Sono cattiva gente.

EXERCISES.

182.

Were you loved when you were at Dresden (*Dresda*) ?—I was not hated.—Was your brother esteemed when he was in London ?—He was loved and esteemed.—When were you in Spain (*in Ispagna*) ?—I was there when you were there.—Who was loved and who was hated ?—Those that were good, assiduous, and obedient, were loved, and those who were naughty, idle, and disobedient, were punished, hated, and despised.—Were you in Berlin when the king was there ?—I was (there when he was there).—Was your uncle in London when I was there ?—He was (there when you were there).—Where were you when I was at Dresden ?—I was in Paris.—Where was your father when you were in Vienna ?—He was in England.—At what o'clock did you breakfast when you were in England ?—I breakfasted when my uncle breakfasted.—Did you work when he was working ?—I studied when he was working.—Did your brother work when you were working ?—He played when I was working.—On what (*di che*) did our ancestors live ?—They lived on nothing but fish and game, for they went out hunting and fishing every day.—What sort of people were the Romans ?—They were very good people, for they cultivated the arts and sciences, and rewarded merit.—Did you often go to see your friends when you were at Berlin ?—I often went to see them.—Did you sometimes go to the Champs-Élysées when you were at Paris ?—I often went there.

183.

What did you do when you lived in that country ?—When we lived there we often went out hunting.—Did you not go out walking (*passaggiare*) ?—I went out walking sometimes.—Do you rise early ?—Not so early as you ; but when I lived at my uncle's I rose earlier than I do now.—Did you sometimes keep in bed when you stayed at your uncle's ?—When I was ill I kept in bed all day.—Is there much fruit (*Avvi gran copia di frutti*) this year ?—I do not know, but last summer (*nella scorsa estate*), when I was in the country, there was a great deal of fruit.—What do you get your livelihood by ?—I get my livelihood by working.—Does your friend get his livelihood by writing ?—He gets it by speaking and writing.—Do these gentlemen get their livelihood by working ?—They get it by doing nothing (*non facendo niente*), for they are too idle to work.—By what has your friend gained that money ?—He has gained it by working.—By what did you get your livelihood when you were in England ?—I got it by writing.—Did your cousin get

his livelihood by writing?—He got it by working.—Have you ever seen such a person?—I have never seen such a one (*una simile*).—Have you already seen our church?—I have not seen it yet. Where does it stand (*essere*)?—It stands outside the town. If you wish to see it, I will go with you in order to show it you.—Upon what do the people live that inhabit the sea-shore?—They live on fish alone.—Why will you not go out hunting any more?—I hunted yesterday the whole day, and I killed nothing but an ugly bird, so that I shall not go out hunting any more.—Why do you not eat?—Because I have not a good appetite.—Why does your brother eat so much?—Because he has a good appetite.

184.

Whom are you looking for?—I am looking for my little brother.—If you wish to find him, you must go (*bisogna andar*) into the garden, for he is there.—The garden is large, and I shall not be able to find him, if you do not tell me in which part (*in qual parte*) of the garden he is (*sia*, subj.).—He is sitting under the large tree under which we were sitting yesterday.—Now I shall find him.—Why did you not bring me my clothes?—They were not made, so that I could not bring them, but I bring them you now.—You have learnt your lesson: why has not your sister learnt hers?—She has taken a walk with my mother, so that she could not learn it, but she will learn it to-morrow.—When will you correct my exercises?—I will correct them when you bring me (*mi porterà*, future) those of your sister.—Do you think you have made mistakes in them?—I do not know.—If you have made mistakes, you have not studied your lessons well; for the lessons must be learnt well (*bisogna impararle bene*) to make no mistakes in the exercises.—It is all the same: if you do not correct them to-day, I shall not learn them before to-morrow (*non le imparerò se non domani*).—You must not (*Ella non deve*) make any mistakes in your exercises, for you have all that is necessary to prevent you from making any.

SIXTIETH LESSON.

Lezione Sessantesima.

OF THE PRETERITE DEFINITE.

(Passato Remoto.)

This past tense is formed from the infinitive by changing the termination *are, ere, ire*, into *ai, ei, ii*. Ex.

		<i>Preterite Definites.</i>	
To speak—I spoke, 1. <i>Parlare</i> .	{	<i>Parlai</i> ,	<i>parlasti, parlò.</i>
&c.		<i>Parlammo</i> ,	<i>parlaste, parlarono.</i>
To believe—I believed, 2. <i>Credere</i> .	{	<i>Credei</i> ,	<i>credesti, credè.</i>
&c.		<i>Credemmo</i> ,	<i>credeste, credarono.¹</i>
To hear—I heard, &c. 3. <i>Sentire</i> .	{	<i>Sentii</i> ,	<i>sentisti, senti.</i>
		<i>Sentimmo</i> ,	<i>sentiste, sentirono.</i>

Obs. A. The third person singular of the preterite definite has in the regular verbs always the grave accent (').

To have—I had, &c. <i>Avere</i> .*	{	<i>Ebbi</i> ,	<i>avesti, ebbe.</i>
		<i>Avemmo</i> ,	<i>aveste, ebbero.</i>
To be—I was, &c. <i>Essere</i> .*	{	<i>Fui</i> ,	<i>fosti, fu.</i>
		<i>Fummo</i> ,	<i>foste, furono.</i>

Obs. B. The irregularity of an Italian verb almost always falls on the preterite definite. This is irregular only in the first and third persons singular, and the third person plural. Almost invariably the first person singular ends in *i*, the third person singular in *e*, and the third person plural in *ero*. Ex.

To please — pleased (past part.).	<i>Piacere—piaciuto.</i>	
I pleased, &c.	{	<i>Piacqui</i> , <i>piacesti, piacque.</i>
To know—known.		<i>Piacemmo</i> , <i>piaceste, piacquero.²</i>
I knew, &c.	{	<i>Conoscere—conosciuto.</i>
		<i>Conobbi</i> , <i>conoscesti, conobbe.</i>
		<i>Conoscemmo</i> , <i>conosceste, conobbero.</i>

¹ Almost all the verbs of the second conjugation have a double form for the first and third persons singular, and third person plural, and instead of *ei, è, erano*, they end in *etti, ette, ettero*, as: *credere*, to believe.

Credei or credetti,
Credesti,
Credè, or credette,
Credemmo,
Credeste,
Credarono, or credettero.

Practice alone can teach which form is to be preferred. We have, however, ascertained that when the verb ends in *tere* the preference is to be given to the first form, as:

Potere, to be able (can) — *potei*, I was able.
Battere, to beat — *battei*, I did beat.
Esistere, to exist — *esistei*, I existed, &c.

² All verbs having *e* before the termination *ere* of the infinitive are conjugated in the same manner, as: *nascere*, to be born; *tacere*, to be silent; *giacere*, to lie, to be situate; *nuocere*, to hurt; except *cuocere*, to cook, bake; and *conoscere*, to know; which have in the pret. def. *cossi* and *conobbi*.

<i>To hold—held.</i>	<i>Tenere—tenuto.</i>
I held, &c.	<i>Preterite Definites.</i>
<i>To wish—wished.</i>	{ Tenni, tenesti, tenne.
I wished, &c.	{ Tenemmo, teneste, tennero.
<i>To read—read.</i>	<i>Volere—voluto.</i>
I read, &c.	{ Volli, volesti, volle.
<i>To take—took.</i>	{ Volemmo, voleste, vollero. ³
I took, &c.	<i>Leggere—letto.</i>
<i>To choose—chosen.</i>	{ Lessi, leggesti, lesse.
I chose, &c.	{ Leggemmo, leggeste, lessero. ⁴
	<i>Prendere—preso.</i>
	{ Presi, prendesti, prese.
	{ Prendemmo, prendeste, presero. ⁵
	<i>Scegliere—scelto.</i>
	{ Scelsi, scegliești, scelse.
	{ Scegliemmo, scegliești, scelsero. ⁶
	{ mo,

Obs. C. The learner has only to make himself acquainted with the irregularity of the first person singular of this tense; this once known, all the others are. For, in addition to the first person singular, the irregular persons of this tense are the third person singular and third person plural. All the other persons are always regular. The first person singular, therefore, ending in *i*, the third

³ The principal verbs which, besides the above three, double in the preterite definite the consonant in the first and third persons singular and third person plural are: *avere*, to have: *ebbi*, I had; *rompere*, to break: *ruppi*, I broke; *cadere*, to fall: *caddi*, I fell; *sapere*, to know: *seppi*, I knew; *piovere*, to rain: *piovve*, it rained.

⁴ All verbs whose first person singular of the indicative terminates in *ggo*, *co*, *vo*, *primo*, *cuoto*, have their preterite definite terminated in *ssi*, as: *Dico*, I say: *dissi*, I said; *scrivo*, I write: *scrissi*, I wrote; *esprimo*, I express: *espressi*, I expressed; *scuoto*, I shake: *scossi*, I shook; *percuoto*, I strike: *percossi*, I struck.

⁵ All verbs whose first person singular of the indicative ends in *do* have their preterite definite either in *asi*, *esi*, *isi*, *osi*, or *usi*, according to the letters that precede this termination, as: *persuado*, I persuade: *persuasi*, I persuaded; *chiedo*, I ask: *chiesi*, I asked; *rodo*, I gnaw: *rosi*, I gnawed; *chiudo*, I shut: *chiusi*, I did shut; *fundo*, I melt: *fusi*, I melted.

⁶ Verbs whose termination *o* of the first person singular indicative is preceded by a consonant, which, in its turn, is preceded by one of the liquids *l*, *n*, *r*, with which they form the syllables *lgo*, *nco*, *rdo*, have their preterite definite in *lsi*, *nsi*, or *rsi*, as: *vinco*, I vanquish: *vinsi*, I vanquished; *mordo*, I bite: *morsi*, I bit, &c.

person singular changes *i* into *e*, and the third person plural into *ero*, as may be seen from the above examples. This rule holds good throughout the Italian language. All the other rules that can be given on the formation of this tense in irregular verbs are contained in the above five notes.

ON THE USE OF THE PRETERITE DEFINITE.

This tense is so called, because it always expresses an action completed at a time specified, either by an adverb or some other circumstance. Ex.

I had done reading *when he entered.*

You had lost your purse, *when I found mine.*

Aveva finito di leggere, *quando egli entrò.*

Ella aveva (voi avevate) perduto la di Lei (la vostra) borsa, *quando trovai la mia.*

Obs. D. These examples show that the pluperfect is formed in Italian, as in English, with the imperfect of the auxiliary, and the past participle of the verb you conjugate.

We had dined, when he arrived.

The king had named an admiral when he heard of you.

Avevamo pranzato, *quando egli arrivò (or giunse).*

Il re aveva fatto un ammiraglio, *quando gli si parlò di Lei (or quando gli parlarono di Lei).*

After having spoken, *you went away.*

After shaving, *I washed my face.*

Dopo aver parlato, Ella se ne andò.

Dopo essermi sbarbato, mi lavai la faccia.

After having warmed themselves, *they went* into the garden.

As soon as the bell rang, *you awoke.*

Dopo essersi scaldati, andarono in giardino.

Tosto che la campana suonò, Ella si risvegliò (voi vi risvegliaste).

As soon as they called me, *I got up.*

As soon as he was ready, he came to see me.

As soon as we had our money, we agreed to that.

As soon as he had his horse, he came to show it me.

After having tried several times, *they succeeded* in doing it.

As soon as I saw him, *I obtained* what I wanted.

As soon as I spoke to him, he did what I told him.

The business was soon over.

Tosto che mi chiamarono, mi levai.

Tosto che fu pronto, venne a vedermi.

Tosto che noi avemmo il nostro danaro, convenimmo di ciò.

Tosto che ebbe il suo cavallo, venne a mostrarmelo.

Dopo aver provato parecchie volte, pervennero a farlo.

Tosto che lo vidi, ottenni ciò di cui aveva bisogno.

Tosto che gli parlai, fece ciò che gli dissi.

L' affare fu ben tosto fatto.

OF THE PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

(Passato Anteriore.)

This tense is compounded of the preterite definite of the auxiliary, and the past participle of the verb you conjugate. It is used (from its name *anteriore*, anterior) to express an action past before another which is likewise past, and is hardly ever used except after one of the conjunctions :

As soon as.	{ Tosto che.
After.	{ Subito che.
When.	{ Dopo che.
No sooner.	{ Allorchè.
Scarcely.	{ Quando.
	{ Non tosto.
	{ Appena.

It also expresses an action as quickly done.

EXAMPLES.

<i>As soon as I had finished my work, I carried it to him.</i>	<i>Tosto che ebbi finito il mio lavoro, glielo portai.</i>
<i>As soon as I had dressed myself, I went out.</i>	<i>Tosto che mi fui vestito, uscii.</i>
<i>When they had done playing, they began singing.</i>	<i>Quand' ebbero finito di giuocare, si misero a cantare.</i>
<i>When I had dined, it struck twelve.</i>	<i>Quando ebbi pranzato, mezzodì suonò.</i>
<i>As soon as the guests were assembled, the repast commenced.</i>	<i>Tosto che i convitati si furono riuniti, il banchetto cominciò.</i>
<i>I had soon done eating.</i>	<i>Ebbi ben presto finito di mangiare.</i>
<i>After the soldiers had pillaged the town, they slaughtered without pity the women and the children.</i>	<i>Dopo che i soldati ebbero saccheggiata la città, trucidarono spietatamente le donne e i fanciulli.</i>
<i>Scarcely had we arrived, when we were conducted to the king.</i>	<i>Appena fummo giunti, che ci si condusse (or che ci condussero) dal re.</i>
<i>He had no sooner perceived us, than he advanced towards us.</i>	<i>Non tosto egli ci ebbe scorti, che si avanzò verso noi.</i>
<i>When he had done reading, he exclaimed.</i>	<i>Quand' ebbe finito di leggere, esclamò.</i>
<i>When he had well understood, he left.</i>	<i>Quand' ebbe capito bene, partì.</i>

To die (to lose life.)
 I die, thou diest, he or she dies.
 We, you, they die.

Morire ; past part. morto.
 Muoio, muori, muore.
 Moriamo, morite, muoiono.

I died, &c.	<i>Preterite definite.</i>
Shall or will you die?	{ Morì, moristi, morì.
I shall die.	{ Morimmo, moriste, morirono.
The man died this morning, and his wife died also.	Morrà Ella (morrete voi)?
The man is dead.	Morrò.
The woman died this morning.	L' uomo è morto questa mattina, e sua moglie pure è morta.
	L' uomo è morto.
	La donna è morta questa mane.

<i>To kill.</i>	<i>Uccidere*</i> ; past part. <i>ucciso.</i>
	<i>Preterite definite.</i>
I killed, &c.	{ Uccisi, uccidesti, uccise.
	{ Uccidemmo, uccideste, uccisero.
<i>To tell, to relate.</i>	<i>Raccontare</i> 1.
The spectacles.	Gli occhiali.
The optician.	L' ottico.
The accident.	L' accidente.
<i>To write.</i>	<i>Scrivere</i> 2— <i>scritto.</i>
	<i>Preterite definite.</i>
I wrote, &c.	{ Scrissi, scrivesti, scrisse.
	{ Scrivemmo, scriveste, scrissero.

EXERCISES.

185.

What did you do when you had finished your letter?—I went to my brother, who took me to the theatre, where I had the pleasure of finding one of my friends whom I had not seen for ten years (*da dieci anni*).—What didst thou do after getting up this morning?—When I had read the letter of the Polish (*polacco*) count, I went to see (*uscii per vedere*) the prince's theatre, which I had not seen before (*non—ancora*).—What did your father do when he had breakfasted?—He shaved and went out.—What did your friend do after he had been out walking?—He went to the baron's (*il barone*).—Did the baron cut the meat after he had cut the bread?—He cut the bread after he had cut the meat.—When do you set out?—I do not set out till (*non parto che*) to-morrow, for before I leave I will once more see my good friends.—What did your children do when they had breakfasted?—They went out walking with their dear preceptor (*precettore*).—Where did your uncle go to after he had warmed himself?—He went nowhere. After he had warmed himself, he undressed and went to bed.—At what o'clock did he get up?—He got up at sunrise.—Did you wake him?—I had no need to wake him, for he had got up before me.—What did your cousin do when he heard of (*quando apprese*) the death (*la morte*) of his

best friend?—He was much afflicted, and went to bed without saying a word (*senza dir motto*).—Did you shave before you breakfasted?—I shaved when I had breakfasted.—Did you go to bed when you had supped?—When I had supped I wrote my letters, and when I had written them I went to bed.—At what (*di che*) are you distressed (*afflitta*)?—I am distressed at that accident.—Are you afflicted at the death (*della morte*) of your relation?—I am much afflicted at it (*ne*).—When did your relation die?—He died last month.—Of whom do you complain?—I complain of your boy.—Why do you complain of him?—Because he has killed the pretty dog (*il cagnolino*) which I received from one of my friends.—Of what has your uncle complained?—He has complained of what you have done.—Has he complained of the letter which I wrote to him the day before yesterday?—He has complained of it.

186.

Why did you not stay longer in Holland?—When I was there the living was dear, and I had not money enough to stay there longer.—What sort of weather was it when you were on the way to Vienna?—It was very bad weather, for it was stormy (*temporale*), and snowed and rained very heavily (*dirottamente*).—Where have you been since I saw you?—We sojourned long on the seashore, until a ship arrived (*fino all' arrivo d'un* —) which brought us to France.—Will you continue your narrative?—Scarcely had we arrived in France when we were taken (*condurre**) to the king, who received us very well, and sent us back to our country.—A peasant, having seen that old man (*il vecchio*) used (*servirsi di*) spectacles (*occhiali*) to read, went to an optician (*un ottico*) and asked for a pair (*e ne domandò*). The peasant then took a book, and having opened it, said the spectacles were not good. The optician put another pair (*un altro paio*) of the best which he could find in his shop (*la bottega*) upon his nose; but the peasant being still unable to read, the shopkeeper (*mercante*) said to him: "My friend, perhaps you cannot read at all?" "If I could (*se sapessi leggere*)," said the peasant, "I should not (*non avrei bisogno di*) want your spectacles."—Henry (*Enrico*) the Fourth, meeting one day in his palace (*il palazzo*) a man whom he did not know (*che gli era sconosciuto*), asked him to whom he belonged (*appartenesse*, imp. subj.). "I belong to myself," replied the man. "My friend," said the king, "you have a stupid (*stolido*) master (*padrone*)."—Tell us (*La ci racconti*) what has happened to you lately (*l'altro giorno*).—Very willingly (*ben volentieri*); but on condition (*colla condizione*) that you will listen to me without interrupting (*interrompere**) me.—We will not interrupt you: you may be (*può esserne*) sure of it.—Being lately at the theatre, I saw the Speaking Picture and the Weeping (*piangere**) Woman performed (*vedere* rappresentare*). As I did not find this latter play (*quest'ultima commedia*) very amusing (*troppo allegra per me*), I went to the

concert, where the music (*la musica*) caused me (*cazionare*) a violent head-ache (*un violento mal di testa*). I then left (*lasciare*) the concert, cursing it (*maledicendo lo*), and went straight (*e me ne andai difilato*) to the madhouse (*lo spedale dei pazzi*) in order to see my cousin. On entering (*entrando*) my cousin's hospital, I was struck with horror (*fui preso d' orrore*) at seeing (*vedendo*) several madmen (*il pazzo*), who came up to me (*avvicinarsi ad uno*), jumping (*saltare*) and howling (*urlare*).—What did you do then?—I did the same (*altrettanto*), and they set up a laugh (*mettersi a ridere*) as they withdrew (*ritirarsi*).

SIXTY-FIRST LESSON.

*Lezione Sessantesima prima.**To employ.*

When we received some money,
we employed it in purchasing
good books.

When you bought of that mer-
chant, you did not always pay
in cash.

Impiegare 1.

Quando ricevevamo del danaro,
l' impiegavamo a comprare
dei buoni libri.

Quando Ella comprava da questo
mercante, non pagava sempre
in contanti.

Has your sister succeeded in
mending your cravat?

She has succeeded in it.

Has the woman returned from
the market?

She has not yet returned.

Did the women agree to that?

They agreed to it.

Where is your sister gone?

She is gone to church.

Sua sorella ha essa potuto rac-
comodare la di Lei cravatta?

L' ha potuto.

La donna è essa ritornata dal
mercato?

Non n' è peranco ritornata.

Sono convenute in ciò le donne?

Ne son convenute.

Ov' è andata la di Lei sorella?

È andata in chiesa.

Here is, here are.

There is, there are.

There is my book.

Behold my book.

There is my pen.

Behold my pen.

There it is.

There they are.

Here I am.

Ecco.

Ecco il mio libro.

Ecco la mia penna.

Eccolo. *Fem.* eccola.

Eccoli „ eccolle.

Eccomi.

Obs. A. The pronouns are joined to the word *ecco* in the following manner :

			<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
There <i>or</i> Here	I am.	There <i>or</i> Here	we are.	Eccomi. Eccoci.
"	" thou art.	"	" you are.	Eccoti. Eccovi.
"	" he is.	"	" they are.	Eccolo. Eccoli.
"	" she is.	"	" they are.	Eccola. Eccole.

I am there.
There is some.

Eccomici, *or* eccomivi.
Eccone.

There is the man.
There is the woman.
That is the reason why.
Therefore I say so.

Ecco l' uomo.
Ecco la donna.
Ecco perchè.
Ecco perchè lo dico.

My feet are cold.
His feet are cold.
Her hands are cold.
My body is cold.
My head hurts me.

His leg hurts him.
Her leg hurts her.
He has a pain in his side.
Her tongue hurts her very much.

† Ho freddo ai piedi.
† Egli ha freddo ai piedi.
† Essa ha freddo alle mani.
† Ho freddo in tutto il corpo.
† Mi duole la testa (mi fa male la testa).
† Gli duole la gamba.
† Le duole la gamba.
† Ha male ad un lato.
† Le duole molto la lingua.

A plate.
A clean plate.
Clean plates.

Un tondo.
Un tondo pulito.
Dei tondi puliti.

The son-in-law.
The step-son.
The daughter-in-law.
The step-daughter.
The father-in-law.
The step-father.
The mother-in-law.
The step-mother.

Il genero.
Il figliastro.
La nuora.
La figliastra.
Il suocero.
Il patrigno.
La suocera.
La matrigna.

The progress.
To improve.
To improve in learning.

The progress of a malady.

Il progresso.
† Far dei progressi.
† Far dei progressi negli studii,
nelle scienze.
Il progresso (*or* i progressi)
d' una malattia.

What has become of your aunt ?	{ Ch' è avvenuto della di Lei zia ?
I do not know what has become of her.	{ Che n' è della di Lei zia ?
What has become of your sisters ?	Non so che ne sia avvenuto (subj.).
I cannot tell you what has become of them.	Ch' è avvenuto delle di Lei sorelle ?
	Non posso dirle che sia avvenuto di loro (subj.).

Wine sells well.	{ † Il vino ha grande smercio. ¹
	{ † Vi ha molta ricerca di vino.
Wine will sell well next year.	{ † Il vino avrà grande smercio l' anno venturo.
That door shuts easily.	{ † L' anno venturo il vino si venderà benissimo.
That window does not open easily.	† Questa porta si chiude agevolmente.
That picture is seen far off.	† Questa finestra non s' apre facilmente.
Winter clothes are not worn in summer.	† Questo quadro si vede da lontano.
That is not said.	† I vestiti del verno non si portano nella state.
That cannot be comprehended.	† Ciò non si dice.
<i>To conceive, to comprehend.</i>	{ † Questo non si capisce.
	{ † Questo non si concepisce.
	<i>Concepire (concepisco) ; past part. concepito ; preterite def. concepìi.</i>
It is clear.	È chiaro.

According to circumstances.	† Secondo le occorrenze.
The circumstance.	L' occorrenza (or la circostanza).
That is according to circumstances.	Secondo le circostanze.
It depends.	Dipende (dalle circostanze).

Glad.	Contento (di before inf.).
Pleased.	Soddisfatto (di before inf.).
Sorry, displeased.	Malcontento, dispiacente.

¹ *Smercio*, though in constant use, has not been sanctioned yet by *la Crusca*.

<i>To scold.</i>	<i>Sgridare</i> 1.
<i>To be angry with somebody.</i>	<i>Essere in collera con qualcuno.</i>
<i>To be angry about something.</i>	<i>Essere indispettito contro qualcuno.</i>
What are you angry about?	<i>Nutrire malanimo contro qualcuno.</i>
Are you sorry for having done it?	<i>Essere indispettito per qualche cosa.</i>
I am sorry for it.	† Qual è l' oggetto che La indispettisce?
	† Le rinerisce d' averlo fatto?
	Me ne rinerisce.

Are you rich?	È Ella ricca?
I am.	Lo sono.
Are the women handsome?	Sono belle le donne?
They are; they are rich and handsome.	Lo sono; sono ricche e belle.
Are you from France?	† È Ella Francese? È Ella di Francia?
I am.	Lo sono.
What countrywoman is she?	† Di qual paese è essa?
She is from Italy.	Essa è d' Italia.

Honest.	Onesto.
Polite.	Civile.
Uncivil.	Incivile.
Impolite.	Scortese (impulito).
Happy, lucky.	Felice.
Unhappy, unlucky.	Infelice.
Easy.	Facile.
Difficult.	Difficile.
Useful.	Utile.
Useless.	Inutile.
Is it useful to write a good deal?	È egli utile di scrivere molto?
It is useful.	È utile.
Is it well (right) to take the property of others?	È egli lecito di prendere l' avere degli altri?
It is wrong (bad).	Non va bene (sta male).
It is not well (it is wrong).	Non è lecito.
Well, right.	Bene.
Bad, wrong.	Male.

Of what use is that?	{ A che serve ciò?
That is of no use.	{ A che giova?
What is that?	{ Ciò non è buono a niente.
I do not know what that is.	{ Ciò non serve a niente.
What is it?	Che è questo?
	Non so che sia (<i>present subj.</i>).
	Che è?
I do not know what it is.	{ Non so che sia (<i>subj.</i>).
	{ Non so che cosa sia (<i>present subj.</i>).

What is your name?	{ Come si chiama?
	{ Qual è il di Lei nome?
	{ Che nome ha Ella?
My name is Charles.	{ Mi chiamo Carlo.
	{ Ho nome Carlo.
What do you call this in Italian?	Come si chiama ciò in italiano?
How do you express this in Italian?	Come si dice questo in italiano?
What is that called?	Come si chiama ciò?
That flower is called anemone.	Questo fiore ha nome anemone.

George *the* Third.

| Giorgio terzo.

Obs. B. After the Christian names of sovereigns the Italians employ the ordinary numbers, as in English, but without using the article.

Lewis the Fourteenth.	Luigi decimo quarto.
Henry the Fourth.	Enrico quarto.
Henry the First.	Enrico primo.
Henry the Second.	Enrico secondo.
Charles the Fifth spoke several European languages fluently.	Carlo Quinto parlava speditamente parecchie lingue europee.
Europe, European.	Europa, europeo.
Fluently.	• Speditamente.

Rather.

Rather—than.

Rather than squander my money,
I will keep it.
I will rather pay him than go there.
I will rather burn the coat than wear it.
He has arrived sooner than I.
A half-worn-out coat.
To do things imperfectly (by halves).

Piuttosto.

Piuttosto che (di).

Piuttosto che dissipare il mio danaro, lo conserverò.
Lo pagherò piuttosto che andarvi.
Abbrucierò l' abito piuttosto che portarlo.
Egli è arrivato prima di me.
Un abito mezzo logoro.
Far le cose a metà (a mezzo).

EXERCISES.

187.

Did your mother pray for any one when she went to church?—She prayed for her children.—For whom did we pray?—You prayed for your parents.—For whom did our parents pray?—They prayed for their children.—When you received your money, what did you do with it (*che ne facevano*)?—We employed it in purchasing (*a comprare*) some good books.—Did you employ yours also (*pure*) in purchasing books?—No; I employed it in assisting (*a soccorrere*) the poor (*i poveri*).—Did you not pay your tailor?—We did (pay him).—Did you always pay in cash when you bought of that merchant?—We always paid in cash, for we never bought on credit.—Has your sister succeeded in mending (*ha potuto raccomodare*) your stockings?—She has succeeded in it (*l' ha potuto*).—Has your mother returned from church?—She has not yet returned.—Where is your aunt gone?—She is gone to church.—Where are our cousins (*fem.*) gone?—They are gone to the concert.—Have they not yet returned from it?—They have not yet returned.—Did you forget anything when you went to school?—We often forgot our books.—Where did you forget them?—We forgot them at the school.—Did we forget anything?—You forgot nothing.

188.

Who is there?—It is I (*son io*).—Who are those men?—They are foreigners who wish to speak to you.—Of what country are they?—They are Americans.—Where is my book?—There it is.—And my pen?—Here it is.—Where is your sister?—There she is.—Where are our cousins (*fem.*)?—There they are.—Where art thou, John (*Giovanni*)?—Here I am.—Why do your children live in France?—They wish to learn French; that is the reason why they live in France.—Why do you sit near the fire?—My feet and hands are cold; that is the reason why I sit near the fire.—Are your sister's hands cold?—No; but her feet are cold.—What is the matter with your aunt?—Her leg hurts her.—Is anything the matter with you?—My head hurts me.—What is the matter with that woman?—Her tongue hurts her very much.—Why do you not eat?—I shall not eat before I have a (*prima d' aver*) good appetite.—Has your sister a good appetite?—She has a very good appetite; that is the reason why she eats so much.—If you have read the books which I lent you, why do you not return them to me?—I intend reading them once more (*ancor una volta*); that is the reason why I have not yet returned them to you; but I will return them to you as soon as I have read them a second time (*per la seconda volta*).—Why have you not brought my shoes?—They were not made, therefore I did not bring them; but I bring them

you now. here they are.—Why has your daughter not learnt her exercises?—She has taken a walk with her companion; that is the reason why she has not learnt them: but she promises to learn them to-morrow, if you do not scold (*sgridare*) her.

189.

A French officer (*uffiziale*) having arrived (*essendo arrivato*) at the court (*la corte*) of Vienna, the empress Theresa (*Teresa*) asked (*domandare*) him, if he believed that the princess of N., whom he had seen the day before (*la vigilia*), was (*fosse*, subj.) really the handsomest woman in the (*del*) world, as was said. "Madam," replied (*rispondere**) the officer, "I thought so yesterday."—How do you like that meat?—I like it very well.—May I ask you for (*Oserei domandarle*) a piece of that fish?—If you will have the goodness (*la bontà*) to pass (*porgere*) me your plate, I will give you some.—Would you have the goodness to pour me out something to drink (*di versarmi da bere*, or *di mescermi*)?—With much pleasure.—Cicero (*Cicerone*) seeing his son-in-law, who was very short (*piccolissimo*), arrive (*venire*) with a long sword (*con una lunga spada*) at his side (*allato*), said, "Who has fastened (*attaccare*) my son-in-law to this sword?"

190.

What has become of your uncle?—I will tell you what has become of him. Here is the chair (*la sedia*) upon which he often sat (*essere seduto*).—Is he dead?—He is dead.—When did he die?—He died two years ago.—I am very much grieved at it.—Why do you not sit down?—If you will stay with me, I will sit down; but if you go, I shall go with you.—What has become of your aunt?—I do not know what has become of her.—Will you tell me what has become of your sister?—I will tell you what has become of her.—Is she dead?—She is not dead.—What has become of her?—She is gone to Vienna.—What has become of your sisters?—I cannot tell you what has become of them, for I have not seen them these two years.—Are your parents still alive?—They are dead.—How long is it since your cousin (*fem.*) died?—It is six months since she died.—Did the wine sell well last year?—It did not sell very well; but it will sell better next year, for there will be a great deal, and it will not be dear.—Why do you open the door? Do you not see how it smokes here?—I see it; but you must (*bisogna*) open the window instead of opening the door.—The window does not open easily; that is the reason why I open the door.—When will you shut it?—I will shut it as soon as there is no (*che non vi sarà*) more smoke.—Did you often go out fishing when you were in that country?—We often went out fishing and hunting.—If you will go with us into the country, you will see my father's castle.—You are very polite, Sir; but I have seen that castle already.

When did you see my father's castle?—I saw it when I was travelling (*viaggiando*) last year. It is a very fine castle, and is seen far off.—How is that said?—That is not said.—That cannot be comprehended (*non si concepisce*); cannot everything be expressed in your language?—Everything can be expressed, but not as in yours.—Shall you rise early to-morrow?—It will depend upon circumstances (*secondo*); if I go to bed early, I shall rise early; but if I go to bed late, I shall rise late.—Will you love my children?—If they are good, I shall love them.—Will you dine with us to-morrow?—If you get ready (*far preparare*) the food I like, I shall dine with you.—Have you already read the letter which you received this morning?—I have not opened it yet.—When will you read it?—I shall read it as soon as I have time (*che ne avrò il tempo*).—Of what use is that?—It is of no use.—Why have you picked it up?—I have picked it up in order to show it you.—Can you tell me what it is?—I cannot tell you, for I do not know; but I will ask (*domandare a*) my brother, who will tell you.—Where did you find it?—I found it on the shore of the river, near the wood.—Did you perceive it from afar?—I had no need to perceive it from afar, for I passed by the side of the river.—Have you ever seen such a thing?—Never.—Is it useful to speak much?—It is, according to circumstances: if one wishes to learn a foreign (*straniero*) language, it is useful to speak a great deal.—Is it as useful to write as to speak?—It is more useful to speak than to write; but, in order to learn a foreign language, one must (*bisogna*) do both (*l' uno e l' altro*).—Is it useful to write all that one says?—That is useless.

SIXTY-SECOND LESSON.

Lezione Sessantesima seconda.

As to (as for).

As to me.

As to that, I do not know what to say.

I do not know what to do.

I do not know where to go.

He does not know what to answer.

We do not know what to buy.

In quanto a, or quanto a.

Quanto a me.

In quanto a me.

Quanto a ciò, non so che dire.

Non so che fare.

Non so dove andare.

Non sa che rispondere.

Non sappiamo che comprare.

To die of a disease.
 She died of the small-pox.
 The small-pox.
 The fever.
 The intermittent fever.
 The apoplexy.
 He had a cold fit.
 He has an ague.
 His fever has returned.
 He has been struck with apoplexy.

To strike.

Morire d' una malattia.*
 Essa è morta di vaiuolo.
 Il vaiuolo.
 La febbre.
 La febbre intermittente.
 { L' attacco d' apoplessia.
 Il colpo apopletico, l' apoplessia.
 Egli ha avuto un accesso di febbre.
 È preso dalla febbre.
 Gli è ritornata la febbre.
 Egli è stato colpito d' apoplessia.
Colpire (colpisce, &c.).

Sure.

To be sure of a thing.

I am sure of that.
 I am sure that she has arrived.
 I am sure of it.

Sicuro, certo (fem. sicura, certa).
Esser sicuro (certo) di qualche cosa.
 { Ne sono sicuro (certo).
 Sono certo (sicuro) di ciò.
 Sono certo ch' essa è arrivata.
 Ne sono certo (sicuro).

To happen.

Something has happened.
 Nothing has happened.
 What has happened?
 What has happened to her?
 She has had an accident.

*Accadere**; p. part. *accaduto*.
 (Conjugated like *cadere*, Lesson LI.)
Preterite Definite.
 Accaddi, accadesti, accadde.
 Accademmo, accadeste, accaderemo.
 È accaduto qualche cosa.
 Non è accaduto niente.
 Ch' è accaduto?
 Che le è accaduto?
 Essa ha avuto un' accidente.

To shed.

To pour out.

A tear.
 To shed tears.
 To pour out something to drink.

Spargere 2; p. part. sparso.*
Preterite Definite.
 Sparsi, spargesti, sparse.
 Spargemmo, spargeste, sparsero.
Versare 1.
 Una lagrima.
 Spargere lagrime.
 Versar da bere (mescere).

I pour out something to drink for that man.	Verso da bere a quest' uomo.
With tears in his, her, our, or my eyes.	Colle lagrime agli occhi.

Sweet, mild.	Dolce.
Sour, acid.	Acido, acida.
Some sweet wine.	Del vino dolce.
A mild air.	Un' aria dolce.
A mild zephyr.	Un dolce zeffiro.
A soft sleep.	Un dolce sonno.
Nothing makes life more agree- able than the society of, and intercourse with, our friends.	† Non avvi cosa che <i>renda</i> la vita così dolce quanto la società e il commercio dei nostri amici.

Obs. A. *There is*, in the above signification, may be rendered in seven different manners, viz. *avvi, evvi, vi ha, vi è, v' ha, v' è, c' è*.

<i>To repair to.</i>	<i>Rendersi a</i> (pret. def. <i>resi, rendesti, rese, &c.</i>).
To repair to the army, to one's regiment.	Rendersi all' esercito, al suo reg- gimento.
An army, a regiment.	Un esercito, un reggimento.
I repaired to that place.	Mi sono reso a quel luogo.
He repaired thither.	Si è reso colà.

<i>To cry, to scream, to shriek.</i>	<i>Gridare l.</i>
<i>To help.</i>	<i>Aiutare l</i> (governs the ac- cus. and takes <i>a</i> before the inf.).
I help him to do it.	L' aiuto a farlo.
I help you to write.	L' aiuto a scrivere.
I will help you to work.	Voglio aiutarla a lavorare.
To cry for help.	{ Chiamare aiuto.
The help.	{ Domandar soccorso.
	L' aiuto, il soccorso.

<i>To inquire after some one.</i>	<i>Informarsi di qualcuno.</i>
Will you have the goodness to pass me that plate?	Vuol Ella aver la bontà di por- germi quel piatto?
Will you pass me that plate, if you please?	† Favorisca di porgermi quel pi- atto?

To reach, offer, present.

*Porgere** 2; past part.
porto (pret. def. *porsi*,
porgesti, *porse*, &c.).
Favorire 3 (*favorisco*).

To favour.

Obs. B. If *you please* is always rendered in Italian by the imperative *favorisca*.

Please to sit down.

As you please.

At your pleasure.

As you like.

To please.

To knock at the door.

Favorisca di sedersi.

Come Le piace.

Come Le aggrada.

Aggradire 3 (*isco*).

Bussare alla porta.

Picchiare alla porta.

To trust some one.

To distrust one.

Do you trust that man?

I trust him.

He trusts me.

We must not trust everybody.

†*Affidarsi a qualcuno*.

{ Non fidarsi di taluno.

{ Diffidare di qualcuno.

Si fida Ella di quest' uomo?

Io mi fido di lui.

Egli s' affida in me (or a me).

Non bisogna fidarsi di tutti.

To laugh at something.

Do you laugh at that?

I laugh at it.

At what do they laugh?

To laugh in a person's face.

We laughed in his face.

To laugh at, to deride some one.

I laugh at (deride) you.

Did you laugh at us?

We did not laugh at you.

We never laugh at anybody.

*Ridere** di qualche cosa
(Lessons LIV. and LX.).

Preterite Definite.

Risi, ridesti, rise.

Ridemmo, rideste, risero.

Ride Ella di ciò?

Me ne rido.

Di che ridono?

Ridersi di qualcuno.

Noi ci siamo risi di lui.

{ Ridersi

{ Beffarsi

{ Farsi beffe

{ di qualcuno.

{ Mi rido di voi (di Lei).

{ Mi beffo di voi (di Lei).

Si beffava Ella di noi?

{ Non ci ridevamo di Lei (di

{ voi).

{ Non ci beffavamo di Lei (di

{ voi).

{ Non ci beffiamo mai di nessuno.

{ Non ci facciamo mai beffe di

{ nessuno.

Full A book full of errors.	Pieno. Un libro pieno d' errori.
<i>To afford.</i> Can you afford to buy that horse? I can afford it. I cannot afford it.	† <i>Aver di che. Aver con che.</i> Ha Ella di che comprare quel cavallo? Ho di che comprarlo. Non ho di che comprarlo.
Who is there? <i>It</i> is I.	Chi è di là? Sono io.
<i>Obs. C.</i> The impersonal pronoun <i>it</i> is not rendered in Italian.	
<i>It</i> is not I. Is <i>it</i> he? <i>It</i> is not he. Are they your brothers?	Non sono io. È desso? Non è desso. Sono i di Lei fratelli (<i>or</i> i suoi, <i>or</i> i vostri fratelli)? Sono essi. Non sono essi. È dessa? È dessa. Non è dessa.
<i>It</i> is they. <i>It</i> is not they. Is <i>it</i> she? <i>It</i> is she. <i>It</i> is not she. Are they your sisters?	Sono le di Lei sorelle (<i>or</i> le sue, <i>or</i> le vostre sorelle)? Sono esse. Non sono esse. Son io che parlo. Son essi (<i>fem.</i> esse) che ridono? È Lei che ride (siete voi che ridete). Sei tu che hai fatto ciò?
Is <i>it</i> thou who hast done it? <i>It</i> is you, gentlemen, who have said that.	{ Siete voi, signori, che avete detto ciò. Sono loro, signori, che hanno detto ciò.
We learn Italian, my brother and I. You and I will go into the country. You and he will stay at home.	
You will go to the country, and I will return to town. A lady. A lady of the court.	Mio fratello ed io impariamo l' italiano. Ella (voi) ed io andremo in campagna. Ella (voi) ed esso resteranno a casa.
What were you doing when your tutor was here?	Voi andrete (Ella andrà) in campagna, ed io ritornerò in città. Una signora. Una dama di corte. Che faceva (facevate) quando il di Lei (il vostro) precettore era qui?

I was doing nothing.
What did you say?
I said nothing.

Io non faceva niente (nulla).
Che diceva Ella?
Io non diceva niente.

EXERCISES.

192.

Where did you take this book from?—I took it out of your friend's (*fem.*) room (*nella camera*).—Is it right (*permesso*) to take the books of other people?—It is not right, I know; but I wanted it, and I hope that your friend will not be displeased (*non ne sarà incresciosa*), for I will return it to her as soon as I have read it.—What is your name?—My name is William (*Guiglielmo*).—What is your sister's name?—Her name is Eleanor (*Eleonora*).—Why does Charles complain of his sister?—Because she has taken his pens.—Of whom are these children complaining?—Francis (*Francesco*) complains of Eleanor, and Eleanor of Francis.—Who is right?—They are both (*tutti e due*) wrong; for Eleanor wishes to take Francis's books, and Francis Eleanor's.—To whom have you lent Dante's works (*le opere di Dante*)?—I have lent the first volume to William and the second to Louisa (*Luigia*).—How is that said in Italian?—It is said thus.—How is that said in French?—That is not said in French.—Has the tailor brought your new coat?—He has brought it me, but it does not fit me.—Will he make you another?—He will make me another; for, rather than wear it, I will give it away (*dar via*).—Will you use that horse?—I shall not use it.—Why will you not use it?—Because it does not suit me.—Will you pay for it?—I will rather pay for it than use it.—To whom do those fine books belong (*appartengono*)?—They belong to William.—Who has given them to him?—His father.—Will he read them?—He will tear them rather than read them.—Who has told you that?—He has told me so himself (*egli stesso*).

193.

What countrywoman is that lady (*la signora*)?—She is from France.—Are you from France?—No, I am from Germany.—Why do you not give your clothes to mend?—It is not worth while, for I must have (*mi abbisognano*) new clothes.—Is not the coat which you wear a good one?—It is a half-worn-out coat, and is good for nothing.—Are you angry with any one (*essere in collera con qualcuno*)?—I am angry with Louisa, who went to the opera without telling me a word of it.—Where were you when she went out?—I was in my room.—I assure you that she did not know it.—Charles the Fifth, who spoke fluently (*speditamente*) several European languages, used to say (*aveva costume di dire*), that we should speak (*che bisognava parlare*) Spanish with the gods, Italian with our

friend (*fem.*), French with our friend (*mas.*), German with soldiers, English with geese (*colle oche*), Hungarian (*ungherese*) with horses, and Bohemian (*boemo*) with the devil.

194.

Of what illness did your sister die?—She died of fever.—How is your brother?—My brother is no longer alive. He died three months ago.—I am surprised (*maravigliato*) at it, for he was very well last summer when I was in the country.—Of what did he die?—He died of apoplexy.—How is your friend's mother?—She is not (*non istà*) well; she had an attack of ague the day before yesterday, and this morning the fever has returned (*le è ritornata*).—Has she intermittent fever?—I do not know, but she has often cold fits.—What is become of the woman whom I saw at your mother's?—She died this morning of apoplexy.—Do your scholars learn their exercises by heart?—They will tear them rather than learn them by heart.—What does this man ask me for?—He asks you for the money which you owe him.—If he will repair to-morrow morning (*domani mattina*) to my house, I will pay him what I owe him.—He will rather lose his money than repair thither (*rendervisi*).—Why does the mother of our old servant shed tears? What has happened to her?—She sheds tears because the old clergyman (*il vecchio ecclesiastico*), her friend, who was so very good to her (*che le faceva tanto bene*), died a few days ago.—Of what illness did he die?—He has been struck with apoplexy.—Have you helped your father to write his letters?—I have helped him.—Will you help me to work when we go (*quando noi andremo*) to town?—I will help you to work, if you help me to get a livelihood.

195.

Have you inquired after the merchant who sells so cheap?—I have inquired after him, but nobody could tell me what has become of him.—Where did he live when you were here three years ago?—He lived then (*allora*) in Charles-street (*nella contrada Carlo*, or *via Carlo*), number fifty-seven.—How do you like this wine?—I like it very well, but it is a little sour.—How does your sister like those apples (*la mela*)?—She likes them very well, but she says that they are a little too sweet.—Will you have the goodness to pass me that plate?—With much pleasure.—Shall I (*devo*) pass you these fishes?—I will thank you to (*prego di*) pass them to me.—Shall I (*devo*) pass the bread to your sister?—You will oblige her (*Le farà piacere*) by passing it to her (*nel porgerglielo*).—How does your mother like our food?—She likes it very well, but she says that she has eaten enough.—What dost thou ask me for?—Will you be kind enough to (*La prego di*) give me a little bit (*un pezzetto*) of that mutton?—Will you pass me the bottle, if you please (*favorisca*)?—Have you not drunk enough?—Not yet, for I am

still thirsty.—Shall I (*devo io*) give you (*versarle*) some wine?—No; I like cider better.—Why do you not eat?—I do not know what to eat.—Who knocks at the door?—It is a foreigner.—Why does he cry?—He cries because a great misfortune has happened to him.—What has happened to you?—Nothing has happened to me.—Where will you go this evening?—I do not know where to go.—Where will your brothers go?—I do not know where they will go; as for me, I shall go to the theatre.—Why do you go to town?—I go thither in order to purchase some books.—Will you go there with me?—I will go with you, but I do not know what to do there.

SIXTY-THIRD LESSON.

Lezione Sessantesima terza.

To get into a scrape.

† *Attirarsi addosso cattivi affari.*

To get out of a scrape.

† *Cavarsi d' impiccio.*

I got out of the scrape.

Mi son cavato d' impiccio.

That man always gets into scrapes, but he always gets out of them again.

Quest' uomo s' attira mai sempre addosso cattivi affari, ma n' esce sempre facilmente.

Between.

Amongst or amidst.

} *Fra or tra.*

To make some one's acquaintance.

Far conoscenza con qualcuno.

To become acquainted with somebody.

I have made his or her acquaintance.

Ho fatto la sua conoscenza.

I have become acquainted with him or her.

Are you acquainted with him (her)?

Lo (la) conosce Ella?

Do you know him (her)?

Lo (la) conosco.

I am acquainted with him (her).

I know him (her).

He or she is an acquaintance of mine.

È di mia conoscenza, or
È una mia conoscenza.

She or he is my acquaintance.

He is not a friend, he is but an acquaintance.

Non è un amico, è solamente una conoscenza.

<i>To enjoy.</i>	<i>Godere 2, di.</i>
Do you enjoy good health?	{ Gode Ella buona salute?
	{ Gode Ella d' una buona salute?
<i>To be well.</i>	{ <i>Star bene.</i>
	{ <i>Essere in buona salute.</i>
She is well.	{ Sta bene.
	{ È in buona salute.
<i>To imagine.</i>	{ <i>Immaginare.</i>
	{ † <i>Immaginarsi.</i>

Our fellow-creatures.	I nostri simili.
He has not his equal, or his match.	Egli non ha l' uguale.

<i>To resemble some one, to look like some one.</i>	<i>Rassomigliare a qualcuno.</i>
That man resembles my brother.	Quest' uomo rassomiglia a mio fratello.
That beer looks like water.	Questa birra pare acqua.
Each other.	L' un l' altro.
We resemble each other.	Noi ci rassomigliamo.
They do not resemble each other.	Eglio (<i>fem. elleno</i>) non si rassomigliano.
The brother and the sister love each other, but do not resemble each other.	Il fratello e la sorella s' amano, ma non si rassomigliano.
Are you pleased with each other?	Siete (sono) contenti l' un dell' altro?
We are.	Lo siamo.
So, thus.	Così.
As, or as well as.	{ Siccome, come.
	{ Egualmente che.
	{ In quel modo che.

<i>The appearance, the countenance.</i>	<i>La ciera (la cera, l' aspetto, la sembianza, la vista).</i>
<i>To show a disposition to.</i>	<i>Far vista, far mostra di.</i>
That man whom you see shows a desire to approach us.	Quell' uomo che vede fa vista d' avvicinarsi a noi.
<i>To look pleased with some one.</i>	{ <i>Far buona cera a qualcuno.</i>
	{ <i>Accogliere bene qualcuno.</i>
<i>To look cross at some one.</i>	{ <i>Far cattiva cera a qualcuno.</i>
	{ <i>Accogliere male qualcuno.</i>

When I go to see that man, instead of receiving me with pleasure, he looks displeased.

A good-looking man.

A bad-looking man.

Bad-looking people, or folks.

To go to see some one.

To pay some one a visit.

To frequent a place.

To frequent societies.

To associate *with* some one.

Quando vado da quell' uomo, in vece di farmi (mostrarmi) buona cera, egli mi fa (mi mostra) cattiva cera.

Quando vado da quell' uomo, in vece d' accogliermi bene, egli m' accoglie male.

Un uomo di buon aspetto.

Un uomo di cattivo aspetto.

Gente di cattivo aspetto.

Visitare qualcuno, *or* far visita a qualcuno.

Restituire la visita a qualcuno, *or* render la visita a qualcuno.

Frequentare un luogo, *or* andar spesso in un luogo.

Frequentare spesso la società.

Frequentare qualcuno.

To look like, to appear.

How does he look?

He looks gay (sad, contented).

You appear very well.

You look like a doctor.

She looks angry, appears to be angry.

They look contented, appear to be contented.

To look good, to appear to be good.

Aver l' aspetto (aver l' aria).

Che cera ha?

Ha la cera lieta (trista, contenta).

Ella ha l' aspetto di star bene.

Ella ha l' aspetto d' un medico.

Essa ha il sembiante indispettito.

Eglino hanno l' aspetto contento.

Aver l' aspetto buono.

To drink some one's health.

I drink your health.

It is all over with me.

It is all over.

† Bere alla salute di qualcuno.

† Bevo alla di Lei salute.

{ † Son perduto (*fem.* perduta).

{ † Sono ito (*fem.* ita).

E finita.

To hurt some one's feelings.

You have hurt that man's feelings.

Far dispiacere a qualcuno.

Ha fatto dispiacere a quell' uomo.

A place.

I know a good place to swim in.

Un luogo.

† Conosco un buon luogo per nuotare.

<i>To experience, to undergo.</i>	<i>Sperimentare</i> 1.
I have experienced a great many misfortunes.	{ <i>Ho sperimentato molte disgrazie.</i> <i>Son passato per molte disgrazie.</i>

To suffer.

To open.
 To offer.
 To cover.
 To cover again.
 To discover.

*Soffrire** 3; p. part. *sofferto*.
*Aprire** 3; " " aperto.
*Offrire** 3; " " offerto.
*Coprire** 3; " " coperto.
*Ricoprire** 3; " " ricoperto.
*Scoprire** 3; " " scoperto.

To feel a pain in one's head or foot.
 I felt a pain in my eye.

Soffrir dolori al capo, al piede.
 Ho sofferto all' occhio.

To neglect.

He has neglected his duty.
 He neglects to call upon me.
To yield.

Trascurare 1, *negligere** 2,
non badare 1; past part.
negletto.
Preterite Definite.
Neglessi, negligesti, neglesse.
Negli- negligeste, neglessero.
gemmo,
Ha trascurato il suo dovere.
Egli pensa poco a visitarmi.
Cedere 2; pret. def. re-
 gular *cedetti*, or *cessi*
 (rarely used).
Bisogna cedere alla necessità.

We must yield to necessity.

To spring forward.

The cat springs upon the rat.
 To leap on horseback.

Lanciarsi 1, or *slanciarsi* 1.
 Il gatto si slancia sul sorcio.
 Lanciarsi a cavallo.

An increase, an augmentation.

For more bad luck.

For more good luck.
 The fulness.

For more bad luck (to complete my bad luck) I have lost my purse.

Un aumento (un' aggiunta, un accrescimento).
 Per colmo di sventura (d' infelicità).
 Per colmo di fortuna.
 Il colmo.
 Per colmo di sventura ho perduto la mia borsa.

To lose one's wits.

That man has lost his wits, and
he does not know what to do.

Decidedly, by all means.

That man wishes by all means to
lend me his money.

To follow.

I follow, thou followest, he fol-
lows, &c.

*To pursue.**To preserve, to save.**Perdere la testa.*

Quell' uomo ha perduto la testa,
e non sa che fare.

Ad ogni patto.

Quest' uomo vuole ad ogni patto
prestarmi il suo danaro.

Seguire 1, seguire 3.

Seguo or sieguo, segui or
siegui, segue or siegue, &c.

*Perseguire 1, inseguire **
3 (is conj. like *seguire**).*Conservare 1.*

EXERCISES.

196.

Must I sell to that man on credit?—You may sell to him, but not on credit; you must not trust him, for he will not pay you.—Has he already deceived (*ingannare*) anybody?—He has already deceived several merchants who have trusted him.—Must I trust those ladies?—You may trust them; but as to me I shall not trust them, for I have often been deceived by (*dalle*) women, and that is (the reason) why I say: We must not trust everybody.—Do those merchants trust you?—They trust me and I trust them.—Whom do those gentlemen laugh at?—They laugh at those ladies who wear red dresses (*la veste*) with yellow ribbons.—Why do these people laugh at us?—They laugh at us because we speak badly.—Ought we (*dobbiamo*) to laugh at persons who speak badly?—We ought not to laugh at them; we ought, on the contrary (*devesi al contrario*), to listen to them, and, if they make blunders (*errori*), we ought to correct them.—What are you laughing at?—I am laughing at your hat; how long (*da quando in quà*) have you worn it so large?—Since (*da che*) I returned from Germany.—Can you afford to (*ha Ella di che*) buy a horse and a carriage?—I can (afford it).—Can your brother afford to buy that large house?—He cannot afford it.—Will your cousin buy that horse?—He will buy it, if it pleases (*convenire**) him.—Have you received my letter?—I have received it with much pleasure. I have shown it to my Italian master, who was surprised (*che è rimasto meravigliato*), for there was not a single fault in it.—Have you already received Petrarca's and Boccaccio's works (*le opere del Petrarca e del Boccaccio*)?—I have received those of Boccaccio; as to those of Petrarca, I hope to receive them next week.

197.

Is it thou, Charles, who hast soiled my book?—It is not I; it is your little sister who has soiled it.—Who has broken my fine ink-

stand?—It is I who have broken it.—Is it you who have spoken of me?—It is we who have spoken of you, but we have said of you nothing but good (*se non del bene*).—Who knocks at the door?—It is I; will you open?—What do you want (*desiderare*)?—I come to ask you for the money which you owe me, and the books which I lent you.—If you will have the goodness to come to-morrow. I will return both to you.—Is it your sister who is playing on the harpsichord?—It is not she.—Who is it?—It is my cousin (*fem.*).—Are they your sisters who are coming?—It is they.—Are they your neighbours (*fem.*) who were laughing at you?—They are not our neighbours.—Who are they?—They are the daughters of the countess whose brother has bought your house.—Are they the ladies of whom you have spoken to me?—They are.—Shall you learn German?—My brother and I will learn it.—Shall we go to the country to-morrow?—I shall go to the country, and you will remain in town.—Shall I and my sister go to the opera?—You and she will remain at home, and your brother will go to the opera.—What did you say when your tutor was scolding you (*La riprendeva*)?—I said nothing, because I had nothing to say, for I had not (*non avendo io*) done my task, and he was in the right to scold me (*di rampognarmi*).—What were you doing whilst (*quando*) he was out (*fuori*)?—I was playing on the violin, instead of doing what he had given me to do.—What has my brother told you?—He has told me that he will be the happiest man when he knows how (*quando saprà*) to speak Italian well.

198.

Why do you associate with those people?—I associate with them (*la frequento*) because they are useful to me.—If you continue to associate with them, you will get into scrapes, for they have many enemies.—How does your cousin conduct himself?—He does not conduct himself very well, for he is always getting into some scrape (or other).—Do you not sometimes get into scrapes?—It is true (*vero*) that I sometimes get into them, but I always get out of them again (*ma n' esco sempre felicemente*).—Do you see those men who seem desirous (*che fanno vista*) of approaching us?—I see them, but I do not fear them; for they hurt nobody.—We must go away (*bisogna allontanarci*), for I do not like to mix with people whom I do not know.—I beg of you not to be afraid of them (*averne paura*), for I perceive my uncle among them.—Do you know a good place to swim in?—I know one.—Where is it?—On that side of the river, behind the wood, near the high road (*vicino alla via maestra*).—When shall we go to swim?—This evening, if you like.—Will you wait for me before the city gate?—I shall wait for you there; but I beg of you not to forget it.—You know that I never forget my promises.—Where did you become acquainted with that lady?—I became acquainted with her at the house of one of my relations.—Why does your cousin ask me for money and books?—

He is a fool (*un pazzo*); for of me (*a me*), who am his nearest relation (*il suo più prossimo parente*) and his best friend, he asks nothing.—Why did you not come to dinner (*venir a pranzare*)?—I have been hindered, but you have been able to dine without me (*senza di me*).—Do you think (*credere*) that we shall not dine, if you cannot come?—How long (*sino a quando*) did you wait for me?—We waited for you till a quarter past seven, and, as you did not come, we dined without you.—Have you drunk my health?—We have drunk your health, and that of your parents.

SIXTY-FOURTH LESSON.

Lezione Sessantesima quarta.

How good you are!	{ Quanto Ella è buona! or simply:
How foolish he is!	{ Quanto è buono!
How foolish she is!	{ Quanta bontà!
How rich that man is!	{ Quanto è sciocco!
How handsome that woman is!	{ Quanto è sciocca!
How much kindness you have for me!	{ Quanto è ricco quell' uomo!
How many obligations I am under to you!	{ Quanto è bella quella donna!
	{ Quanta bontà Ella ha per me!
	{ Quante obbligazioni Le ho!
	{ Quanto vi son debitore!

<i>To be under obligations to some one.</i>	<i>Aver delle obbligazioni verso qualcuno.</i>
I am under many obligations to him.	Gli ho molte obbligazioni.
How many people!	Quanta gente!
How happy you are!	Quanto Ella è felice!
How much wealth that man has!	Quante ricchezze ha quell' uomo!
How much money that man has spent in his life!	Quanto danaro ha speso quell' uomo nella sua vita!

To be obliged to some one for something.	Esser obbligato verso qualcuno per qualche cosa.
To be indebted to some one for something.	Esser debitore verso (or a) qualcuno di qualche cosa.
I am indebted to him (to her) for it.	Gl'ieno sono debitore.

To thank.

Ringraziare (governs the accusative of the person, and the preposition *per* of the object, as in English).

To thank some one for something.

Ringraziare qualcuno per qualche cosa.

I thank you for the trouble you have taken for me.

La ringrazio per la pena ch' Ella si è data per me.

You have no reason for it.

{ Non ne vale il prezzo.
{ Non ne vale la pena.

Is there anything more great?
Is there anything more cruel?
Is there anything more wicked?
Can anything be more handsome?

Che v' è di più grande?
Che v' è di più crudele?
Che v' è di più cattivo?
V' è qualche cosa di più bello?

How large? Of what size?
How high? Of what height?
How deep? Of what depth?

Di che grandezza?
Quanto è alto (alta)?
Quanto è profondo (profonda)?

Of what height is his or her house?

Quanto è alta la sua casa?

It is nearly fifty feet high.
Our house is thirty feet broad.

È alta cinquanta piedi incirca.
La nostra casa è larga trenta piedi.

That table is six feet long.
That river is twenty-feet deep.

Quella tavola è lunga sei piedi.
Questo fiume è profondo venti piedi.

The size.

La statura, grandezza, forma.

Of what size is that man?

Di quale statura è quell' uomo?

How was that child dressed?
It was dressed in green.
The man with the blue coat.
The woman with the red dress.

Come era vestito quel fanciullo?
† Egli era vestito di verde.
† L' uomo dall' abito turchino.
† La donna dalla veste rossa.

True.

Is it true that his house is burnt?

Vero.

È vero che la sua casa è abbruciata?

It is true.

È vero.

Is it not?

Non è vero?

Is it not true?

Non è egli vero?

Perhaps.
I shall perhaps go thither.
To share, to divide.

Forse.
V' andrò forse.
*Dividere** 2; past part.
diviso; pret. def. *divisi*.

Whose?

Diche? (See Lessons XXI.
and XXIX.)

Obs. The absolute possessive pronoun, *mine*; *thine*, &c., when it is preceded by the verb *to be*, *essere*, is in Italian rendered merely by the possessive pronoun. *Ex.*

Whose horse is this?
It is mine.
Whose horses are these?
They are mine.
Whose house is this?
It is mine.
Whose houses are these?
They are mine.

Di chi è questo cavallo?
È mio.
Di chi son questi cavalli?
Sono miei.
Di chi è questa casa?
È mia.
Di chi son queste case?
Sono mie.

To run up.

Many men had run up; but, instead of extinguishing the fire, they set to plundering.
To run to the assistance of some one.

To extinguish.

The miscreant.

*Accorrere** 2; past part.
accorso; pret. def. *accorsi*.
Molti uomini erano accorsi, ma in vece d' estinguere il fuoco, s' erano messi a predare.
Accorrere al soccorso di qualcuno.

*Estinguere**; past part.
estinto; pret. def. *estinsi*.
Lo scellerato.

To save, to deliver.

To save anybody's life.
To plunder (to rob).
To set about something.
Have they succeeded in extinguishing the fire?
They have succeeded in it.

Salvare 1. *Liberare* 1.
Salvare la vita a qualcuno.
Predare 1.
† Mettersi a qualche cosa.
Sono pervenuti ad estinguere il fuoco?
Vi sono pervenuti.

The watch.
The watch indicates the hours.
To indicate, to mark.

L' oriuolo.
L' oriuolo indica le ore.
Indicare 1.

<i>To quarrel.</i>	<i>Contendere</i> 1.
To quarrel with some one.	Rimproverare qualcuno.
<i>To dispute (to contend) about something.</i>	<i>Disputare sopra qualche cosa.</i>
About what are these people disputing?	Sopra che cosa disputano quegli uomini?
They are disputing about who shall go first.	Disputano a chi tocca andare il primo.

<i>Thus or so.</i>	<i>Così, in questa guisa.</i>
<i>To be ignorant of.</i>	<i>Ignorare</i> 1.
<i>Not to know.</i>	<i>Non sapere.</i>

<i>The day before.</i>	<i>La vigilia.</i>
The day before that day was Saturday.	La vigilia di quel giorno era un sabato.
The day before Sunday is Saturday.	La vigilia della domenica è il sabato.

EXERCISES.

199.

How does your uncle look (*che cera ha* —)?—He looks (*ha la cera*) very gay (*lietissima*), for he is much pleased with his children.—Do his friends look as gay (*hanno la cera così lieta*) as he?—They, on the contrary, look sad, because they are discontented. My uncle has no money, and is always contented; and his friends, who have a good deal (of it) are scarcely ever so.—Do you like your sister?—I like her much, as she is (*ed essendo*) very good-natured (*compiacentissima*) to me, I am so to her; but how do you like your sister?—We love each other, because we are pleased with each other.—A certain (*certo*) man liked wine much, but he found in it (*gli*) two bad qualities (*la qualità*). “If I put water to it,” said he, “I spoil it, and if I do not put any to it, it spoils me (*guasta me*).”—Does your cousin resemble you?—He resembles me.—Do your sisters resemble each other?—They do not resemble each other; for the elder (*la primogenita*) is idle and naughty, and the younger (*la cadetta*) assiduous and good-natured towards everybody.—How is your aunt?—She is very well.—Does your mother enjoy good health?—She imagines she enjoys (*essa s’immagina di godere*) good health, but I believe she is mistaken (*ch’essa s’inganni*, subj.) for she has had a bad cough (*la tosse*) these six months, of which (*della quale*) she cannot get rid.—Is that man angry with you?—I think he is angry with me because I do not go to see him; but I do not like to go to his house, for when I go to

him, instead of receiving me with pleasure, he looks displeased.—You must not believe that; he is not angry with you, for he is not so bad as he looks (*come ne ha l'aspetto*). He is the best man in the (*del*) world; but one must know him in order to appreciate him (*per poterlo apprezzare*).—There is a great difference (*la differenza*) between you and him; you look pleased with all those who come to see you, and he looks cross with them.

200.

Is it right (*sta bene*) to laugh thus at everybody?—If I laugh (*quando mi beffo*) at your coat, I do not laugh at everybody.—Does your son resemble any one?—He resembles no one.—Why do you not drink?—I do not know what to drink, for I like good wine, and yours looks like vinegar (*è come aceto*).—If you wish to have some other, I shall go down (*discenderò*) into the cellar to fetch you some.—You are too polite, Sir; I shall drink no more to-day.—Have you known my father long?—I have known him long, for I made his acquaintance when I was yet at school. We often worked for one another, and we loved each other like brothers.—I believe it, for you resemble each other.—When I had not done my exercises he did them for me, and when he had not done his I did them for him.—Why does your father send for the physician?—He is ill; and, as the physician does not come (*non venendo*), he sends for him.—Ah (*Ah*), it is all over with me!—But, bless me (*Dio mio*), why do you cry thus?—I have been robbed of my gold rings, my best clothes, and all my money; that is the reason why I cry.—Do not make (*non faccia*) so much noise, for it is we who have taken them all (*tutto ciò*), in order to teach you (*per apprenderte*) to take better care (*ad aver più cura*) of your things (*effetti*), and to shut the door of your room when you go out.—Why do you look so sad?—I have experienced great misfortunes. After having lost all my money, I was beaten by bad-looking men; and, to my still greater ill luck, I hear that my good uncle, whom I love so much, has been struck with apoplexy.—You must not afflict yourself (*affliggersi*) so much, for you know that we must yield to necessity (*necessità non ha legge*).

201.

Can you not get rid of that man?—I cannot get rid of him, for he will absolutely (*ad ogni patto*) follow me.—Has he not lost his wits?—It may be (*può darsi*).—What does he ask you for?—He wishes to sell me a horse which I do not want.—Whose houses are those?—They are mine.—Do these pens belong to you?—No, they belong to my sister.—Are those (*sono quelle*) the pens with which she writes so well?—They are the same (*le medesime*).—Whose gun is this?—It is my father's.—Are these books your sister's?—They are hers.—Whose carriage is this?—It is mine.—Which is the man of whom you complain?—It is he (*quello*) who wears (*che*

indossa) a red coat.—“What is the difference (*che differenza c'è*) between a watch and me?” inquired (*domandò*) a lady of a young officer. “My lady,” replied he (*questi le rispose*), “a watch marks the hours, and near you (*e presso di Lei*) one forgets them.”—A Russian peasant, who had never seen asses (*un asino*), seeing several (*vedendone alcuni*) in France, said (*disse*): “Lord (*Dio mio*), what large hares (*la lepre*) there are in this country!”—How many obligations I am under to you, my dear friend! you have saved my life! without you I had been lost (*io era ito*).—Have those miserable men hurt you?—They have beaten and robbed me; and when you ran to my assistance they were about (*erano sul punto*) to strip (*spogliare*) and kill me.—I am happy to have delivered you from the hands of those robbers (*il briccone*).—How good you are!

SIXTY-FIFTH LESSON.

Lezione Sessantesima quinta.

To propose.

I propose, &c.

I propose going on that journey.

He proposes joining a hunting party.

A game at chess.

A game at billiards.

A game at cards.

*Proporsi** (is conjugated like *porre*, Lesson XLIV.).

{ Mi propongo, ti proponi, si propone.
Ci proponiamo, vi proponete, si propongono.

Past part. propostosi; *Fut.* proporrò; *Pret. def.* proposi, proponesti, &c.

Mi propongo di far questo viaggio.

Si propone d'andare ad una partita di caccia.

Una partita agli scacchi (or a' scacchi).

Una partita al bigliardo.

Una partita alle carte.

To succeed.

I succeed, &c.

Do you succeed in doing that?

I do succeed in it.

*Riuscire** (a before Inf.).

Riesco, riesci, riesce.

Rusciamo, riuscite, riescono.

Riesce Ella a far ciò?

Vi riesco.

<i>To endeavour.</i>	<i>Sforzarsi</i> (<i>di</i> before <i>Inf.</i>).
I endeavour to do it.	Mi sforzo di farlo.
I endeavour to succeed in it.	Mi sforzo di riuscirvi.
Endeavour to do better.	{ <i>La si sforzi di far meglio.</i> <i>Sforzatevi di far meglio.</i>

<i>Since, considering.</i>	<i>Giacchè</i> (<i>poichè, dacchè, da che</i>).
Since you are happy, why do you complain?	<i>Giacchè</i> <i>Ella è felice, perchè si lagna?</i>

<i>To be thoroughly acquainted with a thing.</i>	{ <i>Essere in istato di far una cosa.</i> <i>Conoscere qualche cosa a fondo.</i>
<i>To make one's self thoroughly acquainted with a thing.</i>	+ <i>Informarsi (istruirsi) di qualche cosa.</i>
That man understands that business perfectly.	Quell' uomo è istruito di quell' affare.
I understand that well.	Sono istruito di ciò.

<i>Since or from.</i>	<i>Da poi</i> (or simply <i>da</i>).
From that time.	Da quel momento.
From my childhood.	Dalla mia giovinezza (infanzia).
From morning until evening.	{ <i>Dal mattino fino alla sera.</i> <i>Da mane a sera.</i>
From the beginning to the end.	<i>Dal principio sino alla fine.</i>
From here to there.	<i>Da qui fino là.</i>
I have had that book these two years.	{ <i>Ho questo libro da due anni in poi.</i> <i>Ho questo libro da due anni.</i>
I have lived in Paris these three years.	{ <i>Dimoro a Parigi da tre anni.</i> <i>Dimoro a Parigi da tre anni in poi.</i>

To blow, to blow out. | *Soffiare* 1.

<i>To allege (to bring).</i>	{ <i>Addurre</i> * 2; formerly <i>adducere</i> .
I allege, &c.	<i>Pres.</i> <i>Adduco</i> ; <i>P. part.</i> <i>addotto</i> ;
We allege, &c.	<i>Pret. def.</i> <i>addussi</i> ; <i>Fut.</i> <i>addurrò.</i>
	<i>Adduco, adduci, adduce.</i>
	<i>Adduciamo, adducete, adducono.</i>

IN THE SAME MANNER ARE CONJUGATED :

<i>To conduct.</i>	<i>Condurre* 2, formerly conducere.</i>
<i>To infer.</i>	<i>Dedurre* 2, „ deducere.</i>
<i>To introduce.</i>	<i>Introdurre* 2, „ introducere.</i>
<i>To produce.</i>	<i>Produrre* 2, „ producere.</i>
<i>To reconduct.</i>	<i>Ricondurre* 2, „ riconducere.</i>
<i>To reduce, to subdue.</i>	<i>Ridurre* 2, „ ridurre.</i>
<i>To produce again.</i>	<i>Riprodurre* 2, „ riproducere.</i>
<i>To seduce.</i>	<i>Sedurre* 2, „ seducere.</i>
<i>To translate.</i>	<i>Tradurre* 2, „ traducere.</i>

Obs. A. Verbs ending in *ucere, gliere, nere, aere*, have been contracted, so that they have two infinitives; the ancient Latin one, as: *adducere*, to allege; *cogliere*, to gather (to catch); *ponere*, to put; *traere*, to draw; and the new contracted one, as: *addurre, cōrre, porre, trarre*. The second contracted one is always used in the infinitive from which *the future* and the present of the *conditional* (of which hereafter) are formed, as: *addurrò*, I shall allege; *cōrrò*, I shall gather; *porrò*, I shall put; *trarrò*, I shall draw, &c. (See Lesson XLVI.) But all the other tenses are in such verbs formed from the ancient Latin infinitive.

<i>To put, to place.</i>	<i>Porre* ; formerly ponere.*</i>
I put, &c.	Pongo, poni, pone.
We put, &c.	Poniamo, ponete, pongono.
	<i>Past part.</i> posto; <i>Pret. def.</i> posi; <i>Fut.</i> porrò.
<i>To draw.</i>	<i>Trarre* 2; formerly trahere.</i>
I draw, &c.	Traggo, traggi, tragge or trae.
We draw, &c.	Traggiamo, traete, traggono.
	<i>Past part.</i> tratto, <i>Pret. def.</i> trassi; <i>Fut.</i> trarrò.

¹ And all its compounds, such as :

Anteporre,	to prefer.	Imporre,	to impose.
Apporre,	to add.	Opporre,	to oppose.
Comporre,	to compound.	Postporre,	to postpone.
Contrapporre,	to oppose.	Preporre,	to prefer.
Deporre,	to depose.	Proporre,	to propose.
Disporre,	to dispose.	Soprapporre,	to put over.
Esporre,	to expose.	Sottoporre,	to subdue.
Frapporre,	to interpose.	Supporre,	to suppose.

In the same manner are conjugated :

<i>Astrarre,</i>	<i>to abstract.</i>	<i>Detrarre,</i>	<i>to detract.</i>
<i>Attrarre,</i>	<i>to attract.</i>	<i>Estrarre,</i>	<i>to extract.</i>
<i>Contrarre,</i>	<i>to contract.</i>	<i>Sottrarre,</i>	<i>to draw away.</i>

To gather.
I gather, &c.
We gather, &c.

*Córrere** 2, or *cogliere*.²
Colgo, cogli, coglie.
Cogliamo, cogliete, colgono.
Past part. colto; *Pret. def.*
colsi; *Fut.* còrrerò or coglierò.

In the same manner are conjugated :

<i>To choose.</i>	<i>Scerre</i> * or <i>scegliere</i> 2 (<i>scelto</i> , <i>scelsi</i> , <i>scerrò</i> or <i>sceglierò</i>).
<i>To untie, to loose.</i>	<i>Sciorre</i> * or <i>sciogliere</i> 2 (<i>sciolto</i> , <i>sciolsi</i> , <i>sciorrò</i> or <i>scioglierò</i>).
<i>To take.</i>	<i>Tórre</i> * or <i>togliere</i> 2 (<i>tolto</i> , <i>tolsi</i> , <i>tórrò</i> or <i>toglierò</i>).

To drink.
I drink, &c.
We drink, &c.

*Bere** or *bevere*.
Bevo, bevi, beve.
Beviamo, bevete, bevono.
Past part. bevuto or bevuto;
Pret. def. bevvi; *Fut.* berrò.

Obs. B. Besides the above there are a few other verbs terminated in *ere* long, *i.e.* with the accent on the last syllable but one, which are not contracted in the infinitive, but only in the future (and consequently in the conditional, hereafter), when they reject the letter *e* of the last syllable but one (Lesson XLVI.). They are :

<i>To have.</i>	<i>Avēre</i> *	<i>Fut.</i> avrò.
<i>To be obliged (owe).</i>	<i>Dovēre</i> *	„ dovrò.
<i>To be able (can).</i>	<i>Polēre</i> *	„ potrò.
<i>To know.</i>	<i>Sapēre</i> *	„ saprò.
<i>To see.</i>	<i>Vedēre</i> *	„ vedrò.
<i>To appear.</i>	<i>Parēre</i> *	„ parrò.

Obs. C. When the verbs in *ere* long have *l* or *n* before that termination, those letters are in the contracted form of the future and conditional, for the sake of euphony, changed into *r*, as :

² In verbs in *gliere* the contracted forms are more generally used in poetry.

<i>To remain.</i>	<i>Rimanēre</i> Fut. <i>rimarrò.</i>
<i>To hold.</i>	<i>Tenēre</i> „ <i>terrò.</i>
<i>To ache.</i>	<i>Dolēre</i> „ <i>dorrò.</i>
<i>To be worth.</i>	<i>Valēre</i> „ <i>varrò.</i>
<i>To be willing.</i>	<i>Volēre</i> „ <i>vorrrò.</i>

To destroy.

Distruggere *.

P. part. distrutto; *Pret. def.* distrussi.

To construct.

Costruire * (*isco*).

P. part. costruito *and* costrutto.

Pret. def. costrussi, costruisti, &c.

To reduce the price.

Ridurre * *il prezzo.*

To reduce the price to a crown.

Ridurre il prezzo ad uno scudo.

To translate into Italian.

Tradurre in italiano.

To translate from Italian into English.

Tradurre dall'italiano in inglese.

To translate from one language into another.

Tradurre da una lingua in un'altra.

I introduce him to you.

L' introduco a Lei.

I present him to you.

Glielo presento.

To present.

Presentare l.

Self.

Stesso or medesimo : fem.

Stessa or medesima.

Selves.

PLUR. *Stessi or medesimi* ;
fem. *stesse or medesime.*

Myself.

Io stesso, or io medesimo.

Thyself.

Tu stesso, or tu medesimo.

Himself.

Egli stesso, or egli medesimo.

Herself.

Ella stessa, or Ella medesima.

Ourselves.

Noi stessi, or noi medesimi.

Yourselves.

Voi stessi, or voi medesimi.

Themselves.

{ *Eglino stessi, or eglino medesimi.*

One's self.

{ *Elleno stesse, or elleno medesime.*

Se stesso, or se medesimo.

He himself has told it me.

Me l' ha detto egli stesso (egli medesimo).

He has told me, myself (not to another person).

L' ha detto a me stesso (a me medesimo).

I also told him the same.

Gli ho detto anch' io lo stesso.

In the same manner.

Nello stesso modo.

It is all the same.

È tutto lo stesso (è tutt' uno).

One does not like to flatter one's self.

Non piace lusingar se stesso (or se medesimo).

Even.

Even not.

He has not even money enough to buy some bread.

We must love everybody, even our enemies.

Anche.

Nemmeno.

Non ha nemmeno abbastanza denaro per comprar del pane.

Bisogna amar tutti, anche i nostri nemici.

Again (once more).

He speaks again (anew).

Di nuovo, un' altra volta.

Parla di nuovo.

To fall.

The price of the merchandize falls.

*To deduct, to lower.**To overcharge, to ask too much.*

Not having overcharged you, I cannot deduct anything.

An ell, a yard.

A metre (measure).

{ *Abbassare* l.{ *Ribassare* l.

† La mercanzia ribassa di prezzo.

{ *Diminuire* (isco).{ *Dedurre* * (formerly *deducere*).† *Domandar più che la cosa non vale.*

Non avendo domandato troppo (più che la cosa non vale), non lo posso diminuir di niente.

Un braccio; *pl.* bracci: un' auna.

Un metro.

To produce (to yield, to profit, to bring in).

How much does that employment yield you a year?

An employment.

{ *Riportare* l.{ *Rendere* * (p. part. *reso*; pret. def. *resi*).{ *Dare* * (p. part. *dato*; pret. def. *diedi* and *detti*).

Quanto Le rende quest' impiego all' anno?

Un impiego (un officio).

*To make one's escape.**To run away (to flee).**To take to one's heels.**To desert.*

He deserted the battle.

He deserted his colours.

{ *Prender la fuga, fuggirsene.*{ *Disertare, scappare* l.

Egli ha abbandonato la battaglia.

Egli ha disertato la bandiera.

To run away.

The thief has run away.

Evadersi, fuggirsene.

Il ladro se n' è fuggito.

By no means.
Not at all.

Non mica, in nessun modo.
Niente affatto.

EXERCISES.

202.

Will you go to Mr. Vimerati to-night?—I shall perhaps go.—And will your sisters go?—They will, perhaps.—Had you any pleasure (*divertirsi*) yesterday at the concert?—I had no pleasure there; for there was such a multitude of people (*tanta gente*) that we could hardly get in.—I bring you a pretty present with which you will be much pleased.—What is it?—It is a silk cravat.—Where is it?—I have it in my pocket (*nella mia tasca*).—Does it please you?—It pleases me much, and I thank you for it with all my heart. I hope that you will at last (*finalmente*) accept (*accettare*) something of (*da*) me.—What do you intend to give me?—I will not tell you; for, if I tell you, you will have no pleasure when I give it you (*glielo darò*).—Have you seen any one at the market?—I have seen a good many people there.—How were they dressed?—Some were dressed in blue, some in green, some in yellow, and several (*diversi altri*) in red.—Who are those men?—The one who is dressed in grey is my neighbour, and the man with the black coat the physician, whose son has given my neighbour a blow with a stick.—Who is the man with the green coat?—He is one of my relations.—Are there many philosophers in your country?—There are as many (there) as in yours.—How does this hat fit me?—It fits you very well.—How does that coat fit your brother?—It fits him admirably.—Is your brother as tall (*grande*) as you?—He is taller than I, but I am older than he.—Of what size (*di quale statura*) is that man?—He is five feet and four inches (*il pollice*) high.—How high is our landlord's house?—It is sixty feet high.—Is your well deep?—Yes, Sir, for it is fifty feet deep.—“There are many learned men (*il dotto*) in Rome. are there not (*non è vero*)?” Milton asked a Roman. “Not so many as when you were there,” answered (*rispose*) the Roman.

203.

Is it true that your uncle is arrived?—I assure you that he is arrived.—Is it true that the king has assured you of his assistance (*l'assistenza*)?—I assure you that it is true.—Is it true that the six thousand (*mila*, plur.) men whom we were expecting have arrived?—I have heard so.—Will you dine with us?—I cannot dine with you, for I have just eaten.—Will your brother drink a glass of wine?—He cannot drink, for I assure you that he has just drunk.—Why are these men quarrelling?—They are quarrelling because they do not know what to do.—Have they succeeded in extinguishing the fire?—They have at last succeeded (in it); but it is said that

several houses have been (*siano state*, subj.) burnt.—Have they not been able to save anything?—They have not been able to save anything; for, instead of extinguishing the fire, the miserable wretches (*lo scellerato*), who had come up, set to plundering.—What has happened?—A great misfortune has happened.—Why did my friends set out without me?—They waited for you till twelve o'clock, and seeing that you did not come they set out.—What is the day before Monday called?—The day before Monday is Sunday.—Why did you not run to the assistance (*in aiuto*) of your neighbour whose house has been burnt?—I was quite ignorant (*ignorare interamente*) of his house being on fire (*che l'incendio fosse nella di lui casa*).

204.

Well (*Ebbene*)! does your sister make any progress?—She makes some, but you make more than she.—You flatter me.—Not at all; I assure you I am more satisfied with you than with all my other pupils.—Do you already know what has happened?—I have not heard anything.—Our neighbour's house has been burnt down (*abbruciata*).—Have they not been able to save anything?—They were very fortunate (*felicissimi*) in saving the persons who were in it; but out of the things (*delle cose*) that were there (*trovarsi*) they could save nothing.—Who told you that?—Our neighbour himself (*istesso*) (has told it me).—Why are you without a light (*senza lume*)?—The wind blew it out (*l'ha spento*) when you came in.—What is the price of this cloth?—I sell it at three crowns and a half the ell.—I think (*trovare*) it very dear.—Has the price of cloth not fallen (*diminuito*)?—It has not fallen; the price of all goods (*la mercanzia*) has fallen, except that of cloth (*eccettuato quello del panno*).—I will give you three crowns for it.—I cannot let you have (*dare**) it for that price (*a questo prezzo*), for it costs me more (*costa più a me*).—Will you have the goodness to show me some pieces (*la pezza*) of English cloth?—With much pleasure.—Does this cloth suit you?—It does not suit me.—Why does it not suit you?—Because it is too dear; if you will lower the price, I shall buy twenty yards of it.—Not having asked too much, I cannot take off anything.

SIXTY-SIXTH LESSON.

Lezione Sessantesima sesta.

A kind, sort (a species).
 What kind of fruit is that?
A stone (of a fruit).
 A stone of a peach, an apricot, a plum.
 Stone fruit.
 One must break the stone, before one comes to the kernel.
 A kernel.
 An almond.
 Kernel-fruit.

Una sorta.
 Che sorta di frutto è questo?
 Un nocciolo.
 Un nocciolo di pesca, di albicocco, di prugna.
 Frutto da nocciolo.
 Bisogna rompere il nocciolo per aver la mandola (mandorla).
 Un acino, una mandola (mandorla).
 Una mandola.
 Frutti da acino.

It is a kernel-fruit.
To gather.
To gather fruit.
To serve up the soup.
To bring in the dessert.
 The fruit.
 An apricot.
 A peach.
 A plum.
 An anecdote.
 Roast meat.
 The last.
 Last week.
 Last year.

To cease, to leave off.
 I leave off reading.
 She leaves off speaking.

È un frutto da acino.
Córrre or cogliere.*
Cogliere frutti.
Portar in tavola la zuppa.
Portar in tavola le frutta.
 Il frutto.
 Un albicocco.
 Una pesca.
 Una prugna.
 Un aneddoto.
 Dell' arrosto.
 L' ultimo, l' ultima.
 { La settimana scorsa.
 { La settimana passata.
 L' anno scorso (passato).
Cessare l.
 Cesso di (or dal) leggere.
 Cessa di (or dal) parlare.

To avoid.
To escape.
 To escape a misfortune.
 He ran away to avoid death.

Evitare l.
Scampare l, scappare l.
 Scampare da una disgrazia.
 { Ha preso la fuga per iscampare dalla morte.
 { Scappò per fuggir la morte.

To do without a thing.

Can you do without bread?

I can do without it.

There are many things which we must do without.

Privarsi di qualche cosa.
Far a meno di qualche cosa.
 Può Ella privarsi di pane?
 Può Ella far a meno del pane?
 Posso farne a meno.
 Vi sono moltissime cose di cui è necessario farne a meno.

To execute a commission.

To acquit one's self of a commission.

I have executed your commission.
 Have you executed my commission.

I have executed it.

To do one's duty.

To discharge, to do, or to fulfil one's duty.

That man always does his duty.

That man always fulfils his duty.

Far una commissione.

Ho fatto la di Lei commissione.
 Ha Ella fatto la mia commissione?

L' ho fatta.

Far il suo dovere.

Adempiere al suo dovere.

Quest' uomo fa sempre il suo dovere.

Quest' uomo adempie sempre al suo dovere.

To rely, to depend upon something.

He depends upon it.

I rely upon you.

You may rely upon him.

Contare su qualche cosa.
Fur capitale di qualche cosa.
 Ci conta.
 Fo capitale di Lei.
 Mi fido di Lei.
 Può fidarsi a (or di) lui.
 Può fidarsene.
 Può far capitale di lui.

To suffice, to be sufficient.

Is that bread sufficient for you?

It is sufficient for me.

It is sufficient for me, for thee, &c.

Will this money be sufficient for that man?

It will be sufficient for him.

Little wealth suffices for the wise.

Was this man contented with that sum?

Bastare l.

Le basta questo pane?

Mi basta.

+ Mi basta, ti basta, &c.

Questo danaro basterà a quell' uomo?

Gli basterà.

Poca fortuna basta al savio.

Quest' uomo si è egli contentato di quella somma?

Has that sum been sufficient for this man?

It has been sufficient for him.
He has been contented with it.
To be contented with something.
It will be sufficient for him, if you will only add a few crowns.

He will be contented, if you will only add a few crowns.

To add.

To build.

To embark, to go on board.

A sail.

To set sail.

To set sail for.

To sail for America.

To sail.

Under full sail.

To sail under full sail.

He embarked on the sixteenth of last month.

He sailed on the third instant.
The instant, the present month.
The fourth or fifth instant.

The letter is dated the sixth instant.

That is to say (i. e.).

Et cætera (etc.).

My pen (quill) is better than yours.

I write better than you.

They will warm the soup.

Dinner (or supper) is on the table (is served up).

Quella somma è bastata a quest' uomo?

Gli è bastata. Gli bastò.

Se n' è contentato.

Contentarsi di qualche cosa.

Gli basterà, se vuol aggiugnervi solamente qualche scudo.

Se ne contenterà, se vuol aggiugnervi solamente pochi scudi.

*Aggiungere** 2 (p. p. aggiunto; pret. d. aggiunsi).

*Costruire** 2, isco (past part. costruito or costrutto, p. d. costrussi).

Fabbricare 1.

Imbarcarsi. Entrar nella nave.

Una vela.

+ Mettere alla vela.

+ Spiegare le vele.

+ Far vela per.

Far vela per l' America.

Andare in America.

Andare a vela.

A piene vele.

A gonfie vele.

Spiegar tutte le vele.

S' è imbarcato il sedici del mese scorso.

È entrato nella nave il sedici del mese passato.

Ha fatto vela il tre del corrente.

Il corrente.

Il quattro, o il cinque del corrente.

La lettera è del sei corrente.

Cioè, vale a dire.

Eccetera, e simili.

La mia penna è migliore della di Lei.

Scrivo meglio di Lei.

Si farà scaldare la zuppa.

È in tavola.

Do you choose some soup.
Shall I help you to some soup?

I will trouble you for a little.

To serve up, to attend.

Desidera Ella della zuppa?

Desidera Ella che io La serva
della zuppa?

{ † Gliene domando un poco.

{ † Me ne favorisca un poco.

Servire, presentare, offrire.

EXERCISES.

205.

You are learning Italian; does your master let you translate?—He lets me read, write, and translate.—Is it useful to translate in learning a foreign language?—It is useful to translate when you nearly know (*quando già si sa*) the language you are learning; but while (*quando*) you do not yet know anything (*non se ne sa niente*) it is entirely (*affatto*) useless.—What does your Italian master make you do?—He makes me read a lesson; afterwards he makes me translate English exercises into Italian on the lesson which he has made me read; and from the beginning to the end of the lesson he speaks Italian to me, and I have to (*devo*) answer him in the very language (*nella lingua stessa*) which he is teaching me.—Have you already learnt much in that manner?—You see that I have already learnt something, for I have hardly been learning it three months, and I already understand you when you speak to me, and can answer you.—Can you read (it) as well (*del pari*)?—I can read and write as well as speak (it).—Does your master also teach German?—He teaches it.—Wishing to make (*desiderando fare*) his acquaintance, I must beg of you (*La prego*) to introduce me to him.—It will give me (*Mi farà un*) pleasure to introduce you to him.—When do you wish to go to him?—To-morrow in the afternoon (*dopo mezzogiorno*), if you please (*se Le aggrada*).

206.

How many exercises do you translate a day?—If the exercises are not difficult, I translate from three to four every day (*da tre a quattro al giorno*); and when they are so, I translate but one (*uno solo*).—How many have you already done to-day?—It is the third which I am translating (*sto traducendo*); but to-morrow I hope to be able to do one more (*uno di più*), for I shall be alone (*solo*).—Have you paid a visit to my aunt?—I went to see her two months ago (*or fan due mesi*), and as she looked displeased I have not gone to her any more since that time (*da quel tempo*).—How do you do to-day?—I am very unwell (*molto male*).—How do you like that soup?—I think (*la trovo*) it is very bad; since I have lost my appetite (*l'appetito*), I do not like anything (*non mi piace più niente*).—How much does that employment bring in (*rendere**) to your father?—It brings him in (*gli rende*, or *gli dà*) more than four thousand (*mila*, plur. of *mille*) crowns.—What news is there

(dire*)?—They say nothing new.—What do you intend to do to-morrow?—I propose joining a hunting party.—Does your brother purpose (*divisa egli*) playing (*far*) a game at billiards?—He proposes playing a game at chess.—Why do some people (*perchè mai sonvi persone*) laugh when I speak?—Those are unpolite people; you have only to laugh also (*Ella pure*), and they will no longer laugh at you.—If you will do as I do, you will speak well. You must study a little (*Le abbisogna studiare qualche poco*) every day, and you will soon be no longer afraid to speak.—I will endeavour to follow your advice, for I have resolved (*mi son proposto*) to rise every morning at six o'clock, to study till ten o'clock, and to go to bed early.—Why does your sister complain?—I do not know; since (*quando*) she succeeds in everything, and since she is (*e ch'è*) happy, even happier than you and I, why does she complain?—Perhaps she complains because she is not thoroughly acquainted (*non è istruita*) with that business (*in tale faccenda*).—That may be (*può darsi*).

207.

Have they served up the soup?—They have served it up some minutes ago.—Then (*allora*) it must be (*dev' essere*) cold, and I only like soup hot (*la zuppa calda*).—They will warm it for you.—You will oblige me.—Shall I help you to some (*desidera Ella*) of this roast meat?—I will trouble you for a little.—Will you eat some of this mutton?—I thank you; I like fowl better.—May I offer you (*desidera Ella che La serva di*) some wine?—I will trouble you for a little (*me ne favorisca un poco*).—Have they already brought in (*portato in tavola*) the dessert?—They have brought it in.—Do you like fruit?—I like fruit, but I have no more appetite.—Will you eat a little cheese?—I will eat a little.—Shall I help you to English or Dutch cheese?—I will eat a little Dutch cheese.—What kind of fruit is that?—It is a stone-fruit.—What is it called?—It is called thus.—Will you wash your hands?—I will wash them, but I have no towel to (*per*) wipe them (with).—I will let you have (*Le farò dare*) a towel, some soap, and some water.—I shall be much obliged to you.—May I ask you for (*oso domandarle*) a little water?—Here is some (*eccone*).—Can you do without soap?—As for soap, I can do without it, but I must have a towel to wipe my hands (with).—Do you often do without soap?—There are many things which we must do without (*di cui è necessario privarsi*).—Why has that man run away?—Because he had no other means of escaping the punishment (*dalla punizione*) which he had deserved (*meritare*).—Why did your brothers not get (*procurarsi*) a better horse?—When they get rid of (*quando avranno alienato*) their old horse, they will get a better.—Has your father already arrived?—Not yet; but we hope that he will arrive this very day (*oggi stesso*).—Has your friend set out in time?—I do not know, but I hope he has (*che sarà*) set out in time.

SIXTY-SEVENTH LESSON.

*Lezione Sessantesima settima.**To be a judge of something.*

Are you a good judge of cloth?

I am a judge of it.

I am not a judge of it.

I am a good judge of it.

I am not a good judge of it.

Intendersi di qualche cosa.
Conoscersi di (or in) qualche cosa.

Si conosce Ella di panno?

Mi vi conosco (me ne intendo).

Non mi vi conosco (non me ne intendo).

Mi vi conosco benissimo.

Non mi vi conosco molto.

*To draw.**To chalk, to trace.*

To draw a landscape.

To draw after life.

The drawing.

The designer.

Nature.

*Disegnare 1.**Calcare 1, ricalcare 1.*

Disegnare una vista di paese.

Disegnare dal naturale (dal vero).

Il disegno.

Il disegnatore.

La natura.

To manage, or to go about a thing. † *Prendersi.*

How do you manage to make a fire without tongs?

I go about it so.

You go about it the wrong way.

I go about it the right way.

How does your brother manage to do that?

Skilfully, handily, dexterously, cleverly.

Awkwardly, unhandily, badly.

Come si prende Ella per far del fuoco senza molle?

Mi vi prendo così.

Ella vi si prende male.

Mi vi prendo bene.

Come si prende il di Lei fratello per far ciò?

Destramente.

Senza giudizio.

To forbid.

I forbid you to do that.

To lower.

To cast down one's eyes.

Proibire 3 (isco).

Le (vi) proibisco di far ciò.

Abbassare 1.

Abbassare gli occhi.

The curtain.
The curtain rises.
The curtain falls.

To rise.

To fall, to descend.

The stocks have fallen.
The day falls.
Night comes on.
It grows towards night.
It grows dark.
It grows late.

To stoop.

La tela, il sipario.
Si alza il sipario.
Cala il sipario.

Alzarsi 1.

Calare 1.

Il cambio ha bassato (è calato).

Declina il giorno.

La notte s' avvicina.

† Si fa notte.

† Si fa oscuro.

† Si fa tardi.

Abbassarsi 1.

To smell, to feel.

He smells of garlic.
To feel some one's pulse.

To consent.

I consent to it.
Who says nothing consents.

Sentire 3.

{ Ha un cattivo odor d' aglio.

{ Puzza d' aglio.

Toccar il polso a qualcuno.

Consentire 3. *Acconsentire* 3.

V' acconsento.

Chi tace conferma.

To hide, to conceal.

The mind.

In deed.

In fact.

The truth.

The fact.

The effect.

True.

A true man.

This is the right place for that picture.

*Nascondere** 2 (past part. *nascoso* or *nascosto*; pret. def. *nascosi*).

La mente, lo spirito.

In verità.

† In fatti, † in vero.

La verità.

Il fatto.

L' effetto.

Vero.

Un uomo verace.

Ecco il vero luogo per questo quadro.

To think much of one (to esteem one).

To esteem some one.

I do not think much of that man.

I think much of him (I esteem him much).

{ † *Far conto di qualcuno.*

{ *Aver in istima qualcuno.*

Stimare qualcuno.

Non fo gran conto di quest' uomo.

Fo gran conto di lui (lo stimo molto).

The flower, the bloom, the blossom.

That man has his eyes on a level with his head.

On a level with, even with.

To blossom (to flourish).

To grow.

To grow rapidly (fast).

To grow tall or big.

That child grows so fast that we may even see it.

That child has grown very fast in a short time.

That rain has made the corn grow.

Corn.

Il fiore.

Quest' uomo ha gli occhi al piano della testa.

Al piano, a livello.

Fiorire 3 (isco).

Crescere 2 (past part. cresciuto; pret. def. crebbi).*

Crescere rapidamente.

Ingrandire 3 (isco).

Questo fanciullo ingrandisce a vista.

Questo fanciullo ha molto ingrandito in poco tempo.

Questa pioggia ha fatto ingrandire il grano.

Grano.

Lodging.

A shelter.

A cottage, a hut.

To shelter one's self from something. }

To take shelter from something. }

Let us shelter ourselves from the rain, the wind.

Let us enter that cottage, in order to be sheltered from the storm (the rain).

Un alloggio.

Un ricovero, un rifugio.

Una capanna.

Mettersi al ricovero da qualche cosa.

Mettiamoci al ricovero dalla pioggia, dal vento.

Entriamo in questa capanna per essere al coperto della tempesta, or per metterci al ricovero delle ingiurie del tempo.

Everywhere, all over, throughout.

All over (throughout) the town.

A shade.

Under the shade.

Let us sit down under the shade of that tree.

Dappertutto.

Per tutta la città.

Un' ombra.

All' ombra.

Andiamo a sederci all' ombra di quest' albero.

To pretend.

That man pretends to sleep.

Fingere di (past part. finto; pret. def. finì).*

Quest' uomo finge di dormire.

Quest' uomo fa sembiante di dormire.

That young lady pretends to
know Italian.
They pretend to come near us.

Questa signorina finge di sapere
l'italiano.
Fanno sembianza d'avvicinarsi
a noi.

Now.

From, since.

From morning.

From morning till night.

From the break of day.

From the cradle. From a
child.

From this time forward.

As soon as.

As soon as I see him, I shall
speak to him.

Ora, al presente, adesso.

Da, fin da, dal.

Dalla mattina.

Da mattina a sera.

Dallo spuntar del giorno.

Fin dalla culla. Fin dall'in-
fanzia.

Da ora in poi.

Tosto che, appena.

Tosto ch'io lo vedrò, gli par-
lerò.

For fear of.

To catch a cold.

I will not go out for fear of
catching a cold.

He does not wish to go to town
for fear of meeting with one
of his creditors.

He does not wish to open his
purse for fear of losing his
money.

{ *Per timore (per tema).*

{ *Sul timore.*

{ *Infreddarsi.*

{ *Pigliar un'infreddatura.*

Non voglio uscire per timore
d'infreddarmi.

Non vuol andar in città per
timore d'incontrar un suo
creditore.

Non vuol aprire la borsa per
timore di perdere il suo da-
naro.

To copy, to transcribe.

To decline.

To transcribe fairly.

A substantive, an adjective, a
pronoun.

A verb, a preposition, a gram-
mar, a dictionary.

Copiare 1.

Declinare 1.

Mettere in netto.

Un sostantivo, un aggettivo
(addiettivo), un pronome.

Un verbo, una preposizione, una
grammatica, un dizionario.

EXERCISES.

208.

Have you executed my commission?—I have executed it.—Has your brother executed the commission which I gave him?—He has executed it.—Will you execute a commission for me?—I am under so many obligations to you, that I shall always execute your commissions when it shall please you to give me any.—Will you ask the merchant whether (*se*) he can let me have (*darmi*) the horse at

the price (*al prezzo*) which I have offered him?—I will ask him, but I know that he will be satisfied, if you will but add a few crowns.—Good morning, children (*ragazzi*)!—Have you done your task?—You well know that we always do it when we are not ill.—What do you give us to do to-day?—I give you the sixty-seventh lesson to study, and to do the exercises belonging to it (*che ne dipendono*); that is to say, the two hundred and eighth and two hundred and ninth.—Will you endeavour (*si studieranno*) to commit no errors (*far errori*)?—We shall endeavour (*ci studieremo*) to make none.—Is this bread sufficient for you?—It is sufficient for me, for I am not very hungry.—When did your brother embark for America?—He sailed on the thirtieth (*il trenta*) of last month.—Will you ask your brother whether he is satisfied with the (*del*) money which I have sent him?—As to my brother, he is satisfied with it, but I am not so; for having suffered shipwreck (*far naufragio*), I am in want of the money which you owe me.—Do you promise me to speak to your brother?—I promise you, you may depend upon it.—I rely upon you.—Will you work (*studiare*) harder (*meglio*) for the next lesson than you have done (*che non ha studiato*) for this?—I will work harder.—May I rely upon it?—You may.

209.

Are you a judge of cloth?—I am (a judge of it).—Will you buy some yards for me?—If you will give me the money I will buy you some.—You will oblige me (*Ella mi farà piacere*, or *Gliene sarò tenuto*).—Is that man a judge of cloth?—He is not a good judge of it.—How do you manage to do that?—I manage it so.—Will you show me how to manage it?—Very willingly (*molto volentieri*).—What must I do (*che debbo fare*) for my lesson of to-morrow?—You will transcribe your exercises fairly (*mettere in netto*), do three others, and study the next lesson (*la lezione seguente*).—How do you manage to get goods (*delle mercanzie*) without money?—I buy on credit.—How does your sister manage to learn Italian without a dictionary?—She manages it thus.—She manages it very dexterously. But how does your brother manage it?—He manages it very awkwardly (*senza alcun giudizio*): he reads and looks for the words in the dictionary.—He may (*può*) learn (*studiare*) in this manner twenty years without knowing how to make a single sentence (*una sola frase*).—Why does your sister cast down her eyes?—She casts them down because she is ashamed of not having done her task.—Shall we breakfast in the garden to-day?—The weather is so fine that we should take advantage of it (*che bisogna approfittarne*).—How do you like that coffee?—I like it very much.—Why do you stoop?—I stoop to pick up (*per prendere*) the handkerchief which I have dropped.—Why do your sisters hide themselves?—They hide themselves for fear of being seen.—Of whom are they afraid?—They are afraid of their governess (*la maestra*), who scolded (*rampognare* or *sgridare*) them yesterday because they had not done their tasks (*il lor dovere*, in the sing.).

SIXTY-EIGHTH LESSON.

Lezione Sessantesima ottava.

To get beaten (whipped).	† Farsi battere.
To get paid.	† Farsi pagare.
To get one's self invited to dine.	† Farsi invitare a pranzo.

At first.	Da principio, a prima vista.
Firstly.	Primieramente, in primo luogo.
Secondly	Secondariamente, in secondo luogo.
Thirdly, &c.	In terzo luogo, ecc.

Is your mother at home?	È in casa la di Lei madre?
She is.	Vi è.
I am going to her house.	Vado da essa.

<i>A cause.</i>	{ <i>Un motivo, una causa, una cagione.</i>
A cause of complaint.	<i>Un soggetto.</i>
A cause of sadness.	Un soggetto di dispiacere.
She has reason to be sad.	Un soggetto di tristezza.
Grief, sorrow, sadness.	Ha un motivo di tristezza.
Is that woman ready to go out?	Il dispiacere, la tristezza.
She is.	Questa donna è dessa pronta ad uscire?
	Lo è.

<i>Notwithstanding, in spite of.</i>	{ <i>Malgrado.</i>
Notwithstanding that.	<i>A dispetto, ad onta.</i>
In spite of him.	Malgrado ciò.
In spite of her.	Malgrado di lui or suo malgrado.
In spite of them.	Malgrado di essa or suo malgrado.
In spite of me.	Malgrado di loro or loro malgrado.
	Mio malgrado.

To manage.

Do you manage to finish your work every Saturday night?

Do you manage to have your work done every Saturday night?

Try to do that to oblige me.

† *Far in modo di.*

† Fa Ella in modo di finire il di Lei lavoro ogni sabato sera?

† Fa Ella in modo d'aver finito il di Lei lavoro ogni sabato sera?

Faccia in modo di far ciò per compiacermi.

Obs. Whenever *in order to* can be substituted for the preposition *to* the latter is rendered in Italian by *per*, to express the end, the design, or the cause, for which a thing is done.

I will do everything to oblige you. | Farò tutto per compiacerle.

To look upon.

The window looks into the street.

The window looks out upon the river.

This apartment looks upon the street.

That back-door looks into the garden.

{ *Dar su.*

{ *Sorgere su.*

{ *Guardare su.*

La finestra dà (sorge) sulla strada.

La finestra sorge (dà) sul fiume.

Quest' appartamento dà (sorge) sulla strada.

La porta di dietro dà sul giardino.

To drown.

To drown a dog.

To drown one's self, to get drowned.

To be drowned, to be drowning.

To leap through the window.

To throw out of the window.

I am drowning.

He jumped out of the window.

Annegare (affogare).

Annegare un cane.

Annegarsi (affogarsi).

Saltare dalla finestra.

Gettare dalla finestra.

Mi annego.

Saltò dalla finestra.

To fasten.

He was fastened to a tree.

Attaccare.

L' attaccarono ad un albero.

The cattle.

To keep warm.

To keep cool.

To keep clean.

To keep on one's guard against some one.

Il bestiame.

† Tenersi caldo.

† Tenersi fresco.

† Tenersi pulito.

† Star all' erta contro qualcuno.

† Mettersi (porsi) in guardia contro qualcuno.

Keep on your guard against that man.

To take care (to beware) of somebody.

To take care (to beware) of something.

If you do not take care of that horse, it will kick you.

Take care that you do not fall!

To beware of somebody or something.

Keep on your guard against that man.

Take care!

Stia all' erta contro quest' uomo.

Guardarsi di (da) qualcuno.

Badare a qualche cosa.

Se non bada a quel cavallo, Le darà un calcio.

† Badi di non cadere!

Guardarsi di qualcuno o di qualche cosa.

La si guardi da quest' uomo.

Badi! (La badi!)

A thought.

A idea.

A sally.

To be struck with a thought.

A thought strikes me.

A thought has struck me.

That never crossed my mind.

To take into one's head.

He took it into his head lately to rob me.

What is in your head?

Un pensiero, un pensiero.

Un' idea.

Un impeto.

{ † Venir in pensiero.

{ † Cader nell' animo.

{ Mi viene un pensiero.

{ Mi viene in mente.

{ M'è venuto un pensiero.

{ M'è venuto in mente.

{ Questo non m'è mai caduto nell' animo.

{ Questo non m'è mai passato per la testa.

† *Immaginare* l.

† Egli immaginò l' altro giorno di rubarmi.

† Che immagina Ella?

In my place.

In your, his, her place.

We must put everything in its place.

In mio luogo. In mia vece.

In vostro, di Lei, a suo luogo.

Bisogna mettere ogni cosa a suo luogo.

Around, round.

All around.

We sailed around England.

They went about the town to look at the curiosities.

To go round the house.

To go about the house.

Intorno (a preposition).

Intorno intorno. Tutto intorno.

Navigammo intorno all' Inghilterra.

Andarono quà e là per la città per vederne le cose notabili.

{ Andare intorno alla casa.

{ Far il giro della casa.

Andar quà e là nella casa.

<i>To cost.</i>	<i>Costare l.</i>
How much does that cost you?	Quanto Le costa?
How much does this book cost you?	Quanto Le costa questo libro?
It costs me three crowns and a half.	Mi costa tre scudi e mezzo.
That table costs him seven crowns.	Questa tavola gli costa sette scudi.

<i>Alone, by one's self.</i>	<i>Solo ; fem. sola.</i>
I was alone.	Io era solo.
One woman only.	Una sola donna.
One God.	Un solo Dio.
God alone can do that.	Dio solo può far questo.
The very thought of it is criminal.	Il pensiero solo di ciò è criminoso.
A single reading is not sufficient to satisfy a mind that has a true taste.	Una sola lettura non basta per contentare un uomo che ha buon gusto.

<i>To kill by shooting.</i>	<i>Uccidere con arma da fuoco.</i>
To blow out some one's brains.	Far saltare le cervella a qualcuno.
	Bruciare le cervella a qualcuno.
	Mandar a qualcuno le cervella all' aria.
To shoot one's self with a pistol.	Uccidersi con una pistolettata.
He has blown out his brains.	Si è fatto saltare le cervella.
He has blown out his brains with a pistol.	Si è fatto saltare le cervella con una pistolettata.
He has blown out his (that man's) brains with a pistol.	Gli ha mandato all' aria le cervella con una pistolettata.

He served for a long time, acquired honours, and died contented.	Servi gran tempo, giunse agli onori, e morì contento.
He arrived (here) poor, grew rich in a short time, and lost all in a still shorter time.	Arrivò povero, diventò ricco in poco tempo, e perdè tutto in meno tempo ancora.

EXERCISES.

210.

What is the matter with you? Why do you look so melancholy (*così melanconico*)?—I should not look so melancholy, if I had no reason to be sad. I have heard just now that one of my friends

has shot himself with a pistol, and that one of my wife's best friends has drowned herself.—Where did she drown herself?—She drowned herself in the river which is behind her house. Yesterday, at four o'clock in the morning, she rose (*si levò*) without saying a word to any one (*ad alcuno*), leaped out of the window which looks into the garden, and threw herself into the river, where she was drowned.—I have a great mind (*gran voglia*) to bathe (*bagnarsi*) to-day.—Where will you bathe?—In the river.—Are you not afraid of being drowned?—Oh, no! I can swim.—Who taught you?—Last summer I took a few lessons in the swimming-school (*alla scuola del* (or *di*) *nuoto*).

When had you finished your task?—I had finished it when you came in.—Those who had contributed (*contribuire*) most (*più*) to his elevation to the throne (*alla sua elevazione sul trono*) of his ancestors, were those who laboured (*lavorare*) with the greatest eagerness (*con più animosità*) to precipitate him from it (*per precipitarlo*).—As soon as (*Dacchè*) Cæsar (*Cesare*) had crossed (*passare*) the Rubicon (*il Rubicone*), he had no longer to deliberate (*deliberare*): he was obliged (*dovette*) to conquer (*vincere*) or to die.—An emperor (*un imperatore*), who was irritated at (*irritato contro*) an astrologer (*un astrologo*), asked him: "Wretch (*miserabile*)! what death (*di che sorta di morte*) dost thou believe thou wilt die?" "I shall die of fever," replied the astrologer. "Thou liest," said the emperor; "thou wilt die this instant of a violent death (*di morte violenta*)."
As he was going to be seized (*stavano per prenderlo*), he said to the emperor, "Sire (*Sire*), order some one (*ordinare*) to feel (*che mi si tocchi*, subj.) my pulse, and it will be found that I have a fever." This sally (*questo detto*) saved his life.

211.

Do you perceive yonder house (*quella casa laggiù*)?—I perceive it; what house is it?—It is an inn (*una locanda*); if you like, we will go into it to drink a glass of wine, for I am very thirsty.—You are always thirsty when you see an inn.—If we enter, I shall drink your health.—Rather than go into an inn, I will not drink.—When will you pay what you owe me?—When I have (*avrò*) money; it is useless to ask me for any to-day; for you know very well that there is nothing to be had of him who has nothing.—When do you think you will have any money?—I think I shall have some next year.—Will you do what I am going to tell you?—I will do it if it is not too difficult.—Why do you laugh at me?—I do not laugh at you, but at your coat.—Does it not look like yours?—It does not look like it, for mine is short (*corto*), and yours is too long (*lungo*); mine is black, and yours is green.—Why do you associate with that man?—I would not associate with him (*non lo frequenterei*, cond.) if he had not rendered me (*se non m'avesse reso*, subj.) great services (*gran servizi*).—Do not trust him (*non se ne fidi*), for if you are not on your guard he will cheat (*ingannare*) you.—Why do you

work so much (*tanto*)?—I work in order to be one day useful to my country.—When I was yet (*essendo ancor*) little, I once (*un giorno*) said to my father, “I do not understand (*intendere**) commerce (*il commercio*), and I do not know how to sell; let me (*permettetemi*) play.” My father answered me, smiling (*sorridendo*): “By dealing (*mercantando*) one learns to deal, and by selling to sell.” “But, my dear father,” replied I, “by playing one learns also to play.” “You are right,” said he to me, “but you must first (*prima*) learn what is necessary (*necessario*) and useful.”—Judge not (*non giudicate voi*), that you may not (*che non volete essere*) be judged!—Why do you perceive (*scoprire*) the mote (*una paglia*) in your brother’s eye, you who do not perceive (*vedere**) the beam (*la trave*) which is in your eye?

SIXTY-NINTH LESSON.

Lezione Sessantesima nona.

PRESENT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

That I may have, that thou mayest have.	Ch' io abbia, che tu abbia (abbi).
That he or she may have.	Ch' { egli (esso) } abbia.
That we may have, that you may have.	Che noi abbiamo, che voi abbiate.
That they may have.	Ch' { egli (essi) } abbiano.

That I may be, that thou mayest be.	Ch' io sia, che tu sia (sii).
That he or she may be.	Ch' { egli (esso) } sia.
That we may be, that you may be.	Che noi siamo, che voi siate.
That they may be.	Ch' { egli (essi) } siano.

That I may speak, that thou mayest speak.	Ch' io parli, che tu parli.
That he or she may speak.	Ch' { egli (esso) } parli.
That we may speak, that you may speak.	Che noi parliamo, che voi parliate.
That they may speak.	Ch' { egli (essi) } parlino.

That I may believe, &c.

That we may believe, &c.

Ch' io creda, che tu creda, ch' egli creda.

Che noi crediamo, che voi crediate, ch' eglino credano.

That I may hear, &c.

That we may hear, &c.

Ch' io senta, che tu senta, ch' egli senta.

Che noi sentiamo, che voi sentiate, ch' eglino sentano.

Obs. It will be remarked, firstly, that in the first conjugation the three persons singular terminate in *i*; in the two others, and in the two auxiliaries, in *a*. The second person singular of the auxiliaries may also terminate in *i*. Secondly, that all the three conjugations have the first and second persons plural terminated alike, and the third person plural terminates in the second and third conjugations in *ano*, whilst in the first conjugation it ends in *ino*.

REMARKS ON THE USE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE IN ITALIAN.

A. The subjunctive in Italian is made use of to express doubt or uncertainty.¹ It is governed by one of the following conjunctions, which generally precedes the verb which is put in the subjunctive mood.

Che, that.*Acciocchè*,*Affinchè*,*Benchè*,*Ancorchè*

} to the end that.

} although.

Avvegnachè, whereas, though.*Finchè*, till.*Sintantochè*, until.*Quantunque*, though, although.*Purchè*, provided that.

B. The conjunction *che* makes all the words to which it is joined become conjunctions. The following conjunctive expressions, therefore, also require the subjunctive:

Dato che,*Posto che*,*In caso che*,*Avanti che*,*Prima che*,

} suppose that.

} in case that.

} before that.

Bisogna che, it is necessary that.*Dio faccia che*,*Voglia Iddio*,*che*, } would to God that.

C. Verbs expressing *will*, *desire*, *command*, *permission*, and *fear*, followed by the conjunction *che*, require the subjunctive, as: I will, I desire, I command, I permit my brother to study, to speak, to see, to go out, &c., *voglio, desidero, comando, permetto che mio fratello studii, parli, veda, esca*, &c. I fear he may not sing, he may not say, &c., *temo che non canti, che non dica*, &c.

¹ Hence the verb *credere*, to believe, always governs the subjunctive in Italian. Ex. *Mio fratello crede ch' io parli*, My brother thinks I speak.

EXAMPLES.

I wish you may do it soon.	<i>Desidero che lo facciate presto.</i>
I fear it will rain to-night.	<i>Temo che piova questa sera.</i>
I hope to succeed in it.	+ <i>Spero che la cosa mi riesca.</i>
I must go there myself.	<i>Bisogna ch' io stesso ci vada.</i>
He says so, to the end that you may not attribute the fault to me, and that you may know what is to be expected from him.	<i>Lo dice, acciocchè non diate a me la colpa. ed affinchè sappiate, quanto si possa sperar da lui.</i>
Though it be difficult to subdue our passions, we must, notwithstanding, conquer ourselves.	<i>Benchè sia difficile vincer le nostre passioni. bisogna però vincere noi stessi.</i>
The count, though much frightened, had the boldness.	<i>Il conte. avregnachè (ancorchè) fusse molto spaventato, ebbe l' ardire.</i>
Wait till I return.	<i>Aspettate finchè io torni.</i>
So long as I have not finished my work.	<i>Sintantochè io non abbia finito il mio lavoro.</i>
I will come, provided it does not rain.	<i>Verrò purchè non piova.</i>
Suppose that he were to die.	<i>Posto che egli muoia.</i>
In case he should not be in his apartment.	<i>In caso che non fosse nel suo appartamento.</i>
Suppose it to be so.	<i>Dato che sia così.</i>
Would to God that all were going well!	<i>Dio faccia che tutto vada bene!</i>
However wise the counsel that you have taken may be.	<i>Comunque sario sia il consiglio che avete preso.</i>
It is sufficient for me to know.	<i>Basta ch' io sappia.</i>
I must do.	<i>Bisogna ch' io faccia.</i>

D. The conjunction *che* does not require the subjunctive when it relates to verbs expressing certainty. Ex.

I know that thou hast not been at my house.	<i>Io so che tu non sei stato da me.</i>
He assured me that the work was by a master-hand.	<i>M' assicurava che l' opera era di mano maestra.</i>
I am sure that he is wrong.	<i>Sono persuaso ch' egli ha torto.</i>
I swear to thee that I have told him nothing.	<i>Ti giuro che non gli ho detto niente.</i>
I am convinced that he does not betray me.	<i>Sono convinto che non mi tradisce.</i>

E. The indicative is also employed after the following conjunctions, when the phrase does not express uncertainty or doubt.

<i>Allorchè,</i>	when.	<i>Perchè,</i>	because, why.
<i>Come,</i>	as.	<i>Perciò,</i>	therefore.
<i>Così,</i>	thus.	<i>Però,</i>	{ therefore.
<i>Dacchè,</i>	since.		{ nevertheless.
<i>Dimodochè,</i>	so that.	<i>Poichè,</i>	because.
<i>Dopo che,</i>	after.	<i>Quando,</i>	when.
<i>Frattanto,</i>	meanwhile.	<i>Se,</i>	if, since.
<i>Giacchè,</i>	since.	<i>Sicchè,</i>	so that.
<i>Intantochè,</i>	so that.	<i>Siccome,</i>	as.
<i>Mentrechè,</i>	whilst.	<i>Stantechè,</i>	since.
<i>Non pertanto,</i>	notwithstanding.	<i>Tostochè,</i>	as soon as.
<i>Onde,</i>	therefore.	<i>Tuttavia,</i>	yet, nevertheless.

EXAMPLES.

Whilst he was at dinner, two horses were stolen from him.	<i>Intanto ch' egli stava a pranzo, gli furono rubati due cavalli.</i>
Whilst fortune came to his aid, it happened that the King of France died.	<i>Mentrechè la fortuna veniva ad aiutarlo, avvenne che il Re di Francia morì.</i>
Whilst I am speaking, time is passing.	<i>Mentre ch' io parlo, il tempo passa.</i>
It seemed to him he was ill, but he was nevertheless contented.	<i>Gli pareva di star male, ma non per tanto era contento.</i>
I should like to know why you do not call upon me any more.	<i>Vorrei sapere perchè, non venite più da me.</i>
I cannot come, because I am busy.	<i>Non posso venire, perchè ho da fare.</i>
He is an honest man, therefore I believe all he tells me.	<i>Egli è galantuomo, perciò credo quanto mi dice.</i>
Everything lost may be recovered, but not life: therefore every one ought to take good care of it.	<i>Ogni cosa perduta si può recuperare, ma non la vita: pertanto ciascuno deve esser di quella buon guardiano.</i>
Though everybody says it, I nevertheless do not believe it.	<i>Benchè tutti lo dicano, io però non lo credo.</i>
Now, as God has granted me so much grace, I shall die happy.	<i>Ora, poichè Dio mi ha fatto tanta grazia, io morirò contento.</i>
Though I have been advised by many physicians to use certain baths, I have nevertheless not been willing to do it.	<i>Quantunque da molti medici mi sia stato consigliato d' usar certi bagni, pure non l' ho voluto fare.</i>
If I do not mistake, I saw him the other night.	<i>Se non m' inganno, lo vidi l' altra sera.</i>
Though the smell of that juice offends, it is not on that account injurious to health.	<i>Sebbene l' odore di questo sugo offenda, non perciò nuoce alla salute.</i>
As soon as I am able, I will come.	<i>Tostochè io potrò, verrò.</i>

F. The subjunctive is further made use of after the relative pronoun *che*, when it follows a superlative; and after the relative pronouns *che*, *il quale*, *chi*, *cui*, when the action which they present is doubtful or uncertain.

EXAMPLES.

The finest picture that is in Rome.	Il più bel quadro <i>che sia</i> in Roma.
The worthiest man that I have ever known.	Il più brav' uomo <i>ch' io abbia</i> mai conosciuto
The most ridiculous figure that one can see.	La più ridicola figura <i>che si possa</i> vedere.
For that a man of some knowledge is required.	A ciò si vuole un uomo <i>che abbia</i> delle cognizioni.
You will not find anybody who would do it.	Non troverete <i>chi lo faccia</i> .
I have nobody on whom I could rely.	Non ho nessuno in <i>cui possa</i> fidarmi.
Show me any one who has never committed a fault.	Mostratemi uno <i>che non abbia</i> mai commesso un fallo.
I want a horse that must be taller than this.	Ho bisogno di un cavallo <i>che sia</i> più alto di questo.
It is assured that peace is made.	Si dà per sicuro <i>che la pace sia</i> fatta.
They say that there has been a great battle near the Rhine.	Si dice <i>che al Reno sia</i> stata una gran battaglia.
Whatever may happen.	Ne <i>succeda</i> quel che vuole.
However handsome she may be, she does not please me.	Per bella <i>che sia</i> non mi piace.
Let him be awake or asleep, I must speak to him.	<i>Tegli o dorma</i> , bisogna ch' io gli parli.
There is no one, however learned he may be, that knows all.	Non v' è uomo, per dotto <i>che sia, che sappia</i> tutto.
I do not see which is his intention.	Non vedo <i>qual sia</i> la sua intenzione.
I do not know which are your books.	Non so <i>quali siano</i> i vostri libri.

G. When of two verbs the first is preceded by *non*, the second by *che*, the latter requires to be in the subjunctive. Ex.

I do not believe he studies.	Non credo <i>che studi</i> .
I do not think he walks.	Non penso <i>che cammini</i> .

EXERCISES.

212.

M. de Turenne would never buy (*non comprava mai*) anything on credit of tradesmen (*il mercante*), for fear, said he, they should lose a great part of it, if he happened to be killed in war (*se gli accadesse di restar morto in guerra*). All the workmen (*gli operai*)

who were employed about his house had orders to bring in the bills (*di presentare i loro conti*), before he set out for the campaign (*mettersi in campagna*), and they were regularly paid.

You will never be respected (*rispettare*) unless you forsake (*se non lasciando*) the bad company you keep.—You cannot finish your work to-night unless (*a meno che*) I help you. I will explain (*spiegare*) every difficulty to you, that you may not be disheartened (*scoraggiare*) in your undertaking (*l'impresa*).—Suppose you should lose your friends, what would become of you?—In case you want my assistance, call me; I shall help you.—A wise and prudent man (*un uomo savio e prudente*) lives with economy when young, in order that he may enjoy the (*per godere del*) fruit of his labour when he is old.—Carry (*portate*) this money to Mr. N., in order that he may be able to pay his debts (*il debito*).—Will you lend me that money?—I will not lend it you unless you promise to return (*rendere**) it to me as soon as you can.—Did the general arrive?—He arrived yesterday morning at the camp (*il campo*), weary and tired (*stanco ed abbattuto*), but very seasonably (*molto a proposito*); he immediately gave his orders to begin the action (*la battaglia* or *il combattimento*), though he had not (*non avesse*) yet all his troops.—Are your sisters happy?—They are not, though they are rich, because they are not contented.—Although they have a good memory, that is not enough to learn any language (whatever) (*qualunque siasi lingua*); they must make use of their judgment (*il giudizio*).—Behold (*Guardi*) how amiable that lady is; although she has no fortune (*quantunque non sia agiata*), I do not love her the less (*l'amo istessamente*).—Will you lend me your violin?—I will lend it you, provided you return it me to-night.—Will your mother call upon me?—She will, provided you will promise to take her to the concert.—I shall not cease to importune (*importunare*) her till she has forgiven me.—Give me (*mi dia*) that pen-knife (*il temperino*).—I will give it you, provided you will not make a bad use of it.—Shall you go to London?—I will go, provided you accompany (*accompagnare*) me; and I will write again (*di nuovo*) to your brother, in case he should not have received my letter.

213.

Where were you during the engagement (*il fatto d'armi*)?—I was in bed to have my wounds (*la ferita*) dressed (*medicare*).—Would to God (*così fosse piaciuto a Dio*) I had been there (*ch'io vi fossi stato*)! I would have (*avrei voluto*, cond.) conquered (*vincere**) or perished (*perire*).—We avoided (*si evitò*) an engagement for fear we should be (*che non fossimo*) taken, their force being superior (*superiore*) to ours.—God forbid (*Dio non voglia*) I should blame your conduct; but your business will never be done properly (*a dovere*), unless you do it yourself.—Will you set out soon?—I shall not set out till I have dined.—Why did you tell me that my father was arrived, though you knew (*mentre ch' Ella sapeva*) the

contrary?—You are so hasty (*iracundo*), that however little you are contradicted (*ch' uno La contrarii*) you fly into a passion (*mettersi in collera*) in an instant.—If your father does not arrive to-day, and if you want money, I will lend you some.—I am much obliged (*tenutissimo*) to you.—Have you done your task?—Not quite; if I had had (*se avessi avuto*) time, and if I had not been (*fossi stato*) so uneasy about (*per*) the arrival of my father, I should have (*l' avrei*) done it.—If you study and are (*sta*) attentive. I assure you that you will learn the Italian language in a very short time. He who wishes to teach an art must know it thoroughly (*a fondo*); he must give none but clear (*preciso*) and well-digested (*digerire*) notions (*la nozione*); he must instil (*far entrare*) them one by one into the minds (*nello spirito*) of his pupils; and above all (*sopra tutto*), he must not overburthen (*sopracaricare*) their memory with useless and unimportant (*vano*) rules.

My dear friend, lend me (*prestatemi*) a sequin —Here are (*eccone*) two instead of one.—How much obliged I am to you (*quanto Le sono tenuto*)! I am always glad when I see you, and I find my happiness is yours.—Is this house to be sold?—Do you wish to buy it?—Why not?—Why does not your sister speak?—She would speak (*parlerebbe*, cond.), if she were not (*se non fosse*) always so absent (*disattenta*).—I like pretty anecdotes: they season (*condire*) conversation (*la conversazione*), and amuse everybody. Pray relate me some.—Look, if you please, at page (*pagina*) one hundred and forty-eight of the book which I lent you, and you will find some.

214.

You must have patience, though you have no desire to have any, for I must also (*pure*) wait till I receive my money. Should I (*nel caso ch' io*) receive it to-day. I will pay you all (that) I owe you. Do not believe that I have forgotten it, for I think of it every day.—Do you believe perhaps (*crede Ella forse*), that I have already received it?—I do not believe that you have already received it; but I fear that your other creditors (*che gli altri di Lei creditori*) may already have received it.—You wish you had (*vorrebbe aver* cond.) more time to study, and your brothers wish they did not need (*vorrebbero non aver bisogno*) to learn.—Would to God (*volesse Iddio*) you had (*avesse*) what I wish you, and that I had (*avessi*) what I wish.—Though we have not had what we wish, (yet) we have almost always been contented; and Messieurs B. have almost always been discontented, though they have had everything a reasonable man (*un uomo ragionevole*) can be contented with.—Do not believe, Madam, that I have had your fan (*il ventaglio*).—Who tells you that I believe it?—My brother-in-law wishes he had not had (*vorrebbe non aver avuto*) what he has had.—Wherefore?—He has always had many creditors, and no money.—I wish you would always speak Italian to me; and you must obey, if you wish to learn that language, and if you do not wish to lose your time (*inutilmente*).—I wish you were (*vorrei che foste*) more industrious and more atten-

tive when I speak to you.—If I were not (*non fossi*) your friend, and if you were not (*non foste*) mine, I should not speak (*parlerei*) thus to you.—Do not trust Mr. N. (*non vi fidate del Signor N.*), for he flatters you.—Do you believe a flatterer (*un adulatore*) can be a friend?—You do not know him so well as I, though you see him every day.—Do not think that I am angry with him, because his father has offended me.—Oh! here he is coming (*eccolo che viene*); you may tell him all yourself.

SEVENTIETH LESSON.

Lezione Settantesima.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE CONTINUED.

IMPERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

If I had, if thou hadst, if he had.	S' io avessi, se tu avessi, s' egli avesse.
If we had, if you had, if they had.	Se noi avessimo, se voi aveste, s' eglino avessero.
If I were, if thou wert, if he were.	S' io fossi, se tu fossi, s' egli fosse.
If we were, if you were, if they were.	Se noi fossimo, se voi foste, s' eglino fossero.
If I spoke, if thou spokedst, if he spoke.	S' io parlassi, se tu parlassi, s' egli parlasse.
If we spoke, if you spoke, if they spoke.	Se noi parlassimo, se voi parlaste, s' eglino parlassero.
If I believed, if thou believedst, if he believed.	S' io credessi, se tu credessi, s' egli credesse.
If we believed, if you believed, if they believed.	Se noi credessimo, se voi credeste, s' eglino credessero.
If I heard, if thou hearest, if he heard.	S' io sentissi, se tu sentissi, s' egli sentisse.
If we heard, if you heard, if they heard.	Se noi sentissimo, se voi sentiste, s' eglino sentissero.

Obs. A. The imperfect of the subjunctive is formed from the

passato remoto (Lesson LX.), by changing, for the first conjugation, *ai* into *assi*, for the second *ei* into *essi*, and for the third *ii* into *issi*. The second person plural is in all alike the second person plural of the *passato remoto*. (See Lesson LX.)

Obs. B. As to the formation of the preterite, or preterperfect and pluperfect of the subjunctive, it is exactly the same as in the indicative; the former being compounded of the present subjunctive of the auxiliary, and the past participle of another verb, the latter of the imperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary, and the past participle of another verb. Ex.

That I may have loved.	Ch' io abbia amato.
That he may have come.	Ch' egli sia venuto.
If I had loved.	S' io avessi amato.
If I were come.	S' io fossi venuto.

FURTHER REMARKS ON THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

H. The imperfect of the subjunctive is employed after the conditional conjunction *se*, if, expressed or understood.¹

EXAMPLES.

If I had money.	Se io avessi danaro.
If he had time.	Se avesse tempo.
If you were rich.	S' Ella fosse ricco.
If he were a little more amiable.	S' egli fosse un po' più cortese.
If he loved me.	Se mi amasse.
If I lost my money.	Se io perdessi il mio danaro.
If he were to beat his dog.	Se battesse il suo cane.
If she heard me.	Se essa mi sentisse.
If the child slept.	Se il fanciullo dormisse.

OF THE CONDITIONAL OR POTENTIAL TENSES.

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

This is formed from the present future (Lesson XLVI.) by changing

	1	2	3		1	2	3
<i>Sing.</i>	RÒ,	RAI,	RÀ.	<i>Plur.</i>	REMO,	RETE,	RANNO.
into „	REI,	RESTI,	REBBE.	„	REMMO,	RESTE,	REBBERO.

¹ Except when futurity is to be expressed, for then the future must be made use of. Ex.

If he comes, we shall see him.	Se verrà, lo vedremo.
I will go to see him to-morrow, if I have time.	Andrò a vederlo domani, se avrò tempo.

I should have, thou wouldst have, he would have.	Avrei, avresti, avrebbe.
We should have, you would have, they would have.	Avremmo, avreste, avrebbero.

I should be, thou wouldst be, he would be.	Sarei, saresti, sarebbe.
We should be, you would be, they would be.	Saremmo, sareste, sarebbero.

I should love, thou wouldst love, he would love.	Amerei, ameresti, amerebbe.
We should love, you would love, they would love.	Ameremmo, amereste, amereb- bero.

I should believe, thou wouldst be- lieve, he would believe.	Crederei, crederesti, crederebbe.
We should believe, you would be- lieve, they would believe.	Credemmo, credereste, crede- rebbero.

I should hear, thou wouldst hear, he would hear.	Sentirei, sentiresti, sentirebbe.
We should hear, you would hear, they would hear.	Sentiremmo, sentireste, senti- rebbero.

.I. Whenever there is a condition to be expressed, the imperfect of the subjunctive is used, and the conditional present answers to it. It is indifferent to begin the sentence by the imperfect of the subjunctive or the conditional, and *vice versa*.

EXAMPLES.

If I had money, I would buy some books.	<i>Se avessi danaro, comprerei dei libri.</i>
I would buy some books, if I had money.	<i>Comprerei de' libri, se avessi danaro.</i>
If he were a little more amiable, he would have many friends.	<i>S' egli fosse un po' più cortese, avrebbe molti amici.</i>
He would have many friends, if he were a little more amiable.	<i>Avrebbe molti amici, s' egli fosse un po' più cortese.</i>
I would do it, if I could.	<i>Lo farei, se potessi.</i>
If I could, I would do it.	<i>Se potessi, lo farei.</i>
If I had money, I would have a new coat.	<i>Se avessi danaro, avrei un' a- bito nuovo.</i>
I would have a new coat, if I had money.	<i>Avrei un' abito nuovo, se avessi danaro.</i>

If thou couldst do this, thou wouldst do that.	<i>Se tu sapessi far questo, vorresti far quello.</i>
Thou wouldst do that, if thou couldst do this.	<i>Vorresti far quello, se tu sapessi far questo.</i>
If he could, he would.	<i>Se potesse, vorrebbe.</i>
He would, if he could.	<i>Torrebbe, se potesse.</i>
I would go there, if I had time.	<i>V' andrei, se avessi tempo.</i>
If I had time, I would go there.	<i>Se avessi tempo, v' andrei.</i>
If he knew what you have done, he would scold you.	<i>Se sapesse ciò che avete fatto, vi rampognerebbe.</i>
He would scold you, if he knew what you have done.	<i>Vi rampognerebbe, se sapesse ciò ch' avete fatto.</i>
To scold.	<i>Rampognare (sgridare).</i>
If there were any wood, he would make a fire.	<i>Se ci fosse legna, farebbe fuoco.</i>
He would make a fire, if there were any wood.	<i>Farebbe fuoco, se ci fosse legna.</i>
Should the men come, it would be necessary to give them something to drink.	<i>{ Se gli uomini venissero, bisognerebbe dar loro qualche cosa da bere.</i>
	<i>{ Bisognerebbe dar loro qualche cosa da bere, se gli uomini venissero.</i>
Should we receive our letters, we would not read them until tomorrow.	<i>Se ricevessimo le nostre lettere, non le leggeremmo prima di domani.</i>
Not until (meaning not before).	<i>Non—prima di.</i>

CONDITIONAL PAST.

It is formed from the present conditional of the auxiliary and the past participle of the verb you conjugate.

I should have had, &c.	Avrei avuto, &c.
I should have been, &c.	Sarei stato. <i>Fem.</i> stata, &c.
We should have been, &c.	Saremmo stati. <i>Fem.</i> state, &c.

I should have, thou wouldst have, he would have,	spoken, believed, heard.	Avrei, arresti, avrebbe,	{ parlato, creduto, sentito.
We should have, you would have, they would have,		Avremmo, arreste, avrebbero,	

I should have, thou wouldst	} set out.	Sarei, saresti,	} partito; Fem.
have, he (she) would have,		sarebbe,	
We should have, you would		Saremmo, sa-	
have, they would have,		reste, sareb-	partita.
		bero,	partiti; Fem.
			partite.

EXAMPLES.

They would have been more cautious, if they had been warned.	<i>Sarebbero stati più cauti, se fossero stati avvertiti.</i>
He would have been freed, if he had requested it.	<i>Sarebbe stato dispensato, se l'avesse richiesto.</i>
If I had received my money, I would have bought new shoes.	<i>S'io avessi ricevuto il mio danaro, avrei comprato delle scarpe nuove.</i>
If he had had a pen, he would have recollected the word.	<i>S'avesse avuto una penna, si sarebbe ricordato della parola.</i>
If you had risen early, you would not have caught a cold.	<i>Se si fosse levata (alzata) di buon' ora, non si sarebbe infreddata.</i>
If they had got rid of their old horse, they would have procured a better one.	<i>Se avessero alienato il lor vecchio cavallo, se ne sarebbero procurato uno migliore.</i>
If he had washed his hands, he would have wiped them.	<i>Se si fosse lavato le mani, se le sarebbe asciugate.</i>
If I knew that, I would behave differently.	<i>Se sapessi ciò, mi condurrei diversamente.</i>
If I had known that, I would have behaved differently.	<i>Se avessi saputo ciò, mi sarei condotto altrimenti.</i>
If thou hadst taken notice of that, thou wouldst not have been mistaken.	<i>Se ti fossi accorto di ciò, non ti saresti ingannato.</i>

K. The pluperfect of the subjunctive and the past conditional meeting with each other, may sometimes be substituted by the imperfect of the indicative. *Ex.*

Had I known it yesterday, I would certainly have come.	} Se lo sapeva ieri, io veniva sicuramente. Instead of: Se l' avessi saputo ieri, sarei venuto sicuramente.
I would have given it you, if I had had it.	
	} Io ve lo dava, se l' aveva. Instead of: Ve l' avrei dato, se l' avessi avuto.

L. As soon as *se* is not conditional, it requires the indicative mood, *Ex.*

If at that time I had Italian books, they were not mine.	Se allora io <i>aveva</i> libri italiani, non <i>erano</i> miei.
If he is not ill, why does he send for the physician?	Se non è ammalato, perchè fa venir il medico?

M. The imperfect of the subjunctive is further used to express a wish in an exclamatory form. Ex.

O could I but know your sentiments!	<i>Oh potessi</i> sapere i vostri sentimenti!
O could I also come!	<i>Oh potessi</i> venir anch' io!
O had I but money!	<i>Oh avessi</i> danaro!

And when there is another verb following, it is also put in the imperfect of the subjunctive. Ex.

Would to God he never returned any more!	<i>Volesse</i> Iddio che non <i>ritornasse</i> mai più!
--	---

N. But, when the wish is not exclamatory, the present of the conditional must be employed. Ex.

I should like to see him.	<i>Forrei</i> vederlo.
I should willingly accompany you to Florence.	<i>L' accompagnerei</i> volentieri a Firenze.
I could not say so.	Non <i>saprei</i> dirlo.
I would lay anything that it will not succeed.	<i>Scommetterei</i> quanto volete, che la cosa non andrà bene. ²

O. The past conditional alone is made use of to represent as doubtful an event that is to follow a preceding event. Ex.

He has promised to send me the goods, as soon as he has received them.	Ha promesso di mandarmi le mercanzie appena che le avrebbe ricevute.
He has promised to write to me, as soon as he should be arrived in London.	Ha promesso di scrivermi subito che sarebbe arrivato in Londra.

² Such expressions are, in fact, elliptical, for they should be: *Forrei vederlo, se potessi*, I would see him, if I could; *l' accompagnerei volentieri a Firenze, se avessi tempo*, I should willingly accompany you to Florence, if I had time; *non saprei dirlo, se dovessi*, I could not say so, if I were obliged. Hence it comes that, when such expressions are followed by another verb, this must stand in the imperfect of the subjunctive. Ex. *Forrei trovare uno che m' accompagnasse*, I should like to find one who would accompany me; *vorrei un segretario che sapesse la lingua italiana*, I should like to have a secretary who knew the Italian language.

Would you learn Italian, if I learnt it?

I would learn it, if you learnt it.

Would you have learnt German, if I had learnt it?

I would have learnt it, if you had learnt it.

Would you go to Italy, if I went there with you?

I would go there, if you went there with me.

Would you have gone to Germany, if I had gone there with you?

Would you go out, if I remained at home?

Would you have written a letter, if I had written a note?

Imparerebbe Ella l'italiano, se io l'imparassi?

L'imparerei, s'Ella l'imparasse.

Avrebbe Ella imparato il tedesco, se io l'avessi imparato?

L'avrei imparato, se l'avesse imparato Lei.

Andrebbe Ella in Italia, s'io v'andassi con Lei?

V'andrei, s'Ella ci venisse meco.

Sarebbe Ella andata in Germania, se io vi fossi andato con Lei?

Uscirebbe Ella, se io stessi in casa?

Avrebbe Ella scritto una lettera, se io avessi scritto un biglietto?

P. The imperfect of the subjunctive is often substituted for the imperfect of the indicative in speaking emphatically. *Ex.*

How much I relied on your promise, you know; how much I loved you, is not unknown to you; how little I deserved your forgetfulness, let your heart tell it you for me.

Quanto io mi *fidassi* della vostra promessa, voi lo sapete; quanto io v'*amassi*, non vi è ignoto; quanto poco *meritassi* la vostra dimenticanza, lo dica il vostro cuore per me.

Q. Let it finally be remarked, that the relative *che* requires the indicative when the subordinate preposition expresses anything certain or positive, and the subjunctive when it relates to anything uncertain or doubtful. *Ex.*

Bring me the book that pleases me.

Bring me a book that may please me.

[am looking for the road that leads to Florence.

[am seeking a road that may lead me to Florence.

Ind. Recami il libro che mi piace.

Subj. Recami un libro che mi piaccia.

Ind. Cerco la via che mena a Firenze.

Subj. Cerco una via che meni a Firenze.

However or howsoever.

{ *Per quanto.*
Per che.

R. However or howsoever, followed by an adjective, is rendered by *per quanto* invariably without *che*. or by *per* with *che*. In both cases the subjunctive is employed. Ex.

However learned you may be, there are many things which you do not know.	<i>Per quanto</i> dotto voi siate (or <i>per</i> dotto <i>che</i> voi siate), ignorate molte cose.
However happy she may be, she always thinks herself unhappy.	<i>Per quanto</i> fortunata ella sia (or <i>per</i> fortunata <i>ch'</i> ella sia), si crede sempre infelice.

Whatever, whatsoever. | *Per quanto.*

S. Whatever or whatsoever, followed by a substantive, is rendered by *per quanto* without *che*, but it agrees with the substantive, and is followed by the subjunctive. Ex.

Whatever endeavours he may make, he will never attain his aim.	<i>Per quanti</i> sforzi egli faccia, non arriverà mai al suo fine.
Whatever riches they may pos- sess, they will never be con- tented.	<i>Per quante</i> ricchezze posse- dano, non saranno mai con- tenti.

Whoever, whosoever.

Of whomsoever you may speak, avoid slander.	<i>Chi che</i> sia (or <i>chichessia</i>). <i>Chiunque</i> .
Whosoever may come will be welcome.	<i>Chi che</i> sia la persona di cui parlate, evitate la maldicenza.
Whoever the stranger may be that you will see, receive him well.	<i>Chiunque</i> venga sarà ben ve- nuto.
Whomsoever you may give this book to, recommend him to read it attentively.	<i>Chi che</i> sia lo straniero ch' El- la vedrà, l' accolga bene.
	A chiunque diate questo libro, raccomandate di leggerlo at- tentamente.

I have seen nothing that could be blamed in his conduct.	Non ho veduto niente che si possa biasimare nella sua condotta.
I know nobody who is so good as you are.	Non conosco nessuno che sia così buono come Lei.
	Non conosco nessuno che sia tanto buono quanto Lei.
There is nobody who does not know it.	Non v' è chi non sappia ciò.

Whoever, whosoever. }
 Whatever, whatsoever. }

Qualunque.

Whoever may be your enemies,
 you have not to fear them so
 long as you act according to
 justice.

Qualunque siano i di Lei
 nemici, non ha da temerli fin
 tanto che si conduce secondo
 la giustizia.

Whatever his intentions may be,
 I shall always behave towards
 him in the same manner.

Qualunque siano le sue inten-
 zioni, mi condurrò sempre
 nella stessa maniera verso di
 lui.

EXERCISES.

215.

Would you have money if your father were here?—I should have some if he were here.—Would you have been pleased if I had had some books?—I should have been much pleased if you had had some.—Would you have praised my little brother if he had been good?—If he had been good, I should certainly (*sicuramente*) not only have praised, but also loved, honoured (*onorare*), and rewarded him.—Should we be praised if we did our exercises?—If you did them without a fault (*senza errore*), you would be praised and rewarded.—Would not my brother have been punished if he had done his exercises?—He would not have been punished if he had done them.—Would my sister have been praised if she had not been skilful?—She would certainly (*certamente*) not have been praised if she had not been very skilful, and if she had not worked from morning till evening.—Would you give me something if I were very good?—If you were very good, and if you worked well, I would give you a fine book.—Would you have written to your sister if I had gone to Paris?—I would have written to her, and sent her something handsome if you had gone thither.—Would you speak if I listened to you?—I would speak if you listened to me, and if you would answer me.—Would you have spoken to my mother if you had seen her?—I would have spoken to her, and begged her (*pregare*) to send you a handsome gold watch (*un bell' oriuolo d' oro*) if I had seen her.

—Would you copy your exercises if I copied mine?—I would copy them if you copied yours.—Would your sister have transcribed her letter, if I had transcribed mine?—She would have transcribed it, if you had transcribed yours.—Would she have set out, if I had set out?—I cannot tell you what she would have done, if you had set out.

216.

One of the valets de chambre (*uno dei camerieri*) of Louis (*di Luigi*) the Fourteenth requested that prince, as he was going to bed (*mentre questi andava a letto*), to recommend (*di far racco-*

mandare) to the first president (*il presidente*) a law-suit (*una lite*) which he had against (*contro*) his father-in-law, and said, in urging him (*sollecitandolo*): "Alas (*Ah*), Sire (*Sire*), you have but to say one word." "Well (*Eh*)," said Louis the Fourteenth, "it is not that which embarrasses me (*non è questo che mi dia fastidio*); but tell me (*dimmi*), if thou wert in thy father-in-law's place (*in luogo di*—), and thy father-in-law in thine, wouldst thou be glad if I said that word?"

If the men should come, it would be necessary to give them something to drink.—If he could do this, he would do that.—I have always flattered myself, my dear brother, that you loved me as much as I love you: but I now see that I have been mistaken. I should like to (*vorrei*) know why you went out walking without me (*senza di me*).—I have heard, my dear sister, that you are angry with me (*meccò rincresciosa*), because I went out walking without you (*senza di voi*). I assure you that, had I known that you were not ill, I should have come for you (*venire a cercare qualcuno*); but I inquired (*informarsi*) at (*dal*) your physician's about your health (*sulla vostra salute*), and he told me, that you had been keeping your bed (*che voi stavate a letto*) the last eight days (*da otto giorni*).

217.

What do you think of our king?—I say he is a great man, but I add, that though kings be ever so powerful (*potente*), they die as well as the meanest (*abbietto*) of their subjects.—Have you been pleased with my sisters?—I have; for, however plain (*brutto*) they may be, they are still very amiable; and, however learned (*dotto*) may be our neighbour's (*fem.*) daughters, still they are sometimes mistaken.—Is not their father rich?—However rich he may be, he may lose all in an instant.—Whoever the enemy may be whose malice (*la di cui malizia*) you dread (*temere*), you ought to rely (*riposarsi*) upon your innocence; but the laws (*la legge*) condemn (*condannare*) all criminals (*il reo*), whatever they may be.—Whatever your intentions (*l' intenzione*) may be, you should have acted differently (*differentemente*).—Whatever be the reasons (*la ragione*) which you may allege (*allegare*), they will not excuse your action, blamable in itself.—Whatever may happen to you in this world, never murmur (*mormorare*) against Divine Providence (*la divina Provvidenza*); for whatever we may suffer we deserve.—Whatever I may do, you are never satisfied.—Whatever you may say, your sisters shall be punished if they deserve it, and if they do not endeavour (*studiarsi*) to mend (*emendarsi*).—Who has taken my gold watch?—I do not know. Do not believe that I have had it, or that Miss C. has had your silver snuff-box (*la tabacchiera*), for I saw both in the hands of your sister when we were playing at forfeits (*a' pegni*).—Tomorrow I shall set out for Dover; but in a fortnight I shall be back again (*tornare*), and then I shall come to see you and your family. Where is your sister at present?—She is at Paris, and my brother is

at Berlin.—That little woman is said to be going to marry General (*il generale*) K., your friend; is it true?—I have not heard of it.—What news is there of our great army?—It is said to be lying (*stare**) between the Weser (*il Vesper*) and the Rhine (*il Reno*). All that the courier (*il corriere*) told me seeming (*parere**) very probable (*verisimile*), I went home immediately, wrote some letters, and left for London.

SEVENTY-FIRST LESSON.

Lezione Settantesima prima.

OF THE IMPERATIVE.

This mood is formed from the present of the subjunctive by changing, for the first conjugation, the termination *i* of the second person singular into *a*, and for the two other conjugations *a* into *i*. All other persons of the imperative are like the present of the subjunctive, except the second person plural, which is formed, even in most of the irregular verbs, from the second person plural of the indicative.

	Conjug.	Subj. 2nd pers. sing.	Imperative. 2nd pers. sing.
That thou mayest speak, speak thou.	1st.	Parli.	Parla.
That thou mayest believe, believe thou.	2nd.	Creda.	Credi.
That thou mayest hear, hear thou.	3rd.	Senta.	Senti.

THE OTHER PERSONS OF THE IMPERATIVE ARE:

Let him speak, let us speak, speak ye, let them speak.	Parli, parliamo, <i>parlate</i> , parlino.
Let him believe, let us believe, believe ye, let them believe.	Creda, crediamo, <i>credete</i> , credano.
Let him hear, let us hear, hear ye, let them hear.	Senta, sentiamo, <i>sentite</i> , sentano.

	2nd pers.	3rd pers.	1st p. pl.	2nd p. pl.	3rd p. pl.
Have thou, &c. Abbi,	abbia.	Abbiamo,	abbiate,	abbiano.	
Be thou, &c. Sii (sia),	sia.	Siamo,	siate,	siano.	

Obs. A. The second person singular of the imperative is rendered by the infinitive whenever it is preceded by the negative *non*. Ex.

Do not do that.	Non far questo.
Do not say that.	Non dir questo.
Do not deny that.	Non negar questo.
Do not believe that.	Non credere ciò. ¹

Have patience.	Abbate pazienza.
Be (thou) attentive.	Sii attento.
Go (ye) thither.	Andate colà.

Obs. B. The pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, si, me, lo, glielo*, &c., are joined to the imperative (the same as to the infinitive, Lesson XVII., and to the present participle, Lesson LVII.). *Ex.*

Give me.	Datemi.
Give us some.	Datecene.
Give it me.	Datemelo.
Send it to him (to her).	Mandateglielo.
Lend it to me.	Prestatemelo.
Believe (thou) me.	Credimi.

Obs. C. When the imperative is in the third person singular or plural, or when it is negative, the pronouns are not joined to it. *Ex.*

Let him believe me.	Mi creda.
Let them believe us.	Ci credano.
Do (thou) not believe me.	Non mi credere.
Do (ye) not tell it me.	Non me lo dite.
Do (thou) not listen to him.	Non l' ascoltare.
Let him not give it him.	Non glielo dia.
Let us not believe her.	Non le crediamo.
Do (ye) not believe me.	Non mi credete.
Let them not believe him.	Non gli credano.
Have the goodness to reach me that dish.	Abbate (abbia) la bontà di porgermi questo piatto.

<i>To borrow.</i>	<i>Chiedere (ricevere) in prestito.</i>
I will borrow some money of you.	Voglio chiederle danaro in prestito.
I will borrow that money of you.	Voglio chiederle in prestito quel danaro.

¹ This manner of rendering the imperative is elliptical, for there is always the word *devi*, thou oughtst or shouldst, understood, as if we said: *Non devi far questo*, thou shouldst not do that; *non devi dir questo*, *non devi credere ciò*, &c.

Borrow it of (or from) him.
 I borrow it from him.
 Do not tell him or her.
 Do not return it to them.

Chiedeteglielo in prestito.
 Glielo chiedo.
 Non glielo dite (dica).
 Non lo rendete (renda) loro.

Patience, impatience.
 The neighbour, (meaning *fellow-creature*), the snuff-box.

La pazienza, l' impazienza.
 Il prossimo, la tabacchiera.

Be (ye) good.
 Know (ye) it.

Siate buoni.
 Sappiatelo.

Obey your masters, and never
 give them any trouble.
 Pay what you owe, comfort the
 afflicted, and do good to those
 that have offended you.
 Love God and thy neighbour as
 thyself.

Obbedite ai vostri maestri, e
 non date loro mai dispiacere.
 Pagate ciò che dovete, consolate
 gl' infelici, e fate del bene a
 quelli che vi hanno offesi.
 Amate Iddio ed il prossimo
 come voi stessi.

To obey.

To comfort.

To offend.

{ *Ubbidire* (*ubbidisco*).
 { *Obbedire* 3 (*obbedisco*).

Consolare 1.

*Offendere** (is conjugated
 like *prendere**) 2.

Let us always love and practise
 virtue, and we shall be happy
 both in this life and in the next.

To practise.

Let us see which of us can shoot
 best.

Amiamo e pratichiamo sempre
 la virtù, e saremo felici in
 questa vita e nell' altra.

Praticare 1.

Vediamo chi di noi tirerà
 meglio.

To express.

To express one's self.

*To make one's self under-
 stood.*

To have the habit.

To accustom.

*Esprimere** 2 (past part.
espresso; pret. def. *es-
 pressi*).

Esprimersi.

Farsi capire.

Aver l' abitudine.

Avvezzare 1, or *assuefare**
 (like *fare**).

*To accustom one's self to some-
 thing.*

Children must be accustomed
 early to work.

Avvezzarsi a qualche cosa.

Bisogna avvezzar presto i fan-
 ciulli al lavoro.

<i>To be accustomed to a thing.</i>	<i>Esser avvezzato (assuefatto) a qualche cosa.</i>
I am accustomed to it.	Vi son avvezzato (avvezzo, assuefatto).
I cannot express myself in Italian, for I am not in the habit of speaking.	Non posso esprimermi bene in italiano, perchè non ho l'abitudine di parlarlo.
You speak properly.	Ella parla (voi parlate) propriamente.

<i>To talk (converse).</i>	<i>Parlare 1, discorrere (discorso, discorsi) 2.</i>
<i>To chatter.</i>	<i>{ Cicalare 1.</i>
<i>To prate.</i>	<i>{ Chiacchierare 1, ciarlare 1.</i>
A prattler.	<i>Cianciare 1.</i>
A chatterer.	Un cicalone, un ciarlone.
To practise.	Un ciarlatore.
I practise speaking.	Esercitare 1.
	Mi esercito a parlare.

<i>To permit, to allow.</i>	<i>Permettere* (like mettere*).</i>
The permission.	<i>{ Il permesso.</i>
I permit you to go thither.	<i>{ La permissione.</i>
	Vi permetto di andarvi.

Do good to the poor, have compassion on the unfortunate, and God will take care of the rest.	Fate del bene ai poveri, ed abbiate compassione degl' infelici; Dio avrà cura del resto.
<i>To do good to some one.</i>	<i>Far del bene a qualcuno.</i>
To have compassion on some one.	Aver compassione di qualcuno.
Compassion.	La compassione.
Pity.	La pietà.
The rest.	Il resto.

If he comes, tell him that I am in the garden.	Se viene, ditegli ch' io sono nel giardino.
Ask the merchant, whether he can let me have the horse at the price which I have offered him.	Domandate al mercante, se può darmi il cavallo al prezzo che gli ho offerto.

THE ACCENTS.

There are in Italian two accents :

- I. The grave ('). and
- II. The acute (').

I. THE GRAVE ACCENT (').:

This is put, 1. On nouns in *tù*² and *tù*. Such nouns have the singular and plural alike, as :

Beauty, goodness, virtue, | *Beltà, bontà, virtù, gioventù.*
youth.

These nouns ended formerly in *ade, ate, ude, ute*, and are still used thus in poetry.

2. On the third person singular of the preterite definite of verbs whose first person ends in two vowels, as :

He loved, he believed, he heard. | *Amò, credè, sentì.*

From *amai*, I loved ; *credei*, I believed ; *sentii*, I heard.

But write without an accent : *Vinse*, he vanquished ; *prese*, he took ; *diede*, he gave,—from : *vinsi*, I vanquished ; *presi*, I took ; *diedi*, I gave, &c.

3. On the first and third person singular of every verb in the future, as :

I shall speak, he will speak.		<i>Parlerò, parlerà.</i>
I shall believe, he will believe.		<i>Crederrò, crederà.</i>
I shall feel, he will feel.		<i>Sentirò, sentirà.</i>

4. To make a distinction between words alike in orthography, but different in signification, such as :

Là, là, there, and *la*, the, her ; *li*, them.

Dà, he gives, and *da* (the ablative), from.

Dì, day, and *di* (the genitive) of.

Sì (the affirmation), yes, so, and *si* (the pronoun), one's self.

È, he or she is (the verb), and *e* (conjunction), and.

5. There are some other words which also have the grave accent, such as :

Più, more.

Giù, below.

Costì and *costà*, there.

Così, thus.

² Many Italian nouns in *tà* derive from the Latin nouns in *tas*, as : *castità*, chastity ; *maestà*, majesty. Such nouns in *a* as are unaccented, are variable in the plural, as : *una visita*, a visit—plural, *le visite*, the visits ; *grazia*, grace—plural, *grazie*, graces ; *sapienza*, wisdom—plural, *sapienze* ; *un poeta*, a poet—plural, *poeti*, poets.

Già, already.'

Cio, that which.

Obs. When a word, having the grave accent, is joined to another word, the consonant of the latter must be doubled, and the accent taken off, as :

Dì and *dà* joined to *mi* become *dimmi*, tell (thou) me ; *dammi*, give (thou) me.

Farò and *lo*, become *farollo*, I will do it.

Più and *tosto* make *piuttosto*, &c.

II. THE ACUTE ACCENT (').

This is seldom used in Italian. Some authors employ it :

1. On the letter *i* of words ending in *io* or *ia*, whenever *io* or *ia* are pronounced in two distinct syllables, such as :

Folly, gallery.		Pazzia, galleria.
Desire, adieu.		Desio, addio.

2. On words which have a double signification, to avoid an ambiguous meaning, as :

Tinére, to hold, and *ténere*, tender.

Ancóra, again, and *ancora*, an anchor.

Nettùre, nectar, and *nettàre*, to clean.

EXERCISES.

218.

Have patience, my dear friend, and be not sad ; for sadness alters (*cambiare*) nothing, and impatience makes bad worse (*peggiore il male*). Be not afraid of your creditors ; be sure that they will do you no harm. They will wait, if you cannot pay them yet.—When will you pay me what you owe me?—As soon as I have any money, I will pay all that you have advanced (*anticipare*) for me. I have not forgotten it, for I think of it (*vi penso*) every day. I am your debtor (*il debitore*), and I shall never deny (*negare*) it.—What a beautiful inkstand you have there ! pray lend it me.—What do you wish to do with it?—I will show it to my sister.—Take it, but take care of it, and do not break it.—Do not fear (*Non tema di niente*).—What do you want of my brother?—I want to borrow money of him.—Borrow (some) of somebody else (*ad un altro*).—If he will not lend me any, I will borrow (some) of somebody else.—You will do well.—Do not wish for (*desiderare*) what you cannot have, but be contented with what Providence (*providenza*) has given you, and consider (*considerare*) that there are many men who have not what you have.—Life being short (*breve*), let us endeavour to make it as agreeable (*gradevole*) as possible (*quanto possibile*). But let us also consider that the abuse (*l'abuso*) of pleasure (*dei piaceri*) makes

it bitter (*amaro*).—Have you done your exercises?—I could not do them, because my brother was not at home.—You must not get your exercises done by your brother, but you must do them yourself.—What are you doing there?—I am reading the book which you lent me.—You are wrong in always reading it.—What am I to do?—Draw this landscape, and when you have drawn it, you shall decline some substantives with adjectives.

219.

What must we do in order to be happy?—Always love and practise virtue, and you will be happy both in this life and in the next.—Since (*giacchè*) we wish to be happy, let us do good to the poor, and let us have compassion on the unfortunate; let us obey our masters, and never give them any trouble; let us comfort the unfortunate, love our neighbours as ourselves, and not hate those (*e non odiamo quelli*) that have offended us; in short (*in una parola*), let us always fulfil our duty, and God will take care of the rest.—My son, in order to be loved you must be laborious (*laborioso*) and good. Thou art accused (*ti accusano*) of having been idle and negligent (*negligente*) in thy affairs. Thou knowest, however (*però*), that thy brother has been punished for having been naughty. Being lately (*l'altro giorno*) in town, I received a letter from thy tutor, in which he strongly (*molto*) complained of thee. Do not weep (*piangere*); now go into thy room, learn thy lesson, and be a good boy (*savio*), otherwise (*altrimenti*) thou wilt get nothing for dinner (*da pranzo*).—I shall be so good, my dear father, that you will certainly (*certamente*) be satisfied with me.—Has the little boy kept his word (*tener parola*)?—Not quite (*Non del tutto*); for after having said that, he went into his room, took his books, sat down at the table (*si mise al tavolo*), and fell asleep (*s'addormentò*).—"He is a very good boy when he sleeps," said his father, seeing him some time after.

Good morning, Miss N. Ah! here you are at last (*eccola alla fine*); I have been waiting for you with impatience.—You will pardon (*perdonare*) me, my dear, I could not come sooner.—Sit down (*si accomodi*), if you please (*La prego*). How is your mother?—She is better to-day than she was yesterday.—I am glad of it (*ne sono contenta*).—Were you at the ball yesterday?—I was (there).—Were you much amused (*divertirsi*)?—Only so-so (*mediocrementemente*).—At what o'clock did you return (*ritornare*) home?—At a quarter past eleven.

220.

Have you been learning Italian long?—No, Sir, I have been learning it only these six months.—Is it possible! you speak tolerably well (*passabilmente bene*) for so short a time (*per sì poco tempo*).—You jest (*scherzare*); I do not know much (of it) yet.—Indeed, you speak it well already.—I think (*credo*) you flatter me a

little.—Not at all (*nulla affatto*); you speak it properly (*convenevolmente*).—In order to speak it properly one must know more of it than I know (*che non so io*).—You know enough of it to make yourself understood.—I still make many mistakes.—That is nothing (*non fa nulla*); you must not be bashful (*timido*); besides (*d'altronde*), you have made no faults in all you have said just now.—I am still timid (*timido*), because I am afraid of being laughed at (*che si beffino di me*).—They would be (*bisognerebbe essere*) very-unpolite to laugh at you. Who would be so unpolite as to laugh at you?—Do you not know the proverb (*il proverbio*)?—What proverb?—He who wishes to speak well must begin (*deve cominciare*) by speaking badly (*dal parlar male*).—Do you understand all I am telling you?—I understand (*intendere**) and comprehend (*capire**) it very well; but I cannot yet express myself well in Italian, because I am not in the habit of speaking it.—That will come in time (*col tempo*).—I wish (*desiderare*) it with all my heart.

Do you sometimes see my brother?—I see him sometimes; when I met him the other day he complained of you. “If he had behaved better, and had been more economical (*economo*),” said he, “he would have no debts (*il debito*), and I should not have been angry with him.” I begged him to have compassion on you, telling him that you had not even money enough to buy bread.—“Tell him when you see him,” replied he to me, “that notwithstanding his bad behaviour (*la condotta*) towards me, I pardon him. Tell him also,” continued he, “that one must not laugh at those (*che non bisogna beffarsi di coloro*) to whom one is under obligations. Have the goodness to do this, and I shall be much obliged to you (*tenutissimi*),” added he, in going away (*allontanandosi*).

SEVENTY-SECOND LESSON.

*Lezione Settantesima seconda.**To stand up.**To remain up.*

Will you permit me to go to the market?

To hasten, to make haste.

Make haste, and return soon.

Go and tell him that I cannot come to-day.

Obs. A. Always put *a* before the infinitive, preceded by a verb of motion. The conjunction *and*, which in English follows the verbs *go* and *come*, is not rendered.

† *Star in piedi.*† *Restar in piedi.*

Vuol Ella permettermi d'andare al mercato?

Sbrigarsi l.

Sbrigatevi e ritornate presto.

Andate a dirgli che oggi non posso venire.

He came *and* told us he could not
come.
Go *and* see your friends.

Venne *a* dirci che non poteva
venire.
Andate *a* vedere i vostri amici.

To weep, to cry.

The least blow makes him cry.

To frighten.

To be frightened, to startle.
The least thing frightens him
(her).
Be not frightened.

To be frightened at something.
What are you frightened at.

*Piangere**; p. part. *pianto*;
pret. def. *piansi*.

Il menomo (il più piccolo) colpo
lo fa piangere.

Spaventare 1, *atterrire*
(isco).

Spaventarsi, atterrirsi.

La più piccola (la minima) cosa
lo (la) spaventa.

Non si spaventi. Non si atter-
risca. Non vi atterrite.

Spaventarsi di qualche cosa.
Di che si spaventa (vi spaven-
tate)?

At my expense.
At his, her expense.
At our expense.

At other people's expense.

That man lives at everybody's
expense.

Alle mie spese (*or a mie spese*).

Alle sue spese (*or a sue spese*).

Alle nostre spese (*or a nostre*
spese).

All' altrui spese (*or ad altrui*
spese).

Quest' uomo vive alle spese di
tutti.

To depend.

That depends upon circumstances.

That does not depend upon me.
It depends upon him to do that.
O! yes, it depends upon him.

Dipendere da.

Questo dipende dalle circo-
stanze.

Questo non dipende da me.

Dipende da lui di far ciò.

Oh! sì, dipende da lui.

To astonish, to surprise.

To be astonished, to wonder.
To be surprised at something.

I am surprised at it.

An extraordinary thing happened,
which surprised everybody.

{ *Stupire* 3 (isco).
{ *Sorprendere** 2.

Stupirsi, maravigliarsi.

*Essere maravigliato (sor-
preso) di qualche cosa.*

Ne sono sorpreso (maravigli-
ato).

Accadde una cosa straordinaria
che sorprese ogni persona.

To take place.

Many things have passed which
will surprise you.

Many days will pass before that.

A man came in who asked me
how I was.

Aver luogo.

Avvenire.*

Sopraggiungere (soprag-
giunto, sopraggiunsi).*

Avvennero molte cose che La
sorprenderanno.

Molti giorni passeranno prima
di ciò.

Entrò un uomo che mi domandò
come io stessi.

Then, thus, consequently.

Therefore.

The other day.

Lately.

In a short time.

In.

Dunque, adunque.

Ecco perchè.

L' altro giorno.

Ultimamente, poco fa.

Non è gran tempo, non ha
guari.

Fra poco.

Fra (tra), in.

Obs. B. When speaking of time, *fra* expresses the epoch, and *in* the duration. *Ex.*

He will arrive in a week.

It took him a week to make this
journey.

He will have finished his studies
in three months.

He finished his studies in a year.

He has applied himself particu-
larly to geometry.

He has a good many friends.

You have a great deal of patience.

They have a great deal of money.

You have a great deal of courage.

Egli arriverà *fra* otto giorni.

Ha fatto questo viaggio *in* otto
giorni.

Egli avrà fatto i suoi studii *fra*
tre mesi.

Ha finito i suoi studii *in* un
anno.

Ha fatto uno studio particolare
della geometria.

Ha molti amici.

Ella ha molta pazienza.

Hanno molto danaro.

Ella ha molto coraggio.

*To make a present of some-
thing to some one.*

Mr. Lambertini wrote to me
lately, that his sisters would be
here in a short time, and re-
quested me to tell you so; you
will then be able to see them,
and to give them the books
which you have bought. They
hope that you will make them

*Far regalo di qualche cosa
a qualcuno.*

Il Signor Lambertini mi scrisse
l' altro giorno che le sue si-
gnore sorelle verrebbero qui
fra poco, e mi pregò di dir-
glielo. Potrà dunque vederle
e dar loro i libri che ha com-
prati. Sperano che ne farà
loro regalo. Il loro fratello

a present of them. Their brother has assured me that they esteem you, without knowing you personally.

m' ha assicurato che La stimano senza conoscerla personalmente.

To be bored.

To lack amusement.

To get or be tired.

Annoiarsi 1.

How could I get tired in your company?

Come potrei annoiarmi presso di Lei?

Come potrei annoiarmi nella di Lei compagnia?

He is bored everywhere.

Egli s' annoia dappertutto.

Agreeable, pleasing.

Gradevole, piacevole.

To be welcome.

Esser il ben venuto (il ben arrivato).

Esser la ben venuta (la ben arrivata).

Be welcome.

Siate il ben venuto (la ben venuta).

You are welcome everywhere.

Ella è dappertutto il ben venuto.

EXERCISES.

221.

Have you already seen my son?—I have not seen him yet; how is he?—He is very well; you will not be able to recognize him, for he has grown very tall (*si è fatto molto grande*) in a short time.—Why does that man give nothing to the poor (*ai poveri*)?—He is too avaricious (*avaro*); he does not wish to open his purse for fear of losing his money.—What sort of weather is it?—It is very warm; it is long (*è un pezzo*) since we had any rain: I believe we shall have a storm (*un temporale*).—It may be (*può darsi*).—The wind rises (*alzar si*), it thunders already; do you hear it?—Yes, I hear it, but the storm is still far off (*molto lontano*).—Not so far as you think; see how it lightens.—Bless me (*Dio mio*)! what a shower (*che pioggia dirotta*)! If we go into some place (*in qualche sito*), we shall be sheltered (*al coperto*) from the storm.—Let us go into that cottage then (*dunque*); we shall be sheltered there from the wind and the rain.—Where shall we go now? Which road shall we take?—The shortest (*corto*) will be the best.—We have too much sun, and I am still very tired; let us sit down under the shade of that tree.—Who is that man who is sitting under the tree?—I do not know him.—It seems he (*pare ch' ei*) wishes to be alone (*solo*); for when we offer to approach him (*gli andiamo vicino*), he pretends to be asleep.—He is like your sister; she understands Italian very

well (*benissimo*); but when I begin to speak to her she pretends not to understand me.—You have promised me to speak to the captain; why have you not done so?—I have not seen him yet; but as soon as I see him I shall speak to him.

222.

Will you drink a cup of tea?—I thank you; I do not like tea.—Would you drink coffee?—With pleasure (*volentieri*), but I have just drunk some.—Do you not get tired here?—How could I get tired in this agreeable (*gradita*) society?—As to me, I am always bored (*mi annoio sempre*).—If you did as I do (*come soglio far io*), you would not lack amusement; for I listen to all those who tell me anything. In this manner I learn a thousand agreeable things, and I have no time to get tired; but you do nothing of that kind (*di tutto ciò*), that is the reason why you get bored.—I would do everything like (*come*) you, if I had no reason (*motivo*) to be sad.—Have you seen Mr. Lambertini?—I have seen him; he told me that his sisters would be here in a short time, and desired me (*pregare*) to tell you so. When they have arrived, you may give them the gold rings (*l' anello*) which you have bought; they flatter themselves that you will make them a present of them, for they love you without knowing you personally.—Has my sister already written to you?—She has (written to me); I am going to answer her. Shall I (*debbo io*) tell her that you are here?—Tell her; but do not tell her that I am waiting for her impatiently (*con impazienza*).—Why have you not brought your sister with you?—Which?—The one you always bring, the youngest.—She did not wish to go out, because she has the tooth-ache.—I am very sorry for it, for she is a very good girl.—How old is she?—She is nearly fifteen years old.—She is very tall (*grandissima*) for her age (*l' età*).—How old are you?—I am twenty-two.—Is it possible?—I thought you were not yet twenty.

SEVENTY-THIRD LESSON.

Lezione Settantesima terza.

He is too fond of me not to do it.
I go away not to displease him
(displease her).
One must be a fool not to perceive that.

Mi ama troppo per non farlo.
Me ne vado per non dispiacerli
(dispiacerle).
Bisogna essere sciocco per non accorgersi di questo (or Bisogna aver poco senno per non accorgersi di questo).

<i>To cease.</i>	<i>Cessare</i> 1.
<i>To dare.</i>	<i>Ardire</i> (<i>ardisco</i> ¹), <i>osare</i> .
To be able.	Potere*.
To know (can).	Sapere*.
You continually ask me for money.	† Non cessate mai dal chiedermi danaro.
She does not cease complaining.	† Dessa non si rimane dal lagnarsi.
I do not dare to ask you for it.	Non ardisco chiederglielo.
She does not dare to tell you so.	Essa non ardisce dirglielo.
I cannot go thither.	Non posso andarvi.
I cannot tell you.	† Non saprei dirle.
You cannot believe it.	† Non potrebbe crederlo.

<i>Besides, moreover.</i>	<i>In oltre, di più.</i>
<i>Besides that.</i>	<i>Oltre ciò, or oltre di ciò.</i>
<i>Besides.</i>	<i>Altroonde.</i>
Besides what I have just told you.	Oltre ciò che Le (vi) ho detto or ora.
There is no means of finding money now.	Adesso non vi è mezzo di trovar danaro.
<i>To push.</i>	<i>Spingere</i> * 2 (past part. <i>spinto</i> ; pret. def. <i>spinsi</i>).
<i>Along.</i>	{ <i>Lungo il</i> (or <i>al</i>).
Along the road.	{ <i>Rasente il, accanto di.</i>
Along the street.	Lungo la via (lunghezzo la via).
Along the coast.	Lungo la strada.
Along the river.	Lungo il lido.
All along.	{ Lungo il fiume.
All the year round.	{ Lunghezzo il fiume.
	Pel corso di.
	Pel corso dell' anno.

<i>To enable to.</i>	† <i>Mettere nel caso</i> (in istato) di.
----------------------	---

¹ Not to confound the verb *ardire*, to dare, with *ardere*, to burn, its present participle, first person plural of the present tense indicative, first and second persons plural of the present tense subjunctive, and first person plural of the imperative, are substituted by the verb *osare*, as: Present participle, *osando*, daring; first person plural indicative, *Noi osiamo*, or *noi abbiamo l'ardire*, we dare; first and second persons plural subjunctive, *Osiamo*, *osiate*, or *che noi abbiamo l'ardire*, *che voi abbiate l'ardire*, that we may dare, that you may dare; first person plural of the imperative, *Osiamo*, let us dare.

To be able to.

To the right. On the right side
or hand.

To the left. On the left side *or*
hand.

Could you not tell me which is
the nearest way to the city-
gate?

Go to the bottom of this street,
and when you are there, turn
to the right, and you will find
a cross-way, which you must
take.

And then?

You will then enter a broad
street, which will bring you to
a great square, where you will
see a blind-alley.

You must leave the blind-alley
on your left, and pass under
the arcade that is near it.

Then you must ask again.

An arcade.

The cross-way.

The blind-alley.

The shore, the bank.

{ † *Essere in istato (nel caso)*
di.

{ *Essere capace.*

{ A destra. A mano destra.

{ A dritta.

{ A sinistra. Dal lato manco.

{ A manca.

Non potrebbe dirmi qual è la
via la più corta per arrivare
alla porta della città?

Segua tutta questa strada, e
quando sarà all' estremità,
giri a destra, e vi troverà un
capocroce che traverserà?

E poi?

Poi entrerà in una strada dis-
cretamente larga, che La
menerà sopra una gran
piazza, dove vedrà un angi-
porto.

Lascierà l' angiporto dal lato
manco, e passerà sotto gli
archi che sono accanto.

In seguito domanderà.

Un arco.

Il capocroce.

L' angiporto.

La spiaggia, il lido.

· *To get married, to enter into*
matrimony.

To marry somebody.

*To marry (to give in mar-
riage).*

My cousin, having given his
sister in marriage, married
Miss Delbi.

Is your cousin married?

No, he is still a bachelor.

To be a bachelor.

Embarrassed, puzzled, at a
loss.

An embarrassment. a puzzle.

You embarrass (puzzle) me.

Maritarsi, ammogliarsi.

Sposare qualcuno.

Maritare.

Mio cugino, avendo maritato
sua sorella, sposò la signorina
Delbi.

Il di Lei signor cugino è egli
ammogliato?

No, signore, è ancor celibe.

Essere celibe.

Imbarazzato, impacciato.

Un imbarazzo, un imbroglio.

Ella m' imbarazza.

You puzzle (perplex) me.
The marriage.
He asks my sister in marriage.

Ella mi mette nell' imbarazzo.
Il matrimonio.
Domanda mia sorella in matrimonio.

The measure.
To take measures.
I shall take other measures.

La misura.
Prendere delle misure.
Prenderò altre misure.

Goodness! how rapidly time
passes in your society.

The compliment.
You make me a compliment
which I do not know how to
answer.

Dio! come il tempo passa presto
nella di Lei società (nella di
Lei compagnia).
Il complimento.
Mi fa un complimento al quale
non so che rispondere.

The fault. }
It is not my fault.
Do not lay it to my charge.
To lay to one's charge.
Who can help it? }
Whose fault is it? }
I cannot help it.

Il fallo, la colpa.
Non è mia colpa.
{ Non me lo imputi.
{ Non me lo imputate.
Imputare a qualcuno.
Di chi è la colpa?
{ Non so che farvi.
{ Non saprei che farvi.

The delay.
He does it without delay.
I must go (must be off).
Go away! Begone.

La dilazione, il ritardo.
Lo fa senza ritardo.
{ Sto per ritirarmi (or or ora me
ne andrò).
{ Sto per andarmene via.
{ Fugga! Scappi!
{ Andatevene! Se ne vada!

To jest.
The jest, the joke.
Seriously, in good earnest.
You are jesting.
He cannot take a joke, is no
joker.
To take a joke.

Burlare, scherzare.
Lo scherzo, la burla.
Senza burla (sul serio).
{ Ella burla (scherza).
{ Ella si burla.
† Non regge alla celia.
† Reggere* alla celia (retto,
ressi).

*To beg some one's pardon.**Domandar scusa a qualcuno.**To pardon.**Perdonare, far grazia, scusare.*

I beg your pardon.

{	Mi perdoni. La mi scusi. Le domando scusa.
	Perdonatemi. Vi domando scusa.
	Vossignoria mi scusi.

Pardon me.

{	Mi scusi. Scusatemi.
	Il perdono, la scusa.

The pardon.

*To advance.**Avanzare. Andare avanti (innanzi).*

The watch goes too fast (gains).

L' oriuolo avanza (va avanti).

That clock goes too fast (gains).

Quest' orologio anticipa.

*To retard.**Ritardare 1.*

The watch goes too slow (loses).

L' oriuolo ritarda.

My watch has stopped.

{	Il mio oriuolo si è fermato.
	Il mio oriuolo sta (or è) fermo.

*To stop.**Fermarsi 1.*

Where did we stop?

† Dove eravamo noi?

We left off at the fortieth lesson, page one hundred and thirty-six.

† Eravamo alla lezione quarantesima, pagina cento trenta sei.

*To wind up a watch.**Caricare un oriuolo.**To regulate a watch.**Regolare un oriuolo (mettere a segno un oriuolo).*

Your watch is twenty minutes too fast, and mine a quarter of an hour too slow.

Il di Lei oriuolo avanza venti minuti, e il mio ritarda un quarto d' ora.

It will strike twelve.

{	Sta per suonare mezzo giorno.
	Mezzo giorno suonerà or ora.

Has it already struck twelve?

Son già suonate le dodici?

It has already struck three.

Le tre sono già sonate.

*To strike.**Suonare 1. Battere 2.*

On condition, or provided.

{	A condizione, sotto condizione.
	Col patto.

I will lend you some money, provided you will henceforth be more economical than you have hitherto been.

Hereafter, for the future, henceforth.

The future.
Economical.

To renounce gambling.

To follow advice (counsel).

You look so melancholy.

Adieu, farewell.

God be with you, good bye.

Till I see you again.

I hope to see you again soon.

Vi presterò del danaro, a condizione che siate d' or innanzi più economo che non siete stato sino adesso (or che non lo foste finora).

D' or innanzi, d' oggi in avanti, in avvenire, nell' avvenire.

L' avvenire (mas.), il futuro. Economo, economico, risparmiante.

{ Rinunciare al giuoco.

{ Abbandonare il giuoco.

Seguire un consiglio (un parere).

Ella ha l' aspetto così melanconico.

Addio.

{ Al piacere di rivederla.

{ A rivederla.

EXERCISES.

223.

Why does my sister make no progress?—She would make some if she were as attentive as you.—You flatter me.—Not at all (*niente affatto*): I assure you that I should be highly satisfied (*contentissimo*), if all my pupils worked (*studiare*) like you.—Why do you not go out to-day?—I would go out, if it were fine weather.—Shall I have the pleasure of seeing you to-morrow?—If you wish it I will come.—Shall I still be here when you arrive (*al di Lei ritorno*)?—Will you have occasion (*occasione*) to go to town this evening?—I do not know, but I would go now, if I had an opportunity (*una buona occasione*).—You would not have so much pleasure, and you would not be so happy, if you had not friends and books.—Man (*l' uomo*) would not experience (*provare*) so much misery in his career (*la carriera*), and he would not be so unhappy, were he not so blind (*cieco*).—You would not have that insensibility (*questa insensibilità*) towards the (*pei*) poor, and you would not be so deaf (*sordo*) to their supplications (*alle loro preghiere*), if you had been yourself in misery for some time (*qualche tempo*).—You would not say that if you knew me well.—Why has your sister not done her exercises?—She would have done them if she had not been prevented.—If you worked more, and spoke oftener, you would speak better.—I assure you, Sir, that I should learn better, if I had more time.—I do not complain of you, but of your sister.—You would have no reason (*Non avrebbe tuogo*) to complain of her, had she had time to do what you gave her to

do.—Would you be sorry (*spiacere ad uno*) if your mother were to arrive to-day?—I should not be sorry for it.—Would your sister be sorry if she were rich?—She would not be sorry for it.—Where were you when your sister went out?—I was in my room.—She wished she had known it (*Ella vorrebbe averlo saputo*); for, had she known it, she would have called you in order to take you with her to the opera.—They say that our neighbour's house has been burnt down (*sia stata abbruciata*). Did you know it?—I was quite ignorant of (*ignorava intieramente che*) his house being on fire (*il fuoco fosse alla sua casa*): for, had I known it, I would have run to his assistance (*in suo aiuto*).—What has my brother told you?—He has told me that he would be the happiest man in the world (*del mondo*), if he knew the Italian language, the finest of all languages.

224.

I should like to know (*vorrei pur sapere*) why I cannot speak as well as you.—I will tell you: if you did as I do, you would speak well. You would speak as well as I, if you were not bashful (*timido*). But if you had studied your lessons more carefully (*meglio*), you would not be afraid to speak; for, in order to speak well, one must know, and it is very natural (*molto naturale*) that he who does not know well what he has learnt should be (*subj.*) timid. You would not be so timid as you are, if you were sure to make no mistakes (*sbagli*).

I come to wish you a good morning.—You are very kind (*amabilissimo*).—Would you do me a favour?—Tell me (*Dicami*) what you want, for I would do anything to oblige you (*per renderle servizio*).—I want five hundred crowns, and I beg you to lend them me. I will return them to you as soon as I have received my money. You would oblige me much (*rendere qualcuno obbligato*), if you would render me this service.—I would do it with all my heart (*di tutto cuore*), if I could; but having lost all my money, it is impossible for me (*mi è impossibile*) to render you this service.—May I ask you for (*oserei domandarle*) a little water?—What do you want water for?—Because I wish (*perchè vorrei*) to wash my hands.—If you would also give me a towel to wipe my hands after having washed them, I should be much obliged to you (*Le sarei tenutoissimo*).—Why have your brothers sold their old horse?—They would not have got rid of it, if they had not got a better.—Why did not your sister get a better carriage?—If she had got rid of her old carriage, she would have got a better.—Would you execute (*fare**) a commission for me?—With much pleasure.—If the merchant would be satisfied with the sum which I offered for the horse, I would buy it.—I am sure that he would be satisfied, if you would add (*aggiungervi*) a few crowns more.—If I were sure of that, I would add a few crowns more.—Children (*ragazzi miei*)! have you done your task?—We must be ill (*bisognerebbe che fossimo ammalati*) not to do it.—Is this wine sufficient for you (*Le basta—*)?

—It would be sufficient for me, if I was not very thirsty.—If your sisters have done their tasks (*il lor dovere*), why do they hide themselves?—They would not hide themselves, if they did not fear to be seen by their (*dalla lor*) governess (*maestra*), who would scold them for having gone out walking without telling her (*senza dirle nulla*).

225.

What o'clock is it?—It is half-past one.—You say it is half-past one, and by my watch (*nel mio oriuolo*) it is but half-past twelve.—It will soon strike two.—Pardon me, it has not struck one.—I assure you it is five-and-twenty minutes past one, for my watch goes very well.—Bless me! how rapidly time passes in your society!—You make me a compliment which I do not know how to answer.—Have you bought your watch in Paris?—I have not bought it, my uncle has made me a present of it.—What has that woman entrusted you with?—She has entrusted me with the secret of a great count who is in great embarrassment about the marriage (*a cagione del matrimonio*) of one of his daughters.—Does any one ask her (*La domanda forse qualcuno*) in marriage?—The man who asks her in marriage is a nobleman of the neighbourhood (*la vicinanza*).—Is he rich?—No; he is a poor devil (*il diavolo*), who has not a sou (*un quattrino*).—You say you have no friends among your school-fellows (*il condiscipolo*); but is it not your fault? You have spoken ill (*sparlare*) of them, and they have not offended you. Believe me, he who has no friends deserves to (*meritare di*) have none.

226.

*A Dialogue (Dialogo) between a Tailor and his Journeyman
(il garzone).*

Charles (*Carlo*), have you taken the clothes to the Count of (*della*) Torre?—Yes, Sir, I have taken them to him.—What did he say?—Nothing, but (*se non*) that he had a great mind to give me a box on the ear (*uno schiaffo*), because I had not brought them sooner.—What did you answer him?—Sir, said I, I do not understand (*non tollero*) that joke; pay me what you owe me; and if you do not do so instantly, I shall take other measures. Scarcely had I said that, when he put his hand to his sword (*che mise mano alla spada*), and I ran away (*prendere* la fuga*).

SEVENTY-FOURTH LESSON.

Lezione Settantesima quarta.

<i>To last (to wear well).</i>	<i>Durare</i> 1.
That cloth will wear well.	Questo panno durerà molto.
How long has that coat lasted you?	Quanto tempo Le ha durato quest' abito?

<i>To my liking.</i>	<i>A mio grado (a mio genio, a mio modo).</i>
To everybody's liking.	A grado di tutti.
Nobody can do anything to his liking.	Non gli va niente a genio. Non si può far nulla a suo grado (a modo suo).

A boarding-house.	}	Una pensione.
A boarding-school.		
To keep a boarding-house.	{	Tenere pensione.
To board with any one, or anywhere.		Essere in pensione di.
		Mettersi a pensione in.

<i>To exclaim.</i>	<i>Esclamare</i> 1.
<i>To make uneasy.</i>	<i>Inquietare</i> 1.
<i>To get or grow uneasy.</i>	<i>Inquietarsi.</i>
To be uneasy.	Esser inquieto (<i>fem.</i> inquieta).
Why do you fret (are you uneasy)?	Perchè mai s' inquieta?
I do not fret (am not uneasy).	Non m' inquieto.
That news makes me uneasy.	Questa nuova m' inquieta.
I am uneasy at not receiving any news.	Sono inquieto di non ricevere nuove.
She is uneasy about that affair.	È inquieta su questo affare.
Do not be uneasy.	Non s' inquieti.
Quiet.	Tranquillo, quieto.

<i>To quiet.</i>	<i>Tranquillare</i> 1.
Compose yourself.	Si tranquillì (tranquillatevi).

To alter, to change.
That man has altered a great deal
since I saw him.

Cambiare 1.
Quest' uomo ha molto cambiato
da che non l' ho veduto.

To be of use.
Of what use is that to you?
That is of no use to me.
Of what use is that to your
brother?
It is of no use to him.
Of what use is this stick to you?
I use it to beat my dogs.
Of what use is that horse to
your brother?
He uses it to carry his vegetables
to the market.
Of what use are these bottles to
your landlord?
They serve him to put his wine
in.

To stand instead, to be as.
I use my gun as a stick.

This hole serves him as a house.
He used his cravat as a nightcap.

Servire 3.
† A che Le serve (vi serve) co-
testo?
† Quello non mi serve a niente.
† A che serve ciò al di Lei fra-
tello?
† Non gli serve a niente.
† A che Le serve questo bastone?
† Mi serve per battere i miei cani.
† A che serve quel cavallo al di
Lei fratello?
† Gli serve a portar i suoi legumi
al mercato.
† A che servono queste bottiglie
al di Lei locandiere?
† Gli servono per mettervi il suo
vino.

Servire di.
† Il mio schioppo mi serve di ba-
stone.
† Questo buco gli serve di casa.
† La sua cravatta gli ha servito
di berretta da notte.

To avail.
What avails it to you to cry?
It avails me nothing.

Servire (di before Inf.).
† A che Le serve di piangere?
† Non mi serve a nulla.

Opposite to.
Opposite that house.
Opposite the garden.
Opposite the church.
Opposite to me.
Right opposite.
He lives opposite the castle.
I live opposite the king's library.

To get hold of. }
To take possession of. }

{ *Dirimpetto a, in faccia a.*
{ *Contro a (di), di contro a.*
Dirimpetto a quella casa.
Dirimpetto al giardino.
In faccia (dirimpetto, di contro)
alla chiesa.
Dirimpetto a me.
Proprio in faccia.
Abita in faccia al castello.
Abito in faccia alla biblioteca
reale.
Impadronirsi di.

To witness.	} Attestare 1, testimoniare 1, di-
To show.	} mostrare 1.
To give evidence against some one.	Testimoniare contro qualcuno.
He has shown a great deal of friendship to me.	Mi ha dimostrato molta amicizia.
To turn some one into ridicule.	Porre in ridicolo qualcuno.
To become ridiculous.	Divenir ridicolo.
To make one's self ridiculous.	Rendersi ridicolo.

<i>To be born.</i>	<i>Esser nato.</i>
Where were you born?	† Dove è Ella nata?
I was born in this country.	† Sono nato in questo paese.
Where was your sister born?	† Dove è nata la di Lei sorella?
She was born in the United States of North America.	† È nata negli Stati-Uniti dell' America settentrionale.
Where were your brothers born?	† Ove son nati i di Lei fratelli?
They were born in Italy.	† Son nati in Italia.

The boarder.	Il pensionario.
The pouch.	Il carniere.
A pillow.	Un guanciale.
Down.	La peluria.

EXERCISES.

227.

What are you astonished at?—I am astonished to find you still in bed.—If you knew how (*quanto*) sick I am, you would not be astonished.—Has it already struck twelve?—Yes, Madam, it is already half-past twelve.—Is it so late? Is it possible?—That is not late, it is still early.—Does your watch go well?—No, Miss N., it is a quarter of an hour too fast.—And mine is half an hour too slow.—Perhaps it has stopped?—Indeed you are right.—Is it wound up?—It is wound up, and yet (*pure*) it does not go.—Do you hear? It is striking the hour (*suona l' ora*).—Then I will regulate my watch and go home.—Pray (*di grazia*), stay a little longer (*La resti ancor un poco*)!—I cannot, for we dine precisely at one o'clock.—Adieu, then, till I see you again.—What is the matter with you, my dear friend? Why do you look so melancholy?—Nothing ails me (*non ho niente*).—Are you in any trouble (*Avreste per azzardo qualche dispiacere*)?—I have nothing, and even less than nothing, for I have not a penny (*un quattrino*), and owe a great deal to my creditors: am I not very unhappy?—When a man is well and has friends, he is not unhappy.—Dare I ask you a favour?—What do you wish?—Have the goodness to lend me fifty

crowns—I will lend them you with all my heart, but on condition that you will renounce gambling (*rinunziare al giuoco*), and be more economical than you have hitherto been.—I see now (*Ora vedo*) that you are my friend, and I love you too much not to follow your advice.—John (*Giovanni*)!—What is your pleasure, Sir?—Bring some wine.—Presently, Sir.—Menico!—Madam?—Make the fire (*del fuoco*).—The maid-servant has made it already.—Bring me some paper, pens, and ink. Bring me also some sand (*della sabbia*) or blotting-paper (*della carta asciugante*), sealing-wax (*della cera lacca*), and a light (*un lume*).—Go and tell my sister not to wait for me, and be back again (*di ritorno*) at twelve o'clock in order to carry my letters to the post (*la posta*).—Very well (*benissimo*), Madam.

228.

Sir, may I (*ardirò io*) ask where the Earl of B. lives?—He lives near the castle on the other side of the river.—Could you tell me which road I must (*debba*) take to go thither?—You must go (*segua*) along the shore, and you will come to a little street (*quando sarà all'estremità, prenda una contradella*) on the right, which will lead you straight (*direttamente*) to his house. It is a fine house, you will find it easily.—I thank you, Sir.—Does Count N. live here?—Yes, Sir, walk in (*favorisca di entrare*), if you please.—Is the Count at home? I wish to have the honour (*l'onore*) to speak to him.—Yes, Sir, he is at home; whom shall I have the honour to announce (*annunziare*)?—I am from B., and my name is (*chiamarsi*) F.

Which is the shortest (*corto*) way to the arsenal (*l'arsenale*)?—Go down (*segua*) this street, and when you come to the bottom (*sarà all'estremità*), turn to the left, and take the cross-way (*troverà una—che traverserà*); you will then enter into a rather narrow (*stretto*) street, which will lead you to a great square (*la piazza*), where you will see a blind alley.—Through (*per*) which I must pass?—No; for there is no outlet (*l'uscita*). You must leave it on the right, and pass under the arcade which is near it.—And then?—And then you must inquire further.—I am very much obliged (*tenutissimo*) to you.—Do not mention it (*Non ne val la pena*).—Are you able to translate an English letter into Italian?—I am.—Who has taught you?—My Italian master has enabled me to do it (see end of Lesson XXIV.).

SEVENTY-FIFTH LESSON.

*Lezione Settantesima quinta.**To lose sight of.*

The sight.

I wear spectacles because my sight is bad (or because I have a bad sight).

I am near-sighted.

The ship is so far off that we shall soon lose sight of it.

I have lost sight of that.

As it is long since I was in England, I have lost sight of your brother.

As it is long since I have read any Italian, I have lost sight of it.

† *Perdere di vista.*
 † *Dileguarsi dagli occhi*
 (dalla vista).
 † *Lasciare andare dallo*
 sguardo (dagli sguardi,
 dal guardo).

La vista.

Porto degli occhiali, perchè ho cattiva vista.

† Ho la vista corta.

† Il bastimento è così lontano che si dileguerà quanto prima dalla nostra vista (dai nostri occhi, dal nostro sguardo),

† Non so più nulla di ciò.

† Siccome è molto tempo che non sono stato in Inghilterra, ho perduto di vista il di Lei fratello.

† Come è lungo tempo che non ho letto l'italiano, io l'ho dimenticato (non lo so più).

You *ought* or *should* do that. | *Dovrebbe* far ciò.

Obs. A. *Ought* and *should* are rendered into Italian by the conditionals of the verb *dovere* *, to be obliged, to owe.

He *ought* not to speak thus to his father.

We *ought* to go thither earlier.

They *should* listen to what you say.

You *should* pay more attention to what I say.

Egli non *dovrebbe* parlar così a suo padre.

Dovremmo andarvi più per tempo (più di buon'ora).

Dovrebbero ascoltare ciò che Ella dice.

Dovreste far più attenzione (star più attento) a ciò che dico.

You <i>ought to have</i> done that.	<i>Avrebbe dovuto</i> far ciò.
He <i>should have</i> managed the thing better than he has done.	Egli <i>avrebbe dovuto</i> regolarsi meglio che non ha fatto.
You <i>should have</i> managed the thing differently.	<i>Avrebbe dovuto</i> prendersi in modo diverso.
They <i>ought to have</i> managed the thing as I did.	† <i>Avrebbero dovuto</i> agire in tal faccenda come mi vi son preso io.
We <i>ought to have</i> managed it differently from what they did.	† <i>Avremmo dovuto</i> condurci in tal faccenda diversamente di quello che hanno fatto.
You have managed the thing badly.	Vi siete mal preso.

<i>To bid or to wish.</i>	<i>Augurare</i> l.
I bid you good morning.	} Le auguro il buon giorno (Lesson XXVI.).
I wish you a good morning	
I wish you a good journey.	
	Le auguro un buon viaggio.

To play a game at billiards.	Far una partita al bigliardo (Lesson LI.).
To play upon the flute.	Suonare il flauto (Lesson LI.).
A fall.	Una caduta.
To have a fall.	† Far una caduta.
A stay, a sojourn.	Un soggiorno.
To make a stay.	Far un soggiorno.
Do you intend to make a long stay in the town?	Pensa Ella far un lungo soggiorno nella città?
I do not intend to make a long stay in it.	Non penso farvi un lungo soggiorno.

<i>To propose</i> (meaning to intend).	{ <i>Proporre*</i> } <i>di.</i>
I propose going on that journey.	{ <i>Far proposito</i> }
I propose (intend) joining a hunting party.	
	Mi propongo di far un tal viaggio.
	Mi propongo d' andare ad un partita di caccia.

<i>To suspect, to guess.</i>	<i>Sospettare</i> l.
I suspect what he has done.	Sospetto ciò che ha fatto.
He does not suspect what is going to happen to him.	Non sospetta ciò che or ora gli accadrà (gli avverrà).

<i>To think of some one or of something.</i>	<i>Pensare a qualcuno, o a qualche cosa.</i>
Of whom do you think?	A chi pensa Ella?
Of what do you think?	A che pensa Ella?

<i>To turn upon.</i>	}	<i>Trattarsi di.</i>
<i>To be the question.</i>		
It is the question, it turns upon.		Si tratta di.
The question is not your pleasure, but your improvement.		Non si tratta del vostro piacere, ma dei vostri progressi.
You play, Sir; but playing is not the thing, but studying.		Voi giuocate, Signore; ma non si tratta di giuocare, si tratta di studiare.
What is going on?		Di che si tratta?
The question is, what we shall do to pass the time agreeably.		Si tratta di sapere ciò che faremo per passar il tempo piacevolmente.

<i>On purpose.</i>	}	<i>Apposta.</i> <i>A bella posta.</i>
I beg your pardon, I have not done it on purpose.		
		Le domando scusa, non l'ho fatto apposta (a bella posta).

<i>To hold one's tongue.</i>	}	<i>Tacere</i> *; past part. <i>taciuto</i> ; pret. def. <i>tacqui</i> .
<i>To stop speaking, to be silent.</i>		

Obs. B. Five irregular verbs have their *perfetto remoto* in *cqui*, viz.

<i>Infinitive.</i>		<i>Pret. def.</i>	<i>Past. Part.</i>
To please,	Piacere*.	Piacqui,	piaciuto.
To be situated,	Giacere*.	Giacqui,	giaciuto.
To be silent,	Tacere*.	Tacqui,	taciuto.
To hurt,	Nuocere*.	Nocqui,	nociuto.
To be born,	Nascere*.	Nacqui,	nato.

Do you hold your tongue?	Tacetè?
I hold my tongue.	Taccio.
He holds his tongue.	Tace.
We are silent.	Tacciamo.
They are silent.	Tacciono.
After speaking half an hour, he held his tongue.	Dopo aver parlato mezz' ora tacque.

EXERCISES

229.

Why does your mother fret?—She frets at receiving no news from her son, who is with the army.—She need not be uneasy about him, for whenever he gets into a scrape he knows how to get out of it again. Last summer, when we were hunting together (*insieme*), night grew upon us (*la notte ci sorprese*) at least ten leagues (*la lega*) from our country-seat (*la casa di campagna*).—Well (*Ebbene*), where did you pass the night?—I was very uneasy at first (*da principio*), but your brother not in the least (*non affatto*); on the contrary, he tranquillized me, so that I lost my uneasiness. We found at last a peasant's hut, where we passed the night. Here (*ivi*) I had an opportunity of seeing how clever your brother is. A few benches and a truss of straw (*un fastello di paglia*) served him to make a comfortable bed; he used a bottle as a candlestick, our pouches served us as a pillow, and our cravats as nightcaps. When we awoke in the morning we were as fresh and healthy (*sano*) as if we had slept on down and silk.

A candidate (*un candidato*) petitioned (*domandare a*) the king of Prussia for an employment (*un impiego*). The prince asked him where he was born. "I was born at Berlin," answered he. "Be-gone," said the monarch (*il monarca*); "all the men of Berlin (*il Berlinese*) are good for nothing." "I beg your majesty's (*la maestà*) pardon," replied the candidate, "there are some good ones, and I know two." "Which are those two?" asked the king. "The first," replied the candidate, "is your majesty, and I am the second." The king could not help laughing (*non potè astenersi dal ridere*) at this answer (*la risposta*), and granted the request (*accordare una domanda*).

230.

A thief having one day entered a boarding-house stole three cloaks (*il mantello*). In going away he was met by one of the boarders, who had a fine laced (*gallonato*) cloak. Seeing so many cloaks, he asked the man where he had taken them from. The thief answered boldly (*freddamente*) that they belonged to three gentlemen of the house, who had given them to be cleaned (*da pulire*). "Then you must also clean mine, for it is very much in need of it (*averne gran bisogno*)," said the boarder; "but," added he, "you must return it to me at three o'clock." "I shall not fail (*mancare*), Sir," answered the thief, as he carried off (*portando via*) the four cloaks, with which he has not yet returned (*che non ha ancora riportato*).—You are singing (*cantare*), gentlemen, but it is not a time for (*non si tratta di*) singing: you ought to be silent, and to listen to what you are told.—We are at a loss.—What are you at a loss about?—I am going to tell you: the question is with

us how we shall pass our time agreeably (*lietamente*).—Play a game at billiards or at chess.—We have proposed joining a hunting-party; do you go with us (*è Ella dei nostri*)?—I cannot, for I have not done my task yet; and, if I neglect it, my master will scold me.—Every one according to his liking; if you like staying at home better than going out hunting (*che non d' andare alla caccia*), we cannot hinder you.—Does Mr. B. go with us?—Perhaps.—I should not like to go with him, for he is too great a talker (*troppo ciarlone*), excepting that (*da quello in fuori*) he is an honest man.

What is the matter with you? You look angry.—I have reason to be (*aver motivo d' essere*) angry, for there is no means of getting money now.—Have you been to Mr. A.'s?—I have been to his house; but there is no possibility (*non c' è mezzo*) of borrowing from him.—I suspected (*pensare*) that he would not lend me any, that is the reason why I did not wish to ask him; and had you not told me to do so, I should not have subjected myself (*non mi sarei esposto*) to a refusal (*il rifiuto*).

FOURTH MONTH.

Quarto mese.

SEVENTY-SIXTH LESSON.

*Lezione Settantesima sesta.**Towards.*

He comes towards me.
 He has behaved very well towards me.
 We must always behave well towards everybody.
 The behaviour of others is but an echo of our own. If we behave well towards them, they will also behave well towards us; but if we use them ill, we must not expect better from them.

To treat or to use somebody well.

To use somebody ill.

As you have always used me well,
 I will not use you ill.

As he has always used me well,
 I have always used him in the same manner.

Verso.

Viene verso di me.
 Si è condotto benissimo verso di me.
 Bisogna condursi sempre bene verso di tutti.
 La condotta degli altri non è che un eco della nostra. Se noi ci conduciamo bene verso di loro, eglino si condurranno pur bene verso di noi; ma se trattiamo male secoloro, non dobbiamo aspettare meglio da loro.

{ † *Comportarsi* } bene con
 { † *Trattare (u-* } qualcuno.
 sare)

{ † *Comportarsi* } male con
 { † *Trattare (u-* } qualcuno.
 sare)

† Come Ella si è sempre comportata bene con me, così io non mi comporterò male con Lei.
 † Come egli s'è sempre comportato bene meco, così io mi sono sempre comportato della stessa maniera con lui.

To delay (to tarry).

Do not be long before you return.
 I shall not be long before I return.

Tardare l (a before Inf.).

Non tardate a ritornare.
 Non tarderò molto a ritornare.

To long for or to.

I long to see my brother.

He longs to receive his money.

We long for dinner, because we are very hungry.

They long to sleep, because they are tired.

Oh! how much I long that some one may join me here!

† *Desiderare* 1.

† *Esser impaziente di* (tardare).

† *Non veder l' ora di.*

Sono impaziente di vedere mio fratello.

È impaziente di ricevere il suo danaro. (Non vede l' ora di ricevere il suo danaro.)

Siamo impazienti di pranzare, perchè abbiamo molta fame. Desiderano di dormire, perchè sono stanchi.

Oh! quanto mi tarda ch' altri quì giunga! (*pres. of the subj.*)

To be at one's ease.

To be comfortable.

To be uncomfortable.

Essere agiato (comodo).

Essere poco comodo.

Non essere agiato.

I am very much at my ease upon this chair.

Sono molto comodo su questa sedia.

You are uncomfortable upon your chair.

Ella è poco comodo sulla di Lei sedia.

What can that be?

† Che può mai essere?

We are uncomfortable in that boarding-house.

Siamo poco comodi in questa pensione.

That man is well off, for he has plenty of money.

Quest' uomo è agiato, perchè ha molto danaro.

That man is badly off, for he is poor.

Quest' uomo non è agiato, perchè è povero.

To make one's self comfortable.

† *Accomodarsi.*

Make yourself comfortable.

La si accomodi.

To be uncomfortable.

Essere incomodo.

To inconvenience one's self.

To put one's self out of the way.

Incomodarsi.

Do not put yourself out of the way.

Non La s' incomodi.

That man never inconveniences himself; he never does it for anybody.

Can you, without putting yourself to inconvenience, lend me your gun?

Quest' uomo non s' incomoda mai; non s' incomoda mai per alcuno.

Può Ella, senza incomodarsi, prestarmi il di Lei fucile?

To make entreaties.

To beg with entreaty.

I employed every kind of entreaty to engage him to it.

To solicit, to press, to sue, to entreat.

Far istanze

Pregare con istanza.

Ne l' ho sollecitato con tutte le istanze possibili.

Sollecitare l.

Here and there.

Now and then.

From time to time.

Indifferently (good or bad).

I have done my composition tolerably well.

Quà e là.

{ Di distanza in distanza.

{ Di tanto in tanto.

{ Di quando in quando.

{ Di tempo in tempo.

Bene o male.

Bene o male ho fatto la mia composizione.

To postpone, to put off.

Let us put that off until to-morrow.

Let us put off that lesson until another time.

Rimettere a, differire (isco).*

Rimettiamo questo a domani.

Rimettiamo questa lezione ad un' altra volta.

To impart something to some one.

Have you imparted that to your father?

I have imparted it to him.

+ *Far parola di qualche cosa a qualcuno.*

Ha Ella fatto parola di ciò al di Lei padre?

Gliene ho fatto parola.

In vain.

In vain I looked all around, I saw neither man nor house: not the least sign of settlement.

A dwelling, habitation, settlement.

Invano.

Io avea un bel guardare tutto all' intorno, io non vedeva nè uomini nè case: non la minima apparenza d' abitazione.

Un abitazione.

In vain I speak, for you do not listen to me.

In vain I do my best, I cannot do anything to his liking.

You may say what you please, nobody will believe you.

It is in vain that they earn money, they will never be rich.

We search in vain, for what we have lost we cannot find.

Ho un bel parlare, Ella non m'ascolta.

Ho belfare quanto so di meglio, non posso far niente a suo grado.

Ha un bel dire, nessuno Le crederà.

Invano si guadagnan danaro, non saranno mai ricchi.

Cerchiamo invano, non potrem mai trovare ciò ch'abbiamo perduto.

To salute.

I have the honour to bid you adieu.

Present my compliments to him (to her).

Remember me to him (to her).

Pray present my compliments to your sister.

Remember me (present my compliments) to him (to her).

I shall not fail.

Salutare 1.

Ho l'onore di salutarla.

Gli (le) presenti i miei complimenti.

Gli (le) dica molte cose da mia parte.

La prego di far i miei complimenti alla di Lei signora sorella.

Gli (le) presenti (offra) le mie civiltà (i miei umili rispetti).

Non mancherò.

The present (the present time or tense).

The past.

The future.

The loss of time.

Enjoy all the pleasures that virtue permits.

Il presente.

Il passato.

L'avvenire, il futuro.

La perdita di tempo.

Goda (godete) di tutti i piaceri che la virtù permette.

EXERCISES.

231.

I expected (*pensare*) that you would be thirsty, and that your sister would be hungry: that is the reason why I brought you here. I am sorry, however (*però*), not to see your mother.—Why do you not drink your coffee?—If I were not sleepy, I would drink it.—Sometimes (*ora*) you are sleepy, sometimes cold, sometimes warm, and sometimes something else is the matter with you (*ed ora qualche altra cosa*). I believe that you think too much of the misfortune that has happened to your friend (*fem.*).—If I did not think about it, who would think about it?—Of whom does your

brother think?—He thinks of me, for we always think of each other (*l' uno all' altro*) when we are not together (*insieme*).—I have seen six players (*il giuocatore*) to-day, who were all winning (*guadagnare*) at the same time (*nell' istesso tempo*).—That cannot be (*non si dà*); for a player can only win when another loses.—You would be right if I spoke of people that had played at cards or billiards; but I am speaking of flute and violin players (*di suonatori di flauto e di violino*).—Do you ever practise (*fare*) music (*della musica*)?—Very often, for I like it much.—What instrument do you play (*suonare*)?—I play the violin, and my sister plays the harpsichord. My brother who plays the bass (*il contra-basso*) accompanies (*accompagnare*) us, and Miss Stolz sometimes applauds (*applaudire*) us.—Does she not also play some musical instrument (*strumento di musica*)?—She plays the harp (*l' arpa*), but she is too proud (*fiera*) to practise music with us.—A very poor town (*una città alquanto povera*) went to considerable expense (*far una spesa considerevole*) in feasts and illuminations (*in feste ed illuminazioni*) on the occasion of its prince passing through (*del passaggio del suo* —). The latter seemed (*ne parve*) himself astonished. “It has only done,” said a courtier (*un cortigiano*), “what it owed (*il suo debito*) (to your majesty).” “That is true,” replied (*riprendere**) another, “but it owes all that it has done.”

232.

Have you done your Italian composition?—I have finished it.—Has your tutor been pleased with it?—He has not. In vain I do my best, I cannot do anything to his liking.—You may say what you please, nobody will believe you.—Can you, without putting yourself to inconvenience, lend me five hundred livres?—As you have always used me well, I will use you in the same manner. I will lend you the money you want, but on condition that you will return it to me next week.—You may depend upon it (*poter farne capitale*).—How has my son behaved towards you?—He has behaved well towards me, for he behaves well towards everybody. His father often told him: “The behaviour of others is but an echo of our own. If we behave well towards them, they will also (*pur*) behave well towards us; but, if we use them ill, we must not expect better from them.”—May I see your brothers?—You will see them to-morrow.—As they have just arrived from a long journey (*il viaggio*), they long for sleep, for they are very tired.—What did my sister say?—She said that she longed for dinner, because she was very hungry.—Are you comfortable in your boarding-house?—I am very comfortable there.—Have you imparted to your brother what I told you?—As he was very tired, he longed for sleep; so that I have put off imparting it to him till to-morrow.

233.

I have the honour to wish you a good morning. How do you do?—Very well, at your service (*per servirla*).—And how are all

at home (*E come stanno in casa*)?—Tolerably well (*passabilmente*), thank God (*grazie a Dio*)! My sister was a little indisposed (*indisposta*), but she is better (*ristabilita*); she told me to give you her best (*m'ha incaricato di molti—per Lei*) compliments.—I am glad (*contentissimo*) to hear that she is well. As to you, you are health (*la salute*) itself (*stessa*); you cannot look better (*ha la miglior cera del mondo*).—I have no time to be ill; my business (*i miei affari*) would not allow me.—Please to sit down (*La si accomodi*); here is a chair.—I will not detain (*distrarre*) you from your business; I know that a merchant's time is precious (*che il tempo è prezioso per un negoziante*).—I have nothing pressing (*pressante*) to do now, my courier is already despatched (*il mio corriere è già spedito*).—I shall not stay any longer. I only wished in passing by (*passando di qui*) to inquire about your health.—You do me much honour.—It is very fine weather to-day. If you allow me, I shall have the pleasure of seeing you again (*rivedere*) this afternoon (*questo dopo pranzo*), and if you have time we will take a little turn together.—With the greatest pleasure. In that case I shall wait for you.—I will come for you (*verrò a prenderla*) about (*verso*) seven o'clock.—Adieu then, till I see you again.—I have the honour to bid you adieu.

SEVENTY-SEVENTH LESSON.

*Lezione Settantesima settima.**To mean.*

What do you mean?

I mean.

What does that man mean?

He means.

What does that mean?

That does not mean anything.

I do not know what that means.

{	<i>Volere*.</i>
	<i>Pretendere*.</i>
	<i>Intendere*, significare l.</i>
	Che pretendete (intendete)?
	Pretendo (intendo)..
	Che vuol quell' uomo?
{	Vuole (pretende, intende).
	Che significa questo?
	Non significa niente.
	Non so che ciò significa.

To be particular.

I do not like to deal with that man, for he is too particular.

†	<i>Riguardarvi da vicino.</i>
	Non tratto volentieri con quell' uomo, perchè vi riguarda troppo da vicino.

To grow impatient, to fret.

Do not fret about that.

†	<i>Impazientarsi di.</i>
	{ Non s' impazienti di ciò.
	{ Non impazientatevi di ciò.

To sit up, to watch.
I have sat up all night.

To advise.
The dress, the costume.
An elegant dress.
His dress is decent (elegant).

To dress one's self.
That man always dresses well.

Vegliare 1.
Ho vegliato tutta la notte.

Consigliare 1.
Il vestire.
Un vestire elegante.
Il suo vestire è decente (elegante).

Vestirsi 3.
Quest' uomo si veste sempre bene.

To find fault with something.
That man always finds fault with everything he sees.
Do you find fault with that?
I do not find fault with it.

Trovare a ridire su qualche cosa.
Quest' uomo trova sempre a ridire su tutto ciò che vede.
Trova Ella a ridire su questo?
Non vi trovo niente a ridire.

A trick.
To play a trick.
To play a trick on some one.
To take a turn.
I have taken a turn round the garden.
He has taken a couple of turns round the garden.
To take a little turn.
To travel through Europe.

Una beffa, una burla.
Fare una burla.
Fare una burla a qualcuno.
† Fare un giro (una passeggiata).
† Ho fatto un giro nel giardino.
† Egli ha fatto due giri nel giardino.
† Far un piccol giro.
† Fare il giro dell' Europa.

More (meaning besides).
You have given me three books, but I want three besides.

Less.
Three less.
Three too many.

To want.
I want.
I want three books.

Di più.
Ella mi ha dato tre libri, ma me ne occorrono tre di più.

Di meno.
Tre di meno.
Tre di troppo.

*Occorrere**; past part. *occorso*; pret. def. *occorsi*.
Mi occorre.
Mi occorrono tre libri.

My reach.
 Within my reach.
 Out of my reach.

Those things are not within the reach of everybody.
 That is not within the reach of my sight.

Within gun-shot.
 A gun-shot (meaning distance).
 Two gun-shots („ „).
 How many shots have you fired?

La mia vista (capacità).
 Alla mia vista.
 Fuori della mia vista (or capacità).
 Queste cose non giungono alla capacità di tutti.
 Ciò è troppo lontano per la mia vista.
 A un tiro di fucile.
 Un tiro di fucile.
 Due tiri di fucile.
 Quante volte ha Ella tirato (Lesson XLVIII.)?

I wonder why that man makes such a noise.

† Vorrei sapere perchè quell' uomo fa un tale strepito (un tal rumore).

So long as.

So long as you behave well, people will love you.

{ *Quanto.*
Finchè, fin tanto che.
 Finchè (or fin tanto che) vi comporterete bene, vi ameranno.

To carry off.
 A mouthful.

Portar via, rapire (isco).
 Una boccata.

To overwhelm, to heap, to load.

To overwhelm one with joy.
 Generous.
 Beneficent, charitable.
 You have heaped benefits upon me.

Colmare l.

Colmare qualcuno di gioia.
 Generoso.
 Benefico, caritatevole.
 Ella mi ha colmato di benefizii.

Sincere.
 Sincerely.
 An advantage.
 The disadvantage, prejudice.
 I shall never say anything to your disadvantage.

Sincero.
 Sinceramente.
 Un vantaggio.
 Lo svantaggio.
 Non dirò mai niente a svantaggio di Lei.

To surrender.
 The enemies have surrendered.

Rendersi.
 I nemici si sono resi.

To prefer.

I prefer the useful to the agreeable.

Obs. All verbs used substantively are masculine.

The drinking.

The eating.

Preferire * (*isco*) (past part. *preferito*; pret. def. *preferii* or *preferesi*).

Preferisco l' utile al gradevole.

Il bere (il bere).

Il mangiare.

To behold.

Behold those beautiful flowers with their colours so fresh and bright.

The colour.

The lily.

The forget-me-not.

The rose.

An emblem.

Fresh verdure is salutary to our eyes.

Guardare l. *Riguardare* l.

Guardate quei superbi fiori d' un colore così fresco e splendido.

Il colore, il colorito.

Il giglio.

Il camedrio.

La rosa.

Un' emblema.

La verzura fresca fa del bene agli occhi (*or* ci fa del bene agli occhi).

EXERCISES.

234.

The loss of time is an irreparable (*irreparabile*) loss. A single minute (*un sol minuto*) cannot be recovered (*riquadagnare*) for all the gold in the (*del*) world. It is then (*dunque*) of the greatest importance (*della massima importanza*) to employ well the time, which consists (*consistere*) only of minutes, which we must make good use of (*che bisogna mettere a profitto*). We have but the present; the past is no longer anything (*non è più nulla*), and the future is uncertain (*incerto*).—A great many people (*una infinità d' uomini*) ruin themselves (*rovinarsi*) because they wish to indulge themselves too much (*per voler avvantaggiare*). If most men (*la maggior parte degli uomini*) knew how to content themselves (*contentarsi*) with what they have, they would be happy; but their covetousness (*la loro avidità*) very often makes (*rendere**) them unhappy. In order to be happy we must forget the past, not trouble ourselves about the (*non inquietarsi dell'*) future, and enjoy the present.—I was very much dejected (*afflittissimo*) when my cousin came to me. "What is the matter with you?" he asked me. "Oh (*Ah*)! my dear cousin," replied I, "in losing that money I have lost everything." "Do not fret," said he to me, "for I have found your money."

235.

Why have you played a trick upon that man?—Because he finds fault with everything he sees.—What does that mean, Sir?—That means that I do not like to deal with you, because you are too particular.—I wonder why your brother has not done his task.—It was too difficult. He sat up all night, and has not been able to do it, because it was out of his power (*capacità*).—As soon as Mr. Civiltà sees me, he begins to speak English, in order to practise, and overwhelms me with politeness (*la finezza*), so that I often do not know what to answer. His brothers do the same (*fanno altrettanto*). However, they are very good people (*sono buonissime persone*); they are not only (*non solamente*) rich and amiable, but they are also generous and charitable (*benefici*). They love me sincerely, therefore I love them also (*io pure*), and consequently (*perciò*) shall never say anything to their disadvantage (*lo svantaggio*). I should love them still more, if they did not make so much ceremony (*tante ceremonie*); but every one has his faults, and mine is to speak too much of their ceremonies.

236.

Have the enemies surrendered?—They have not surrendered, for they did not prefer life (*la vita*) to death (*la morte*). They had neither bread, nor meat, nor water, nor arms (*nè armi*), nor money; notwithstanding they determined to die rather (*hanno preferito morire*) than surrender.—Why are you so sad?—You do not know what makes me uneasy, my dear friend (*fem.*).—Tell me, for I assure you that I share (*dividere* in egual modo*) your sufferings (*la pena*) as well as your pleasures.—I am sure that you feel for me (*prendere* parte alle mie pene*), but I cannot tell you now (*in questo momento*) what makes me uneasy. I will, however (*pure*), tell you when an opportunity offers (*al presentarsi dell' occasione*). Let us speak of something else now. What do you think of the man who spoke to us yesterday at the concert?—He is a man of much understanding (*di molto senno*), and not at all wrapped up in his own merits (*e non è mica infatuato del suo merito*). But why do you ask me that?—To speak of something.—It is said: contentment surpasses (*contento val meglio*) riches; let us then always be content. Let us share (*dividere**) (with each other) what we have, and remain (*e restiamo*) our lifetime (*tutta la nostra vita*) inseparable (*inseparabile*) friends. You will always be welcome at my house, and I hope to be equally so (*io pure*) at yours. If I saw you happy, I should be equally so, and we should be more contented than the greatest princes. We shall be happy (*Saremo felici*) when we are perfectly (*perfettamente*) contented with what we have; and if we do our duty as we ought (*bene*), God will take care of the rest. The past being no longer anything, let us not be uneasy about the future, and enjoy (repeat the imperative) the present. (See end of Lesson XXIV.)

SEVENTY-EIGHTH LESSON.

Lezione Settantesima ottava.

A gold watch.	Un oriuolo d' oro.
A marble statue.	Una statua <i>di</i> marmo.
A deserving soldier.	Un soldato <i>di</i> merito.
A talented youth.	Un giovane <i>di</i> talento.
A silk gown.	Una veste <i>di</i> seta.
A mahogany table.	Una tavola <i>di</i> mogano.
A brick house.	Una casa <i>di</i> mattoni.
A stone house.	Una casa <i>di</i> pietra.
A velvet bonnet.	Un cappello <i>di</i> velluto.
A silver tankard.	Un boccale <i>d'</i> argento.
A one-story house.	Una casa <i>d'</i> un sol piano.
A two-story house.	Una casa <i>di</i> due piani.
A three-story house.	Una casa <i>di</i> tre piani.

Obs. A. As we have seen (Lesson II.), the preposition *di* expresses the matter of which a thing is made; but, to mark the use of a thing, the preposition *da* must be made use of. (See *Obs. C.* Lesson VIII.) Ex.

A kitchen-table.	Una tavola <i>da</i> cucina.
A nightcap.	Una berretta <i>da</i> notte.
A powder-box.	Una scatola <i>da</i> polvere.
A neck-handkerchief.	Un fazzoletto <i>da</i> collo.
A handkerchief (for the nose).	Un fazzoletto <i>da</i> naso.
Writing-paper.	Carta <i>da</i> scrivere.
A wine-glass.	Un bicchiere <i>da</i> vino.
A princely magnificence.	Una magnificenza <i>da</i> principe.
A gallant action.	Un' azione <i>da</i> cavaliere.
Gunpowder.	Polvere <i>da</i> cannone.
Fire-arms.	Armi <i>da</i> fuoco.
A windmill.	Un mulino <i>a</i> vento.
A coffee-mill.	Un mulinello <i>da</i> caffè.
A water-mill.	Un mulino <i>ad</i> acqua.
A steam-mill.	Un mulino <i>a</i> vapore.
A one-horse waggon.	Una carrozza <i>ad</i> un cavallo.
A four-horse carriage.	Una carrozza <i>a</i> quattro cavalli.
A two-wheeled waggon.	Una carrozza <i>a</i> due ruote.
A four-wheeled waggon.	Una carrozza <i>a</i> quattro ruote.
The garden-door.	La porta <i>del</i> giardino.

Waiter! bring something to drink, to eat, to sit upon.	Garzone! portate da bere, da mangiare, da sedere.
A three-corner hat.	Un cappello <i>a tre punte</i> .

Obs. B. The preposition *a* is made use of when the determining noun expresses *resemblance* or *shape*.

A fashionable coat.	Un abito <i>alla moda</i> .
A pendulum-clock.	Un orologio <i>a pendolo</i> .
An hour-glass.	Un orologio <i>a polvere</i> .
A sailing vessel.	Una nave <i>a vela</i> .
A rowing vessel.	Una nave <i>a remi</i> .

He entreated him with joined hands.	Lo pregò <i>a mani giunte</i> .
Thou wantedst to act according to thy wish.	Volesti fare <i>a tuo modo</i> .
To play at first sight.	Suonare <i>a prima vista</i> .
To drive with six horses.	Andare <i>a sei cavalli</i> .
They will come at the fixed time.	Verranno <i>all' ora stabilita</i> .
At twelve o'clock (mid-day).	<i>A mezzo giorno</i> (alle dodici).
At twelve o'clock at night (mid- night).	<i>A mezza notte</i> .
He came in time.	Venne <i>a tempo</i> .
To play at a game.	Giuocare <i>a un giuoco</i> .

To exaggerate.

That man exaggerates all that he says and does.	{ <i>Esagerare l.</i> + <i>Spingere tropp' oltre.</i> + <i>Andar all' eccesso.</i>
That man exaggerates his gene- rosity.	
	Quest' uomo esagera quanto dice e quanto fa.
	Quest' uomo spinge tropp' oltre la sua generosità.

*To take the place of, to be
instead of.* *Servire di, tener luogo di.*

That man is a father to me.	{ Quest' uomo mi tiene luogo di padre. Quest' uomo mi serve di padre.
That umbrella serves him as a stick.	

An inch.	Un pollice.
On a small scale.	In piccolo.
On a large scale.	In grande.
Thereabouts, nearly.	Presso a poco, a un di presso.
Alternately, turn by turn.	Alternativamente.

<i>To endeavour, to strive.</i>	<i>Sforzarsi, studiarsi l.</i>
<i>To give one's self up to grief.</i>	<i>Abbandonarsi al dolore.</i>
<i>To melt.</i>	<div> <i>Fondere*</i>; past part. <i>fuso</i>; pret. def. <i>fusi</i>. </div>
	<div> <i>Struggere*</i>; p. part. <i>strutto</i>; pret. def. <i>strussi</i>. </div>
<i>To melt in tears.</i>	† <i>Struggersi in lagrime.</i>

<i>To give birth to (meaning to raise, to cause).</i>	<i>Far nascere.</i>
<i>To raise difficulties.</i>	† <i>Far nascere delle difficoltà.</i>
<i>To cause quarrels.</i>	† <i>Far nascere delle quistioni.</i>
<i>To cause suspicions.</i>	† <i>Far nascere dei sospetti.</i>
<i>The behaviour of that man raised suspicions in my mind.</i>	† <i>La condotta di quell' uomo fece nascere dei sospetti nella mia mente.</i>

<i>To shake.</i>	<i>Scuotere*</i> ; p. part. <i>sosso</i> ; pret. def. <i>scossi</i> .
<i>Shake that tree, and the fruit will fall down.</i>	<i>Scuotete (scuota) quell' albero, e ne cadranno i frutti.</i>

<i>To be in want of, to be short of, to want.</i>	<div> <i>Mancare di.</i> <i>Aver mancanza di.</i> </div>
<i>That man is in want of every-thing.</i>	<i>Quest' uomo manca di tutto.</i>
<i>I am in want of nothing.</i>	<i>Non manco di niente.</i>

<i>A place at table (including knife, fork, and spoon).</i>	<i>Una posata.</i>
<i>A table for four persons.</i>	<i>Una tavola da quattro posate.</i>
<i>A table for ten persons.</i>	<i>Una tavola da dieci posate.</i>
<i>A writing-table or desk.</i>	<i>Una tavola da scrivere.</i>
<i>A dining-room.</i>	<i>Una sala da pranzo.</i>
<i>A sleeping or bed-room.</i>	<i>Una camera da letto.</i>
<i>A repeater.</i>	<i>Un oriuolo a ripetizione.</i>
<i>An oil-bottle.</i>	<i>Una bottiglia da olio.</i>
<i>A mustard-pot.</i>	<i>Una mostardiera.</i>
<i>A pitcher.</i>	<i>Un vaso da acqua.</i>
<i>Boiled meat for dinner.</i>	<i>L' alessio pel pranzo.</i>
<i>A fowling-piece.</i>	<i>Un fucile da caccia.</i>
<i>A milk-pot.</i>	<i>Un vaso da latte.</i>
<i>A fishing-line.</i>	<i>Una lenza.</i>

<i>To exact, to want of.</i>	<i>Esigere*</i> ; p. part. <i>esatto.</i>
What do you want of me?	{ <i>Che esigete (esige) da me?</i>
What do you exact of me?	{ <i>Che vuole da me?</i>
I exact nothing of you.	{ <i>Non esigo niente da voi.</i>
	{ <i>Non voglio niente da Lei.</i>

The rabbit-man.	L' uomo <i>dai</i> conigli.
The oyster-woman.	La donna <i>dalle</i> ostriche.

Dainties.	I buoni bocconi.
He is fond of dainties.	Gli piacciono (ama) i buoni bocconi.
At broad day-light.	Di giorno.
To sit down to dinner.	Mettersi a tavola.

EXERCISES.

237.

Behold, ladies (*Signore*), those beautiful flowers, with their colours so fresh and bright; they drink nothing but water. The white lily has the colour of innocence (*l'innocenza*); the violet indicates gentleness (*indica la dolcezza*); you may see it in Louisa's eyes (*negli occhi di Luigia*). The forget-me-not has the colour of heaven, our future dwelling, and the rose, the queen of flowers, is the emblem of beauty and of joy. You see (*Mirasi*) all that personified (*personificato*) in seeing the beautiful Amelia (*Amalia*).—How beautiful is the fresh verdure (*la verzura*)! It is salutary to our eyes, and has the colour of hope (*la speranza*), our most faithful (*fedele*) friend (fem.), who never deserts (*abbandonare*) us, not even in death (*alla morte*).—One word more, my dear friend.—What is your pleasure?—I forgot to tell you to present my compliments to your mother. Tell her, if you please, that I regret (*che mi rincresce*) not having been at home when she lately honoured me with her visit.—I thank you for her, I shall not fail.—Farewell then (*State bene*).

238.

Has your sister been out to-day?—She has been out to buy several things (*per far delle compre*).—What has she bought?—She has bought (*La si è comprata*) a silk gown, a velvet bonnet, and a lace veil (*un velo di merletti*).—What have you done with my silver tankard?—It is on the kitchen-table, together with the (*colla*) oil-bottle, the milk-pot, the pitcher, the mustard-pot, and the coffee-mill.—Do you ask for a wine-bottle?—No; I ask for a bottle of wine, and not (*e non mica*) for a wine-bottle.—If you will have the goodness to give me the key of the wine-cellar, I shall go for-

one.—What does the man want of me?—He exacts nothing; but he will accept what you will give him, for he is in want of everything.—I will tell you that I am not fond of him, for his behaviour raises suspicions in my mind. He exaggerates all that he says and does.—You are wrong in having such a bad opinion (*un' opinione*) of him, for he has been a father to you.—I know what I say. He has cheated me on a small and on a large scale, and whenever he calls he asks me for something. In this manner he has successively asked me for all I had: my fowling-piece, my fishing-line, my repeater, and my golden candlesticks.—Do not give yourself up so much to grief, else (*altrimenti*) you will make me melt in tears.

Democritus (*Democrito*) and Heraclitus were two philosophers of a very different character (*d' un indole molto differente*): the first laughed at the follies (*la follia*) of men, and the other wept at them. They were both right, for the follies of men deserve to be laughed and wept at.

239.

Have you seen your niece?—Yes; she is a very good girl, who writes well, and speaks Italian still better; therefore she is loved and honoured by everybody.—And her brother, what is he doing?—Do not speak to me of him; he is a naughty boy, who writes always badly, and who speaks Italian still worse; he is therefore (*perciò*) loved by nobody. He is very fond of dainties, but he does not like books. Sometimes he goes to bed at broad daylight, and pretends to be ill; but when we sit down to dinner (*si va a tavola*) he is generally better again. He is to study physic (*la medicina*), but he has not the slightest inclination for it (*alcuna voglia*). He is almost always talking of his dogs, which he loves passionately (*appassionatamente*). His father is extremely sorry for it. The young simpleton (*l' imbecille*) said lately to his sister, "I shall enlist as soon as a peace (*la pace*) is proclaimed (*publicare*)."

My dear father and my dear mother dined yesterday with some friends at the King of Spain (*all' insegna del re di Spagna*).—Why do you always speak English and never Italian?—Because I am too bashful.—You are joking; is an Englishman ever bashful?—I have a keen appetite (*grand' appetito*): give me something good to eat.—Have you any money?—No, Sir.—Then I have nothing to eat for you.—Will you not let me have some (*non mi dà Ella*) on credit?—I pledge (*impegnare*) my honour.—That is too little.—What (*come*), Sir!

SEVENTY-NINTH LESSON.

Lezione Settantesima nona.

<i>Just a little, ever so little.</i>	{ <i>Alquanto.</i>
	{ <i>Un poco, un pochetto, un pochino.</i>
	{ <i>Un tantino.</i>
Will you do me the favour of giving me a piece of bread.	Vuol farmi il piacere di darmi un pezzo di pane?
Do you wish a great deal?	Ne vuol molto?
No, just a little.	No, un pochetto solo.

<i>To turn to account.</i>	{	† <i>Far valere (trar profitto).</i>
<i>To make the best of.</i>	}	
This man does not know how to make the best of his talents.		† Quest' uomo non sa far valere i suoi talenti.
That man turns his money to account in trade.		† Quest' uomo fa valere il suo danaro nel commercio.
How do you employ your money?		† Come fa Ella valere il di Lei danaro?
I turn it to account in the stocks.		† Lo faccio valere nei fondi pubblici.
<i>To boast, to brag.</i>		† <i>Farsi valere.</i>
I do not like that man, because he boasts too much.		† Non mi piace quell' uomo, perchè si fa troppo valere.

<i>Notwithstanding that.</i>	{	<i>Ciò non di meno (nullameno).</i>
<i>For all that, although.</i>	}	<i>Nondimeno, nulladimeno.</i>
That man is a little bit of a rogue, but notwithstanding he passes for an honest man.		Quest' uomo è piuttosto briccone, ciò non dimeno passa per un galantuomo.
Although that man is not very well, he notwithstanding works a great deal.		Quantunque costui non istia bene, non tralascia di lavorar assai.
Although that woman is not very pretty, still she is very amiable.		Benchè questa donna non sia molto leggiadra, non tralascia d' esser molto amabile (or pure la è molto amabile).

Although this man has not the least talent, yet for all that he boasts a great deal.

Although the tavern-keeper's wife is rather swarthy, yet for all that she turns the business to good account.

Quantunque costui non abbia alcun talento, non tralascia di farsi molto valere.

Benchè la moglie di quest' oste sia un tantino bruna, pure essa non tralascia di far valere l' osteria.

I received your letter on the fifth, on the sixth, on the seventh. On the eighth.

To go back, to return.

The top.

The bottom.

Up to the top.

Ho ricevuto la di Lei lettera il cinque, il sei, il sette.

L' otto.

Ritornare l, *tornare* l.

L' alto, la cima.

Il basso, il fondo.

Fino in alto.

The eldest brother.

The eldest sister.

He is the eldest.

Il fratello primogenito.

La sorella primogenita.

E il primogenito (maggiore).

To appear, to seem.

I appear, &c.

We appear, &c.

Appeared.

To keep, to maintain.

My keeping or maintenance.

My keeping costs me six hundred livres a year.

*Parere**, *sembrare* l.

Paio, pari, pare.

Paiamo (pariamo), parete, paiono.

Past part. parso; *pret def.* parvi.

Mantenere *.

Il mio mantenimento.

Il mio mantenimento mi costa sei cento lire l' anno (all' anno).

To drive in, to sink.

To converse with some one.

A conversation.

To spare.

Spare your money.

To get tired.

To be tired.

To handle.

To lean against.

Lean against me.

Lean against the wall.

Andar a fondo.

Affondare l.

*Conversare con qualcuno.*¹

Una conversazione.

Risparmiare l.

Risparmiate il vostro danaro.

Stancarsi l, *annoiarsi* l.

Esser stanco, lasso, annoiato.

Maneggiare l.

Appoggiarsi.

Appoggiatevi a me.

Appoggiatevi contro il muro.

¹ *Conversare in un paese* means: *frequentarvi*, to go often to country.

To aim at.

Short.

To stop short.

Virtue is amiable.

Vice is odious.

{ *Prender di mira.*
Metter in mira.
 Corto, subito.
 Fermarsi subito.
La virtù è amabile.
Il vizio è odioso.

Obs. A. Before substantives taken in a general sense, and in the whole extent of their signification, no article is made use of in English, but in Italian it cannot be dispensed with.

Men are mortals.

Gold is precious.

Corn is sold a crown a bushel.

Beef costs fourpence a pound.

The horror of vice and the love of virtue are the delights of the wise man.

England is a fine country.

Italy is the garden of Europe.

The dog is the friend and companion of man.

Thessaly produces wine, oranges, lemons, olives, and all sorts of fruit.

He ate the bread, meat, apples, and petty-patties; he drank the wine, beer, and cider.

Beauty, gracefulness and wit, are valuable endowments when heightened by modesty.

Gli uomini sono mortali.

L' oro è prezioso.

Il grano si vende uno scudo lo (or allo) staio.

Il manzo costa quattro soldi la (or alla) libbra.

L' orrore del vizio, e l' amore della virtù, sono i dilette del savio.

L' Inghilterra è un bel paese.

L' Italia è il giardino dell' Europa.

Il cane è l' amico ed il compagno dell' uomo.

La Tessalia produce del vino, delle melerancie, dei cedri, delle ulive ed ogni sorta di frutti.

Mangiò il pane, la carne, le mele ed i pasticcini; bevette il vino, la birra ed il cidro.

La bellezza, le grazie e l' ingegno sono vantaggi preziosissimi, quando la modestia lor dà rilievo (or risalto).

I shall go to Germany on my return from Italy.

The balance of Europe.

He lives in Spain.

Andrò in Alemagna al mio ritorno d' Italia.

L' equilibrio d' Europa.

Vive in Ispagna.

OF PROPER NAMES.

They have generally no article in Italian, and are declined by means of prepositions, viz.

<i>N.</i> }	Peter,	Rome.	<i>N.</i> }	Pietro,	Roma.
<i>A.</i> }			<i>A.</i> }		
<i>G.</i>	of Peter,	of Rome.	<i>G.</i>	di Pietro,	di Roma.
<i>D.</i>	to Peter,	to Rome.	<i>D.</i>	a Pietro,	a Roma.
<i>Abl.</i>	from Peter,	from Rome.	<i>Abl.</i>	da Pietro,	da Roma.

The wife of Joseph <i>or</i> Joseph's wife.	La moglie di Giuseppe.
I said so to Theresa.	Lo dissi a Teresa.
I have received this book from Alexander.	Ho ricevuto questo libro da Alessandro.
He is from Vienna.	Egli è di Vienna.
He goes to Venice.	Va a Venezia.
He departs from London.	Parte da Londra.

Obs. B. The article, however, is made use of in the following instances :

a) When the name is preceded by an adjective, as :

The brave Caesar.	Il valoroso Cesare.
The divine Raphael.	Il divino Raffaello (<i>or</i> Raffaello).

b) Some proper names of men and gods take the article in the plural when they stand as appellative nouns, as :

The Ciceros.	I Ciceroni.
The gods of the ancient Romans.	Gli Dei degli antichi Romani.

Also in the singular, when they are used to mark another person, as :

The Solon of France.	Il Solone della Francia.
----------------------	--------------------------

c) When known personages, particularly learned or renowned men, are mentioned by their family-names, as :

Tasso.	Il Tasso.
Petrarca.	Il Petrarca.
Fiammetta.	La Fiammetta.

Obs. C. When a whole part of the world is mentioned, the article is generally made use of, as :

Europe is more peopled than Africa.	L' Europa è più popolata d' Affrica.
The States of America.	Gli Stati dell' America.
Italy is on three sides surrounded by the sea.	L' Italia è da tre parti circondata dal mare.

Obs. D. Some countries and islands have always the article, such as :

Tyrol, Switzerland, Moldavia.	Il Tirolo, la Svizzera, la Moldavia.
Morea, Crimea, China.	La Morea, la Crimea, la China.

Japan, Peru, India.
Brazil, Virginia, Sicily.

Sardinia, Corsica, Ireland.

Iceland, Capri.

Il Giappone, *il* Perù, *le* Indie.
Il Brasile, *la* Virginia, *la*
Sicilia.
La Sardegna, *la* Corsica, *l'* Ir-
landa.
L' Islanda, *la* Capraia, &c.²

And a few others.

Obs. E. The names of countries which are called after their capitals have never the article, as :

Naples, Venice, Genoa. | Napoli, Venezia, Genova, &c.

Obs. F. The names of seas, rivers, and mountains, have always the article, as :

The Atlantic ocean, the Danube, | *L'* Atlantico, *il* Danubio, *il* Po,
the Po. &c.

EXERCISES.

240.

Will you relate (*raccontare*) something to me?—What do you wish me to relate to you?—A little anecdote, if you like.—A little boy one day at table (*a tavola*) asked for some meat; his father said that it was not polite to ask for any, and that he should wait until some was given to him (*che gliene dessero*). The poor little boy, seeing every one eat, and that nothing was given to him, said to his father, “My dear father, give me a little salt, if you please.” “What will you do with it?” asked the father. “I wish to eat it with the meat which you will give me,” replied (*replicare*) the child. Every body admired (*ammirare*) the little boy’s wit; and his father, perceiving that he had nothing, gave him meat without his asking for it (*senza ch’egli ne domandasse*).—Who was that little boy that asked for meat at table?—He was the son of one of my friends.—Why did he ask for some meat?—He asked for some because he had a good appetite.—Why did his father not give him some immediately?—Because he had forgotten it.—Was the little boy wrong in asking for some?—He was wrong, for he ought to have waited.—Why did he ask his father for some salt?—He asked for some salt, that (*affinchè*) his father might perceive that he had no meat, and that he might give him some (*e gliene desse*).

Do you wish me to relate to you another anecdote?—You will greatly oblige me.—Some one, purchasing some goods of a shopkeeper (*il mercante*), said to him: “You ask too much; you should not sell so dear to me as to another, because I am a friend (*sono*

² The names of the following islands have no article: Cipro, Corfù, Creta, Cerigo, Candia, Maiorca, Minorca, Malta, Ischia, Procida, Lipari, Rodi, Scio, and a few others.

amico di casa)." The merchant replied, "Sir, we must gain something by (*coi*) our friends, for our enemies will never come to the shop."

241.

Where shall you go next year?—I shall go to England, for it is a fine kingdom (*il regno*), where I intend spending the summer on my (*al mio*) return from France.—Whither shall you go in the winter?—I shall go to Italy, and thence (*di là*) to the West Indies; but before that I must go to Holland to take leave of my friends.—What country do these people inhabit (*abitare*)?—They inhabit the south (*il mezzo giorno*) of Europe; their countries are called Italy, Spain, and Portugal, and they themselves (*ed essi medesimi*) are Italians, Spaniards, and Portuguese; but the people called Russians, Swedes, and Poles, inhabit the north (*il settentrione*) of Europe; and the names of their countries are Russia, Sweden, and Poland (*Polonia*). France and Italy are separated (*separare*) by the Alps (*le Alpi*), and France and Spain by the Pyrenees (*i Pirenei*).—Though the Mahomedans (*il Maomettano*) are forbidden the use of wine (*proibire qualche cosa ad uno*), yet for all that some of them drink it.—Has your brother eaten anything this morning?—He has eaten a great deal; though he said he had no appetite, yet for all that he ate all the meat, bread, and vegetables (*e tutti i legumi*), and drank all the wine, beer, and cider.—Are eggs (*le uova*, plur. of *l'uovo*) dear at present?—They are sold at six livres a hundred.—Do you like grapes (*le uve* or *l'uva*)?—I do not only like grapes, but also plums (*una prugna*), almonds, nuts, and all sorts of fruit (*di frutti*).—Though modesty, candour, and an amiable disposition (*l'amabilità*) are valuable endowments, yet for all that there are some ladies that are neither modest nor candid (*candido*), nor amiable.—The fear of death, and the love of life, being natural to men (*nell'uomo*), they ought to shun (*fuggire*) vice (*il vizio*), and adhere to (*attenersi a*) virtue.

EIGHTIETH LESSON.

Lezione Ottantesima.

To give occasion to.
Do not give him cause to complain.

Dar motivo di.
Non dategli (non gli dia) motivo di lagnarsi.

To leave it to one.

I leave it to you.

Rimettersi al giudizio d'alcuno.

Mi rimetto al di Lei giudizio.

A good bargain.	Un buon mercato.
To stick, or to abide by a thing.	† Tenersi a. Stare a.
I abide by the offer you have made me.	† Mi tengo (or sto) all' offerta ch' Ella mi ha fatta.

I do not doubt but you are my friend.	Non dubito ch' Ella non sia mio amico.
---------------------------------------	--

Obs. A. The verb *dubitare*, negatively used, requires *non* before the subjunctive.

I do not doubt but he will do it.	Non dubito che non lo faccia.
-----------------------------------	-------------------------------

To suffer, to bear.	Soffrire 3. Sopportare 1.
They were exposed to the whole fire of the place.	Erano esposti a tutto il fuoco della piazza.

To examine one artfully, or to draw a secret from one.	† Sorprendere il segreto di qualcuno.
I examined him artfully, and by that means I have made myself acquainted with all his affairs.	Ho sorpreso il suo segreto, e così mi son messo al fatto di tutti i suoi affari.

To bear, to put up with.	Sottoporsi* (conjugated like <i>porre</i> * (<i>ponere</i>), Lessons LXV. and LXXIV.).
You will be obliged to put up with all he wishes.	Le sarà forza (Ella sarà costretta) di sottoporsi a tutto ciò ch' egli vorrà.

Thick.	Denso, spesso, folto.
A thick cloud.	Un nuvolo denso (or una nuvola densa).
A thick beard.	Una barba folta.
A burst.	Uno scroscio.
A burst of laughter.	Uno scroscio di risa.
To burst out laughing.	{ † Dar uno scroscio di risa.
To burst out.	{ † Far uno scroscio di risa.
To burst out a laughing.	Scrosciare 1.
Splendour, brightness.	Scoppiare dalle risa.
To make a great show.	Lo splendore.
To light.	Far pompa.
The noise, the crack.	Illuminare 1.
	Lo strepito, lo scoppio.

To suffer one's self to be beaten.	Lasciarsi battere.
To let or to suffer one's self to fall.	Lasciarsi cadere.
To suffer one's self to be insulted.	Lasciarsi oltraggiare.
To suffer one's self to die.	Lasciarsi morire.
To let one's self be struck.	Lasciarsi percuotere.
To send back, to send away.	Rimandare l.
To extol, to praise up.	Vantare l.
To boast, to praise one's self.	Vantarsi l.

Go there.	Andatevi.
Let us go there.	Andiamvi.

Obs. B. The letter *o* of the first and third persons plural of the imperative is omitted before the adverb of place, *ci*, *vi*.

Let them go there.	{ Vadanvi.
	{ Ch' eglino vi vadano.
Go thou.	Va.
Go (thou) there.	Vacci.
Go (thou) away.	Vattene.
Let him go there.	Ch' esso ci vada.
Go away, begone.	Andatevene.
Let us begone.	Andiamcene.
Let him go away, let him begone.	Ch' egli se ne vada.

Give me.	Datemi.
Give it to me.	Datemelo.
Give it him.	Dateglielo.
Give him some.	Dategliene.
Get paid.	Fatevi pagare.
Let us set out.	Partiamo.
Let us breakfast.	Facciamo colazione.
Let him give it me.	Ch' egli me lo dia.
Let him be here at twelve o'clock.	Ch' egli sia quì a mezzo giorno.
Let him send it me.	Ch' egli me lo mandi.
He may believe it.	Ch' egli lo creda.
Make an end of it.	Finitela.
Let us finish.	Finiamola.
Let him finish.	Ch' egli finisca.
Let him take it.	Ch' egli lo prenda.
Let her say so.	Ch' essa lo dica.

The starling.	Lo stornello, lo storno.
If I were to question you as I used to do at the beginning of our lessons, what would you answer?	Se vi facessi adesso delle questioni come vi feci al principiare delle nostre lezioni (come prima io aveva l' abitudine di farlo), che rispondereste?

We found these questions at first rather ridiculous, but, full of confidence in your method, we answered as well as the small quantity of words and rules we then possessed allowed us.

We were not long in finding out that those questions were calculated to ground us in the rules, and to exercise us in conversation, by the contradictory answers we were obliged to make.

We can now almost keep up a conversation in Italian.

This phrase does not seem to us logically correct.

We should be ungrateful, if we allowed such an opportunity to escape without expressing our liveliest gratitude to you.

In all cases, at all events.

The native.

The insurmountable difficulty.

Abbiamo trovato a prima vista tali questioni alquanto ridicole; ma, pieni di confidenza nel di Lei metodo, vi abbiamo risposto per quanto ce lo permetteva il picciol corredo di parole e di regole che avevamo allora.

Non abbiamo tardato ad accorgerci che tali questioni erano fatte per inculcarci i principii ed esercitarci alla conversazione colle risposte contraddittorie che eravamo costretti di darvi.

Adesso possiamo presso a poco sostenere una conversazione in italiano.

Questa frase non ci pare logicamente corretta.

Saremmo ingrati, se ci lasciassimo sfuggire una così bella occasione senza dimostrarle la più viva gratitudine.

In ogni caso.

Il nativo.

La difficoltà insuperabile.

EXERCISES.

242.

A young prince (*un principino*), seven years old, was admired by every body for his wit (*a cagione del suo spirito*); being once in the society of an old officer (*l'uffiziale*), the latter observed, in speaking of the young prince, that when children discovered so much genius (*aver molto spirito*) in their early years, they generally grew very stupid (*ne hanno ordinariamente pochissimo*) when they came to maturity (*quando sono avanzati in età*). "If that is the case," said the young prince, who had heard it, "then you must have been remarkable for your genius (*aver moltissimo spirito*) when you were a child (*nella sua infanzia*)."

An Englishman on first visiting (*al primo giugnere in*) France, met with (*s' avvenne—in*) a very young child in the streets of Calais, who spoke the French language with fluency and elegance (*correntemente e con eleganza*). "Good Heaven (*gran Dio*)! is it possible," exclaimed he, "that even children here speak the French language with purity (*la purezza*)?"

Let us seek (*ricercare*) the friendship of the good, and avoid (*evitare*) the society of the wicked (*dei cattivi*); for bad company corrupts (*le cattive società corrompono*) good manners (*i buoni costumi*).—What sort of weather is it to-day?—It snows continually

as it snowed yesterday, and, according to all appearances, will also snow to-morrow.—Let it snow; I should like it to snow still more, for I am always very well when it is very cold.—And I am always very well when it is neither warm nor cold.—It is too windy to-day, and we should do better if we stayed at home.—Whatever weather it may be, I must go out; for I promised to be with my sister at a quarter past eleven, and I must keep my word (*tener* parola*).

243.

Will you drink a cup of coffee?—I thank you, I do not like coffee.—Then you will drink a glass of wine?—I have just drunk some.—Let us take a walk.—Willingly (*con molto piacere*); but where shall we go?—Come with me into my aunt's garden; we shall find there very agreeable company.—I believe it; but the question is (*resta a sapere*) whether this agreeable company will admit me (*mi vorrà*).—You are welcome everywhere.—What ails you (*che avete*), my friend?—How do you like that wine?—I like it very well (*squisito*); but I have drunk enough (of it) (*bastantemente*).—Drink once more.—No, too much is unwholesome (*ogni eccesso è nocivo*); I know my constitution (*il temperamento*).—Do not fall.—What is the matter with you?—I do not know; but my head is giddy (*mi gira la testa*); I think I am fainting (*cadere in deliquio*).—I think so also (*io pure*), for you look almost like a dead person (*un morto*).—What countryman are you?—I am an Englishman.—You speak Italian so well that I took you for an Italian by birth (*un Italiano di nazione*).—You are jesting.—Pardon me; I do not jest at all.—How long have you been in Italy?—A few days.—In earnest (*davvero*)?—You doubt it, perhaps, because I speak Italian; I knew it before I came to Italy.—How did you learn it so well?—I did like the prudent starling.

Tell me, why are you always on bad terms (*essere sempre in dissensione*) with your wife? and why do you engage in unprofitable trades (*occuparsi di mestieri inutili*)? It costs so much trouble (*si dura tanta pena*) to get (*ad ottenere*) a situation (*un impiego*); and you have a good one, and neglect it. Do you not think of (*pensare a*) the future?—Now allow me to speak also (*alla mia volta*). All you have just said seems reasonable; but it is not my fault if I have lost my reputation (*la riputazione*); it is that of my wife: she has sold my finest clothes, my rings (*l'anello*), and my gold watch. I have a host of (*esser carico di*) debts, and I do not know what to do.—I will not excuse (*scolpare*) your wife; but I know that you have also (*pure*) contributed (*contribuire*) to your ruin (*la perdita*). Women are generally good when they are left so (*quando si lasciano buone*).

244.

DIALOGUE.

The Master.—If I were now to ask you such questions as I did in the beginning of our lessons, viz. (*tali che*): Have you the hat

which my brother has?—Am I hungry?—Has he the tree of my brother's garden? &c., what would you answer?

The Pupils.—We are obliged (*essere costretto*) to confess that we found these questions at first rather ridiculous; but, full of confidence in your method, we answered as well as the small quantity of words and rules we then possessed allowed us. We were, in fact, not long in finding out that these questions were calculated to ground us in the rules, and to exercise us in conversation, by the contradictory answers we were obliged to make. But now that we can almost keep up a conversation in the beautiful language which you teach us, we should answer: It is impossible that we should have the same hat which your brother has, for two persons cannot have one and the same thing. To the second question we should answer, that it is impossible for us to know whether you are hungry or not. As to the last, we should say: that there is more than one tree in a garden, and in asking us whether he has the tree of the garden, the phrase does not seem to us logically correct. At all events we should be ungrateful (*ingrato*) if we allowed such an opportunity to escape without expressing (*dimostrare*) our liveliest gratitude to you for the trouble you have taken. In arranging those wise combinations (*la combinazione*) you have succeeded in grounding us almost imperceptibly (*impercettibilmente*) in the rules, and exercising us in the conversation of a language which, taught in any other way, presents to foreigners, and even to natives, almost insurmountable difficulties. (See end of Lesson XXIV.)

EIGHTY-FIRST LESSON.

Lezione Ottantesima prima.

It lacks (wants) a quarter.	{ † Ci vuole un quarto.
	{ † Manca un quarto.
It wants (lacks) a half.	{ † Ci vuol la metà.
	{ † Manca la metà.
How much does it want?	Quanto ci vuole?
It does not want much.	Non ci vuol molto.
It wants but a trifle.	{ Ci manca poco.
	{ Non ci manca se non poco.
It wants but an inch of my being	Ci vuole un pollice perch' io sia
as tall as you.	della sua statura.
It lacked a great deal of my being	Ci mancava molto perch' io fossi
as rich as you.	ricco quanto Lei.
The half.	La metà, il mezzo.
The third part.	Il terzo.
The fourth part.	Il quarto.
You think you have returned me	Ella crede forse (voi credete
all; a great deal is wanting.	forse) avermi tutto reso; ci
	manca molto.

The younger is not so good as the elder by far.

Our merchants are far from giving us an idea of the virtue mentioned by our missionaries; they may be consulted on the depredations of the mandarins.

He is nearly as tall as his brother.

A discourse, impeded or embarrassed by nothing, goes on and flows of itself, and sometimes proceeds more rapidly than even the thought of the author.

Il cadetto è assai men buono del primogenito.

I nostri negozianti son ben lontani dal fornirci l'idea di quella virtù donde ci parlano i nostri missionarii: si può consultarli sui ladronecci dei mandarini.

Gli manca ben poco ad esser grande come suo fratello.

Un discorso che nulla lega od imbarazza, cammina e fluisce da se stesso, e procede qualche volta più presto che non il pensiero stesso dell'autore.

In a foolish manner, at random.

He speaks at random like a crazy man.

Sconsideratamente, disavvedutamente.

Parla sconsideratamente come un pazzo.

To resort to violence.

A fact.

It is a fact.

Else, or else.

To make fun of.

To contradict, to give one the lie. Should he say so, I would give him the lie.

His actions belie his words.

To scratch.

† Venirne alle vie di fatto (ad usar violenza).

Un fatto.

È un fatto.

Se non, altrimenti.

Beffarsi, burlarsi di.

Smentire qualcuno.

Se dicesse questo, lo smentirei.

Le sue azioni smentiscono le sue parole.

Graffiare l.

To escape.

I fell from the top of the tree to the bottom, but I did not hurt myself much.

I escaped with a scratch.

The thief has been taken, but he will escape with a few months' imprisonment.

Scappare, scampare l.

Sono caduto dalla cima dell'albero (al basso), ma non mi son fatto molto male.

L'ho scappata con una graffiatura.

Il ladro è stato preso, ma scamperà con alcuni mesi di prigione.

<i>By dint of.</i>	† <i>Pel gran (a forza di).</i>
By dint of labour.	† <i>Pel gran lavoro.</i>
By too much weeping.	† <i>Pel gran piangere.</i>
You will cry your eyes out.	† <i>Pel gran piangere che fa, perderà gli occhi.</i>
I obtained of him that favour by dint of entreaty.	† <i>Ottenni da lui questo favore pel gran pregare (a forza di pregare).</i>

<i>That excepted.</i>	{ <i>Da quello in fuori.</i>
That fault excepted, he is a good man.	{ <i>Eccettuato questo.</i>
	<i>Da questo in fuori (eccettuato questo) è un buon uomo.</i>

<i>To vie with each other.</i>	{ † <i>A gara, a prova (l' uno dell' altro).</i>
Those men are trying to rival each other.	{ † <i>A concorrenza.</i>
	† <i>Questi uomini vanno a gara per superarsi.</i>

Clean.	Netto, pulito.
Clean linen.	{ <i>Della biancheria pulita.</i>
<i>The more—as.</i>	<i>Della biancheria di bucato.</i>
<i>The less—as.</i>	<i>Tanto più—che.</i>
I am <i>the more</i> discontented with his conduct, <i>as</i> he is under many obligations to me.	<i>Tanto meno—che.</i>
I am <i>the less</i> pleased with his conduct, <i>as</i> I had more right to his friendship.	Sono <i>tanto più</i> malcontento della sua condotta <i>ch'</i> egli mi dev' essere molto tenuto.
	Sono <i>tanto meno</i> soddisfatto della sua condotta <i>ch'</i> io aveva più diritto alla sua amicizia di qualunque altro.

<i>I wish that.</i>	† <i>Vorrei che.</i>
I wish that house belonged to me.	† <i>Vorrei che questa casa fosse mia.</i>

<i>To muse, to think.</i>	<i>Meditare l, star pensieroso (or sopra pensiero).</i>
I thought a long time on this affair.	Ho meditato molto tempo su questo affare (ho pensato molto tempo su questo affare).

To be naked.

To have the head uncovered.
 To have the feet uncovered.
 To be barefooted.
 To be bareheaded.
 To ride barebacked.

Esser nudo (ignudo).

Aver la testa scoperta.
 Aver i piedi scalzi.
 Esser a piè scalzi.
 Essere a capo scoperto.
 Cavalcare a bardosso (or a schiena nuda).

To have like to, or to think to have.

I had like to have lost my money.

I thought I had lost my life.
 We had like to have cut our fingers.

He was very near falling.

He was within a hair's breadth of being killed.

He had like to have died.
 At, on, or upon your heels.
 The enemy is at our heels.

Mancare l, star per.

Stetti per perdere il mio danaro.
 Poco mancò ch' io non perdessi il mio danaro.

Credei perdere la vita.
 Poco mancò che non ci tagliassimo le dita.

Stava quasi per cadere.
 Poco mancò che non fosse ucciso.
 Poco ci volle ch' egli non fosse ucciso.

Credè (pensò) essere ucciso.
 Credè (credette) morire.
 Alle vostre spalle.
 Il nemico c' insegue alle spalle.

To strike (in speaking of lightning.)

The lightning has struck.

The lightning struck the ship.

While my brother was on the open sea, a violent storm arose unexpectedly; the lightning struck the ship, which it set on fire, and the whole crew jumped into the sea to save themselves by swimming.

He was struck with fright when he saw that the fire was gaining on all sides.

He did not know what to do.

He hesitated no longer.

I have not heard of him yet.

An angel.

A master-piece.

Master-pieces.

Cascare l, cadere.*

Il fulmine cadde.

Il fulmine cadde sul bastimento.

Trovandosi mio fratello in alto mare, sopravvenne fiera tempesta; il fulmine cadde sul bastimento che mise in fuoco, e tutto l' equipaggio si gettò in mare per salvarsi a nuoto.

Fu preso da spavento vedendo che il fuoco progrediva da ogni lato.

Non sapeva a che appigliarsi.

Non istette più in forse.

Non ho ancor avuto sue nuove.

Un angelo.

Un capo d' opera.

Capi d' opera.

Obs. Of a word compounded by means of a preposition, expressed or understood, the first word only takes the mark of the plural.

Four o'clock flowers.

| Gelsomini di notte.

His *or* her physiognomy.His *or* her shape.

The expression.

The look.

Contentment.

Respect.

Admiration.

Grace, charm.

Delightfully.

Fascinating.

Thin (slender).

Uncommonly well.

His *or* her look inspires respect
and admiration.

La sua fisionomia.

Le sue forme, la sua statura, *or*
figura.

L' espressione.

L' aspetto, la ciera.

Il contento.

Il rispetto.

L' ammirazione.

Le grazie.

A meraviglia.

Attramente, lusinghiero.

Svelto.

Superiormente bene.

Il suo aspetto inspira deferenza
ed ammirazione.

EXERCISES.

245.

Will you be my guest (*mangiare con qualcuno*)?—I thank you: a friend of mine has invited me to dinner: he has ordered (*fare apparecchiare*) my favourite dish (*un cibo favorito*).—What is it?—It is a dish of milk (*dei latticini*).—As to me, I do not like milk-food: there is nothing like (*niente di meglio che*) a good piece of roast beef or veal.—What has become of your younger brother?—He has suffered shipwreck (*far naufragio*) in going to America.—You must give me an account of that (*La mi racconti quest' avvenimento*).—Very willingly (*volentierissimo*). Being on the open sea, a great storm arose. The lightning struck the ship and set it on fire. The crew jumped into the sea to save themselves by swimming. My brother knew not what to do, having never learnt to swim. He reflected in vain; he found no means to save his life. He was struck with fright, when he saw that the fire was gaining on all sides. He hesitated no longer, and jumped into the sea.—Well (*su via*), what has become of him?—I do not know, not having heard of him yet.—But who told you all that?—My nephew, who was there, and who saved himself.—As you are talking of your nephew (*a proposito del*—) where is he at present?—He is in Italy.—Is it long since you heard of him?—I have received a letter from him to-day.—What does he write to you?—He writes to me that he is going to marry a young woman who brings him a hundred thousand crowns.—Is she pretty?—Handsome as an angel; she is a master-piece of nature. Her physiognomy is mild and full of expression; her eyes are the finest in the (*del*) world, and her mouth is charming (*e la sua bocca è graziosissima*). She is neither too tall nor too short; her shape is slender; all her actions are full

of grace, and her manners are engaging. Her looks inspire respect and admiration. She has also a great deal of wit; she speaks several languages, dances uncommonly well, and sings delightfully. My nephew finds but one defect in her (*le trova che un difetto*).—And what is that defect?—She is affected (*aver delle pretensioni*).—There is nothing perfect in the (*al*) world.—How happy you are! you are rich, you have a good wife, pretty children, a fine house, and all you wish.—Not all, my friend.—What do you desire more?—Content (*la contentezza*); for you know that he only is happy who is contented (*che può dirsi contento*).

EIGHTY-SECOND LESSON.

Lezione Ottantesima seconda.

*To unriddle, to disentangle.
To find out.*

To disentangle the hair.
To unriddle difficulties.
I have not been able to find out
the sense of that phrase.
A quarrel.
To have differences (a quarrel)
with somebody.

Sviluppare 1, sciogliere
(sciolto, sciolti) 2.
Distrigare 1, distinguere*
2 (p. part. distinto, pret.
def. distinsi).
Pettinare i capelli.
Sciogliere difficoltà.
Non ho potuto deciferare il senso
di questa frase.
Una querela, una rissa.
Aver delle quistioni con qual-
cuno.*

*To take good care, to shun,
to beware.*

I will take care not to do it.
Mind you do not lend that man
money.
He takes care not to answer the
question which I asked him.
To ask a question.
If you take it into your head to
do that, I will punish you.
To take into one's head.

Guardarsi da.

Mi guarderò bene dal farlo.
Guardatevi dal prestare danaro
a costui.
Si guarda bene dal rispondere
alla questione che gli ho fatta.
Far una questione (*or* una do-
manda).
Se pensate di farlo, vi punirò.
Avvisarsi (mettersi in capo).

To become, to fit well.

Does that become me?

That does not become you.

It does not become you to do that.

That fits you wonderfully well.

Her head-dress did not become her.

It does not become you to reproach me with it.

To reproach.

Star bene, convenire, affarsi.*

Mi sta bene questo?

Non vi (Le) sta bene.

Non vi (Le) conviene di far ciò.

Questo Le (vi) sta a meraviglia.

La sua acconciatura di capo le stava male.

Non vi sta bene di rinfacciar-melo.

Rinfacciare l.

To follow from it.

It follows (from it) that you should not do that.

How is it that you have come so late?

I do not know how it is.

How is it that he had not his gun?

I do not know how it happened.

*Seguire, succedere**; past part. *successo*; pret. def. *successi*.

Ne segue che non dovreste (dovrebbe) far ciò.

Come mai è Ella (siete) venuta (venuto) così tardi?

Non so come.

Come mai non aveva il suo fucile?

Non so come.

To fast.

To be fasting.

To give notice to, to let anybody know.

To warn some one of something.

Give notice to that man of his father's return.

Digiunare, far astinenza.

Essere a digiuno.

Avvertire (avvisare) qualcuno di qualche cosa.

Avvertite (avvisate) costui del ritorno di suo padre.

To clear, to elucidate, to clear up.
The weather is clearing up.

Schiarire 3 (isco). Rischiare l.
Il tempo si rischiarà.

To refresh.

Refresh yourself, and return to me immediately.

To whiten, to bleach.

To blacken.

To turn pale, to grow pale.

To grow old.

To grow young.

That makes one look young again.

To blush, to redden.

Rinfrescare l.

Rinfrescatevi e ritornate subito.

Imbiancare l.

Annerire (isco), abbrunare.

Impallidire (isco).

Invecchiare l.

Ringiovinire (isco).

+ Questo ringiovinisce il volto.

Arrossire (isco).

<i>To make merry.</i>	<i>Rallegrare 1, divertire 3.</i>
To make one's self merry.	Rallegrarsi, divertirsi.
He makes merry at my expense.	Si diverte alle mie spese.

<i>To feign, to dissemble, to pretend.</i>	<i>Fingere*</i> ; past part. <i>finto</i> ; pret. def. <i>finì</i> .
He knows the art of dissembling.	Possiede l' arte di fingere.
<i>To possess.</i>	<i>Possedere*</i> (is conjugated like <i>sedere*</i> , Lesson LI.).

<i>To procrastinate, to go slowly.</i>	† <i>Mandar le cose in lungo.</i>
I do not like to transact business with that man, for he always goes very slowly about it.	Non mi piace far affari con costui, perchè manda sempre le cose in lungo.

A proof.	Una prova.
It is a proof.	È una prova.

<i>To stray, to get lost, to lose one's way, to lose one's self.</i>	<i>Smarrirsi.</i>
Through.	{ A traverso. Per mezzo. Da banda a banda. Da parte a parte.
The cannon-ball went through the wall.	La palla di cannone è passata a traverso la muraglia.
I ran him through the body.	Gli ho passato la spada da parte a parte.

APOSTROPHE AND ELISION.

The apostrophe is used,—

1. After the articles *lo, la, li, gli*, and their oblique cases, when they meet before words beginning with a vowel, or when they are abbreviated, as :

The soul, the honour.	L' anima, l' onore.
Of the books, to the fathers.	De' libri, a' padri, &c.

Obs. A. The articles *lo, la*, are never abridged in the plural, unless the noun following *lo* begins with an *i*.¹ Ex.

The friends, the coats.	Gli amici, gli abiti.
The loves, the honours.	Gli amori, gli onori.
The shades, the inventions.	Le ombre, le invenzioni.
The eminences, the executions.	Le eminenze, le esecuzioni.

But write :

The geniuses, the English, the instruments.	Gl' ingegni, gl' Inglesi, gl' istrumenti.
---	---

Obs. B. Whenever the prepositions : *con*, with; *in*, in; *su*, upon; *per*, for, by, meet with the definite articles, *il, lo, la*, they are contracted : thus *nel* is said instead of *in il*, *nello* instead of *in lo*, &c. According to this contraction we say and write:

SINGULAR.				- PLURAL.	
	<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>		<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>
In the.	Nel, nello	„ Nella.		Nei or ne', negli.	Nelle.
With the.	Col, collo	„ Colla.		Coi or co', con gli or cogli.	Colle.
Upon the.	Sul, sullo	„ Sulla.		Su' or sui, sugli.	Sulle.
For the.	Pel, pello	„ Pella.		Pelli, pei or pe', per gli.	Pelle. ²

EXAMPLES.

In the garden, in the spirit, in the room.	Nel giardino, nello spirito, nella camera.
In the gardens, in the spirits, in the rooms.	Ne' giardini, negli spiriti, nelle camere, &c.

2. In the article *il* the letter *i* is sometimes cut off, and an apostrophe put in its stead, after a word ending with a vowel, but not the vowel of that word. This, however, is more frequently the case in poetry than in prose. Ex.

The whole country.	Tutto 'l paese.
Let him tell me his name.	Mi dica 'l suo nome.

3. *Mi, ti, ci, vi, ne, se, si, di*, receive the apostrophe before a vowel. Ex.

You understand me.	Voi m' intendete.
He understands it.	Ei l' intende.
He will mistake.	S' ingannerà.
If he likes.	S' egli vuole.

Obs. C. *Ci*, however, is never abridged before *a, o, u*, to avoid harshness. Ex.

¹ Words ending in *gli* and *ci* are never abridged unless the following words begin with *i*, as: *quegl' intervalli*, those intervals; *dolc' inganni*, sweet illusions. But write *quegli amici*, those friends, and not *quegl' amici*.

² The contractions contained in this last line are less generally made use of.

We want.
We are in want of.
They unite us.

Ci abbisogna.
Ci occorre.
Ci uniscono.

4. The words *uno, bello, grande, santo, quello, buono*, are often abridged before masculine nouns beginning with a consonant or a vowel, but never before feminine nouns (except when beginning with a vowel), nor before *s* followed by a consonant. (See *Obs. G., H., I., Lesson X.*) Ex.

A book, a fine book, a large horse.

Un libro, un bel libro, un gran cavallo.

Saint Peter, that soldier, good bread.

San Pietro, quel soldato, buon pane.

A friend, a fine man, great genius.

Un amico, un bell' uomo, grand' ingegno.

Holy Anthony, that love, good orator.

Sant' Antonio, quell' amore, buon oratore.

Beautiful boat, great army.

Bella barca, grand' armata.

5. Words in the singular, having one (not two) of the liquid consonants, *l, m, n, r*, before their final vowel, may lose this, unless before words beginning with *s*, followed by a consonant. The vowels after *m* and *n* are not so often dropped as those after *l* and *r*, except in verbs, where the vowel after *m* is frequently dropped. Ex.

The rising sun.

Il sol nascente (instead of sole nascente).

Your welfare.

Il ben vostro (instead of bene vostro).

The serene sky.

Il ciel sereno (instead of cielo sereno).

Full senate.

Pien senato (instead of pieno senato).

Light wind.

Leggier vento (instead of leggiero vento).

Let us wait.

Attendiam (instead of attendiamo).

Let us go.

Andiam (instead of andiamo).

Let us feign.

Fingiam (instead of fingiamo), &c.

Obs. D. Cannot be abridged :—(a) The words *chiaro*, clear; *raro*, rare; *nero*, black; *oscuro*, dark; and some others. (b) The first person singular of the present of the indicative, as: *Io perdono*, I pardon; *io mi consolo*, I console myself, &c., except *sono*, first person singular and third person plural of the auxiliary *essere*. Ex.

I am ready.

Io son pronto (for io sono pronto).

They are come.

Eglino son venuti (for eglino sono venuti).

6. Infinitives, when joined to *mi, ti, ci, vi, si, ne, lo, la, le, li, gli*, or any other word, drop their final *e*. Ex.

To see him.

To feel one's self.

To repent.

Per vederlo (*for* per vedere lo).

Sentirsi (*for* sentire si).

Pentirsi (*for* pentire si).

Obs. E. Words having the grave accent are never abridged, as: *dirò*, I shall say; *farò*, I will make; *felicità*, happiness, &c., except *che*, with its compounds: *perchè*, why? *benchè*, although; *sicchè*, therefore, so that, &c., which are sometimes abridged. Ex.

Because he was.

Though he might go.

Perch' era.

Bench' andasse, &c.

AUGMENTATIONS.

1. When words beginning with *s* followed by a consonant are preceded by one of the prepositions *in, con, per*, or by the negative *non*, the letter *i* is prefixed to them for the sake of euphony. (See *Obs. F.*, Lesson LV.) Ex.

In the street.

In a state (able).

With terror.

With study.

By mistake.

Do not jest.

Not to say.

In istrada (*for* in strada).

In istato (*for* in stato).

Con ispavento (*for* con spavento).

Con istudio (*for* con studio).

Per isbaglio (*for* per sbaglio).

Non ischerzate (*for* non scherzate).

Non istare (*for* non stare).

2. The preposition *a*, and the conjunctions *e, o, nè* are changed into *ad, ed, od, ned*, before a vowel; *od* and *ned*, however, are less frequently made use of than *ad* and *ed*. Ex.

To Anthony.

You and I.

We and he.

Neither thou nor she.

Ad Antonio.

Voi ed io.

Noi ed egli.

Nè tu *ned* essa.

EXERCISES.

246.

The Emperor Charles the Fifth, being one day out hunting, lost his way in the forest, and having come to a house, entered it to refresh himself. There were in it four men, who pretended to sleep. One of them rose, and approaching the emperor, told him he had dreamt he should take his watch, and took it. Then another rose, and said he had dreamt that his *surtout* fitted him wonderfully, and took it. The third took his purse. At last the fourth came up, and said he hoped he would not take it ill if he searched him, and in doing it perceived around the emperor's neck a small gold chain, to

which a whistle was attached, which he wished to rob him of. But the emperor said: "My good friend, before depriving me of (*spogliare qualcuno di qualche cosa*) this trinket (*il gioiello*), I must teach you its virtue." Saying this, he whistled. His attendants (*i suoi uffiziali*), who were seeking him, hastened to the house, and were thunderstruck (*sopraffatti dallo stupore*) to behold his majesty in such a state. But the emperor, seeing himself out of danger (*fuor di pericolo*), said (*li prevenne dicendo*): "These men (*Ecco degli uomini che*) have dreamt all that they liked. I wish in my turn also to dream." And after having mused a few moments, he said: "I have dreamt that you all four deserve to be hanged:" which was no sooner spoken than executed before the house.

A certain king making one day his entrance into a town at two o'clock in the afternoon (*dopo mezzo giorno*), the senate sent some deputies (*un deputato*) to compliment him. The one who was to speak (*portar la parola*) began thus (*in questi termini*): "Alexander the Great, the great Alexander," and stopped short (*e tosto s'arrestò*). The king, who was very hungry (*aver molta fame*), said: "Ah! my friend, Alexander the Great had dined, and I am still fasting." Having said this, he proceeded to (*proseguire verso*) the town-hall (*il palazzo della città*), where a magnificent dinner had been prepared for him.

247.

A good old man (*un vecchierello*), being very ill, sent for his wife, who was still very young, and said to her: "My dear, you see that my last hour is approaching, and that I am compelled to leave you. If, therefore, you wish me to die in peace, you must do me a favour (*una grazia*). You are still young, and will, without doubt, marry again (*rimaritarsi*): knowing this, I request of you not to wed (*prendere*) M. Lewis (*Luigi*); for I confess that I have always been very jealous of him, and am so still. I should, therefore, die in despair (*disperato*) if you do not promise me that." The wife answered: "My dear husband (*mio caro marito*), I entreat you, let not this hinder you from dying peaceably; for I assure you that, if even I wished to wed him, I could not do so, being already promised to another."

It was customary with Frederick (*Federico*) the Great, whenever a new soldier appeared in his guards to ask him three questions; viz. "How old are you? How long have you been in my service? Are you satisfied with your pay and treatment?" It happened that a young soldier, born in France, who had served in his own country, desired to enlist in the Prussian service. His figure caused him immediately to be accepted; but he was totally ignorant of the German dialect; and his captain giving him notice that the king would question him in that tongue the first time he should see him, cautioned him, at the same time, to learn by heart the three answers that he was to make to the king. Accordingly he learnt them by

the next day; and as soon as he appeared in the ranks Frederick came up to interrogate him: but he happened to begin upon him by the second question, and asked him, "How long have you been in my service?" "Twenty-one years," answered the soldier. The king, struck with his youth, which plainly indicated that he had not borne a musket so long as that, said to him, much astonished: "How old are you?" "One year, an't please your majesty (*con buona grazia della Maestà Vostra*)." Frederick, more astonished still, cried, "You or I must certainly be bereft of our senses." The soldier, who took this for the third question, replied firmly (*con molto sangue freddo*): "Both, an't please your majesty (*quando piaccia a Vostra Maestà*)."

EIGHTY-THIRD LESSON.

*Lezione Ottantesima terza.**To double.*

The double.

Your share, your part.

That merchant asks twice as much as he ought.

You must bargain with him; he will give it you for the half.

You have twice your share.

You have three times your share.

{ *Addoppiare* 1.{ *Doppiare* 1, *raddoppiare* 1.

Il doppio.

La vostra parte.

Questo mercante domanda il doppio.

Bisogna contrattare con lui; glielo darà per la metà prezzo.

Ella ha due volte tanto.

Ella ha tre volte tanto.

*To renew.**To stun.*

Wild, giddy.

To shake somebody's hand.

Open, frank, real.

Rinnovare, rinnovellare 1.

Stordire (isco).

Stordito.

Stringere la mano a qualcuno.

Franco, aperto, schietto.

I tell you yes.

I tell you no.

I told him yes.

I told him no.

† Vi dico *dì* sì.† Vi dico *dì* no.† Gli dissi *dì* sì.† Gli dissi *dì* no.*To lay up, to put by.*{ *Serrare* 1, *riporre** (posto, posi).
Chiusdere, *rinchiudere** (chiuso, chiusi).

Put your money by.	Chiuda (chiudete) il di Lei (il vostro) danaro.
As soon as I have read my book I put it by.	Appena ho letto il mio libro, lo ripongo.
I do not care much about going to the play to night.	{ Non mi do molta pensiero d'andare allo spettacolo questasera. Non mi curo molto d'andare allo spettacolo questa sera.

<i>To care.</i>	<i>Darsi briga, curarsi.</i>
<i>To satisfy one's self with a thing.</i>	<i>Saziarsi l.</i>
I have been eating an hour, and I cannot satisfy my hunger.	{ È un' ora che mangio e non posso saziarmi. Mangio da un' ora e non posso saziarmi.
<i>To be satisfied.</i>	<i>Essere sazio.</i>
<i>To quench one's thirst.</i>	<i>Dissetarsi l.</i>
I have been drinking this half-hour, but I cannot quench my thirst.	È una mezz' ora che bevo, ma non posso dissetarmi.
To have one's thirst quenched.	Esser dissetato.
<i>To thirst for, to be thirsty or dry.</i>	<i>Esser assetato, aver gran sete.</i>
He is a blood-thirsty fellow.	{ È un uomo assetato di sangue. È un uomo sitibondo di sangue.
On both sides, on every side.	Da un canto e dall' altro. D' ambo i lati.
On all sides.	Da tutti i lati.

Allow me (my lady), to introduce to you Mr. G., an old friend of our family.	Permetta, signora, ch'io Le presenti il Signor di G. come un vecchio amico della nostra famiglia.
I am delighted to become acquainted with you.	Sono contentissima, Signore (mi è gratissimo, Signore), di farla di Lei conoscenza.
I shall do all in my power to deserve your good opinion.	Farò tutto ciò che sarà in mio potere per rendermi degno delle di Lei buone grazie.
Allow me to introduce to you Mr. B., whose brother has rendered such eminent services to your cousin.	Signore (f. pl.), permettano ch'io Lor presenti il Signor di B., il cui fratello ha reso così eminenti servigi al Loro cugino.

How happy we are to see you at
our house!

Ah, Signore, quanto siamo con-
tente di riceverla in casa
nostra!

It is the finest country in Europe.
Candia is one of the most agree-
able islands in the Mediter-
ranean.

È il più bel paese dell' Europa.
Candia è una delle isole più
amene del Mediterraneo.

He lives in his retreat like a real
philosopher.

Vive nel suo ritiro come un
vero filosofo (da vero filo-
sofo).

You live like a king.
He acts like a madman.
To behave like a blockhead.
Who knocks as if he were master
of my house?

Vivete (Ella vive) da re.
Si comporta come un furioso.
Condursi come uno stordito.
Chi picchia da padrone ove son
io?

Good morning.
You are out very early.
I wish you a good morning.
You rose early (in good time,
late).
Had you a good night's rest?

Buon giorno. Ben levato.
Così di buon' ora fuori.
Le auguro il buon giorno.
Vossignoria (Ella) s' è levata di
buon' ora (per tempo, tardi).
Ha Ella dormito (riposato)
bene?

Good evening.
Good night.
I wish you a good night's rest.
I wish you a good appetite.
I wish you the same.
May it do you good.
A happy new year.
A happy journey.
I wish you good luck.

Buona sera (felice sera).
Buona notte (felice notte).
Riposi bene. Dorma bene.
Le auguro un buon appetito.
Parimenti a Lei.
Buon pro Le faccia.
Buon capo d' anno.
Buon viaggio.
Le auguro (Le desidero) un
prospero successo.
Il ciel La benedica.
Dio La guardi.
Quando avrò il piacere di rive-
derla?
Presto. Fra poco (tempo).
Addio, Signore! a rivederci.

God bless you.
God preserve you.
When shall I have the pleasure
of seeing you again?
Soon. In a short time.
Adieu! till we meet again.

Your most humble servant.

{ Umilissimo servo. M' inchino
a Lei.
{ Le sono schiavo.

Your most obedient servant.

I am entirely yours.

Adieu.

How is your Lordship?

How do you do?

Well, at your service.

I am glad of it.

Servo divoto. Divotissimo
servo.
I miei rispetti. Padron riverito.
Son tutto suo.
La riverisco.
Come sta Vossignoria Illustrissima?
Come va? Come se la passa?
Bene, per servirla (per obbedirla).
Ne godo. Me ne rallegro. Me ne consolo.

How is your health?

I am well, very well, tolerably,
so so, unwell.

Not too well. So so.

You do not look very well.

What is the matter with you?

I am a little indisposed.

I am sorry for it.

Come sta V. S. (Ella) di salute?
Sto bene, ottimamente, passabilmente, mediocrement, male.
Non troppo bene. Così così.
Ella non ha troppo buona ciera.
Che cosa ha?
Sono un poco indisposto (a).
Me ne dispiace. Me ne rincresce.

Welcome, Sir.

I am happy to see you.

It seems an age since I had the
pleasure of seeing you.

It is a good while since I had
the pleasure of seeing you.

Give this gentleman a chair.

Please to sit down.

Sit down. Be seated.

Sit by my side.

Take a chair.

I thank you, I prefer to stand.

Do not trouble yourself.

Do as if you were at home.

Do not make any compliments.

Ben venuto, Signore.

Mi rallegro di vederla.

Mi pare cent'anni che non ho
avuto il piacer di vederla.

È già lungo tempo (è già un
bel pezzo) che non ebbi il
piacere di vederla.

Date una sedia (date da sedere)
a questo Signore.

Si serva. S'accomodi, La
prego. La supplico, resti
servita.

Si metta a sedere. Stia seduto.

Segga accanto a me.

Prenda una sedia.

La ringrazio, vorrei restare in
piedi.

Non s'incomodi, La prego.

Faccia conto d'essere a casa
sua.

Non fate cerimonie (compli-
menti).

I will not trouble you any longer.	{ Non voglio recarle incomodo più a lungo.
Do you wish to leave already?	{ Voglio levarle l' incomodo.
Stay a little longer.	Ormai se ne vuol andare?
I must beg you to excuse me this time.	Si trattenga ancora un poco.
	Per questa volta convien (bisogna) che La preghi di dispensarmene.
Are you in such a hurry?	Ha poi tanta premura?
You are in a great hurry, Sir.	Ha molta fretta, Signore.
I must go.	Bisogna ch' io me ne vada.
I have pressing business.	Ho degli affari di premura.
I speak frankly.	Io parlo schietto, senza suggezione.
I hope then to have the honour another time.	Spero dunque d' aver l' onore un'altra volta.
Favour me oftener (with your visits).	Mi favorisca più spesso.
Farewell.	
Till we meet again.	Si conservi.
It is the prerogative of great men to conquer envy; merit gives it birth, and merit destroys it.	A buon rivederci.
	Vincer l' invidia è privilegio dei grandi uomini; il merito la fa nascere, il merito la fa morire.

EXERCISES.

248.

A man had two sons, one of whom liked to sleep very late in the morning (*tutta la mattina*), and the other was very industrious, and always rose very early. The latter (*costui*) having one day gone out very early, found a purse well filled with money. He ran to his brother to inform him (*a fargli parte*) of his good luck (*la buona fortuna*), and said to him: "See, Luigi, what is got (*guadagnarsi*) by (*a*) rising early." "Faith (*in fede mia*)!" answered his brother, "if the person to whom it belongs had not risen earlier than I, he would not have lost it."

A lazy young fellow being asked what made him lie (*stare**) in bed so long—"I am busied (*essere occupato*)," said he, "in hearing counsel every morning. Industry (*il lavoro*) advises me to get up; sloth (*la pigrizia*) to lie still; and so they give me twenty reasons *pro* and *con* (*pro e contro*). It is my part (*tocca a me*) to hear what is said on both sides; and by the time the cause (*la causa*) is over (*intesa*) dinner is ready."

A beautiful story is related of a great lady, who, being (*si racconta un bel tratto d'—*) asked where her husband was, when he lay concealed (*essere nascosto*) for having been deeply concerned in a conspiracy (*per essere stato complice d' una cospirazione*), resolutely (*coraggiosamente*) answered, she had hid him. This con-

fession drew her before the king, who told her that nothing but her discovering where her lord was concealed could save her from the torture (*che non poteva evitare la tortura quando non iscoprisse il ritiro del suo sposo*). "And will that do (*bastare*)?" said the lady. "Yes," said the king, "I give you my word for it." "Then," says she, "I have hid him in my heart, where you will find him."—Which surprising answer (*questa risposta ammirabile*) charmed her enemies.

249.

Cornelia, the illustrious (*illustre*) mother of the Gracchi (*dei Gracchi*), after the death of her husband, who left her with twelve children, applied herself (*consacrò*) to the care of her family, with a wisdom (*con tal savièzza*) and prudence (*la prudenza*) that acquired for her (*che si acquistò*) universal esteem (*la stima universale*). Only three out of (*fra*) the twelve lived to the years of maturity (*l'età matura*); one daughter, Sempronia, whom she married to the second Scipio Africanus (*Scipione l'Africano*); and two sons, Tiberius (*Tiberio*) and Caius (*Caio*), whom she brought up (*educare*) with so much care, that, though they were generally acknowledged (*benchè si sapesse generalmente*) to have been born with the most happy dispositions (*la disposizione*), it was judged that they were still more indebted (*pure si ritenevano debitori—più*) to education than to nature. The answer she gave (*fare**) a Campanian lady (*una dama della Campania*) concerning them (*su di essi*) is very famous (*celeberrima*), and includes in it (*rinchiudere**) great instruction for ladies and mothers.

That lady, who was very rich, and fond of pomp and show (*essere appassionato pel fasto e lo splendore*), having displayed (*esporre**) her diamonds (*il diamante*), pearls (*la perla*), and richest jewels (*il monile*), earnestly desired Cornelia to let her see her jewels also. Cornelia dexterously (*dextramente*) turned the conversation to another subject to wait the return of her sons, who were gone to the public schools. When they returned (*Arrivati che furono*), and entered their mother's apartment, she said to the Campanian lady, pointing to them (*mostrandoli*): "These are my jewels, and the only ornaments (*l'unico ornamento*) I prize (*apprezzare*).” And such ornaments, which are the strength (*la forza*) and support (*il sostegno*) of society, add a brighter lustre (*in più gran lustro*) to the fair (*la bellezza*) than all the jewels of the East (*dell'Oriente*).

EIGHTY-FOURTH LESSON.

Lezione Ottantesima quarta.

CONSTRUCTION, OR SYNTAX.

1. The regular construction has this principle for basis, that the governing word or part of speech has always its place before the governed.

According to this principle, the subject or nominative, with all the words that determine it, takes the first place in the sentence; then follows the verb, then the objective case (accusative), with all its determinations, then the indirect object (genitive, dative, or ablative), with its determinations; at last the modifications, showing the different circumstances of place, time, &c. Ex.

I shall surely send to-morrow the most faithful of my servants to you, in order to return you the manuscripts with which you entrusted me not long ago; and I write this note to you, that you may let me know the hour at which my servant will find you at home.

I have the honour to return you the Italian book which you had the goodness to lend me. I have read it with much pleasure, and am very much obliged to you for it.

Manderò domani senza fallo il più fedele dei miei servitori da Lei, per restituirle i manoscritti affidatimi da qualche tempo; e Le scrivo questo biglietto acciocchè mi faccia sapere l' ora alla quale il mio servo La troverà in casa.

Ho l' onore di rimandarle il libro italiano ch' Ella ebbe la bontà di prestarmi. L' ho letto con molto piacere, e gliene sono tenutissimo.

2. As for the irregular construction, or inversion, which the Italians, in imitation of the Latins, use very freely, it is impossible to lay down any fixed rules; it depends entirely on the particular stress the person who writes or speaks wishes to lay on certain words, which he then puts at the head of the sentence. The following sentence, which may be rendered in Italian in seven different ways, may stand as an instance:

I submit to you.

{ Rendo me a voi.
A voi rendo me.
Mi rendo a voi.
Rendomi a voi.
A voi mi rendo.
Vi rendo me.
Rendomivi.

3. Inversions, however, when used properly, contribute uncommonly to elegance, beauty, and harmony of language. This may be exemplified in the following beautifully constructed expression of Boccaccio, which, *if constructed regularly*, would lose all its harmony, beauty, and interest.

O dearest heart, all my duties
towards thee are fulfilled; I
have nothing else to do, but
to go with my soul to keep
thee company.

O molto amato cuore, ogni mio
ufficio verso te è fornito, nè
più altro mi resta a fare, se
non di venire con la mia
anima a farti compagnia.¹

EXPLETIVES AND LICENCES.

I. EXPLETIVES, which the Italians call *ripieno*, i. e. full, filled, are employed for the purpose of giving more emphasis, fulness, harmony, and elegance to the sentence. The principal are :

BELLO.

I have paid a hundred crowns.
Your suit of clothes is finished.

Ho pagato cento *begli* scudi.
Il di Lei vestito è *bell'* e
fatto.

BENE.

I asked him, if he had the
courage to send him away,
and he answered, yes.

Gli domandai, se gli bastasse
l'animo di cacciarlo via: ed
egli rispose, sì *bene*.

GIÀ.

I do not think that you will take
it ill.
I should not like him to go.

Non credo *già* che l'avrete a
(or per) male.
Non vorrei *già* ch'egli partisse.

MAI.

He is always repeating the same
things.
Always.

Torna *mai* sempre a dire l'is-
tesse cose.
Mai sempre.

NON.

He is more learned than I
thought.
Learning is of greater value than
riches.

Egli è più dotto ch'io *non*
credeva.
La dottrina è di più gran prezzo
che *non* le ricchezze.

¹ Re-establish the regular construction, and all the beauty, harmony, and lively interest which is felt in reading it, disappears: "O cuore amato molto, ogni mio ufficio è fornito verso te, nè mi resta più altro a fare, se non di venire a farti compagnia con la mia anima."

POI.

What he told me is not true. | Non è *poi* vero quanto mi disse.

PURE.

They are now disposed to come. | Ora sono *pur* disposti a venire.

Obs. A. This expletive is often used to strengthen the imperative.

Ex.

Say (i. e. you have only to say).	Dite <i>pure</i> .
Go (i. e. you may go).	Andate <i>pure</i> .
Give (i. e. you may give).	Date <i>pure</i> .

VIA.

Are you willing to do it? Do it.	Volete farlo? <i>Via</i> fatelo.
Let us make peace.	<i>Via</i> facciam la pace.

MI, TI, CI, VI, SI, NE.

I thought you were an Italian.	Io <i>mi</i> credeva che voi foste Italiano.
I wish thou wouldst stay with us this evening.	Desidero che tu con noi <i>ti</i> rimanga questa sera.
She left.	Essa <i>se ne</i> parti.
I do not know whether you know that man.	Non so se voi <i>vi</i> conosciate quest' uomo.
He leads a gay life.	Egli <i>se</i> la passa assai lieta-mente.

II. As to the licences, they are very numerous in Italian, and are chiefly permitted and made use of in poetry, viz.

a) The letter *v* is sometimes left out, chiefly in the imperfect of the indicative, as :

Avea, potea, finia, dee, dcono, bee, bea, &c. for
Aveva, poteva, finiva, deve, devono, beve, beva, &c.

b) The letters *g* and *gg* are sometimes substituted for other letters, as :

Seggio, veggio, caggio, veggendo, chieggio, veglio, specchio, &c. for
Siedo, vedo, cado, vedendo, chiedo, vecchio, specchio, &c.

c) The third person plural of the preterite definite of the indicative, ending in *arono*, is often abridged into *aro*, chiefly in poetry, as :

Amaro, legaro, andaro, for
Amarono, legarono, andarono.

d) The letters *at* are often rejected in poetry, and in grave prose also, in the past participle, as :

Colmo, adorno, chino, domo, oso, for
Colmato, adornato, chinato, domato, osato, &c.

e) The letter *o* is often added in poetry to the preterite definite of verbs ending in *ire*, as :

Rapìo, finìo, empìo, uscìo, for

Rapì, finì, empì, uscì.

f) The articles *dello, della, degli, dei, delle*, are by the poets often written :

De lo, de la, de gli, de li, de le.

Obs. B. A great number of figurative, as well as Latin words, are also used by the Italian poets, which are hardly ever used in prose; thus you will find:

Air, sword.

Poem, food.

Ship.

Eyes, hand.

Bell.

Ever.

Poet, men, heroes, &c.

Aer for *aria*; *brando* for *spada*.

Carme for *verso*; *esca* for *cibo*.

Legno for *vascello*.

Lumi for *occhi*; *palma* for *mano*.

Squilla for *campana*.

Unqua, unquanche, unquanco, for *mai*.

Vate for *poeta*; *viri* for *uomini*, &c.

Obs. C. No abridgment takes place:

a) In the last word of a sentence, chiefly in prose.

b) In the words which have an accent on the last syllable, except *che* with its compounds, as: *benchè, perchè, poichè*, &c.

c) In words ending in *a* before a consonant, except the adverbs *allora, talora, ancora*, &c., and the word *suora*, sister, when used as an adjective. Say *alcuna persona, nessuna pena*, and not *alcun persona, nessun pena*.

d) In words terminating in a diphthong, as: *occhio, specchio, cambio*, &c.

EXERCISES.

250.

POLITENESS (*Creanza*).

When the Earl of Stair was at the court of Louis the Fourteenth, his manners, address, and conversation, gained much on the esteem and friendship of that monarch. One day, in a circle of his courtiers, talking of the advantage of good breeding and easy manners, the king offered to lay a wager he would name an English nobleman that should excel in those particulars any Frenchman of his court. The wager was jocularly accepted, and his majesty was to choose his own time and place for the experiment.

To avoid suspicion, the king let the subject drop for some months, till the courtiers thought (*onde far credere*) he had forgotten it; he then chose the following stratagem: he appointed Lord Stair,

and two of the most polished noblemen of his court, to take an airing with him after the breaking up of the levee (*all' uscir del grand lever*); the king accordingly came down the great staircase at Versailles, attended by those three lords, and coming up to the side of the coach, instead of going in first as usual, he pointed to the French lords to enter; they, unaccustomed to the ceremony, shrunk back, and submissively declined the honour; he then pointed to Lord Stair, who made his bow, and sprang into the coach; the king and the French lords followed.

When they were seated, the king exclaimed: "Well, gentlemen, I believe you will acknowledge I have won my wager." "How so, Sire?" "Why," continued the king, "when I desired you both to go into the coach, you declined it; but this polite foreigner (pointing to Lord Stair) no sooner received the commands of a king, though not his sovereign, than he instantly obeyed." The courtiers hung down their heads in confusion, and acknowledged the justice of his majesty's claim.

251.

MILDNESS.

The mildness of Sir Isaac Newton's temper through the course of his life commanded admiration from all who knew him; but in no instance perhaps more than the following. Sir Isaac had a favourite little dog, which he called Diamond; and being one day called out of his study into the next room, Diamond was left behind. When Sir Isaac returned, having been absent but a few minutes, he had the mortification to find that Diamond, having thrown down a lighted candle among some papers, the nearly finished labour of many years was in flames, and almost consumed to ashes. This loss, as Sir Isaac Newton was then very far advanced in years, was irretrievable; yet, without once striking the dog, he only rebuked him with this exclamation: "O Diamond! Diamond! thou little knowest the mischief thou hast done."

Zeuxis (*Zeusi*) entered into a contest of art with Parrhasius (*Parrasio*). The former painted grapes so truly, that birds came and pecked at them. The latter delineated a curtain so exactly, that Zeuxis coming in said: "Take away the curtain that we may see this piece." And finding his error, said: "Parrhasius, thou hast conquered: I only deceived birds, thou an artist."

Zeuxis painted a boy carrying grapes; the birds came again and pecked. Some applauding, Zeuxis flew to the picture in a passion, saying: "My boy must be (*bisogna dire che—è*) very ill painted."

The inhabitants of a great town offered to Marshal de Turenne one hundred thousand crowns upon condition that he should take another road, and not march his troops their way. He answered them: "As your town is not on the road I intend to march, I cannot accept the money you offer me."

A corporal of the life-guards of Frederick the Great, who had a great deal of vanity, but at the same time was a brave fellow, wore a watch-chain, to which he affixed a musket-bullet instead of a watch, which he was unable to buy. The king, being inclined one day to rally him, said: "A propos, corporal, you must have been very frugal to buy a watch: it is six o'clock by mine; tell me what it is by yours." The soldier, who guessed the king's intention, instantly drew out the bullet from his fob, and said: "My watch neither marks five nor six o'clock; but it tells me every moment, that it is my duty to die for your majesty." "Here, my friend," said the king, quite affected, "take this watch, that you may be able to tell the hour also." And he gave him his watch, which was adorned with brilliants.

252.

My dear friend (*carissima amica*),—As we have next Tuesday several persons to dinner whose acquaintance, I am sure, you would be delighted to make, I request you to add by your presence to the pleasure, and by your brilliant and cultivated mind to the mirth of our assembly. I hope you will accept my invitation, and awaiting your answer I send you a thousand compliments.

Dearest friend (*amatissima amica*),—I accept the more readily your very kind invitation for Tuesday next, as my disappointment at seeing so little of you latterly has been very great. I thank you for your kind remembrance, and send you a thousand kisses.

=

EIGHTY-FIFTH LESSON.

Lezione Ottantesima quinta.

TREATISE ON THE ITALIAN VERBS.

1. CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERBS,

Essere, to be, and *Avere*, to have.*Present of the Infinitive* (Infinito Presente).*Avere*, to have.| *Essere*, to be.*Past of the Infinitive* (Infinito Passato).*Avere avuto*, to have had.| *Essere stato*, to have been.

Present Participle (Participio Presente).Avendo,¹ having. | Essendo, being.*Past Participle* (Participio Passato).*Masc.* Avuto; *fem.* avuta. | *Masc.* Stato; *fem.* stata.*Plur.* Avuti; *fem.* avute. | *Plur.* Stati; *fem.* state.

INDICATIVE (Indicativo).

Present (Presente).

Io ho (ò, see Lesson VII., Note 1).	I have.	Io sono,	I am.
Tu hai (ài),	thou hast.	Tu sei (se'),	thou art.
Egli (esso) } ha (à),	{ he has.	Egli (esso) } è,	{ he is.
Ella (essa) }	{ she has.	Ella (essa) }	{ she is.
Noi abbiamo,	we have.	Noi siamo,	we are.
Voi avete,	you have.	Voi siete,	you are.
Eglino(essi) } hanno	{ they have	Eglino (essi) } sono,	they are. ²
Elleno(esse) }	{	Elleno (esse) }	

Imperfect (Imperfetto).

Aveva (avea),	I had.	Io era,	I was.
Avevi,	thou hadst.	Tu eri,	thou wast.
Aveva (avea),	he had.	Egli era,	he was.
Avevamo,	we had.	Noi eravamo,	we were.
Avevate,	you had.	Voi eravate,	you were.
Avevano (avea no).	they had.	Essi erano,	they were.

Preterite Definite (Passato Rimoto).

Ebbi.	I had.	Fui,	I was.
Avesti,	thou hadst	Fosti,	thou wast.
Ebbe,	he had.	Fu (poet. fue),	he was.
Avemmo,	we had.	Fummo,	we were.
Aveste,	you had.	Foste,	you were.
Ebbero,	they had.	Furono (poet. furo),	they were.

Preterperfect (Passato Prossimo).

Ho	I have	Sono	{ stato; { I have	
Hai	thou hast	Sei	{ f. stata, { thou hast	
Ha	he has	È	{	{ he has
Abbiamo	we have	Siamo	{ stati; { we have	
Avete	you have	Siete	{ f. state, { you have	
Hanno	they have	Sono	{	{ they have
				} been.

¹ There is another present participle, which is seldom used as such, viz. *avente*, having. (See Lesson LVII.)

² The personal pronouns: *io*, I; *tu*, thou; *egli*, he; *ella*, she, &c., are not indispensable in the Italian conjugation. You may as well say: *sono*, *sei*, *è*; *avrò*, *avrà*, *avrà*, as: *io sono*, *tu sei*, *egli è*; *io avrò*, *tu avrai*, *egli avrà*. But when there is a particular stress to be put on the person, or when an ambiguous meaning is to be avoided, the pronouns must be expressed. Ex. *Noi siamo ingannati*, e non voi, we are deceived, not you.

Pluperfect (Trapassato).

I had had, &c.		I had been, &c.	
Aveva	} avuto.	Era	} stato; } fem. stata.
Avevi		Eri	
Aveva		Era	
Avevamo		Eravamo	} stati; } fem. state.
Avevate		Eravate	
Avevano		Erano	

Preterite Anterior (Passato Rimoto Composto).

I had had, &c.		I had been, &c.	
Ebbi	} avuto.	Fui	} stato; } fem. stata.
Avesti		Fosti	
Ebbe		Fu	
Avemmo		Fummo	} stati; } fem. state.
Aveste		Foste	
Ebbero		Furono	

Future (Futuro Imperfetto).

Avrò,	I shall have.	Sarò,	I shall be.
Avrai,	thou wilt have.	Sarai,	thou wilt be.
Avrà,	he will have.	Sarà,	he will be.
Avremo,	we shall have.	Saremo,	we shall be.
Avrete,	you will have.	Sarete,	you will be.
Avranno,	they will have.	Saranno,	they will be.

Future Past (Futuro Perfetto).

Avrò	} I shall have had. } thou wilt have } avuto, had, &c.	Sarò	} stato; I shall have } fem. been. } stata, thou wilt have } stati; been, &c. } fem. state.
Avrai		Sarai	
Avrà		Sarà	
Avremo		Saremo	
Avrete		Sarete	
Avranno		Saranno	

Conditional Present (Condizionale Presente).

Avrei,	I should have.	Sarei,	I should be.
Avresti,	thou wouldst have.	Saresti,	thou wouldst be.
Avrebbe (poet. he would have. avria),		Sarebbe (poet. saria, fora),	he would be.
Avremmo,	we should have.	Saremmo,	we should be.
Avreste,	you would have.	Sareste,	you would be.
Avrebbero (poet. avriano),	they would have.	Sarebbero (poet. sariano, sarieno, forano),	they would be.

Past Conditional (Condizionale Passato).

Avrei	} I should have } had. } thou wouldst } have had, } avuto, &c.	Sarei	} stato; I should have } fem. been. } stata, thou wouldst } stati; have been, } fem. &c. } state.
Avresti		Saresti	
Avrebbe		Sarebbe	
Avremmo		Saremmo	
Avreste		Sareste	
Avrebbero		Sarebbero	

Present of the Subjunctive (Congiuntivo Presente).

Che io abbia,	that I may have.	Che io sia	that I may be.
„ tu abbia	that thou may-	„ tu sia	that thou mayest
(abbi),	est have.	(sii),	be.
„ egli abbia,	that he may	„ egli sia,	that he may be.
	have.		
„ noi abbiamo,	that we may	„ noi siamo,	that we may be.
	have.		
„ voi abbiate,	that you may	„ voi siate,	that you may be.
	have.		
„ essi abbiano,	that they may	„ essi siano,	that they may be.
	have.		

Imperfect of the Subjunctive (Imperfetto del Congiuntivo).

S' io avessi,	If I had.	S' io fossi,	If I were.
Se tu avessi,	if thou hadst.	Se tu fossi,	if thou wert.
S' egli avesse,	if he had,	S' egli fosse,	if he were,
Se noi avessimo,	&c.	Se noi fossimo,	&c.
Se voi aveste,		Se voi foste,	
S' essi avessero.		S' essi fossero.	

Perfect of the Subjunctive (Passato Prossimo del Congiuntivo).

That I may have had, &c.		That I may have been, &c.	
Ch' io abbia	} avuto.	Ch' io sia	} stato; f. stata.
Che tu abbia (abbi)		Che tu sia (sii)	
Ch' egli abbia		Ch' egli sia	
Che noi abbiamo		Che noi siamo	} stati; f. state.
Che voi abbiate		Che voi siate	
Ch' essi abbiano		Ch' essi siano	

Pluperfect of the Subjunctive (Trapassato del Congiuntivo).

If I had had, &c.		If I had been &c.	
S' io avessi	} avuto.	S' io fossi	} stato; f. stata.
Se tu avessi		Se tu fossi	
S' egli avesse		S' egli fosse	
Se noi avessimo		Se noi fossimo	} stati; f. state.
Se voi aveste		Se voi foste	
S' egli avessero		S' essi fossero	

IMPERATIVE (Imperativo).

(No first person singular.)

Abbi,	Have (thou).	Sii (sia) ³ ,	Be (thou).
Abbia,	let him (her) have.	Sia,	let him (her) be.
Abbiamo,	let us have.	Siamo,	let us be.
Abbiate,	have (ye).	Siate,	be (ye).
Abbiano,	let them have.	Siano,	let them be.

³ The second person singular of the imperative is rendered by the infinitive when it is negative. Ex. *Non essere*, be thou not; *non avere*, have thou not (Lesson LXXI.).

OBSERVATIONS.

A. *There is*, is in Italian rendered by *essere*, preceded by *ci* or *vi*. Ex.

There is a great quantity.	<i>C' è (v' è) una gran quantità.</i>
There are people.	<i>Ci sono (vi sono) delle persone.</i>
There was once a wise Grecian.	<i>C' era una volta un savio Greco.</i>
There were nations.	<i>V' erano de' popoli.</i>
There has been a singer.	<i>C' è stata una cantatrice.</i>
There were princes.	<i>Ci sono stati de' principi.</i>
Is there any physician here?	<i>C' è (v' è) or ecci (evvi) quì un qualche medico?</i>

B. Instead of *essere*, *avere* could in some cases be used, and may stand in the singular, though the substantive be in the plural. Ex.

There are princes.	<i>V' ha (instead of v' hanno) dei principi.</i>
There are many things.	<i>V' ha molte cose.</i>
There are many poor people.	<i>V' ha (or havvi) molta gente povera.</i>

C. If *of it* or *of them* is understood, it is rendered by *ne*. Ex.

There is no more of it.	<i>Non ce n' è più.</i>
There are many of them.	<i>Ce ne sono molti.</i>
There were only two (of them).	<i>Non ve n' erano che due.</i>
There are no physicians here.	<i>Medici quì non ce ne sono.</i>
I do not think that there are any.	<i>Non credo che ve n' abbia.</i>

D. Sometimes it may rendered by *si dà* or *si danno*. Ex.

There is nothing worse in the world.	<i>Non si dà al mondo cosa peggiore.</i>
There are some who pretend.	<i>Si danno di quelli che sostengono.</i>

E. The adverbs *ci*, *vi*, are left out when time is spoken of. Ex.

It is a month. It is two years.	<i>E' un mese. Sono due anni.</i>
A few months ago.	<i>Pochi mesi sono (or pochi mesi fa).</i>
It is a long while since I saw her.	<i>È un bel pezzo, che non l' ho veduta.</i>
This happened two months ago.	<i>Ciò accadde due mesi fa.</i>

F. *Avere* and *essere* are followed by the preposition *da* before the infinitive, when they are employed in the signification of *must* or *shall*. Ex.

You shall do it thus.	<i>Avete da farlo così (instead of dovete farlo così).</i>
He shall know.	<i>Egli ha da sapere.</i>
We must all die.	<i>Abbiamo tutti da morire.</i>
It is to be feared.	<i>È da temersi.</i>
He is not to be excused.	<i>Egli non è da scusare.</i>

G. In other instances *a* precedes the infinitive. Ex.

I should like to ask a favour of you.		<i>Avrei aregarla d' un favore.</i>
She went to see her.		<i>Ella fu a ritrovarla.</i>

II. CONJUGATION OF THE REGULAR VERBS.

Present of the Infinitive (Infinitivo Presente).

Parlare, to speak. | Credere, to believe. | Nutrire, to nourish.

Past of the Infinitive (Infinitivo Passato).

Aver parlato, to have spoken. | Aver creduto, to have believed. | Aver nutrito, to have nourished.

Present Participle (Participio Presente).

Parlando (parlante⁴), speaking. | Credendo (credente), believing. | Nutrendo (nutrente), nourishing.

Past Participle (Participio Passato).

Parlato, spoken. | Creduto, believed. | Nutrito, nourished.

INDICATIVE (Indicativo).

Present (Presente).

I speak, &c.	I believe, &c.	I nourish, &c.
Parl-o.	Cred-o.	Nutr-o (<i>isco</i>).
— i.	— i.	— i (<i>isci</i>).
— a.	— e.	— e (<i>isce</i>).
— iamo.	— iamo.	— iamo.
— ate.	— ete.	— ite.
— ano.	— ono.	— ono (<i>iscono</i>).

Imperfect (Imperfetto).

I spoke, &c.	I believed, &c.	I nourished, &c.
Parl-ava.	Cred-eva (<i>ea</i>).	Nutr-iva (<i>ia</i>).
— avi.	— evi.	— ivi.
— ava.	— eva (<i>ea</i>).	— iva (<i>ia</i>).
— avamo.	— evamo.	— ivamo.
— avate.	— evate.	— ivate.
—avano.	— evano (<i>eano</i>).	— ivano (<i>iano</i>).

⁴ There is this difference between the two present participles, that the first in *ando*, *endo*, applies to a person *while* speaking, believing, &c.; and the second in *ante*, *ente*, to a person *who* speaks, believes, &c. (See Lesson LVII.)

Preterite Definite (Passato Rimoto).

I spoke, or did speak, &c.	I believed, or did believe, &c.	I nourished, or did nourish, &c.
Parl-ai.	Cred-ei (<i>etti</i>).	Nutr-ii.
— asti.	— esti.	— isti.
— ò.	— è (<i>ette</i>).	— ì.
— ammo.	— emmo.	— immo.
— aste.	— este.	— iste.
— arono.	— erono (<i>ettero</i>).	— irono.

Preterperfect (Passato Prossimo).

I have spoken, &c.	I have believed, &c.	I have nourished, &c.
Ho		
Hai		
Ha		
Abbiamo	creduto,	nutrito.
Avete		
Hanno		

Pluperfect (Trapassato).

I had spoken, &c.	I had believed, &c.	I had nourished, &c.
Aveva		
Avevi		
Aveva	creduto,	nutrito.
Avevamo		
Avevate		
Avevano		

Preterite Anterior (Passato Rimoto Composto).

I had spoken, &c.	I had believed, &c.	I had nourished, &c.
Ebbi		
Avesti		
Ebbe	creduto,	nutrito.
Avemmo		
Aveste		
Ebbero		

Future (Futuro Imperfetto).

I shall speak, &c.	I shall believe, &c.	I shall or will nourish, &c.
Parl-erò.	Cred-erò.	Nutr-irò.
— erai.	— erai.	— irai.
—erà.	—erà.	—irà.
—eremo.*	—eremo.	—iremo.
—erete.	—erete.	—irete.
—eranno.	—eranno.	—iranno.

Future Past (Futuro Perfetto).

I shall have spoken, &c.	I shall have believed, &c.	I shall have nourish- ed, &c.
Avrò Avrai Avrà Avremo Avrete Avranno	parlato, creduto,	nutrito.

Conditional Present (Condizionale Presente).

I should or would speak, &c.	I should or would believe, &c.	I should or would nourish, &c.
Parl-erei. — eresti. — erebbe. — eremmo. — ereste. — erebbero.	Cred-erei. — eresti. — erebbe. — eremmo. — ereste. — erebbero.	Nutr-irei. — iresti. — irebbe. — iremmo. — ireste. — irebbero.

Conditional Past (Condizionale Passato).

I should or would have spoken, &c.	I should or would have believed, &c.	I should or would have nourished, &c.
Avrei Avresti Avrebbe Avremmo Avreste Avrebbero	parlato, creduto,	nutrito.

Present of the Subjunctive (Congiuntivo Presente).

That I may speak, &c.	That I may believe, &c.	That I may nourish, &c.
Ch' io parl-i. — i. — i. — iamo. — iate. — ino.	cred-a. — a. — a. — iamo. — iate. — ano.	nutr-a (isca). — a (isca). — a (isca). — iamo. — iate. — ano (iscano).

Imperfect of the Subjunctive (Imperfetto del Congiuntivo).

If I spoke, &c.	If I believed, &c.	If I nourished, &c.
S' io parl-assi. — assi. — asse. — assimo. — aste. — assero.	cred-essi. — essi. — esse. — essimo. — este. — essero.	nutr-issi. — issi. — isse. — issimo. — iste. — issero.

Preterperfect of the Subjunctive (Passato Prossimo del Congiuntivo).

That I may have spoken, &c.	That I may have believed, &c.	That I may have nourished, &c.
Ch' io abbia		
Che tu abbia		
Ch' egli abbia	creduto,	nutrito.
Che noi abbiamo		
Che voi abbiate		
Ch' essi abbiano		

Pluperfect of the Subjunctive (Trapassato del Congiuntivo).

If I had spoken, &c.	If I had believed, &c.	If I had nourished, &c.
S' io avessi		
Se tu avessi		
S' egli avesse	creduto,	nutrito.
Se noi avessimo		
Se voi aveste		
S' essi avessero		

IMPERATIVE (Imperativo).

Speak (thou), &c. (see note 3, p. 441).	Believe (thou), &c.	Nourish (thou), &c.
Parl-a.	Cred-i.	Nutr-i (<i>isci</i>).
— i.	— a.	— a (<i>isca</i>).
— iamo.	— iamo.	— iamo.
— ate.	— ete.	— ite.
— ino.	— ano.	— ano (<i>iscano</i>).

III. CONJUGATION OF THE PASSIVE VOICE.

Obs. To form the passive voice the Italians frequently place before the past participle of the active verb the auxiliary *essere*, but often also, and more elegantly, one of the verbs, *venire*, to come; *andare*, to go; *restare*, to stop; *rimanere*, to remain; *stare*, to stop, stay, to express with more emphasis a continuance of action ⁵. (See Lessons XLII and XLIX.)

⁵ EXAMPLES :

<i>Vien lodato da tutti,</i>	He is praised by everybody.
<i>Venne accusata,</i>	She was accused.
<i>Verranno biasimate,</i>	They will be blamed.
<i>Questa voce va posta prima,</i>	This word must be placed at the head.
<i>Ne restai (or rimasi) meravigliato (instead of ne fui meravigliato),</i>	I was quite surprised at it.
<i>Essa non ne restò (fu) persuasa,</i>	She was not convinced of it.
<i>I cavalli stanno (sono) attaccati alla carrozza,</i>	The horses are put to the carriage.

Present of the Infinitive (Infinitivo Presente).

Essere amato *or* amata, to be loved.

Past of the Infinitive (Infinitivo Passato).

Essere stato amato *or* stata amata, to have been loved.

Present Participle (Participio Presente.)

Essendo amato, amata, amati, amate, being loved.

Past Participle (Participio Passato).

tato amato, stata amata, stati amati, state amate, been loved.

INDICATIVE (Indicativo).

Present (Presente).

Io sono	<i>or</i> vengo	amato, <i>fem.</i> a,	I am loved.
Tu sei	" vieni	amato, " a,	thou art loved.
Egli è	" viene	amato,	he is loved.
Ella è	" viene	amata,	she is loved.
Noi siamo	" veniamo	amati, " e,	we are loved.
Voi siete	" venite	amati, " e,	you are loved.
Essi sono	" vengono	amati,	} . . they are loved.
Esse sono	" vengono	amate,	

Imperfect (Imperfetto).

Io era	<i>or</i> veniva	amato, <i>fem.</i> a,	I was loved.
Tu eri	" venivi	amato, " a,	thou wert loved.
Egli era	" veniva	amato,	he was loved.
Ella era	" veniva	amata,	she was loved.
Noi eravamo	" venivamo	amati, " e,	we were
Voi eravate	" venivate	amati, " e,	you were
Essi erano	" venivano	amati,	} loved.
Esse erano	" venivano	amate,	

Preterite Definite (Passato Rimoto).

Io fui	<i>or</i> venni	amato, <i>fem.</i> a,	I was	} loved.
Tu fosti	„ venisti	amato, „ a,	thou wert	
Egli fu	„ venne	amato,	he was	
Ella fu	„ venne	amata,	she was	
Noi fummo	„ venimmo	amati, „ e,	we were	
Voi foste	„ veniste	amati, „ e,	you were	
Essi furono	„ vennero	amati,	} . . they were	
Esse furono	„ vennero	amate, }		

Preterperfect (Passato Prossimo).

Io sono stato amato	}	I have been loved, &c.
Io sono stata amata		
Noi siamo stati amati	}	we have been loved, &c.
Noi siamo state amate		

Pluperfect (Trapassato).

Io era stato amato, &c. | I had been loved, &c.

Obs. The *Preterite Anterior* of the passive voice: *io fui stato*, with a past participle, is not used in Italian.

Future (Futuro).

Io sarò or verrò amato or a, &c. | I shall be loved, &c.

Future Past (Futuro Perfetto).

Io sarò stato amato, &c. | I shall have been loved, &c.

Conditional Present (Condizionale Presente).

Io sarei	or verrei	amato or amata,	I should be	} loved, &c.
Tu saresti	„ verresti	amato „ amata,	thou wouldst be	
Egli sarebbe	„ verrebbe	amato,	he would be	
Ella sarebbe	„ verrebbe	amata, &c.	she should be	

Conditional Past (Condizionale Passato).

Io sarei stato amato, &c. | I should have been loved.

Present of the Subjunctive (Congiuntivo Presente).

Che io sia	or venga	amato or amata,	that I may be	} loved.
— tu sia	„ venga	amato „ amata,	that thou mayst be	
— egli sia	„ venga	amato,	that he may be	
— ella sia	„ venga	amata,	that she may be	
— noi siamo	„ veniamo	amati „ amate,	that we may be	
— voi siate	„ veniate	amati „ amate,	that you may be	
— essi siano	„ vengano	amati }	that they may be	

Imperfect of the Subjunctive (Imperfetto del Congiuntivo).

Se io fossi	or venissi	amato or amata,	} If I were loved, &c.
— tu fossi	„ venissi	amato „ amata,	
— egli fosse	„ venisse	amato,	
— ella fosse	„ venisse	amata,	
— noi fossimo	„ venissimo	amati „ amate,	
— voi foste	„ veniste	amati „ amate,	
— essi fossero	„ venissero	amati,	
— esse fossero	„ venissero	amate,	

Perfect of the Subjunctive (Passato Prossimo del Congiuntivo).

Ch' io sia stato amato,	} That I may have been
Ch' io sia stata amata, &c.	
Che noi siamo stati amati,	
Che noi siamo state amate, &c.	

Pluperfect of the Subjunctive (Trapassato del Congiuntivo).

Se io fossi stato amato, &c. | If I had been loved, &c.

IV. MODEL OF THE CONJUGATION OF A REFLECTIVE VERB GOVERNING THE ACCUSATIVE. (See Lessons XLIII and XLIV.)

Infinitive Present (Infinitivo Presente).

Difendersi, to defend one's self.

Infinitive Past (Infinitivo Passato).

Essersi difeso, to have defended one's self.

Present Participle (Participio Presente).

Difendentesi,⁶ defending one's self.

Participle Past (Participio Passato).

Difesosì,
 Difesasì,
 Difesisì,
 Difesesì,

} defended one's self.

INDICATIVE (Indicativo).

Present (Presente).

Io mi difendo,	I defend myself.
Tu ti difendi,	thou defendest thyself.
Egli } si difende,	{ he defends himself.
Ella } si difende,	{ she defends herself.
Noi ci difendiamo,	we defend ourselves.
Voi vi difendete,	you defend yourselves.
Essi } si difendono,	{ they defend themselves.
Esse } si difendono,	{ they defend themselves.

⁶ The participle, joined to the different pronouns, would be thus :

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Perfect.</i>
Difendendomi, defending myself.	Essendomi } having defended myself.
Difendendoti, „ thyself.	Essendoti } having defended thyself.
Difendendosi, „ himself or herself.	Essendosi } having defended himself or herself.
Difendendoci, „ ourselves.	Essendoci } having defended ourselves.
Difendendovi, „ yourselves.	Essendovi } having defended yourselves.
Difendendosi, „ themselves.	Essendosi } having defended themselves.

Imperfect (Imperfetto).

I defended myself, &c.

Mi difendeva.
Ti difendevi.
Si difendeva.

Ci difendevamo.
Vi difendevate.
Si difendevano.

Preterite Definite (Passato Rimoto).

I defended myself, &c.

Mi difesi.
Ti difendesti.
Si difese.

Ci difendemmo.
Vi difendeste.
Si difesero.

Preterperfect (Passato Prossimo).

I have defended myself, &c.

Mi sono }
Ti sei } difeso; *fem.* difesa.⁷
Si è }

Ci siamo }
Vi siete } difesi; *fem.* difese.
Si sono }

Pluperfect (Trapassato).

I had defended myself, &c.

Mi era }
Ti eri } difeso; *fem.* difesa.
Si era }

Ci eravamo }
Vi eravate } difesi; *fem.* difese.
Si erano }

Preterite Anterior (Passato Rimoto Composto).

I had defended myself, &c.

Mi fui }
Ti fosti } difeso; *fem.* difesa.
Si fu }

Ci fummo }
Vi foste } difesi; *fem.* difese.
Si furono }

Future Present (Futuro Imperfetto).

I shall defend myself, &c.

Mi difenderò.
Ti difenderai.
Si difenderà.

Ci difenderemo.
Vi difenderete.
Si difenderanno.

Future Past (Futuro Perfetto).

I shall have defended myself, &c.

Mi sarò }
Ti sarai } difeso; *fem.* difesa.
Si sarà }

Ci saremo }
Vi sarete } difesi; *fem.* difese.
Si saranno }

⁷ The reflexive verbs in Italian, being considered as passive, take in their compound tenses the auxiliary *essere*, which agrees in gender and number with the person.

Conditional Present (Condizionale Presente).

I should defend myself, &c.

Mi difenderei.	Ci difenderemmo.
Ti difenderesti.	Vi difendereste.
Si difenderebbe.	Si difenderebbero.

Conditional Past (Condizionale Passato).

I should have defended myself, &c.

Mi sarei	} difeso; fem. difesa.	Ci saremmo	} difesi; fem. difese.
Ti saresti		Vi sareste	
Si sarebbe		Si sarebbero	

Present of the Subjunctive (Congiuntivo Presente).

That I may defend myself, &c.

Che io mi difenda.	Che noi ci difendiamo.
— tu ti difenda.	— voi vi difendiate.
— egli } si difenda.	— essi } si difendano.
— ella }	— esse }

Imperfect of the Subjunctive (Imperfetto del Congiuntivo).

If I defended myself, &c.

Se mi difendessi.	Se ci difendessimo.
— ti difendessi.	— vi difendeste.
— si difendesse.	— si difendessero.

Preterperfect of the Subjunctive (Passato Prossimo del Congiuntivo).

That I may have defended myself, &c.

Che mi sia	} difeso; fem. difesa.	Che ci siamo	} difesi; fem. difese.
— ti sia		— vi siate	
— si sia		— si siano	

Pluperfect of the Subjunctive (Trapassato del Congiuntivo).

If I had defended myself, &c.

Se mi fossi	} difeso; fem. difesa.	Se ci fossimo	} difesi; fem. difese.
— ti fossi		— vi foste	
— si fosse		— si fossero	

IMPERATIVE (Imperativo).

Difenditi,	Defend thyself.
Non ti difendere,	do not defend thyself.
Si difenda egli,	let him defend himself.
Difendiamoci,	let us defend ourselves.
Difendetevi,	defend yourselves.
Si difendano essi,	let them defend themselves.

V. MODEL OF THE CONJUGATION OF A REFLECTIVE VERB GOVERNING THE DATIVE (See Lesson LIV.)

Infinitive Present (Infinitivo Presente).

Procurarselo, to get, procure it.

Infinitive Past (Infinitivo Passato).

Esserselo procurato, to have got it.

Present Participle (Participio Presente).

Procurandoselo, getting it.

Participle Past (Participio Passato).

Procuratoselo, having got it.

INDICATIVE (Indicativo).

Present (Presente).

I get it, &c.

Io *me lo* procuro.

Tu *te lo* procuri.

Egli } *se lo* procura.

Ella }

Noi *ce lo* procuriamo.

Voi *ve lo* procurate.

Essi }

Esse } *se lo* procurano.

Imperfect (Imperfetto).

I got it, &c.

| Io *me lo* procurava, &c.

Preterite Definite (Passato Rimoto).

I got it, &c.

| Io *me lo* procurai, &c.

Preterperfect (Passato Prossimo).

I have got it, &c.

Io *me lo* sono

Tu *te lo* sei

Egli } *se lo* è

Ella }

} procurato.

Noi *ce lo* siamo

Voi *ve lo* siete

Essi }

Esse } *se lo* sono

} procurato.

Pluperfect (Trapassato).

I had procured it, &c.

| *Me lo* era procurato, &c.

Preterite Anterior (Passato Rimoto Composto).

I had procured it, &c.

| *Me lo* fui procurato, &c.

Future Present (Futuro Imperfetto).

I shall procure it, &c.

| *Me lo* procurerò, &c.

Future Past (Futuro Perfetto).

I shall have procured it, &c.

| *Me lo* sarò procurato, &c.

Conditional Present (Condizionale Presente).

I should procure it, &c. | Io *me lo* procurerei, &c.

Conditional Past (Condizionale Passato).

I should have procured it, &c. | *Me lo* sarei procurato, &c.

Present of the Subjunctive (Congiuntivo Presente).

That I may procure it, &c.

Che io <i>me lo</i> procuri.	}	} <i>se lo</i> procurino.	Che noi <i>ce lo</i> procuriamo.
— tu <i>te lo</i> procuri.			— voi <i>ve lo</i> procuriate.
— egli			— essi
— ella			— esse

Imperfect of the Subjunctive (Imperfetto del Congiuntivo).

If I procured it, &c. | S' io *me lo* procurassi, &c.

Preterperfect of the Subjunctive (Passato Prossimo del Congiuntivo).

That I may have procured it, &c.

Che io <i>me lo</i> sia	}	} <i>se lo</i> siano	Che noi <i>ce lo</i> siamo
— tu <i>te lo</i> sia			— voi <i>ve lo</i> siate
— egli			— essi
— ella			— esse

Pluperfect of the Subjunctive (Trapassato del Congiuntivo).

If I had procured it, &c. | S' io *me lo* fossi procurato, &c.

IMPERATIVE (Imperativo).

Procùratelo,	Procure (thou) it.
Non <i>te lo</i> procurare,	do (thou) not procure it.
<i>Se lo</i> procuri egli,	let him procure it.
Procuriamocelo,	let us procure it.
Procuratevelo,	procure (ye) it.
<i>Se lo</i> procurino esse,	let them procure it.

OBSERVATIONS ON THE CONJUGATION OF THE
REGULAR VERBS.

A. The final *e* of the infinitives in *are*, *ere*, and *ire*, may be dropt before a vowel as well as before a consonant (except before *s* followed by a consonant), without an apostrophe being put in its stead. Ex.

Egli vuol <i>far</i> questo.	}	He wishes to do this.
Voglio <i>legger</i> questo libro.		I wish to read this book.
Non <i>dormir</i> punto.		Not to sleep at all.

B. The dropping of the final vowel may also take place before a

consonant in those persons of the verbs which end in *mo*, and have the accent on the last syllable but one. Ex.

Siam liberi (<i>instead of</i> siamo).	We are free.
Eravam contenti (<i>instead of</i> eravamo).	We were satisfied.
Sarem lodati (<i>instead of</i> saremo).	We shall be praised.
Amiam sinceramente (<i>instead of</i> amiamo).	We love sincerely.

But when the accent rests on the last syllable but two, the last vowel cannot be dropped. We could not say ;

<i>Fossim</i> (<i>for</i> fòssimo) colpevoli.	Were we guilty.
<i>Avessim</i> (<i>for</i> avéssimo) veduto.	Had we seen.
<i>Amassim</i> (<i>for</i> amássimo) tutti.	Did we love all.

C. The abbreviation may further take place in all the third persons plural that have *no* or *ro* for their ending, as :

Aman, they love ; senton, they feel ; *instead of* amano, sentono.
Amavan, they loved ; amaron, they loved ; *instead of* amavano, amarono.

Amasser, did they love ; potrebber, they could ; avrebber, they would have ; *instead of* amassero, potrebbero, avrebbero.

D. The third person plural of the *perfetto remoto* is often abridged in more than one manner, as : *Instead of*

Andarono, they went } Furono, they were }	<i>you will find</i> : { andaron, andaro, andâr. furon, furo, fur.
--	---

E. The third person singular of the present tense of verbs in *ere* often loses the final *e* when it is preceded by *l*, *r*, or *n*, as :

Si <i>suol</i> dire, they use to say,	<i>instead of</i> <i>suole</i> .
Si <i>duol</i> di questo, he is sorry for it,	„ „ <i>duole</i> .
Ciò <i>val</i> molto, this is worth much,	„ „ <i>vule</i> .
<i>Fuol</i> fare, he will do,	„ „ <i>vuole</i> .

Also,

<i>Par</i> , 3rd pers. sing. of <i>parere</i> , to appear,	<i>instead of</i> <i>pare</i> .
<i>Pon</i> , „ „ „ <i>porre</i> (ponere), to put,	„ „ <i>pone</i> .
<i>Tien</i> , „ „ „ <i>tenere</i> , to hold,	„ „ <i>tiene</i> .
<i>Vien</i> , „ „ „ <i>venire</i> , to come,	„ „ <i>viene</i> .
<i>Riman</i> , „ „ „ <i>rimanere</i> , to remain,	„ „ <i>rimane</i> .
<i>Son</i> , 1st pers. sing. and 3rd pers. plur. of <i>essere</i> , to be,	„ „ <i>sono</i> .

I. ON THE VERBS IN *are*.

1. Verbs whose infinitives end in *care*, or *gare*, insert an *h* as often as *g* or *c* meets with *e* or *i*. Ex.

Present.—*Cerco*, I seek ; *cerchi* (not *cercì*), thou seekest ; *cerchiamo*, we seek, &c.

Future.—*Cercherò*, I shall seek ; *cercherai*, thou wilt seek ; *cercherà*, he will seek ; *cercheremo*, we shall seek, &c.

Present Subj.—Ch'io *cerchi*, that I may seek, &c. : *cerchiamo*,

that we may seek; *cerchiare*, that you may seek; *cerchino*, that they may seek.

2. When the infinitive ends in *ciare*, *giare*, *gliare*, and *sciare*, the letter *i* must be left out as often as it meets with *i* or *e*. Ex.

To threaten, to eat, to advise, to leave.	<i>Minacciare, mangiare, consigliare, lasciare.</i>
Thou threatenest, eatest, advisest, leavest.	<i>Tu minacci, mangi, consigli, lasci.</i>
I shall threaten, eat, advise, leave.	<i>Io minaccerrò, mangerò, consiglierò,^s lascerò.</i>
I should threaten, eat, advise, leave.	<i>Io minaccerei, mangerei, consiglierei, lascerei.</i>

3. But in verbs whose first person singular of the present tense indicative has the accent upon the letter *i*, the second person singular must be written with *ii*. Ex.

I send, I spy.	<i>Invio, spio.</i>
Thou sendest, thou spiest.	<i>Tu invii, tu spii.</i>

II. ON THE VERBS IN *ere*.

1. The greatest irregularity in the verbs in *ere* takes place in the *perfetto remoto*, and the past participle. Very few verbs in *ere* have in this tense the regular ending in *ei*, and even those that have it may take also the irregular ending in *etti*, as may be seen above in the conjugation of *credere*, which has *credei* and *credetti*.⁹

2. To know, therefore, the *perfetto remoto* of those verbs which have not the regular ending in *ei*, it is only necessary to know the first person singular. That once known, the third person singular is formed from it by changing *i* into *e*; and from this again the third person plural is formed by joining to it *ro*. The remaining three persons are always formed regularly. Ex.

<i>To please.</i> Preterite definite: I pleased.	<i>Piacere.</i> Perf. Rimoto: <i>piacquì.</i>
He pleased, they pleased.	3rd pers. sing. <i>piacque</i> ; 3rd pers. plur. <i>piacquero.</i>
Thou pleasedst, we pleased.	2nd pers. sing. <i>piacesti</i> ; 1st pers. plur. <i>piacemmo.</i>
You pleased.	2nd pers. plur. <i>piaceste.</i>
To write. Pref. def. I wrote.	<i>Scrivere.</i> Perf. Rimoto: <i>scrissi.</i>
He wrote, they wrote.	3rd pers. sing. <i>scrisse</i> ; 3rd pers. plur. <i>scrissero.</i>
Thou wrotest, we wrote.	2nd pers. sing. <i>scrivesti</i> ; 1st pers. plur. <i>scrivemmo.</i>
You wrote.	2nd pers. plur. <i>scriveste.</i>

3. à) Of the verbs in *ere* the following have the double form in the *perfetto remoto*, i. e. the regular in *ei*, and the irregular in *etti*.

^s Here the pronunciation renders the letter *i* again necessary.

⁹ In Tuscany the ending in *etti* seems to be preferred.

<i>Infinitivo.</i>	<i>Perfetto Rimoto.</i>		<i>Part. Pass.</i>
	<i>1st form.</i>	<i>2nd form.</i>	
Assistere, to assist, Desistere, to desist. Esistere, to exist. Insistere, to insist. Resistere, to resist. Sussistere, to subsist.	assistei,	assistetti,	assistito.
Battere, to beat, Combattere, to fight.	battei,	battetti, ¹⁰	battuto.
Compiere, to accomplish, Empiere, to fill.	compiei,	compietti,	compiuto.
Credere, to believe, Esigere, to exact, Fendere, to split, Fremere, to roar, to shudder.	credei, esigei, fendei, fremei,	credetti, esigetti, fendetti, fremetti,	creduto. esatto. fenduto (fesso). fremuto.
Gemere, to groan, Mietere, to mow, Pendere, to hang.	gemei, mietei, pendei,	gemetti, mietetti, pendetti,	gemuto. mietuto. penduto.
Perdere, to lose, Premere, to press, Ricevere, to receive, Serpere, to creep, Solvere, to dissolve.	perdei, premei, ricevei, serpei, solvei,	perdetti, premetti, ricevetti, serpetti, solvetti,	perduto. premuto. ricevuto. serputo. soluto.
Splendere, to shine, Stridere, to creak, Vendere, to sell,	splendei, stridei, vendei,	splendetti, stridetti, vendetti,	splenduto. striduto. venduto.

The following, with the accent on the last syllable but one, have also the *perfetto rimoto* in *ei* and *etti* :

<i>Infinitivo.</i>	<i>Perfetto Rimoto.</i>		<i>Part. Pass.</i>
	<i>1st form.</i>	<i>2nd form.</i>	
Cadere, to fall, Dovere, to owe, Godere, to enjoy, Potere, to be able (can), Sedere, to sit, Temere, to fear,	cadei, dovei, godei, potei, sedei, temei,	cadetti, dovetti, godetti, potetti, sedetti, temetti,	caduto. dovuto. goduto. potuto. seduto. temuto.

Obs. Some have, besides the two mentioned forms in *ei* and *etti*, a third form in *si*. Of these three forms sometimes the one, sometimes the other, is employed. They are the following :

Assolvere, to absolve,	assolvei,	assolvetti and assolsi,	{ assoluto, assolto.
Risolvere, to resolve.			
Chiudere, to shut,	chiudei,	chiudetti and chiusi,	chiuso.

¹⁰ The ending in *etti* is generally, for the sake of euphony, avoided in verbs having in their radicals one or two *t*'s.

<i>Infinitivo.</i>	<i>Perfetto Rimoto.</i>		<i>Part. Pass.</i>
	<i>1st form.</i>	<i>2nd form.</i>	
Cedere, to yield,	cedei,	cedetti and cessi,	{ ceduto, cesso.
Concedere, to grant.			
Perdere, to lose,	perdei,	perdetti and persi,	{ perduto. perso.
Persuadere, to persuade,	persuadei,	persuadetti and persuasi,	{ persuaso.
Dissuadere, to dissuade,	dissuadei; &c.		
Presumere, to presume,	presumei,	presumetti and presunsi,	presunto.
Rendere, to render,	rendei,	rendetti and resi,	{ renduto. reso.
Spendere, to spend,	spendei,	spendetti and spesi,	{ speso.
Bevere } to drink,	bevei,	{ bevetti and } bevuto.	
Bere }		{ bevvi, }	

b) The following five, and their compounds, have the *perfetto rimoto* in *equi* :—

Piacere, to please,	piacqui,	piaciuto.
Giacere, to lie, to be situate,	giacqui,	giaciuto.
Tacere, to be silent,	tacqui,	taciuto.
Nuocere, to hurt,	nocqui,	nocciuto.
Nascere, to be born,	nacqui,	nato.

c) The following three in *bli* :—

Avere, to have,	ebbi,	avuto.
Conoscere, to know,	conobbi,	conosciuto.
Crescere, to grow,	crebbi,	cresciuto.

d) The following two in *ddi* :—

Cadere, to fall,	caddi,	caduto.
Vedere, to see,	{ vidi, veddi (<i>antiquated</i>),	{ veduto. visto.

e) The following two in *ppi* :—

Rompere, to break,	ruppi,	rotto.
Sapere, to know,	seppe,	saputo.

f) The following two in *vi* :—

Bere, or bevere, to drink,	bevvi,	bevuto.
Parere, to appear,	parvi,	{ paruto, parso.

g) The following two in *li* and *ni* :—

Volere, to be willing,	volli,	voluto.
to wish,		
Tenere, to hold,	tenni,	tenuto.

h) All the other verbs in *ere* have the *perfetto rimoto* in *si*, *ssi*,

and the past participle in *so*, *to*, or *sto*. The following is an alphabetical list of them.

Obs. Derivative and compound verbs follow the same conjugation as their simple. It is further to be observed that the monosyllabical particles, *a*, *o*, *da*, *fra*, *ra*, *so*, *su*, double the following consonant, when it is not *s impura* (i. e. *s* followed by a consonant), as: *accorrere*, to run up; *opporre*, to oppose; *dabbene*, honest; *frammettere*, to put between; *raggiungere*, to rejoin; *socchiudere*, to half close; *suddividere*, to subdivide, &c.

<i>Infinitivo.</i>	<i>Prima persona dell' Indicativo</i>	<i>Perfetto</i>	<i>Participio</i>
	<i>presente.</i>	<i>rimoto.</i>	<i>passato.</i>
Accendere, to light,	accendo,	accesi,	acceso.
Riaccendere, to rekindle. (See the above Obs.)			
Accorgersi, to perceive,	accorgo,	accorsi,	accorto.
Scorgere, to notice. (See the above Obs.)			
Affliggere, ¹ to afflict,	affliggo,	afflissi,	afflitto.
Appendere, to hang up,	appendo,	appesi,	appeso.
Sospendere, to delay. (See the above Obs.)			
Ardere, to burn,	ardo,	arsi,	arso.
Ascondere, to conceal,	ascondo,	ascosi,	{ ascoso, ascosto.
Nascondere, to hide. (See the above Obs.)			
Assolvere, to absolve,	assolvo,	assolsi,	assolto.
Risolvere, to resolve. (See the above Obs.)			
Assorbere, to absorb,	assorbo,	assorsi,	assorto.
Assumere, to assume,	assumo,	assunsi,	assunto.
Presumere, to presume. (See the above Obs.)			
Riassumere, to re-assume. (See the same.)			
Chiedere, to ask,	chiedo,	chiesi,	chiesto.
Richiedere, to demand. (See the above Obs.)			
Chiudere, to shut,	chiudo,	chiusi,	chiuso.
Conchiudere (or Concludere), to infer,			} (See the above Obs.)
Escludere, to exclude,			
Inchiudere (or includere), to inclose,			
Racchiudere, to shut up,			
Richiudere, to inclose,			
Rinchiudere, to include,			
Schiudere, to open, to exclude,			
Sorchiudere, to shut up,			

¹ Verbs having a vowel before *gere*, double the letter *g*, as: *leggere*, to read; *leggo*, I read; *leggi*, thou readest; *legge*, he reads; *leggiamo*, we read; *leggete*, you read; *leggono*, they read, &c. There is further to be remarked that verbs ending in *ggere*, *vere*, and *arre*, as: *affliggere*, to afflict; *scrivere*, to write; *trarre*, to draw, double in the *perfetto remoto* the letter *s*, and have in the past participle *tt*; e. g. *afflissi*, *scrissi*, *trassi*; *afflitto*, *scritto*, *tratto*.

<i>Infinitivo.</i>	<i>Prima persona dell' Indicativo presente.</i>	<i>Perfetto rimoto.</i>	<i>Participio passato.</i>
Cingere, <i>or</i> } to gird,	{ cingo, }	cinsi,	cinto.
Cignere, }	{ cigno, }		
Accingersi, <i>or</i> accignersi, to prepare one's self. (See the above Obs.)			
Cogliere, <i>or</i> } to gather,	{ coglio, }	colsi,	colto.
Còrre, }	{ colgo, }		
Accogliere, <i>or</i> accòrre, to receive,			
Raccogliere, <i>or</i> raccòrre, to collect, to pick up, }		(See the above Obs.)	
Connettere, to connect,	connetto,	connessi,	connesso.
Correre, to run,	corro,	corsi,	corso.
Accorrere, to run up,			
Concorrere, to concur,			
Discorrere, to discourse,			
Incorrere, to incur,			
Percorrere, to run over,			
Ricorrere, to have recourse,			
	(See the above Obs.)		
Cuocere, to boil, to cook,	cuoco,	cossi,	cotto.
Deludere, to delude,	deludo,	delusi,	deluso.
Alludere, to allude,			
Illudere, to delude,			
	(See the above Obs.)		
Difendere, to defend,	difendo.	difesi,	difeso.
Offendere, to offend. (See the above Obs.)			
Discutere, to examine,	discuto,	discussi,	discusso.
Distinguere, to distinguish,	distinguo,	distinsi,	distinto.
Estinguere, to extinguish. (See the above Obs.)			
Dividere, to divide,	divido,	divisi,	diviso.
Subdividere, to subdivide. (See the above Obs.)			
Dolere, to ache,	{ dolgo, }	dolsi,	doluto.
	{ doglio, }		
Erigere, to erect,	erigo,	eressi,	eretto.
Espellere, to expel,	espello,	espulsi,	espulso.
Impellere, to impel. (See the above Obs.)			
Esprimere, to express,	esprimo,	espressi,	espresso.
Opprimere, to oppress,			
Comprimere, to compress,			
Deprimere, to depress,			
Imprimere, to impress,			
Sopprimere, to suppress,			
	(See the above Obs.)		
Figgere, to fix,	figgo,	fissi,	{ fisso, fitto.

* Verbs in *gliere* change this ending in the *perfetto rimoto* into *isti*, and in the past participle into *lto*; e. g. *sciogliere*, to untie—*sciolsi*, *sciolto*; *togliere*, to lay hold of—*tolsi*, *tolto*, &c.

<i>Infinitivo.</i>	<i>Prima persona dell' Indicativo presente.</i>	<i>Perfetto rimoto.</i>	<i>Participio passato.</i>
Affiggere, to post up, Crocifiggere (or crucifig- gere), to crucify, Prefiggere, to prefix, Sconfiggere, to defeat, Trafiggere, to pierce,	(See Obs. above.)		
Fingere, to feign, Fondere, to melt,	finco, fondo,	finco, fusi,	finto. fuso.
Confondere, to confound, Diffondere, to pour out, Infondere, to infuse, Rifondere, to restore, Trasfondere, to pour from one vessel to another.	(See Obs. above.)		
Frangere, to break, Infrangere, to break to pieces, Rifrangere, to reflect,	frango, frangi, frangi,	frangi, fransi, fransi,	franto. franto. franto.
Friggere, to fry, Giungere, or } to arrive, Giugnere, }	friggo, giungo,	frissi, giunsi,	fritto. giunto.
Aggiungere, to add, Congiungere, to join, Disgiungere, to disjoin, Raggiungere, to rejoin, Soggiungere, to add, reply, Sopraggiungere, } to hap- pen, } Sovraggiungere, }	(See Obs. above.)		
Incidere, to make an incision, Circoncidere, to circumcise, Decidere, to decide, Recidere, to cut,	incido, incido, incido, incido,	incisi, incisi, incisi, incisi,	inciso. inciso. inciso. inciso.
Intridere, to knead, Leggere, to read, Eleggere, to elect, Rileggere, to read over again,	intrido, leggo, leggo, leggo,	intrisi, lessi, lessi, lessi,	intriso. letto. letto. letto.
Mergere, to plunge, Immergere, to immerse, Sommergere, to submerge,	mergo, mergo, mergo,	mersi, mersi, mersi,	merso. merso. merso.
Mettere, to put,	metto,	misi,	messo.

<i>Infinitivo.</i>	<i>Prima persona dell' Indicativo presente.</i>	<i>Perfetto rimoto.</i>	<i>Participio passato.</i>
Ammettere, to admit, Commettere, to commit, Compromettere, to compro- mise, Dimettere, to discontinue, Dismettere, to leave off, Frammettere, } to insert, Inframmettere, } Intromettere, to let in, Omettere, to omit, Permettere, to permit, Premettere, to put before, Promettere, to promise, Rimettere, to remit, Scommettere, to lay a wager, Smettere, to dismiss, Sottomettere, } to submit, Trasmettere, to transmit,	(See Obs. above.)		
Mordere, to bite,	mordo,	morsi,	morso.
Mungere <i>and</i> } to milk, Mugnere, }	{ mungo, } { mugno, }	munsi,	munto.
Muovere, to move, Commuovere, to move, to disturb, Dismuovere, to stir up, Promuovere, to promote, Rimuovere, to remove, Smuovere, to pervert,	muovo,	mossi,	mosso.
(See Obs. above.)			
Negligere, to neglect, Opprimere, to oppress, Percuotere, to strike, Scuotere, to shake, Riscuotere, to recover money due,	negligo, opprimo, percuoto,	neglessi, oppressi, percossi,	negletto. oppresso. percosso.
(See Obs. above.)			
Piangere, to weep, Pingere <i>and</i> Pignere, to paint, Dipingere, to depict. (See Obs. above.)	piango, pingo,	piansi, pinsi,	pianto. pinto.
Porgere, to reach, Prendere, to take, Apprendere, to learn, to hear, Comprendere, to compre- hend, Intraprendere, to under- take, Riprendere, to retake, Sorprendere, to surprise,	porgo, prendo,	porsi, presi,	porto. preso.
(See Obs. above.)			

<i>Infinitivo.</i>	<i>Prima persona dell' Indicativo presente.</i>	<i>Perfetto rimoto.</i>	<i>Participio passato.</i>
Proteggere, to protect,	proteggio,	protessi,	protetto.
Pungere, to sting,	pungo,	punsi,	punto.
Radere, to shear,	rado,	rasi,	raso.
Redimere, to redeem,	redimo,	redensi,	redento.
Reggere, to reign, to govern,	reggo,	ressi,	retto.
Correggere, to correct,	} (See Obs. above.)		
Ricorreggere, to correct again,			
Dirigere, to direct,			
Erigere, to erect,	} (See Obs. above.)		
Ridere, to laugh,			
Deridere, to deride.	(See Obs. above.)	rido,	risi, riso.
Rimanere, to remain,	rimango,	rimasi,	{ rimasto, rimaso.
Rispondere, to answer,	rispondo,	risposi,	risposto.
Corrispondere, to agree with.	(See Obs. above.)		
Rodere, to gnaw,	rodo,	rosi,	roso.
Corrodere, to corrode.	(See Obs. above.)		
Scegliere, or } to choose,	{ scelgo, }	scelsi,	scelto.
Scerre, }	{ scoglio, }		
Prescegliere, to select.	(See Obs. above.)		
Scendere, to descend,	scendo,	scesi,	sceso.
Ascendere, to ascend,	} (See the above Obs.)		
Condiscendere, to condescend,			
Discendere, to descend,			
Trascendere, to exceed,	} (See Obs. above.)		
Sciogliere, or } to untie,			
Sciorre, }	{ sciolgo, }	sciolsi,	sciolto,
	{ scioglio, }		
Disciogliere, or disciorre, to dissolve.	(See Obs. above.)		
Scrivere, to write,	scrivo,	scrissi,	scritto.
Ascrivere, to ascribe,	} (See Obs. above.)		
Descrivere, to describe,			
Inscrivere, to inscribe,			
Prescrivere, to prescribe,			
Rescrivere, to transcribe,			
Soprascrivere, to super-scribe,			
Sottoscrivere, to subscribe,	} (See Obs. above.)		
Trascrivere, to copy,			
Sorgere, or } to rise,	{ sorgo,	{ sorsi,	sorto.
Surgere, }	{ surgo,	{ sursi,	
Risorgere, to resist,	} (See Obs. above.)		
Insorgere, to rise against,			
Spargere, to spread,	spargo,	sparsi,	sparso.
Spendere, to spend,	spendo,	spesi,	speso.
Spergere, to waste,	spergo,	spersi,	perso.

<i>Infinitivo.</i>	<i>Prima persona dell' Indicativo presente.</i>	<i>Perfetto rimoto.</i>	<i>Participio passato.</i>
Aspergere, to sprinkle, Cospergere, to besprinkle, Dispergere, to disperse,	} (See Obs. above.)		
Spingere, <i>or</i> } to push, Spignere, }		spingo, spinsi,	spinto.
Respingere, } to repulse, Respignere, } Sospingere, } to push Sospignere, } away,	} (See Obs. above.)		
Stringere, <i>or</i> } to bind, Strignere, }		stringo, strinsi,	stretto.
Astringere, } to force, Costringere, } Restringere, } to restrain, Ristringere, }	} (See Obs. above.)		
Struggere, to dissolve, Distruggere, to destroy.		struggo, strussi, (See Obs. above.)	strutto.
Svellere, to pull out,	{ svello, } { svelgo, }	svelsi,	svelto.
Tendere, to tend, Attendere, to wait, Contendere, to contend, Estendere, to stretch, Intendere, to understand, Pretendere, to pretend, Soprintendere, to superin- tend, Sottintendere, to under- stand,	{ tendo, } } (See above Obs.)	tesi,	teso.
Tergere, to wipe, Tingere, <i>or</i> } to dye, colour, Tignere }		tergo, tersi, tingo, tinsi,	terso. tinto.
Intingere, to steep, Attingere, to reach, Ritingere, to dye again,	} (See Obs. above.)		
Togliere, <i>or</i> } to take, to seize, Tôrre, }		{ tôlgo, } { toglio, }	tolsi, tolto.
Distogliere, <i>or</i> distôrre, to divert from, Ritogliere, <i>or</i> ritôrre, to retake,	} (See Obs. above.)		
Torcere, to twist, Contorcere, to wring, Ritorcere, to twist again,		torco, torsi, (See Obs. above.)	torto.
Valere, to be worth, Prevalere, to prevail.	valgo, (See Obs. above.)	valsi,	{ valsq, valuto.

<i>Infinitivo.</i>	<i>Prima persona dell' Indicativo presente.</i>	<i>Perfetto rimoto.</i>	<i>Participio passato.</i>
Uccidere, to kill,	uccido,	uccisi,	ucciso.
Ancidere (<i>poetical</i>), to kill.	(See Obs. above.)		
Ungere, to anoint,	ungo,	unsi,	unto.
Vincere, to vanquish,	vinco,	vinsi,	vinto.
Convincere, to convince.	(See Obs. above.)		
Vivere, to live,	vivo,	vissi,	{ vivuto, vissuto.
Rivivere, to revive,	}	(See Obs. above.)	
Sopravvivere, to survive,			
Volgere, to turn,	vólgo,	volsi,	volto.
Avvolgere,	} to wrap up,	(See Obs. above.)	
Ravvolgere,			
Rinvolgere,			
Sconvolgere, to invert,			
Stravolgere,			
Travolgere,	} to overturn,		

OBSERVATIONS.

A. Verbs ending in *ucere, gliere, nere, aere*, are contracted in the infinitive, so that they have two infinitives, i.e. the ancient Latin, as: *adducere*, to adduce; *cogliere*, to gather; *ponere*, to put; *trahere* (and *traggere*), to draw; and the modern contracted infinitive, as: *addurre, còrre, porre, trarre*. The second contracted infinitive is generally used; from it are formed the future and the present conditional, as, *addurrò, còrrò, porrò, trarrò*, and *addurrei, correi, porrei, trarrei*. All the other tenses are formed from the ancient infinitive, as: from *conducere*, Pres.: *conduco, conduci, conduce*, &c. Imperfect: *conduceva*, &c. Imperf. subj.: *conducessi*, &c.

In the following verbs the infinitive is contracted, and the contraction maintained for the future and present conditional (see Lesson LXV.) :—

<i>Infinitivo.</i>	<i>Presente.</i>	<i>Perfetto rimoto.</i>	<i>Participio passato.</i>	<i>Futuro.</i>
Addurre, to adduce, <i>instead of adducere,</i>	} adduco,	addussi,	addotto,	addurrò.
Condurre, <i>instead of</i> conducere,				
Dedurre, " "	deducere, to deduce.			
Introdurre, " "	introducere, to introduce.			
Produrre, " "	producere, to produce.			
Ricondurre, " "	riconducere, to reconduct.			
Ridurre, " "	riducere, to reduce.			
Riprodurre, " "	riproducere, to reproduce.			
Sedurre, " "	seducere, to seduce.			
Tradurre, " "	traducere, to translate.			

<i>Infinitivo.</i>	<i>Presente.</i>	<i>Perfetto rimoto.</i>	<i>Participio passato.</i>	<i>Futuro.</i>
Bere, to drink, <i>instead</i> <i>of</i> berevere,	} bevo,	bevvi,	bevuto,	berò.
Porre, to put, <i>instead</i> <i>of</i> ponere,				
	} pongo,	posi,	posto,	porrò.

And so all those compounded from it, as :

Anteporre, to prefer.	Imporre, to impose.
Apporre, to impute.	Opporre, to oppose.
Comporre, to compound.	Posporre, to postpone.
Contrapporre, to oppose,	Preporre, to prefer.
Deporre, to depose.	Proporre, to propose.
Disporre, to dispose.	Soprapporre, to put upon.
Esporre, to expose.	Sottoporre, to subdue, to submit.
Frapporre, to interpose.	Supporre, to suppose.
Trarre, to draw, <i>in-</i> <i>stead of</i> traere,	} traggo, trassi, tratto, trarrò.

And so ;

Astrarre, to abstract.					Detrarre, to detract.
Attrarre, to attract.					Estrarre, to extract.
Contrarre, to contract.					Sottrarre, to deliver.
Còrre, ³ <i>or</i> cogliere,	} to gather,	colgo,	} colsi,	colto,	{ corrò, <i>or</i> coglierò.
Scerre, <i>or</i> scegliere,		scelgo,			
Sciorre, <i>or</i> sciogliere,	} to untie,	sciolgo,	} sciolsi,	sciolto,	{ sciorrò, <i>or</i> scioglierò.
Tòrre, <i>or</i> togliere,		tolgo,			

Obs. B. Besides these, there are those verbs in *ere* that have (like *avère*) the accent on the last syllable but one ; they are not contracted in the infinitive, but in the future and conditional, where they reject the letter *e* of the last syllable but one, as :

	<i>Futuro.</i>	<i>Condizionale.</i>
Avere, to have.	Avrò,	avrei.
Dovere, to owe.	Dovrò,	dovrei.
Potere, to be able (can).	Potrò,	potrei.
Sapere, to know.	Saprò,	saprei.
Vedere, to see.	Vedrò,	vedrei.
Parere, to appear.	Parrò.	parrei.

Obs. C. But when the verbs in *ere* (with the accent on the last syllable but one) end in *nere* and *lere*, the letter *n* or *l* is in the contraction changed into *r*, as :

³ In the verbs in *gliere* the contracted form is generally preferred in poetry.

	<i>Futuro.</i>	<i>Condizionale.</i>
Rimanere, to remain.	Rimarò,	rimarrei.
Tenere, to hold.	Terrò,	terrei.
Dolere, to hurt.	Dorrò,	dorrei.
Valere, to be worth.	Varrò,	varrei.
Volere, to be willing.	Vorrò,	vorrei.

CONJUGATION OF A VERB WITH TWO INFINITIVES.

<i>Present of the Infinitive.</i>	<i>Present Participle.</i>
Addurre, to allege; formerly <i>adducere</i> .	Adducendo, alleging.
<i>Past of the Infinitive.</i>	<i>Past Participle.</i>
Avere addotto, to have alleged.	Addotto, alleged.

Present of the Indicative.

	I allege, &c.
Adduc-o,	Adduc-iamo,
Adduc-i,	Adduc-ete,
Adduc-e,	Adduc-ono.

Imperfect.

	I alleged, &c.
Adduc-eva,	Adduc-evamo,
Adduc-evi,	Adduc-evate,
Adduc-evo,	Adduc-evano.

Preterite.

	I alleged, &c.
Addussi,	Adduc-emmo,
Adduc-esti,	Adduc-este,
Addusse,	Addussero.

Preterperfect.

Ho addotto, &c. I have alleged, &c.

Pluperfect.

Avera addotto, &c. I had alleged, &c.

Preterite Anterior (Passato Rimoto Composto).

Ebbi addotto, &c. I had alleged, &c.

Future Present or Simple.

	I shall allege, &c.
Addurr-ò,	Addurr-emo,
Addurr-ai,	Addurr-ete,
Addurr-à,	Addurr-anno.

Future Past (Futuro Perfetto).

Avrò addotto, &c. I shall have alleged, &c.

Conditional Present.

I should allege, &c.

Addurr-ei,	Addurr-emmo,
Addurr-esti,	Addurr-este,
Addurr-ebbe,	Addurr-ebbero.

Past Conditional.

Avrei addotto, &c. I should have alleged, &c.

Present of the Subjunctive.

That I may allege, &c.

Adduc-a,	Adduc-iamo,
Adduc-a,	Adduc-iate,
Adduc-a,	Adduc-ano.

Imperfect of the Subjunctive.

If I alleged, &c.

Adduc-essi,	Adduc-essimo,
Adduc-essi,	Adduc-este,
Adduc-esse,	Adduc-essero.

Preterperfect of the Subjunctive.

Che abbia addotto, &c. That I may have alleged, &c.

Pluperfect of the Subjunctive.

S'io avessi addotto, &c. If I had alleged, &c.

Imperative.

Adduc-i, allege (thou).	Adduc-iamo, let us allege.
Non addurre, do not allege.	Adduc-ete, allege (ye).
Adduc-a, let him allege.	Adduc-ano, let them allege.

III. ON THE VERBS IN *ire*.Of the verbs in *ire* only the following are entirely regular:—

<i>Infinitivo.</i>	<i>Presente.</i>	<i>Perfetto rimoto.</i>	<i>Participio passato.</i>
Aprire, to open,	apro,	aprii (apersi),	aperto.
Bollire, to boil,	bollo,	bollii,	bollito.
Convertire, to convert,	converto,	convertii,	convertito.
Coprire, to cover,	copro,	coprii (copersi),	coperto.
Cucire, to sew.	cucio,	cucii,	cucito.

<i>Infinitivo.</i>	<i>Presente.</i>	<i>Perfetto rimoto.</i>	<i>Participio passato.</i>
Dormire, to sleep,	dormo,	dormii,	dormito.
Fuggire, to flee,	fuggo,	fugii,	fuggito.
Partire, to depart,	parto,	partii,	partito.
Pentirsi, to repent,	mi pento,	mi pentii,	pentito.
Seguire, to follow,	seguo,	seguii,	seguito.
Sentire, to feel,	sento,	sentii,	sentito.
Servire, to serve,	servo,	servii,	servito.
Soffrire, to suffer,	soffro,	soffrii (soffersi),	sofferto.
Sortire, to choose,	sorto,	sortii,	sortito.
Vestire, to clothe,	vesto,	vestii,	vestito.

The remaining verbs in *ire* differ from the above regular form in so much that they end in the present tense in *isco*. This irregularity also takes place in the present of the subjunctive and imperative, as has been shown heretofore in the conjugation of *nutrire* (p. 443).

There is, however, still some doubt existing with respect to the first and second persons plural of these verbs; for in conversation, as well as in some Italian authors, *finischiamo*, *nutrischiamo*, &c., as well as *finiamo*, *nutriamo*, are employed. Modern authors, however, seem to incline for the regular form in the first and second persons plural (as in *nutrire*, p. 443), except, notwithstanding, where a double meaning is to be avoided; as in the verbs: *ardire*, to dare; *atterrire*, to frighten; *marcire*, to rot; *smaltire*, to digest, &c., where *ardiamo*, *atterriamo*, *marciamo*, *smaltiamo*, are altogether avoided, not to mistake them for the first person plural of *ardere*, to burn; *atterrare*, to throw down; *marciare*, to march; *smaltare*, to enamel.

The following verbs and their compounds terminate almost always in *isco*. Those marked with a cross (†) have also the regular form, as: *abborrire*—*abborrisco*, *abborro*; but the form in *isco* is preferred in conversation, the other in poetry and the didactic style.

Abolire, to abolish,	abolisco,	abolii,	abolito.
†Abborrire, to abhor,	abborrisco,	abborrii,	abborrito.
Arricchire, to enrich,	arricchisco,	arricchii,	arricchito.
Arrossire, to blush,	arrossisco,	arrossii,	arrossito.
Bandire, to banish,	bandisco,	bandii,	bandito.
Capire, to understand,	capisco,	capii,	capito.
Colpire, to strike,	colpisco,	colpii,	colpito.
Compatire, to pity,	compatisco,	compatii,	compatito.
Concepire, to conceive,	concepisco,	concepiti,	concepito.
Digerire, to digest,	digerisco,	digerii,	digerito.
Eseguire, to execute,	eseguisco,	eseguii,	eseguito.
Fiorire, to blossom,	fiorisco,	fiorii,	fiorito.
Gradire, to approve,	gradisco,	gradii,	gradito.
†Impazzire, to grow mad,	impazzisco,	impazzii,	impazzito.
Incrudelire, to grow cruel,	incrudelisco,	incrudelii,	incrudelito.
†Languire, to languish,	languisco,	languii,	languito.

<i>Infinitivo.</i>	<i>Presente.</i>	<i>Perfetto rimoto.</i>	<i>Participio passato.</i>
Patire, to suffer,	patisco,	patii,	patito.
Perire, to perish,	perisco,	perii,	perito.
Spedire, to despatch,	spedisco,	spedii,	spedito.
Tradire, to betray,	tradisco,	tradii,	tradito.
Ubbidire, to obey,	ubbidisco,	ubbidii,	ubbidito.
Unire, to unite,	unisco,	unii,	unito.

Obs. The verbs *aprire*, to open; *coprire*, to cover; *ricoprire*, to cover again; *scoprire*, to uncover; *offerire*, to offer; as also *differire*, to differ; *profferire*, to utter; *sofferire*, to suffer; have a double *perfetto rimoto*, viz. the regular, as: *aprii*, *offerii*, &c., and an irregular, as: *apersi*, *offersi*, &c. *Ex.*

I opened, thou openedst, he opened.		<i>Aprii</i> or <i>apersi</i> , <i>apristi</i> , <i>apri</i> or <i>aperse</i> .
We, you, they opened.		<i>Aprimmo</i> , <i>apriste</i> , <i>aprirono</i> or <i>apersero</i> .

Obs. A. *Influire* (also *influere*), to influence, has in the *perfetto rimoto* only *influssi*.

Obs. B. The verb *apparire*, to appear, and its compound *comparire*, to appear, have in the *perfetto rimoto*, besides the regular form in *ii*, another in *vi*,⁴ as:

I appeared, thou appearedst, he appeared.		<i>Apparii</i> and <i>apparvi</i> , <i>apparisti</i> , <i>apparì</i> and <i>apparve</i> .
We, you, they appeared.		<i>Apparimmo</i> , <i>appariste</i> , <i>apparir- ono</i> and <i>apparvero</i> .

Obs. C. Of the verbs in *ire* the following two are contracted in the future and conditional:

To die,	<i>morire</i> , future <i>morirò</i> , conditional <i>morrei</i> .
To come, venire,	„ <i>verrò</i> , „ <i>verrei</i> .

Obs. D. The only one of the verbs in *ire* that has a contracted infinitive is *dire*, formerly *dicere*, to say.

I. IRREGULAR VERBS IN *are*.

There are only four irregular verbs of the first conjugation, viz.—

Andare, to go; *fare* (formerly *facere*), to make, to do; *dare*, to give; *stare*, to stand.

They are conjugated in the following manner:

⁴ This double form in the *perfetto rimoto* is to be attributed to the double infinitive of the verbs; for we find also *apparere*, *comparere*, though the latter be not used.

Infinitive Present.

ANDARE, to go.	FARE, to do.	DARE, to give.	STARE, to stand.
----------------	--------------	----------------	------------------

Infinitive Past.

Essere andato, to have gone.	Aver fatto, to have done.	Aver dato, to have given.	Esserestato, to have stood.
------------------------------	---------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------

Participle Present.

Andando, going.	Facendo, doing.	Dando, giving.	Stando, standing.
-----------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------------

Participle Past.

Andato, gone.	Fatto, done.	Dato, given.	Stato, stood.
---------------	--------------	--------------	---------------

Present Indicative.

I go, &c.	I do, &c.	I give, &c.	I stand, &c.
Vado (or vo),	Faccio (or fo),	Do,	Sto,
vai,	fai,	dai,	stai,
va,	fa (face), poet.,	dà,	sta,
andiamo,	facciamo,	diamo,	stiamo,
andate,	fate,	date,	state,
vanno.	fanno.	danno.	stanno.

Imperfect.

I went, &c.	I did, &c.	I gave, &c.	I stood, &c.
And-ava,	Fac-eva (fea),	Da-va,	Sta-va,
and-avi,	fac-evi,	da-vi,	sta-vi,
and-ava,	fac-eva (fea),	da-va,	sta-va,
and-avamo,	fac-evamo,	da-vamo,	sta-vamo,
and-avate,	fac-evate,	da-vate,	sta-vate,
and-avano.	fac-evano.	da-vano.	sta-vano.

Preterite Definite (Passato Rimoto).

I went, did go, &c.	I did, did do, &c.	I gave, did give, &c.	I stood, did stand, &c.
And-ai,	Feci (fei),	Diedi (detti),	Stetti,
and-asti,	fac-esti,	desti,	stesti,
and-ò,	fece (fe', feo),	diede (diè, dette),	stette,
and-ammo,	fac-emmo,	demmo,	stemmo,
and-aste,	fac-este,	deste,	steste,
and-arono.	fecero (fenna, fero).	diedero (dierono, dettero).	stettero.

Preterperfect (Passato Prossimo).

I have gone, &c.	I have done (made), &c.	I have given, &c.	I have stood, &c.
Sono andato.	Ho fatto, &c.	Ho dato, &c.	Sono stato, &c.

Pluperfect.

I had gone, &c.	I had done, (made), &c.	I had given, &c.	I had stood, &c.
Era andato, &c.	Aveva fatto, &c.	Aveva dato, &c.	Era stato, &c.

Preterite Anterior (Passato Rimoto Composto).

I had gone, &c. I had done, &c. I had given, &c. I had stood, &c.
 Fui andato, &c. Ebbi fatto, &c. Ebbi dato, &c. Fui stato, &c.

Future.

I shall go, &c.	I shall do <i>or</i> make, &c.	I shall <i>or</i> will give, &c.	I shall <i>or</i> will stand, &c.
And-rò,	Fa-rò,	Da-rò,	Sta-rò,
and-rai,	fa-rai,	da-rai,	sta-rai,
and-rà,	fa-rà,	da-rà,	sta-rà,
and-remo,	fa-remo,	da-remo,	sta-remo,
and-rete,	fa-rete,	da-rete,	sta-rete,
and-ranno.	fa-ranno.	da-ranno.	sta-ranno.

Future Past.

I shall have gone, &c.	I shall have done, &c.	I shall have given, &c.	I shall have stood, &c.
Sarò andato, andata, &c.	Avrò fatto, &c.	Avrò dato, &c.	Sarò stato, stata, &c.

Conditional Present.

I should go, &c.	I should do, &c.	I should give, &c.	I should stand, &c.
And-rei,	Fa-rei,	Da-rei,	sta-rei,
and-resti,	fa-resti,	da-resti,	sta-resti,
and-rebbe,	fa-rebbe (<i>ria</i>),	da-rebbe,	sta-rebbe,
and-remmo,	fa-remmo,	da-remmo,	sta-remmo,
and-reste,	fa-reste,	da-reste,	sta-reste,
and-rebbero.	fa-rebbero (<i>riano</i>).	da-rebbero.	sta-rebbero.

Conditional Past.

I should have gone, &c.	I should have done, &c.	I should have given, &c.	I should have stood, &c.
Sarei andato, andata, &c.	Avrei fatto, &c.	Avrei dato, &c.	Sarei stato, stata, &c.

Present of the Subjunctive.

That I may go, &c.	do <i>or</i> make, &c.	give, &c.	stand, &c.
Che io vada,	faccia,	dia,	stia,
che tu vada,	faccia,	dia,	stia,
che egli vada,	faccia,	dia,	stia,
che noi andiamo,	facciamo,	diamo,	stiamo,
che voi andiate,	facciate,	diato,	stiate,
che essi vadano.	facciano.	diano (<i>dieno</i>).	stiano (<i>stieno</i>).

Imperfect of the Subjunctive.

If I went, &c.	made &c.	gave, &c.	stood, &c.
Se io and-assi,	fac-essi,	d-essi,	st-essi,
se tu and-assi,	fac-essi,	d-essi,	st-essi,
s' egli and-asse,	fac-esse,	d-esse,	st-esse,
se noi and-assimo,	fac-essimo,	d-essimo,	st-essimo,
se voi and-aste.	fac-este,	d-este,	st-este,
s' eglino and- dassero.	fac-essero.	d-essero.	st-essero.

Perfect of the Subjunctive.

That I may have gone, &c.	may have done, &c.	may have given, &c.	may have stood, &c.
Che io sia andato, abbia fatto, &c.	abbia dato, &c.	sia stato, stata, andata, &c.	

Pluperfect of the Subjunctive.

If I had gone, &c.	had done, &c.	had given, &c.	had stood, &c.
Se fossi andato, andata, &c.	avessi fatto, &c.	avessi dato, &c.	fossi stato, stata, &c.

Imperative.

Va, go (thou),	Fa, do (thou),	Dà, give (thou),	Sta, stand (thou),
non andare, go (thou) not,	non fare, do (thou) not,	non dare, give (thou) not,	non istare, do (thou) notstand,
vada, let him go,	faccia, let him do,	dia, let him give,	stia, let him stand,
andiamo, let us go,	facciamo, let us do,	diamo, let us give,	stiamo, let us stand,
andate, go (ye),	fate, do (ye),	date, give (ye),	state, stand (ye),
vadano, let them go.	facciano, let them do.	diano, let them give.	stiano, let them stand.

Obs. A. Verbs compounded of *dare* and *stare*, such as : *secondare*, to assist; *circondare*, to encompass; *accostare*, to approach; *contrastare*, to resist; *ostare*, to oppose; *costare*, to cost; *restare*, to rest, are regular; except *ridare*, to give again, which is conjugated like *dare*, to give; and *soprastare*, or *sovrastare*, to superintend, to overcome, which is conjugated like *stare*, to stand.

Obs. B. Verbs compounded of *fare*, as : *disfare*, to undo; *rifare*, to repair; *soddisfare*, to satisfy; *sopraffare*, to overpower, &c. are always irregular, like *fare*, to do.

II. IRREGULAR VERBS IN *ere*.

Preliminary Observations.—If the learner has studied well all that we said on the irregularity of the Italian verbs, he has in the

following irregular verbs only to make himself acquainted with the present of the indicative and subjunctive, and in order to know this he has but to remark the following :—

When an irregular verb has in the first person singular of the present tense other consonants than those of the infinitive, as—in *potere*, where it has *posso*, instead of *poto*, it retains those consonants also in the first and third persons plural, as : *possiamo*, we can ; *possono*, they can, and in all the persons of the present of the subjunctive, as : *possa*, I may be able ; *possa*, thou mayest be able ; *possa*, he may be able ; *possiamo*, *possiate*, *possano*. The imperfect of the indicative and that of the subjunctive are always regularly formed from the infinitive. Ex. inf. *pot-ere* ; imperf. ind. *pot-eva* ; imperf. subj. *pot-essi*, &c.

I. IRREGULAR VERBS HAVING THE ACCENT ON THE LAST SYLLABLE BUT ONE.

1.

Inf. pres. Potére, to be able
(can).

Inf. past. Aver potuto, to have
been able.

Present indic.

Posso, I can, &c.

Puoi,

Può (*puote*),

Possiamo,

Potete,

Possono (*ponno*).

Pres. part. Potendo, being
able.

Past part. Potuto, been able.

Present subj.

Ch' io possa, that I may be
able, &c.

Che tu possa (*possì*),

Ch' egli possa,

Che noi possiamo,

Che voi possiate,

Ch' eglino possano.

Imperf. Poteva, &c. I could, &c.

Perfetto remoto. Potei (*potetti*), potesti, potè, potemmo, poteste,
poterono (*potettero*), I could, &c.

Imperf. subj. Se potessi, &c. If I could, &c.

Future. Potrò, potrai, &c. I shall be able, &c.

Cond. pres. Potrei (*potria*), potresti, &c. I should be able, &c.

2.

Inf. pres. Dovére, to be obliged
(must).

Inf. past. Aver dovuto, to have
been obliged.

Present ind.

Devo (*debbo*, *deggio*), I must, &c.

Devi (*dei*),

Deve (*debbe*, *dee*),

Dobbiamo (*deggiamo*),

Dovete,

Devono (*debbono*, *deggiono*).

Pres. part. Dovendo, being
obliged.

Past part. Dovuto, been ob-
liged.

Pres. subj.

Ch' io debba (*deggia*), that I
may be obliged, &c.

Che tu debba (*deggia*),

Ch' egli debba (*deggia*),

Che noi dobbiamo (*deggiamo*),

Che voi dobbiate (*deggiate*),

Ch' eglino debbano (*deggiano*).

Imperf. Doveva, &c. I was obliged, &c.

Perf. rim. Dovei (*dovetti*), dovesti, dovè (*dovette*), dovemmo, doveste, dovettero, I was obliged, &c.

Imperf. subj. Dovessi, &c. If I were obliged, &c.

Future. Dovrò, dovrai, &c. I shall be obliged, &c.

Cond. pres. Dovrei, &c. I should be obliged, &c.

3.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Volére, to be willing.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Volendo, being willing.
--	--

<i>Inf. past.</i> Aver voluto, to have been willing.	<i>Past part.</i> Voluto, been willing.
--	---

Pres. ind. Voglio (*vo'*), vuoi, vuole, vogliamo, volete, vogliono, I am willing, &c.

Pres. subj. Che io voglia, tu voglia, egli voglia, vogliamo, vogliate, vogliono, that I may be willing, &c.⁵

Imperf. Voleva, &c. I was willing, &c.

Perf. rim. Volli, volesti, volle, volemmo, voleste, vollero, I was willing, &c.

Imperf. subj. Se volessi, &c. If I were willing, &c.

Future. Vorrò, vorrai, &c. I shall be willing, &c.

Cond. pres. Vorrei, vorresti, &c. I should be willing, &c.

4.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Solére, to be accustomed.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Solendo, being accustomed.
---	---

<i>Inf. past.</i> Essere stato solito, to have been accustomed.	<i>Past part.</i> Solito, accustomed.
---	---------------------------------------

Pres. ind. Soglio, suoli, suole, sogliamo, solete, sogliono, I am accustomed, &c.

Pres. subj. Ch' io soglia, che tu soglia, ch' egli soglia, sogliamo, sogliate, sogliano, that I may be accustomed, &c.

Imperf. Soleva, solevi, soleva, &c. I was accustomed, &c.

Imperf. subj. Se io solessi, tu solessi, egli solesse, &c. If I was accustomed, &c.

Obs. This verb is defective, and the tenses wanting are generally made up by means of the past participle with *essere*, as: io sono, io era, io fui, io sarò solito, &c.

5.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Sapére, to know.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Sapendo, knowing.
------------------------------------	--------------------------------------

<i>Inf. past.</i> Aver saputo, to have known.	<i>Past part.</i> Saputo, known.
---	----------------------------------

⁵ The irregular verbs in *lère* (with the accent on the last syllable but one), as *volére*; *dolére*, to grieve; *valére*, to be worth, and their compounds, take in the first person *g*, which is retained in the persons mentioned in the Preliminary Observation (p. 472). In *dolére* and *volére* *g* may precede or follow the letter *l*, except in the first and second persons plural, where the soft sound, *dogliamo*, *dogliate*, is preferred to the hard, *dolghiamo*, *dolghiate*.

Pres. ind. So, sai, sa, sappiamo, sapete, sanno, I know, &c.

Pres. subj. Ch' io sappia, tu sappia, egli sappia, noi sappiamo, voi sappiate, essi sappiano, that I may know, &c.

Imperf. Sapeva, sapevi, &c. I knew, &c.

Perf. rim. Seppi, sapesti, seppe, sapemmo, sapeste, seppero, I knew, &c.

Imperf. subj. Se io sapessi, tu sapessi, egli sapesse, &c. If I knew, &c.

Future. Saprò, saprai, &c. I shall know, &c.

Cond. pres. Saprei, sapresti, saprebbe, &c. I should know, &c.

Imperative. Sappi, sappia, sappiamo, sappiate, sappiano, know thou, &c.

6.

Inf. pres. Vedére, to see.

Pres. part. Vedendo (*veggendo*), seeing.

Inf. past. Aver veduto, to have seen.

Past part. Veduto (*visto*), seen.

Pres. ind. Vedo (*veggo, veggio*), vedi, vede, vediamo (*veggiamo*), vedete, vedono (*veggono, veggiono*), I see, &c.

Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli veda (*vegga, veggia*), noi vediamo (*veggiamo*), &c., that I may see, &c.⁶

Imperf. Io vedevo, tu vedevi, &c. I saw, &c.

Perf. rim. Vidi, vedesti, vide, vedemmo, vedeste, videro, I saw, &c.

Imperf. subj. Se io vedessi, tu vedessi, &c. If I saw, &c.

Future. Vedrò, vedrai, &c. I shall see, &c.

Cond. pres. Vedrei, vedresti, vedrebbe, &c. I should see, &c.

Imperative. Vedi, veda (*vegga*), vediamo (*veggiamo*), vedete, vedano (*veggano*), see thou, &c.

7.

Inf. pres. Sedére, to sit.

Pres. part. Sedendo (*seggiendo*), sitting.

Inf. past. Aver (or essere) seduto, to have sat.

Past part. Seduto, sat.

Pres. ind. Siedo (*seggo, seggio*), siedi, siede, sediamo (*seggiamo*), sedete, siedono (*seggono, seggiono*), I sit, &c.

Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli sieda (*segga, seggia*), sediamo (*seggiamo*), sediate (*seggiate*), siedano (*seggano, seggiano*), that I may sit, &c.

Imperf. Sedeva, sedevi, &c. I sat, &c.

⁶ Verbs in *dére* (with the accent on the last syllable but one) may in the first person of the present take instead of *d* the letter *g*, which is doubled between two vowels, and pronounced either hard, as in *go*, or soft, as the English *j*. Only it is to be observed, that, as above (note⁵) in the first and second persons plural, the soft sound, as *veggiamo, veggiate*, is to be preferred to the hard, *veggiamo, veggiate*.

Perf. rim. Sedei (*sedetti*), sedesti, sedè (*sedette*), sedemmo, sedeste, sederono (*sedettero*), I sat, &c.
Imperf. subj. Se io sedessi, tu sedessi, &c. If I sat, &c.
Future. Sederò, &c. I shall sit, &c.
Cond. pres. Sederei, &c. I should sit, &c.
Imperative. Siedi, sieda (*segga*), sediamo (*seggiamo*), sedete, siedano (*seggano*), sit thou, &c.

8.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Parére, to appear.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Parendo, appearing.
<i>Inf. past.</i> Aver paruto (<i>parso</i>), to have appeared.	<i>Past part.</i> Paruto (<i>parso</i>), appeared.

Pres. ind. Paio, pari, pare, paiamo (*pariamo*), parete, paiono, I appear, &c.
Pres. subj. Ch' io paia, tu paia, egli paia, paiiamo, paiiate, paiano, that I may appear, &c.
Imperf. Pareva, parevi, &c. I appeared, &c.
Perf. rim. Parvi, paresti, parve, paremmo, pareste, parvero, I appeared, &c.
Imperf. subj. Se paressi, &c. If I appeared, &c.
Future. Parrò, parrai, parrà, &c. I shall appear, &c.
Cond. pres. Parrei, parresti, &c. I should appear, &c.

9.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Dolére (see note ⁵ , p. 474), to grieve.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Dolendo, grieving.
<i>Inf. past.</i> Essere doluto, to have grieved.	<i>Past part.</i> Doluto, grieved.

Pres. ind. Doglio (*dolgo*), duoli, duole, dogliamo (*dolghiamo*), dolete, dogliono (*dolgono*), I grieve, &c.
Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli doglia (*dolga*), dogliamo (*dolghiamo*), dogliate (*dolghiate*), dogliano (*dolgano*), that I may grieve, &c.
Imperf. Doleva, dolevi, &c. I grieved, &c.
Perf. rim. Dolsi, dolesti, dolse, dolemmo, doleste, dolsero, I grieved, &c.
Imperf. subj. Se dolessi, &c. If I grieved, &c.
Future. Dorrò, dorrai, &c. I shall grieve, &c.
Cond. pres. Dorrei, dorresti, &c. I should grieve, &c.

10.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Valére (see note ⁵ , p. 474), to be worth.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Valendo, being worth.
<i>Inf. past.</i> Aver valuto, to have been worth.	<i>Past part.</i> Valuto (<i>valso</i>), been worth.

Pres. ind. Vaglio (*valgo*), vali, vale, vagliamo (*valghiamo*), valete, vagliono (*valgono*), I am worth, &c.
Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli vaglia (*valga*), vagliamo (*valghiamo*), vagliate, vagliano (*valgano*), that I may be worth, &c.
Imperf. Valeva, valevi, &c. I was worth, &c.

Perf. rim. Valsi, volesti, valse, valemmo, valeste, valsero, I was worth, &c.

Imperf. subj. Se io valessi, &c. If I was worth, &c.

Future. Varrò, varrai, varrà, &c. I shall be worth, &c.

Cond. pres. Varrei, varresti, &c. I should be worth, &c.

Imperative. Vali, vaglia, vagliamo, valete, vagliano, be thou worth, &c.

11.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Cadére (see note ⁶ , p. 475), to fall.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Cadendo, falling.
---	--------------------------------------

<i>Inf. past.</i> Essere caduto, to have fallen.	<i>Past part.</i> Caduto, fallen.
--	-----------------------------------

Pres. ind. Cado (*caggio*, poet.), cadi, cade, cadiamo (*caggiamo*), cadete, cadono (*caggiono*), I fall, &c.

Pres. subj. Ch'io, tu, egli cada (*caggia*), cadiamo (*caggiamo*), &c., that I may fall, &c.

Imperf. Cadeva, cadevi, &c. I fell, &c.

Perf. rim. Caddi, cadesti, cadde. cademmo, cadeste, caddero, I fell, &c. It also has: cadei, *or* cadetti, &c.

Imperf. subj. Se io cadessi, &c. If I fell, &c.

Future. Cadrò, cadrà, cadrà, cadremo, cadrete, cadranno (better than caderò), &c. I shall fall, &c.

Cond. pres. Cadrei, cadresti, &c. I should fall, &c.

12.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Tenére, to hold.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Tenendo, holding.
<i>Inf. past.</i> Aver tenuto, to have held.	<i>Past part.</i> Tenuto, held.

Pres. ind. Tengo, tieni, tiene, teniamo (*tenghiamo*), tenete, tengono, I hold, &c.

Pres. subj. Ch'io, tu, egli tenga, teniamo (*tenghiamo*), teniate (*tenghiate*), tengano, that I may hold, &c.⁷

Imperf. Teneva, tenevi, &c. I held, &c.

Perf. rim. Tenni, tenesti, tenne, tenemmo, teneste, tennero, I held, &c.

Imperf. subj. Se io tenessi, &c. If I held, &c.

Future. Terrò, terrai, terrà, terremo, terrete, terranno, I shall hold, &c.

Cond. pres. Terrei, terresti, terrebbe, &c. I should hold, &c.

Imperative. Tieni, tenga, teniamo, tenete, tengano, hold thou, &c.

13.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Rimanére, ⁷ to remain.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Rimanendo, remaining.
<i>Inf. past.</i> Esser rimasto (rimaso), to have remained.	<i>Past part.</i> Rimasto <i>or</i> rimasto, remained.

⁷ Verbs in *nére* (with the accent on the last syllable but one), as *tenére*, to hold; *rimanére* (also *venire*, to come), may take in the

- Pres. ind.* Rimango, rimani, rimane, rimaniamo (*rimanghiamo*), rimanete, rimangono, I remain, &c.
Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli rimanga, noi rimaniamo (*rimanghiamo*), voi rimaniate (*rimanghiate*), essi rimangano, that I may remain, &c.
Imperf. Rimaneva, &c. I remained, &c.
Perf. rim. Rimasi, rimanesti, rimase, rimanemmo, rimaneste, rimasero, I remained, &c.
Imperf. subj. Se io rimanessi, &c. If I remained, &c.
Future. Rimarrò, rimarrai, &c. I shall remain, &c.
Cond. pres. Rimarrei, rimarresti, rimarrebbe, &c. I should remain, &c.
Imperative. Rimani, rimanga, rimaniamo, rimanete, rimangono, remain thou, &c.

14.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <i>Inf. pres.</i> Piacére, to please. | <i>Pres. part.</i> Piacendo, pleasing. |
| <i>Inf. past.</i> Aver piaciuto, to have pleased. | <i>Past part.</i> Piaciuto, pleased. |
- Pres. ind.* Piaccio, piaci, piace, piacciamo, piacete, piacciono, I please, &c.
Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli piaccia, piacciamo, piacciate, piacciano, that I may please, &c.
Imperf. Piaceva, piacevi, &c. I pleased, &c.
Perf. rim. Piacqui, piacesti, piacque, piaccemmo, piaceste, piacquero, I pleased, &c.
Imperf. subj. Se io piacessi, &c. If I pleased, &c.
Future. Piacerò, piacerai, &c. I shall please, &c.
Cond. pres. Piacerai, &c. I should please, &c.

Obs. In the same manner are conjugated *tacére*, to be silent, and *giacére*, to lie (be situate). The letter *c* is always doubled when it is followed by two vowels, except in the past participle. (See *Obs. B. Lesson LXXV.*)

II. IRREGULAR VERBS, HAVING THE ACCENT ON THE LAST SYLLABLE BUT TWO.

15.

- | | |
|--|--------------------------------------|
| <i>Inf. pres.</i> Porre (formerly <i>ponere</i>), to put. | <i>Pres. part.</i> Ponendo, putting. |
| <i>Inf. past.</i> Aver posto, to have put. | <i>Past part.</i> Posto, put. |
- Pres. ind.* Pongo, poni, pone, poniamo (*ponghiamo*), ponete, pongono, I put, &c.

first person of the present tense after *n* the letter *g*, which is retained in the persons mentioned in the Preliminary Observation. In the first and second persons plural, *teniamo*, *veniamo*, *teniate*, *veniate*, are preferred to *tenghiamo*, *venghiamo*, *tenghiate*, *venghiate*.

Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli ponga, poniamo (*pongiamo*), poniate, (*pongiate*), pongano, that I may put, &c.

Imperf. Poneva, ponevi, poneva, &c. I did put, &c.

Perf. rim. Posi, ponesti, pose, ponemmo, poneste, posero, I did put, &c.

Imperf. subj. Se io ponessi, &c. If I put, &c.

Future. Porrò, porrai, &c. I shall put, &c.

Cond. pres. Io porrei, tu porresti, egli porrebbe, &c. I should put, &c.

Imperative. Poni, ponga, poniamo, ponete, pongano, put thou, &c.

Obs. In the same manner are conjugated all its compounds, as: *comporre*, to compound; *preferre*, to prefer, &c. (See *Obs.* 458, and *Obs.* A. 464).

16.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Dire (formerly <i>dicere</i>), to say.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Dicendo, saying.
--	-------------------------------------

<i>Inf. past.</i> Aver detto, to have said.	<i>Past part.</i> Detto, said.
--	--------------------------------

Pres. ind. Dico, dici, dice, diciamo, dite, dicono, I say, &c.

Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli dica, diciamo, diciate, dicano, that I may say, &c.

Imperf. Diceva, dicevi, &c. I said, &c.

Perf. rim. Dissi, dicesti, disse, dicemmo, diceste, dissero, I said, &c.

Imperf. subj. Se io dicessi, &c. If I said, &c.

Future. Dirò, dirai, &c. I shall say, &c.

Cond. pres. Direi, diresti, &c. I should say, &c.

Imperative. Di, dica, diciamo, dite, dicano, say thou, &c.

17.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Bereve, or bere, to drink.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Bevendo, drinking.
---	---------------------------------------

<i>Inf. past.</i> Aver bevuto, to have drunk.	<i>Past part.</i> Bevuto, drunk.
--	----------------------------------

Pres. ind. Bevo, bevi, beve, beviamo, bevete, bevono, I drink, &c.

Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli beva, beviamo, beviate, bevano, that I may drink, &c.

Imperf. Beveva (*bevea*), bevevi, &c. I drank, &c.

Perf. rim. Bevetti (*bevvi*), bevesti, bevette (*beve*), bevemmo, beveste, bevettero (*bevvero*),^s I drank, &c.

Imperf. subj. Se io bevessi, &c. If I drank, &c.

Future. Berò, berai, berà (better than *beverò*), &c. I shall drink, &c.

Cond. pres. Berei, beresti, &c. I should drink, &c.

Imperative. Bevi, beva, beviamo, bevete, bevano, drink thou, &c.

^s The *perf. rim.* *bebbi*, *bebbe*, *bebbero*, is used in poetry.

18.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Spegnerne, to extin- guish.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Spegnendo, extin- guishing.
<i>Inf. past.</i> Avere spento, to have extinguished.	<i>Past part.</i> Spento, extin- guished.
<i>Pres. ind.</i> Spegno (<i>spengo</i>), spegni, spegne, spegniamo (<i>spen- ghiamo</i>), spegnete, spegnono (<i>spengono</i>), I extinguish, &c.	
<i>Pres. subj.</i> Ch' io, tu, egli spegna (<i>spenga</i>), spegniamo (<i>spen- ghiamo</i>), spegnete (<i>spenghiate</i>), spegnano (<i>spengano</i>), that I may extinguish, &c.	
<i>Imperf.</i> Spegneva, &c. I extinguished, &c.	
<i>Perf. rim.</i> Spensi, spegnesti, spense, spegnemmo, spegneste, spen- sero, I extinguished, &c.	
<i>Imperf. subj.</i> Se io spegnessi, &c. If I extinguished, &c.	
<i>Future.</i> Spegnerò, spegnerai, &c. I shall extinguish, &c.	
<i>Cond. pres.</i> Spegnerai, spegneresti, &c. I should extinguish, &c.	
<i>Imperative.</i> Spegni, spenga, spegniamo, spegnete, spengano, ex- tinguish thou, &c.	

Obs. In the same manner are conjugated: *cingere*, to gird;
spingere, to push; *stringere*, to bind; *tingere*, to dye (colour);
and their compounds.

19.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Scegliere (<i>or</i> <i>scerre</i>), to choose.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Scegliendo, choos- ing.
<i>Inf. past.</i> Aver scelto, to have chosen.	<i>Past part.</i> Scelto, chosen.
<i>Pres. ind.</i> Sceglio (<i>scelgo</i>), scegli, scegli, scegliamo, scegliete, sceglio (<i>scelgono</i>), I choose, &c.	
<i>Pres. subj.</i> Ch' io, tu, egli sceglia (<i>scelga</i>), scegliamo, scegliate, scegliano (<i>scelgano</i>), that I may choose, &c.	
<i>Imperf.</i> Sceglieva, &c. I chose, &c.	
<i>Perf. rim.</i> Scelsi, scegliești, scelsei, sceglieammo, scegliești, scel- sero, I chose, &c.	
<i>Imperf. subj.</i> Se io scegliessi, &c. If I chose, &c.	
<i>Future.</i> Sceglierò (<i>and</i> <i>scerrò</i>), &c. I shall choose, &c.	
<i>Cond. pres.</i> Sceglierei, <i>and</i> <i>scerre</i> , &c. I should choose, &c.	
<i>Imperative.</i> Scegli, scelga, scegliamo, scegliete, scelgano, choose thou, &c.	

Obs. In the same manner are conjugated: *sciogliere* or *sciorre*,
to untie; *togliere* or *torre*, to take away; *cogliere* or *côrre*, to
gather, and their compounds, as: *distôrre*, to remove; *raccôrre*, to
pick up; *disciôrre*, to dissolve, &c.

20.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Trarre, formerly tra- ere, to draw.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Traendo, drawing.
<i>Inf. past.</i> Aver tratto, to have drawn.	<i>Past part.</i> Tratto, drawn.

Pres. indic. Traggo, trai (*traggi*), trae (*tragge*), traiamo (*traggiamo*), traete, traggono, I draw, &c.

Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli tragga, traiamo (*traggiamo*), traiate (*traggiate*), traggano, that I may draw, &c.

Imperf. Traeva, traevi, &c. I drew, &c.

Perf. rim. Trassi, traesti, trasse, traemmo, traeste, trassero, I drew, &c.

Imperf. subj. Se io traessi, &c. If I drew, &c.

Future. Trarrò, trarrai, trarrà, &c. I shall draw, &c.

Cond. pres. Trarrei, trarresti, trarrebbe, &c. I should draw, &c.

Imperative. Trai, tragga, traiamo (*traggiamo*), traete, traggano, draw thou, &c.

Obs. In the same manner are conjugated: *attrarre*, to attract; *contrarre*, to contract; *detrarre*, to detract.

III. IRREGULAR VERBS IN *ire*.

21.

Inf. pres. Apparire, to appear suddenly.

Pres. part. Apparendo, appearing.

Inf. past. Essere apparito or apparso, to have appeared.

Past part. Apparito and apparso, appeared.

Pres. ind. Apparisco (*appaio*), apparisci (*appari*), apparisce (*appare*), appariamo, apparite, appariscono (*appaiano*), I appear, &c.

Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli apparisca (*appaia*), appariamo, appariate, appariscano (*appaiano*), that I may appear, &c.

Imperf. Appariva, apparivi, &c. I appeared, &c.

Perf. rim. Apparii (*apparvi*), apparisti, apparì (*apparve*), apparimmo, appariste, apparirono (*apparvero*), I appeared, &c.

Imperf. subj. Se io apparissi, &c. If I appeared, &c.

Future. Apparirò, &c. I shall appear, &c.

Cond. pres. Apparirei, &c. I should appear, &c.

Imperative. Apparisci, apparisca, appariamo, apparite, appariscano, appear thou, &c.

Obs. In the same manner are conjugated its compounds: *comparire*, to appear; *trasparire*, to be transparent; *sparire*, to disappear, &c.

22.

Inf. pres. Venire, to come.

Pres. part. Venendo (also venente), coming.

Inf. past. Essere venuto, to have come.

Past part. Venuto, come.

Pres. ind. Vengo, vieni, viene, veniamo (*venghiamo*), venite, vengono, I come, &c.

Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli venga, veniamo (*venghiamo*), veniate (*venghiate*), vengano, that I may come, &c.

Imperf. Veniva, venivi, &c. I came, &c.

Perf. rim. Venni, venisti, venne, venimmo, veniste, vennero, I came, &c.
Imperf. subj. Se io venissi, &c. If I came, &c.
Future. Verrò, verrai, verrà, verremo, verrete, verranno, I shall come, &c.
Cond. pres. Verrei, verresti, verrebbe, &c. I should come, &c.
Imperative. Vieni, venga, veniamo, venite, vengano, come thou, &c.

23.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Morire, to die (expire).	<i>Pres. part.</i> Morendo, dying.
<i>Inf. past.</i> Essere morto, to have died.	<i>Past part.</i> Morto, died.

Pres. ind. Muoio (*muoro*), muori, muore, moriamo (*muoiamo*), morite, muoiono (*muorono*), I die, &c.
Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli muoia, moriamo (*muoiamo*), moriate (*muoiate*), muoiano, that I may die, &c.
Imperf. Moriva, &c. I died, &c.
Perf. rim. Morii, moristi, &c. I died, &c.
Imperf. subj. Se io morissi, &c. If I died, &c.
Future. Morrò (*morirò*), morrai, morrà, morremo, morrete, morranno, I shall die, &c.
Cond. pres. Morrei (*morirei*), morresti, &c. I should die, &c.
Imperative. Muori, muoia, moriamo, morite, muoiano, die thou, &c.

24.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Salire, to ascend.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Salendo, ascending.
<i>Inf. past.</i> Essere salito, to have ascended.	<i>Past part.</i> Salito, ascended.

Pres. ind. Salgo (*saglio, salisco*), sali (*salisci*), sale (*salisce*), sagliamo (*salghiamo*), salite, salgono (*sagliono, saliscono*), I ascend, &c.
Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli salga (*saglia, salisca*), sagliamo (*salghiamo*), sagliate (*salghiate*), salgano (*sagliano, saliscano*), that I may ascend, &c.
Imperf. Saliva, &c. I ascended, &c.
Perf. rim. Salii, &c. I ascended, &c.
Imperf. subj. Se io salissi, &c. If I ascended, &c.
Future. Salirò, &c. I shall ascend, &c.
Cond. pres. Salirei, &c. I should ascend, &c.
Imperative. Sali, salga, sagliamo, salite, salgano, ascend thou, &c.

25.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Udire, to hear.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Udendo, hearing.
<i>Inf. past.</i> Aver udito, to have heard.	<i>Past part.</i> Udito, heard.

Pres. ind. Odo, odi, ode, udiamo, udite, odono, I hear, &c.

Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli oda, udiamo, udiate, odano, that I may hear, &c.

Imperative. Odi, oda, udiamo, udite, odano, hear thou, &c.

Obs. The remaining tenses are regular.

26.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Uscire (also <i>escire</i> , but seldom used), to go out.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Uscendo (<i>escendo</i>), going out.
---	---

<i>Inf. past.</i> Essere uscito (<i>escito</i>), to have gone out.	<i>Past part.</i> Uscito (<i>escito</i>), gone out.
--	---

Pres. ind. Esco, esci, esce, usciamo (*esciamo*), usciate (*escite*), escono, I go out, &c.

Pres. subj. Ch' io, tu, egli esca, usciamo (*esciamo*), usciate (*esciate*), escano, that I may go out, &c.

Imperative. Esci, esca, usciamo, uscite, escano, go thou out, &c.

Obs. The remaining tenses are regular.

Obs. Some verbs are only irregular in the *perfetto remoto* and *past participle*, as :

<i>Inf.</i>	<i>Perf. rim.</i>	<i>Past part.</i>
Aprire, to open.	Aprii and apersi.	Aperto.
Coprire, to cover.	Coprii and copersi.	Coperto.
Offerire (offerire), to offer.	Offerii and offerisi.	Offerito.
Influire, to influence.	Influii and influissi.	Influito.
Dire, to say.	Dissi.	Detto.

DEFECTIVE VERBS (*Verbi difettivi*).

They are so called, because they are not used in all tenses and persons, but only in those which are met with in good authors. They are the following :

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Gire, to go (only used in poetry).	<i>Past part.</i> Gito, gone.
--	-------------------------------

Pres. ind. Gite, ye go.

Imperf. Giva (*gia*), I, thou, he went; givamo, we went; givate, you went; givano (*giano*), they went.

Perf. rim. Gisti, thou wentest; gî (poet. *gio*), he went; gimmo, we went; giste, you went; girono, they went.

Imperf. subj. Se io gissi, tu gissi, egli gisse, gissimo, giste, gissero, if I went, &c.

Future. Girò, I shall go; girai, thou wilt go; girà, he will go; giremo, girete, giranno, we, you, they will go.

Cond. pres. Girei, giresti, girebbe, giremmo, gireste, girebbero, I should go, &c.

Imperative. Gite, go, ye.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Ire, to go.	<i>Past part.</i> Ito, gone.
<i>Pres. ind.</i> Ite, ye go.	<i>Imperf.</i> Iva, he went.
<i>Future.</i> Iremono, we shall go; irete, you will go; iranno, they will go.	
<i>Imperative.</i> Ite, go ye.	

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Riedere, to return.	<i>Pres. part.</i> Riedendo, returning.
<i>Pres. ind.</i> Riedo, I return; riedi, thou returnest; riede, he returns.	
<i>Imperf.</i> Riedeva, I returned, &c.	
<i>Imperative.</i> Riedi, return thou; rieda, let him return; riedano, let them return.	

Inf. pres. Olire, to smell sweet.
Imperf. Oliva, I smelt sweet; olivi, thou smeltest sweet; oliva, he smelt sweet; olivano, they smelt sweet.

<i>Inf. pres.</i> Calére, to care.	<i>Past part.</i> Caluto, cared.
<i>Pres. ind.</i> Mi cale, I care.	<i>Imperf.</i> Mi caleva, } I cared.
<i>Pres. subj.</i> Che mi caglia, that I may care.	<i>Perf. rim.</i> Mi calse, }
<i>Imperf. subj.</i> Se mi calesse, if I cared.	<i>Cond. pres.</i> Mi calerebbe or carrebbe (obsolete), I would care.

Licére or *lectére*, to be permitted.

This verb has only *lice* and *lece*, it is permitted. Past part. *lecito* and *licito*, permitted. Even its infinitive is never used.

EXERCISE.

253.

THE FOUR LANGUAGES.

A TALE.

WE have all read in the Holy Scriptures the miracle of the tongues of fire which descended from heaven upon the disciples of Christ, and immediately communicated to those men, who were complete strangers to all human learning, the knowledge of the several idioms they required in order to preach the Gospel to the world.

What a miracle then did for the apostles, let us now do for ourselves by our own labour: for the study of languages is certainly a most useful study; it enables us to hold communication with all nations; it renders the whole world, as it were, our home.

Such was the opinion of young Edmund de Grancey's parents, who, some fifty years ago, possessed one of the finest estates in Dauphiné. Though unacquainted with foreign languages them-

selves, they were nevertheless sensible of the importance they might be of to their son. "No man on earth," would the Baron de Grancey frequently say, "knows what may be his future destiny. I therefore wish, should Edmund ever have occasion to travel, that he may never find himself a stranger in any country. I remember well how much I was embarrassed for want of knowing the German when I was a prisoner in Prussia during the Seven Years' War."

Endowed with a happy facility, Edmund made rapid progress under the able masters that were called in to instruct him. At the age of twelve, he was already able to read the charming fables of Lessing in German, the History of England by Hume, the beautiful lyric tragedies of Metastasio, that Italian poet whose language is so harmonious. He could already express himself with tolerable accuracy in these three idioms; and, not to mention his maternal tongue, which he knew very well, he could write a letter, almost without a mistake, in Italian, German, and English.

Meantime the Revolution broke out. The Baron de Grancey, whose fortune had always been employed in doing good, never suspected that the political tempest could at all concern him; but the event soon proved that he was labouring under a fatal delusion. He received information that sentence of proscription had been pronounced against him, and orders issued for his being thrown into prison. The baron was therefore obliged to fly with his wife and son, and with all speed to gain the frontiers of Piedmont. The fatal news reached him at a moment when he was visiting a farm at some distance from his castle; so that he could only carry with him the little money he had on his person, which amounted to about twenty-five louis. They had not even the consolation of bidding adieu to their native abode.

At Edmund's age, we feel a lively pleasure in hurrying for the first time along the public roads; we look with amazement at the new objects that present themselves on every side; after having gone a few leagues, we think we have reached the utmost extremities of the earth. Edmund would, however, have enjoyed this pleasure with greater relish had it not been accompanied with the exile of his family.

The Baron and Baroness de Grancey had at first betaken themselves to Turin. After having received a supply of money, which their friends had contrived to send them from France, they left that city in order to go and settle at Rome until better times. But, in order to do this, it was necessary to traverse a great part of Italy. As their resources were but scanty, the exiles took the ordinary conveyances from one town to another; a means of travelling which is neither elegant nor expeditious, but which is accompanied with but little expense. During this journey, as well as on every other occasion since their arrival in Italy, Edmund served as interpreter to his parents. It was an interesting spectacle to see this child of thirteen thus repaying his father and mother for the education he had received from them. Edmund frequently heard those around

him saying: "Do you see that French lady and gentleman with their son? They have reason to congratulate themselves on having such a child. Poor exiles! they do not understand a word of our language; without him they would be much embarrassed—it is really admirable!" This importance which events had given him was far from rendering Edmund proud; but he congratulated himself every moment on his having studied Italian with so much attention, and to such purpose.

The sort of car in which our emigrants were journeying contained, besides two other travellers, a composer of music, who was going to Florence in order to get an opera represented; he was a good-natured, jovial *maestro*, and equally skilled in the culinary as in the musical art: the other was an abbé, who, though an excellent man and very pious to boot, loved music to the full as much as his neighbour the *maestro*. The coachman kept singing on his box, endeavouring from time to time to mend the sluggish pace of his horses: it was, as you may observe, a sort of musical caravan. The sun was about to disappear from the horizon, and the *maestro*, who had received from nature a vigorous appetite, was beginning to long for supper, when the travellers perceived the wished-for inn where they were to sup and pass the night. It was already so full that the master and mistress found great difficulty in answering all their guests. The arrival of the coach increased their difficulties. The *maestro* in particular called loudly for supper; but finding that they were not preparing it quick enough to answer his impatience, he took possession of the stove, threw off his coat, tucked up his sleeves, and set about preparing himself the classic *macaroni*.

Madame de Grancey, who till lately had lived so comfortably in her own castle, served by numerous domestics, surrounded by all the accommodations which usually accompany riches and security, had more difficulty than her husband in bringing her mind to so sudden and complete a change. But as she did not want courage, she soon became resigned, and sat down with a good grace to the homely supper of the inn. The most conspicuous dish was the macaroni prepared by the musician, who received on that occasion almost as many compliments as he had ever done for the best of his operas.

When the repast was finished, a still greater difficulty awaited the host; this was to find beds for so many guests: the first-comers had bespoken all the rooms in the house; the *maestro* and the abbé installed themselves the best way they could in the travellers' room; so that the French emigrants were obliged to take up their lodgings for the night in a small building attached to the inn, where some sorry beds had been hastily prepared, the mattresses of which contained more straw than wool.

The room in which the baron with his wife and son were lodged was separated from the neighbouring one by a very thin partition. Scarcely had our travellers gone to bed when they heard some talking in the next room. They distinguished the voices of two men

conversing together; but M. and Madame de Grancey, fatigued by their journey, and besides not understanding what was said, soon fell asleep. Edmund on the contrary, lost not a word; and some expressions he heard uttered by those in the neighbouring room sufficiently arrested his attention to keep him awake.

“ . . . Don’t speak too loud, Jacomo,” said one of them to his companion.

“ Poh!” replied the other; “ what does it signify? The French travellers whom we have for neighbours don’t understand a word of Italian: of that I am quite certain; for, finding myself in the court with the old gentleman and his wife, I asked them, merely by way of conversation, where they came from; they made me a sign that they did not understand me. Set your mind at ease, then, Battista; we may talk over our intended expedition with perfect freedom.”

Edmund remained in bed quite motionless, and listened with an attentive ear. He had guessed the intentions of these men from the very first. He took care, however, not to give way to any feeling of terror. Instead of crying out, and calling for assistance, he commanded himself with a coolness above his years, being aware of the signal service he might render, not only to his parents, but to all that were in the inn. A noise of pots and bottles, which accompanied their conversation, announced that they had had recourse to the glass in order to heighten their courage; in proportion as they drank, their voices became louder and their expressions less guarded.

“ Hah!” replied one of them, “ to-morrow morning, by break of day, the coach sets off again; before reaching the next village there is a bend in the road quite close upon the wood: we could not have a better place for taking our stand.”—“ But should they defend themselves? . . . ”—“ Poh! they have no arms. . . . Besides, though they had, they will be taken by surprise—our pistols are double charged; we shall send in two or three shots amongst them, which will settle the business. And then all will be ours! . . . what a glorious windfall!”

The two robbers ceased speaking: one of them lay down and fell asleep; the other began to walk about the room. Edmund returned thanks to God that he had been able to understand the conversation of these two wretches, and supplicated His aid in this important crisis. He then groped his way to his father’s bedside and awoke him—“ Father,” said he, in a low voice, “ in that room close by, there are two robbers; they are to await our coach in order to rob and murder us.”—“ What! child, are you sure of that?”—“ Yes, yes, father, I am quite certain of it; not a word of what they said has escaped me; they did not know that I understood Italian, so that they spoke without any disguise. It is at a turn of the road, near some wood, that they are to lie in wait for us.”

M. de Grancey thought for a moment, in order to consider what plan it would be necessary to adopt; then, without awaking his wife, who might have been seized with terror, he got up.—“ Come with

me, my dear child," said he; "you have saved us all; come, and make as little noise as possible."

The baron and his son directed their steps towards the inn, and knocked at the door: the host, after having opened it, asked what they wanted by coming and disturbing people in the middle of the night. Edmund, who performed the part of interpreter, told him all he had heard.—"Good God, sir!" cried the host, terrified at the idea of having robbers in his house, "I could wager that these are the very individuals who plundered one of my cousins some three weeks ago."—"Is there not," asked M. de Grancey, "a troop of horse in the neighbourhood?"—"Yes, sir, about two miles from this."—"Well, then, cause some one to mount on horseback, or rather ride yourself full speed, in order to give notice to the armed force."

Some minutes after, the innkeeper galloped off for the nearest town, and M. de Grancey returned with Edmund to his apartment, both of them observing the strictest silence. About an hour after they heard their neighbours go down stairs. The two robbers met the landlord in the court, just as he returned from his journey; and having discharged their bill, they set off.

Dawn at last appeared; the coachman ordered the travellers to get ready. He was just going to put the horses to, when the tramp of horse was heard upon the road; on looking in that direction, they saw four dragoons, who were conducting two men with their hands bound, both of whom were wounded. In these two prisoners they recognized Jacomo and Battista. Before reaching their place of ambush, they had fallen into the midst of the armed force which had been previously posted there. The soldiers immediately seized them, and discovered in their persons two robbers whom they had long been in search of, but had hitherto been unable to find.

The travellers had all learned from the landlord the name of their deliverer. Madame de Grancey embraced her son with great emotion; the good abbé called him a new Daniel; the *maestro* struck up in the honour of the little French boy a song of triumph, which he took from his new opera. In the midst of all these congratulations Edmund thought only of the happiness he felt in having saved his father and mother.

Some days after, the emigrant family entered the States of the Church, where every step gives rise to recollections of former greatness: at last they descried, while yet at a great distance, the cupola of St. Peter's, which announced to them their approach to the ancient capital of the world.

During his stay at Rome Edmund laboured with renewed zeal in order to perfect himself in the knowledge of English and German. His grammars and dictionaries, works which in our youth frequently appear to us so dull and so dry, pleased him more than books of the most amusing nature; for he recollected how much he was indebted to that sort of study.

It was while he was thus employed that an old companion of M.

de Grancey, who had taken refuge in Dresden, wrote in order to induce him to come and settle in that city, giving him hopes that he would be able to procure for him an honourable employment.

M. de Grancey decided upon going: his resources were diminishing; his estates in France had been confiscated, and the future gave no signs of any favourable change. Having collected all his remaining property, he left Rome, and set out on his journey to Saxony. The exiles everywhere met with the most cordial reception; for there is nowhere to be found a better or a more hospitable people than the Germans. But, for want of knowing the idiom of those that were speaking around them, M. and Madame de Grancey would again have found themselves in the utmost embarrassment had it not been for their Edmund, their dear interpreter.

From his very first entrance into Germany he could make himself perfectly understood. Constant practice soon rendered him quite familiar with the language of Goethe and Schiller, which is reckoned so difficult. He, too, when he first began to study it, was a little frightened at the strangeness of its Gothic characters, and the apparent harshness of its words, which are, however, very agreeable in the mouth of one who knows how to pronounce them; but he now perceived that the belief of its *impossibility*, which then alarmed him, was altogether groundless.

At his arrival in Dresden, M. de Grancey experienced a cruel disappointment; that person high in office, upon whom his friend had counted, was no longer in place; the friend himself had been sent to another town in Saxony; so that, after many useless endeavours, M. de Grancey was obliged to give up all hope of success. This was a terrible blow for the poor exiles: their resources were now quite exhausted by their long journey; and of the town in which they found themselves they knew not a single individual. The health of Madame de Grancey began to give way under so many fatigues; and M. de Grancey, who would have submitted with courage even to manual labour, now felt the first symptoms of a painful disease. By little and little the exiled family had sold for their subsistence the few jewels that fortune had left them; the cross of St. Louis which M. de Grancey had gained by a heroic action, was the only article of value which he wished to preserve to the last. When walking with his lady, more than one head was uncovered on seeing the noble decoration which sparkled on the threadbare coat of the French emigrant. Edmund saw but too well the situation of his parents; more than once he had surprised his mother with tears in her eyes: his inability to assist that mother, that father whom he loved so dearly, overwhelmed him with grief; he was constantly trying to find out some means of being useful to them, and this state of continual anxiety rendered him sad and thoughtful. Meantime the poverty of the exiles was increasing every day.

Things had come to this extremity, when one evening, Edmund, who had been allowed by his parents to take a turn through the town, entered as thoughtful, but less sad than usual. He seemed

to be absorbed by some important idea which every now and then presented some rays of hope. When he embraced the baron, he said to him, with a tone of greater animation than usual: "O father, if I could but be useful to you!"

Next morning he went out earlier than usual, and directed his steps towards one of the principal streets of Dresden, in which was the shop of Mr. Petrus Meyer, a bookseller well known in the town. Edmund entered the shop, which contained an immense collection of works in all known languages. He asked if he could speak to the master of the house. A clerk having received permission, introduced him into the private room of Mr. Petrus Meyer. He was a man about fifty, rather stout, wrapt in a large dressing-gown, with a cloth cap on his head, and seated before a table covered with ledgers. In one hand he held a pen with which he was writing, and in the other an enormous pipe, which surrounded him with a dense atmosphere of smoke.

Through the midst of that cloud, Mr. Petrus cast his eyes upon the youth, and was immediately struck with his fine features, and the modest confidence with which he presented himself. Edmund had stopped near the door, with his hat off; the bookseller having taken the pipe from his mouth:

"Well, child," said he to him, in the language of the country, "what is it you want?"

"Sir," replied Edmund, "you will, I hope, excuse me for calling upon you, though I have not the honour of either knowing you or being known to you."

"Certainly, certainly you are a foreigner, I presume; are you a Frenchman?"

"Why, I am. Ah, sir, do you find my German bad? Have I made any mistakes?"

"Not at all, my child . . . only a slight accent . . . how old are you?"

"Fourteen . . ."

"There are few so young who can speak a foreign language so well as you do ours."

"Oh, how happy I am to hear you say that!"

"Why so?"

"Because, sir, as I was passing yesterday before your house, an idea struck me; I said to myself: Perhaps they may want some one who can translate into German books written in French, or else to draw up some letters of commerce . . . and I have taken the liberty to come and speak to you about it, sir."

Edmund's face, and the manner in which he expressed himself, quite captivated Mr. Meyer's attention.

"Who are you, then, my child? Are you alone in Dresden?"

"No, sir, I am here with my father and mother; my father is called the Baron de Grancey, knight of Saint Louis, and a gentleman from the province of Dauphiné; he is an emigrant; we were once rich; but are so no longer. I am sure that my parents are in difficulty; and I wish, young as I am, to gain some money for

them. You can make inquiry about us of Madame Krantz, at the sign of the *Golden Eagle*, where we lodge."

"You are a noble youth, and God will bless you," said Mr. Petrus Meyer, taking Edmund by the hand with an emotion which belied his habitual phlegm: "yes . . . I will give you employment."

"Oh, sir," cried Edmund, embracing him with ardour, "and will you really give me employment? Could I but gain anything, however little, I would be so obliged to you for it."

"Well, well, . . . return to-morrow, don't forget, do you hear me, don't forget . . ."

After repeated thanks, Edmund left him so delighted, that in returning to the *Golden Eagle* he bounded rather than walked. He arrived quite out of breath, ran up stairs, and entering embraced his father and mother repeatedly, shedding tears of joy, of which they could not comprehend the cause.

"My dear parents," said he, "now I can labour, now I can be of some use to you."

"You, child, in what way?"

"Yes, father, yes, mother; thanks to the German which you caused me to learn, I shall gain some money for you; I have found here a bookseller, an excellent man, who has promised to employ me . . . oh! how happy I am!"

Next day Edmund did not fail to call on Mr. Meyer: that bookseller dictated to him several letters on commercial business, which Edmund turned into French as fast as he heard them. Besides this, he gave him an elementary French work to translate, which he wished to publish in German. For these different labours, he allowed him a salary of one hundred florins a month: this was quite sufficient to place his parents above want, and even to enable them to save something. You may guess what was Edmund's delight: scarcely a day passed on which he did not exclaim with transport, "How fortunate it is that I learnt German!"

At the end of ten months, this means of subsistence was overturned. Mr. Meyer fell ill and died, lamented by all his friends, and particularly by Edmund, who looked upon him as a second father. His commercial house was dissolved. So that with him the exiles lost the only resource which enabled them to subsist; and Edmund could not find another. What was now to be done? What was to become of them? Madame de Grancey was tormented by an insupportable malady; this was the continual, the ardent desire of revisiting France, or at least of getting near to it; that sort of slow fever, in short, which is called the *home sickness*. Their native land was shut against the exiles; they could not even think of settling near its frontiers, which were at that time the theatre of war between France and the allied powers. Madame de Grancey sometimes thought that if she could but live in England, in that country so near to their native land, she should find herself better. Her imagination, acting upon her already enfeebled body,

rendered this belief with her what might truly be called a *fixed idea*.

The baron yielded to the desires of his wife; they set off, embarked at Hamburg, and soon arrived in London. They had been but a few days in that capital, when one morning Edmund and his father were passing through a populous quarter of the town, where there were in particular a great number of sailors. At that time there was a certain degree of agitation among the people. The war between France and England was then at the hottest. Spies sent by the French republic were said to be at that time in London. This rumour, commented upon and exaggerated by the common people and sailors, produced a general excitement. It appears that on that day, a man, pointed out as a French spy, had been pursued, but in vain, by the infuriated populace. M. de Grancey and his son knew nothing of this circumstance. They soon however remarked, that the multitude were looking at them, and pointing to them, with a threatening air. They quickened their pace, but the crowd increased around them until their path was completely stopped. The word, "A spy! spy!" rang in their ears; four men started out from the multitude, and advanced towards the baron with the intention of striking him. Some one had thought that he recognized in him that French spy who had been pursued in vain. This was quite enough to excite the blind fury of the populace against M. de Grancey, who could neither understand nor speak their language. Had he been alone, it would probably have ended fatally with him; fortunately, however, he was accompanied by his son. At the terrible word "spy," Edmund, who understood well what it meant, threw himself before his father. "What do you want?" cried he.—"To throw the French spy into the Thames," was the reply from hundreds of voices. Edmund, transported by almost supernatural energy, covered his father's body by holding him closely embraced. He then began in English to harangue the furious populace. This he did with such energy, such logic, as nothing but imminent peril could have inspired. He told them who his father was, and where he lived. The people stopped, and became uncertain. Some constables, with truncheons, which are the ensigns of those appointed to maintain order, had time to reach the scene of tumult; they then extricated M. de Grancey, and he and his son at last got home in safety. This time it was, when his mother was not present, for fear of alarming her, that Edmund said, as he embraced his father: "Oh! how I thank you for causing me to learn English!"

But the trials of our exiles came at last to a close. A milder rule was established in France, and his friends had at last been able to get the name of M. de Grancey erased from the list of emigrants. He received this happy information about a month after his last adventure. They wrote to him at the same time that he would recover a great part of his property which had not been sold. We may imagine the joy of the whole family. They were at last about to revisit their native country, after so many sufferings and disap-

pointments. The exiles returned all three to France, the soil of which they trod with rapture. The baron and baroness were never weary of telling again and again, how their son had been their interpreter, their supporter, their deliverer!—Edmund did not grow vain on that account, but we have been assured that, at an after period, when married, and the father of a family in his turn, whenever his children became disheartened by the difficulties they met with in the study of languages, he took pleasure in relating his history to them in order to renew their courage.

INDEX.

LIST OF TABLES CONTAINED IN THIS VOLUME.

DECLENSION of the definite article in the singular masculine, 1; when the word begins with *s* followed by a consonant (or *z*), 2; when the word begins with a vowel, 3; in the plural, 24; when the word begins with *s*, followed by a consonant, or with a vowel, 25; in the singular and plural feminine, 253; contraction of the definite article masculine, 192; feminine, 254.

DECLENSION of the indefinite article masculine, 39; feminine, 260; of the partitive article masculine, 35; feminine, 260.

DECLENSION of the personal pro-

nouns, 74; of the demonstrative pronouns, *questo* (cote^{sto}), *quello*, 21.

DECLENSION of the interrogative pronouns, 77.

CONJUGATION of the auxiliaries *Avere* and *Essere*, 438; of the regular verbs, 443; of the passive voice, 446; of a reflexive verb governing the accusative, 449; of a reflexive verb governing the dative, 452; of a verb with two infinitives, 466; of the irregular verbs in *are*, 469; of the irregular verbs in *ere*, 472; of the irregular verbs in *ire*, 481; of the defective verbs, 483.

A.

A, or an, *uno*, *una*, 39, 261.—See ARTICLE.

A, to, 103, 115, 159. Obs. B. 401. *A condizione*, *sotto condizione*, *col patto*, on condition, or provided, 377. *A destra*, *a mano destra*, *a dritta*, to the right, on the right side or hand; *a sinistra*, *dal lato manco*, *a manca*, to the left, on the left side or hand, 375. *A dispetto*, *ad onta*, *malgrado*, in spite of, notwithstanding, 340. *A gara*, *a prova* (*l'uno dell'altro*), *a concorrenza*, to vie with each other, 417. *A mio grado* (*a mio genio*, *a mio modo*), to my liking; *a grado di tutti*, to every body's liking, 381. *Ad ogni patto*, by all means, obstinately, 315. *A Parigi*, to, at, or in Paris; *a Roma*, to, at, or in Rome, 159. *A caccia*, *a pesca*, hunting, fishing, Note 1, 265. *A un tiro di fucile*, within gun-shot; *alla mia vista*, within my reach, 397. The preposition *a* is made use of to express resemblance or shape. Ex. *Un cappello a t^{te} p^{unte}*,

a three-corner hat; *una nave a remi*, a rowing-vessel, Obs. B. 401.

ABBASTANZA, enough, 43.

ABILE (to be), *essere in istato (nel caso)*, *essere capace*, 375.

ABOUT, *circa*, *incirca* (*all'incirca*), 146.

ABOVE, or UP STAIRS, *sopra*, *in alto*, *dissopra*, 160.

ACCADERE*, to happen; *accaduto*, *accadde*, 224, 477.

ACCANTO *a* (*allato a*), by the side of; *accanto ad uno*, by the side of some one; *accanto ad un luogo*, *vicino ad un luogo*, by a place, 237.

ACCENTS. The grave accent ([^]), 366; the acute accent ([']), 367.

ACCORDING to circumstances, *secondo le occorrenze*, 299.

ACCORRERE*, to run up; *accorso*, *accorsi*, 319.

ACCUSTOM (to) one's self to a thing, *avvezarsi a qualche cosa*; to be accustomed to a thing, *esser avvezato* (*assuefatto*) *a qualche cosa*, 364, 365.

ACHE (the), *il male*; the ear-ache,

il male agli orecchi; the belly-ache, *il mal di ventre*; the stomach-ache, *il mal di stomaco*, 266.

ACQUAINTED (to be) with, *conoscere**; been acquainted with, *conosciuto*, 137. Acquainted (to become) with somebody, to make some one's acquaintance, *far conoscenza con qualcuno*; I have become acquainted with him or her, *ho fatto la sua conoscenza*, 311; to be thoroughly acquainted with a thing, *essere in istato di far qualche cosa, conoscere qualche cosa a fondo*; to make one's self thoroughly acquainted with a thing, *informarsi (istruirsi) di qualche cosa*, 323.

ADIEU, farewell, God be with you, good bye, *addio*, 378.

ADJECTIVE agrees with its noun or pronoun in number, Obs. A. B. 85. Feminine adjectives, and their formation from masculine adjectives, C. D. 260. Abridgment of the adjectives, *uno, buono, bello, grande, santo, quello*, Obs. G. H. I. 32, 33, 424. Comparison of adjectives, Obs. A. B. 118. Adjectives that are irregular in the formation of the comparatives and superlatives, Obs. F. 119; Obs. G. 120.

ADVERBS of quantity, 54, 55, 56, 118, 165, 176, 270. Adverbs of place, 64, 67, 68, 88, 141, 142, 147, 151, 159, 208, 219, 223, 374. Adverbs of quality and manner, 335, 371, 387, 396, 401, 405, 415, 416, 417. Adverbs of number, 131, 340. Adverbs of time, 82, 89, 97, 112, 122, 123, 127, 131, 150, 151, 154, 183, 208, 378. Comparative adverbs, 54, 55, 56, 112. Comparison of adverbs, 119. Formation of superlative adverbs, Obs. H. 120.

ADVICE to professors, Note 1, 1; to pupils, Note 7, 4.

AFFINITY between the Latin, Italian, and French languages, Note 4, 6.

AFFORD (to), *aver di che*; can you afford to buy that horse? *ha Ella di che comprare quel cavallo?* 308.

AFRAID (to be), *aver paura*, 14. AFTER, *dopo*, requires in Italian the genitive before a personal pronoun; after me, *dopo di me*, is in Italian followed by the infinitive, Obs. and 163, 169.

AFTERWARDS, *poi, di poi*, 183.

AGIATO (*comodo*), comfortable; *essere agiato (comodo)*, to be comfort-

able, to be at one's ease; *essere mal comodo, non essere agiato*, to be uncomfortable, 391.

AGREE (to) to a thing, *convenire* di qualche cosa*; to agree (to compose a difference), *accordarsi*, 249. To agree to a thing, *consentire, acconsentire*, 336.

ALCUNI (*parecchi*), a few, 46.

ALIGHT (to) from one's horse, to dismount, *smontare da cavallo*, 240. To alight, to get out, *scendere*, or *discedere dal legno*, 283.

ALL, every, *tutto*, pl. *tutti*; ogni, *qualunque*, 89, 161; fem. 265, 266; all at once, *tutto ad un tratto, tutto in una volta*; suddenly, all of a sudden, *repentinamente (repente)*, 266. All along, *pel corso di*; all the year round, *pel corso dell'anno*, 374.

ALMOST, *quasi, incirca (all'incirca)*, 146.

ALONE, by one's self, *solo*, fem. *sola*, 343.

ALONG, *lungo il* (or *al*), *rasente il, accanto di*; along the road, *lungo la via (lunghezzo il cammino)*; all along, *pel corso di*, 374.

ALoud, *forte, ad alta voce*, 233.

ALQUANTO (*un pochino, un tantino*), just a little, ever so little, 405.

ALREADY, *già, di già*, 123.

ALTRETTANTO, quite (or just) as much; plur. *altrettanti*, 55.

ALTRO, other; *un altro*, another; *altri*, others, 46, 47.

ALTRONDE, besides, 374.

ALTRUI, others, other people, 276.

ALWAYS, *sempre*, 245.

AMONG, *fra, tra*, 243; amongst or amidst, between, *fra, tra*, 311.

AMUSE (to) one's self, *divertirsi, dilettersi*; in what do you amuse yourself? *a che si diverte (si diletta) Ella?* 187.

ANCORA (*anche, anco, per anco*), still, yet, some, or any more, 51.—See SOME, MORE, 51, 52.

AND, *e*, 44; and then, *poi, di poi, indi*, 183. *And* is not rendered into Italian between the verbs *go, andare**, and *come, venire**. Obs. A. 369.

ANDARE*, to go, 63; gone, *andato*, 89, 132; its whole conjugation, 470. *Andare in carrozza (in vettura, in legno)*, to drive, to ride in a carriage; *andare a cavallo, montare a cavallo*, to ride (on horseback); *andare a piedi*, to go on foot, 182.

Andare, to travel to a place; *dove è andato?* where has he travelled to? 181. The verbs *andare*, to go, and *venire*, to come, have in Italian, as verbs of motion, *a* before infinitives. The conjunction *and*, which in English follows the verbs, *go* and *come*, is not rendered in Italian, Obs. A. 369. *Andarsene*, to go away, 188. 212. 215. *Andare in*, or *alla campagna*, to go to the country; *andare in*, or *alla chiesa*, to go to church; *andare a caccia*, to go out hunting, Note 1, 265.

ANECDOTES. Witty answer of a child, 409. Witty answer of a young prince, 413. The French language, 413. The thief of three cloaks, 388. Louis XIV and one of his valets, 360. A French officer and the empress Theresa, 303. The king of Prussia and a candidate, 388. A shopkeeper's answer, 409. The emperor Charles V., 425. The entrance of a king into a town, 426. The last request of an old man, 426. The three questions, 426. Answer of a lazy young man, 431. Hearing counsel, 431. Noble answer of a lady, 431. Cornelia, 432. Politeness, 436. Mildness, 437. The contest of ait, 437. Zeuxis, 437. Marshal de Turenne's answer, 437. The corporal of Frederick the Great, 438. The four languages, a tale, 484.

ANGRY (to be) with somebody, *essere in collera con qualcuno*, *essere indispettito contro qualcuno*, *nutrire mal animo contro qualcuno*; about something, *per qualche cosa*, 309.

ANNOIARSI, to lack amusement, to get or be tired, 372.

ANSWER (to), *rispondere**, *risposto*, *risposi*; to answer the man, *rispondere all'uomo*, 77. 462.

ANY, or some (before a noun), *lei, dello, dell'*, plur. *dei, degli, degl'*; *em. della, dell'*, plur. *delle*, Note 1, 35. 260, 261.

ANYBODY, or somebody, any one or some one, *qualcheduno, qualcuno, o alcuno*, 19.

ANYTHING, or something, *qualche cosa, alcuna cosa*, 7. Anything or something good, *qualche cosa di uono*, 8.

APOPLEXY (to be struck with), *essere colpito d'apoplessia*, 305.

APOSTROPHE, 422, 423.

APPARTENERE*, to belong, 206.

APPEAR (to), to look like, *aver l'aspetto* (*aver l'aria*); she looks angry, *essa ha il sembiante indispettito*, 313.

APPENA (*tosto che*), as soon as, scarcely, 338. When it is employed in the use of the *passato anteriore*, 294.

APPOSTA, a *bella posta*, on purpose, 387.

APPROACH (to), to draw near, *avvicinarsi* (gov. Dat.); to approach, to have access to, *avvicinarsi ad uno, avvicinare uno*, 231.

APRIRE*, to open, 97. 139. Obs. 469.

ARCI. This prefix serves to form an absolute superlative, Obs. D. 119.

AROUND, round, *intorno*; all around, *intorno intorno, tutto intorno*, 342.

ARTICLE (definite): its declension in the singular masculine, when the word begins with any consonant, except *s* followed by another consonant, 1; when the word begins with *s* followed by a consonant (or with *z*), 2; when the word begins with a vowel, Obs. A. 3; in the plural when the word begins with a consonant, except *s* followed by a consonant, 24; when the word begins with *s* followed by a consonant, or with a vowel, 25; feminine, 253; contraction of the definite article with certain prepositions, masculine, 192, 193; feminine, 253. In Italian the definite article precedes the possessive pronoun, except when it is immediately followed by a noun of quality or kindred, Obs. B. 3; *Rule*, 12. — *Indefinite article*: its declension masculine, 39; feminine, 261. — *Partitive article*: masculine, singular and plural, 35; feminine, singular and plural, 260. — Use of the article before proper names, 407. When must the article be employed in Italian? Obs. A. 407, 408.

As—as, *così—che, così—come*; as often as you, *così spesso che Lei, così spesso come Lei, spesso quanto Lei*, 112. Is your hat as large as mine's? *Il di Lei cappello è così grande come il mio?* 119. As much—as, *tanto—quanto* (*che, come*); as many—as, *tanti—quanti* (*che, come*), 54. As soon as, *subito che, appena*, 183. 293, 294; as soon as, *tosto che, appena*, 293, 294. 338. As to, as for, *in quanto a, or quanto a*, 304. As, or

as well as, *siccome, come, egualmente che, in quel modo che*, 312.

AS FAR AS, *fino in (a)*, 159.

ASCENDERE*, to ascend, to mount, to go up, 283. 462. *Ascendere il naviglio (entrar nella nave)*, 283.

ASHAMED (to be), *aver vergogna*, 14.

ASK (to) a man for money, *domandare del danaro ad un uomo*, 125. 170. To ask too much, to overcharge, *domandar più che la cosa non vale*, 327.

ASSAI, much, many, a good deal of, 43. Obs. C. 119.

AT, *a*, 159. *At, in casa di, or da*, 63. *At, translated by di*, 370. *At home, in casa, in casa sua*, 63. *At first, da principio, a prima vista*, 340. *At last, infine, finalmente*, 183. *At present, adesso, in questo punto, ora*, 83. *At nine o'clock in the morning, alle nove della mattina, alle nove anti-meridiane*, 151. *At my expense, alle mie spese (a mie spese)*; *at his, her expense, alle sue spese (a sue spese)*; *at other people's expense, all'altrui spese (or ad altrui spese)*. 370. *At broad daylight, di giorno*, 403.

AUGMENTATIONS, 425.

AUGMENTATIVES, 30.

AUXILIARY. Verbs which in English generally take to have for auxiliary, whilst in Italian they take essere*, Obs. F. 277.

AVAIL (to), *servire*. What avails it you to cry? *a che Le serve di piangere?* It avails me nothing, *non mi serve a nulla*, 382.

AVERE, to have; *avuto*, had, 125. 130. *To be*, rendered by *avere*, 7, 8, 9. *Aver bisogno*, to be in want of, 90. *Aver paura, vergogna, torto, ragione, tempo, coraggio, desiderio, or voglia*, to be afraid, ashamed, wrong, right, to have time, courage, a mind, a wish, 58, 59. *Aver bello*, in vain, 392, 393. Conjugation of *avere*, 438 et seqq.

AWAKE (to), *svegliarsi, risvegliarsi*, 240.

B.

BASTARE, to suffice, to be sufficient. *Le basta questo pane?* is that bread sufficient for you? 331.

BE (to), translated by *avere**:

Are you hungry? *ha Ella fame? avete fame?* 7. I am thirsty, *ho sete*; I am sleepy, *ho sonno*, 8. I am afraid, *ho paura*; I am warm, *ho caldo*; I am cold, *ho freddo*, 8, 9. Are you ashamed? *ha Ella vergogna? avete vergogna?* I am wrong, *ho torto*; you are right, *Ella ha ragione, avete ragione*, 14. *To be* is rendered by *dovere*, when it is used to express futurity with the infinitive of another verb. Ex. Where are you to go to this morning? *ove deve Ella andare stamane?* 151. How old are you? *che età ha Ella? quanti anni ha Ella?* I am twelve years old, *ho dodici anni*, 146, 147. To be under obligations to some one, *aver (dovere) delle obbligazioni verso qualcuno*, 317. My feet are cold, *ho freddo ai piedi*; her hands are cold, *essa ha freddo alle mani*, 298. To be in want of, *aver bisogno di*, 90. To BE translated by *stare**, Obs. A. 248. To BE translated by *fare**. Is it cold? *fa freddo?* Is it windy? *fa vento?* 174, 175, 182. To BE translated by *vi è*, or *v'è*, c'è, 281, 282.—See WEATHER, WARM, COLD, DARK, &c. Is it good travelling? *si viaggia bene?* 182. Is the walking good? *si cammina bene?* 198. To be better, *essere meglio?* is it better? *è meglio?* 241.

BECOME (to), *divenire**, *diventare*. What has become of him? *che n'è stato?* 194. What will become of him? *che sarà mai di lui?* 212. What has become of your aunt? *ch'è avvenuto della di Lei zia?* *che n'è della di Lei zia?* 299. To become ridiculous, *divenir ridicolo*, 383.

BEFORE, *primadi, innanzi di (che), avanti di*. Do you speak before you listen? *parla Ella prima d'ascoltare?* 115. Before, *davanti, innanzi*, 219. The day before, *la vigilia*, 320.

BEG (to), *pregare*, 283. To beg some one's pardon, *domandar scusa a qualcuno*; I beg your pardon, *mi perdoni, tu mi scusi, le domando scusa, perdonatemi, vi domando scusa*, 377.

BEHAVE (to), *comportarsi*, 240. 390.

BELIEVE (to), *credere*, 122. 195.—See CREDERE.

BELLO, fine, handsome, or beautiful. Before a consonant (not before

s, followed by a consonant) *bel* is used, Note 2, 5. Obs. I. 33. *Aver bel, invano*, in vain, 392, 393.

BELOW, or down stairs, *giù, abbasso*, 160.

BENCHÈ (*ancorchè*), although, requires the subjunctive mood, *Rem. A.* 346.

BENE, well, 116. 120. 146. 300. *Si vive bene a Parigi?* is it good living in Paris? *Ci si vive bene*, it is good living there, 182.

BERE* (*bevere*), to drink; *bevuto, bevetti, bevvi*, 64. 94. 137. 479.

BESIDES, moreover, *in oltre, di più*; besides that, *oltre ciò, oltre di ciò*; besides, *altronde*, 374.

BETTER—than, *meglio—che, più—che*, 233. To be better, *valer più*, 166. Is it better? *è meglio?* 241.

BETWEEN, *fra or tra*, 311.

BISOGNARE, *abbisognare*, to be necessary (must). Verbs expressing necessity, obligation, or want, are in Italian generally rendered by *bisognare* or *esser d'uopo*, Obs. A., B., 164, 165.

BLOW (a), *un colpo, una botta*, 213. A blow with a stick, *una bastonata, un colpo di bastone*; a blow with the fist, *un pugno*, 213.

BLOW (to), to blow out, *soffiare*, 323. To blow out some one's brains, *far saltare le cervella a qualcuno, bruciare le cervella a qualcuno, mandar a qualcuno le cervella in aria*, 343.

BOARD (to), with any one, or any where, *essere in pensione di, mettersi in pensione a*, 361.

BOARDING-HOUSE (a), a boarding-school, *una pensione*; to keep a boarding-house, *tenere pensione*, 381.

BOAST (to), to brag, *farsi valere*, 405.

BORN (to be), *esser nato*; where were you born? *dove è Ella nata?* 383.

BREAKFAST (to), *far colazione*, 115.

BRING (to), *condurre, portare*, 282, 283.

BUONO, good, Note 1, 5. *Esser buono a qualcosa*, to be good for something; *servire a qualcosa, a che serve ciò*; of what use is that? 220.

BURST (a), *uno scroscio*; a burst of laughter, *uno scroscio di risa*; to burst out, *scrosciare*; to burst out laughing, *dar uno scroscio di risa, far uno scroscio di risa*, 411.

BUSINESS (a piece of), *un affare*; to transact business, *far degli affari*, 275.

BUT, *ma*, 22. But, *soltanto, solamente, non—che, non—se non*; I have but one friend, *ho soltanto un amico*, 42. Nothing but, *non—che*; he has nothing but enemies, *non ha che nemici*, 194.

BUY (to), *comprare (comperare)*, 59. To buy (to purchase), *far spesa, far compera, far delle spese, far delle comperare*, 227.

By. Is rendered by *da* in the use of the passive voice, 181. 219. By, *accanto, vicino*; to pass by a place, *passare accanto ad un luogo, passare vicino ad un luogo*; by the side of, *accanto a, allato a*, 237. By dint of, *pel gran (a forza di)*; by dint of labour, *pel gran lavoro*, 417.

C.

CALL (to), *chiamare*, 137. What do you call this in Italian? *come si chiama ciò in Italiano?* 301.

CAMMINARE, to march, to walk, to step, must not be mistaken for *passaggiare*, Obs. E. 275.

CAPIRE*, to understand, *capito, capii*, 145. 468.

CARRY (to), to take, *menare, portare*; I will take it thither, *voglio menarvelo*; I carry it to him, *glielo porto*, 283.

CASH (for), *a contanti*; to buy for cash, *comprare a contanti*; to sell for cash, *vendere a contanti*; to pay down, *pagare a contanti*, 209.

CHANGE (to), meaning to put on other things, *mutare*. Do you change your hat? *muta Ella il cappello?* 243.

CHE? (*che cosa? cosa?*) What? 8. Its declension, Obs. A. 77.

CHE, that or which (relative pronoun), 22. *Rem. Q.* 358. *Rem. F.* 349. *Che*, than, Obs. B. 56. *Che*, that (conjunction), *Rem. A. B. C.* 346. *Rem. D.* 347. *Che è questo?* what is that? *Che è?* what is it? *Non so che sia. Non so che cosa sia.* I do not know what it is, 301. *Che può mai essere?* what can that be? 391.

CHI? who? Its declension, Obs. A. 77. 199. *A chi?* whose? to whom? 77. 199.

CHI *che sia* (or *chicchessia*), *chiunque*, whoever, whosoever, 359.

CHIAMARE, to call, 137.

CHOOSE (to), *desiderare*. Do you choose some soup? *desidera Ella della zuppa?* I will trouble you for a little, *gliene domando un poco, me ne favorisca un poco*, 333.

Ci, vi, here, there, 88. *C'è, vi è (vi ha, avvi)*, there is; *c'è sono or vi sono*, there are, 147. 208. 223.

CIASCUNO (ognuno), each one; *ciascuno si diverte come gli piace*, each man amuses himself as he likes, 187.

Ciò, that (meaning that thing). *Le ha detto ciò?* has he told you that? 131. 135. *Ha Ella ciò che Le è d'uopo?* have you what you want? 165. *Ciò che*, that which, 101. *Ciò*, it, 270. *Cioè (vale a dire)*, that is to say (i.e.), 332.

COLD, *freddo*. It is cold, *fa freddo*, 175. To have a cold, *esser raffreddato (infreddato)*. The cold, *il raffreddore (l'infreddatura)*, 270. To catch a cold, *infreddarsi, pigliar un'infreddatura*, 338. I have a cold, *ho un'infreddatura di testa*, 270.

COLPO (un), *una botta*, a blow, a stroke, a clap. *Ha Ella dato un colpo a costui?* have you given that man a blow? *Un calcio, una pedata*, a kick (with the foot); *un colpo di fucile*, a shot; *un colpo di pistola*, a shot of a pistol; *un colpo d'occhio*, a glance of the eye; *un colpo di fulmine*, a clap of thunder, 213, 214.

COLUI, *il quale (or che)*, *quello, il quale (or che)*, him who. Plur. *Coloro, i quali (or che)*, *quelli, i quali (or che)*, those who. When ought *colui, coloro*, and when *quello, quelli*, to be employed? Obs. 174.

COME (to), *venire**, 140.—Sec VENIRE*.

COMMISSION (a), *una commissione*. To execute a commission, *far una commissione*, 331.

COMPARISON of adjectives, Obs. A. B. 118. Obs. G. 120. Adjectives which are irregular in the formation of their comparatives and superlatives, Obs. F. 119. Comparison of adverbs, 118. Obs. H. 120. Adverbs forming their comparatives and superlatives irregularly, 120.

COMPATIRE (*compungere*), *aver compassione*, to pity, Obs. 225. 461. 468.

COMPLAIN (to), *lamentarsi, lagnarsi*, 225.

COMPORTARSI (*trattare, usare*); *bene con qualcuno*, to treat (or use) somebody well; *comportarsi (usare, trattare) male con qualcuno*, to use somebody ill, 390.

CONDITIONAL tenses; their formation, and when they are employed, 353, 354, 355 *et seqq.*

CONDUCT (to), *condurre**, 139; to conduct one's self, *condursi**, 240.

CONDURRE*, to conduct; *condotto, condussi*, 240. 282. 283. 464.

CONJUNCTIONS which govern the subjunctive, *Remarks* 346 *et seqq.* Conjunctions expressing certainty require the indicative, *Rem. E.* 347 *et seqq.* Conjunctions with the preterite anterior, 294.

CONOSCERE*, to be acquainted with (to know); *conosciuto, conobbi*, 90. 115. 457.

CONSENT (to), *consentire, acconsentire*, take *di* before inf., 249. I consent to it, *v'acconsento*, 336.

CONSTRUCTION, or Syntax, 433. CONTENTO, *soddisfatto*, glad, pleased (take *di* before inf.); *malcontento, increscioso*, sorry, displeased, 299.

CONTRO a (*di*), *di contro a*, opposite to, 382.

CONVENIRE*, to suit; *convenuto, convenni*, 207. *Convenire** *di qualche cosa*, to agree to a thing, 249.

CONVERSE (to) with some one, *conversare con qualcuno*, Note 1, 406.

CONVERSARE *con qualcuno*, to converse with some one; *una conversazione*, a conversation, 406.

CORRERE*, or *cogliere*, to gather; *cogliere frutti*, to gather fruit, 330; *colto, colsi*, Note 2, 459.

COSÌ, *in questa guisa*, thus, or so, 312. 320.

COSTRUIRE* (*isco*), to construct; *costruito* and *costrutto*, *costrussi*, 326.

COUNTRYMAN (what) are you? *di qual paese è Ella?* 223. 300.

CREDERE, to believe, 122; *credere qualcuno, credere a qualcuno*, to believe some one; *credere in Dio*, to believe in God, 195. 456.

CRESCERE*, to grow; *creciuto, crebbi*, 337. 457.

CURTAIN (the), *la tela, il sipario*; the curtain rises, *si alza il sipario*; the curtain falls, *cala il sipario*, 336.

CUT (to), *tagliare*, 59; to cut

one's self, *tagliarsi*, 186. You cut your finger, *vi tagliate il dito*; I cut my nails, *mi taglio le unghie*; he cuts his hair, *egli si taglia i capelli*, 188. I have cut his finger, *gli ho tagliato il dito*, 225.

D.

DA, from, Obs. C. 22; Obs. C. 79. 167. *Da*, with, or at the house of, Notes 1, 2. 63. 340. Marks the use of a thing, Obs. A. 400. *Da questo lato*, *da questa parte*, *da questo canto*, this side; *da quella (cotesia) parte*, that side, 160. *Da*, by, 181. *Da*, from, 223, 224. *Da poi* (or simply *da*), since or from; *da quel momento*, from that time, 323. *Da, fin da, dal*, from, since; *dalla mattina*, from morning; *da mattina a sera*, from morning till night, 338. *L' uomo dall' abito turchino*, the man with the blue coat; *la donna dalla veste rossa*, the woman with the red gown, 318.

DARE *, to give, 73. Its conjugation, 470. *Dar motivo di*, to give occasion to, 410.

DARE, oscuro. It is dark in your warehouse, *fa oscuro nel di Lei magazzino*, 175. It grows dark, *si fa oscuro*, 336.

DECEIVE (to), *ingannare*, 188.

DELAY (to), to tarry, *tardare*; do not be long before you return, *non tardate a ritornare*, 390.

DI, of, Obs. A. 5. *Di*, to, 58, 59. *Di quà della via*, on this side of the road; *di là della via*, on that side of the road, 160. *Di* expresses the matter of which a thing is made, Obs. A. 5; Obs. A. 400; Obs. 418. *Di*, genitive of the partitive article, 260. Nouns commonly used with this preposition before the infinitive, 58, 59. 198, 199. *Di*, with; *di tutto cuore*, with all my heart, 225. *Di*, from; *è Ella di Francia?* are you from France? 300. *Di più*, more; *non—di più (non—più)*, no more, 165. *Di più*, more (meaning besides); *di meno*, less; *tre di meno*, three less, 396. *Di distanza in distanza*, *di tanto in tanto*, now and then; *di quando in quando*, *di tempo in tempo*, from time to time, 392. *Di giorno*, at broad daylight, 403. *Di cui (onde)*, of which, of whom, whose, 198. *Ciò di che (quanto)*, that of which, 199.

DIALOGUE between a master and his pupils, 414.

DIE (to), *morire* *, 294.—See this word.

DIFFERIRE (*isco, rimettere* *), to postpone, to put off, 392. 461. 469.

DIMINUTIVES, 31.

DINNER (the), *il pranzo*; dinner or supper is on the table (is served up), *è in tavola*, 332, 333.

DIRE *, formerly *décere*, to tell, to say; *detto, dissi*, 86. 95. 135. 479.

DIRIMPETTO a, in *faccia a*, opposite to, 382.

DISFARE, to undo; *disfarsi di*, to get rid of, to part with, 239.

DISTRUGGERE *, to destroy; *distrutto, distrussi*, 326, 463.

DIVENIRE *, *diventare*, to become, 194. 299. 383.

DIVERTIRSI, *dilettarsi*, to enjoy, to divert, to amuse one's self; *mi diletto a leggere*, I amuse myself in reading, 187.

DO (to), to make, *fare*; done, made, *fatto*, 94. 135. To do one's best, *fare il possibile*, 219. To do one's duty, *far il suo dovere*, 331. To do without a thing, *far a meno di qualche cosa*, 331. To do good to anybody, *far bene ad uno*, 193. Have you done? *ha Ella finito?* Shall you soon have done writing? *avrà presto finito di scrivere?* I shall soon have done, *quanto prima avrò finito*. He has just done writing, *ha finito di scrivere poc' anzi*, 198. 204. 219. To do rendered by *stare* *, Obs. A. 248.

DOMANDARE, to ask, 170; *domandar più che la cosa non vale*, to overcharge, to ask too much, 327.

DOPPO, after, requires the genitive after a personal pronoun; is followed by the infinitive in Italian, Obs. and 169.

DORMIRE, to sleep, 183.

DRESS (to), *vestire*; to undress, *spogliare*, 239. To be dressed in green, *essere vestito di verde*, 318. This man always dresses well, *quest' uomo si veste sempre bene*, 396.

DRINK (to), *bere* * (*beverere*), 64. 94. 137. To drink to some one's health, *bere alla salute di qualcuno*, 313. To drink coffee, *prendere il caffè*, *prendere del caffè* (or simply *prendere caffè*), 108.

DRIVE (to), to ride in a carriage, 182.—See *ANDARE* *.

DRY, *asciutto*; it is dry weather, *è asciutto*, 175.

DURANTE (*per lo spazio di*), during, Note 1, 151.

DUTY. To fulfil (to discharge, to do) one's duty, *adempire il suo dovere*, 331.

DWELL (to), to live, to reside, to remain, *stare di casa, dimorare, stare*, 152.

DYE (to), to colour, *tingere* * or *tingere* *; to dye black, *tingere nero*, 161.

E.

EACH, *qualunque, ogni*; each one, *ciascuno, ognuno*; each man, *qualunque uomo*; each man amuses himself as he likes, *ciascuno si diverte come gli piace*; each one amuses himself in the best way he can, *ciascuno si diverte alla meglio*, 187. Each other, *l'un l'altro*; are you pleased with each other? *siete contenti l'un dell'altro*? we are, *lo siamo*, 312.

EARLY, *per tempo, di buon' ora, a buon' ora, presto*; as early as you, *così per tempo come Lei*, 122. Earlier, *più per tempo, più di buon' ora*, 123.

ECCO, here is, here are, there is, there are, 297, Obs. A. 298. *Ecco perché*, that is the reason why; *ecco perché lo dico*, therefore I say so, 298. 371.

ELISION, 422 *et seqq.*

ELLA, she.—See Way of Addressing a person in Italian.

ENABLE (to), *mettere nel caso (in istato) di*, 374.

ENDEAVOUR (to), *sforzarsi*, 323; *studiarsi*, 402.

ENLIST (to), *arruolarsi, ingaggiarsi, farsi soldato*, 194.

ENTER (to), to go in, to come in, *entrare in*, 282.

ENTRARE in, to enter, to go in, to come in. *Vuol Ella entrare nella mia camera?* will you go into my room? *voglio entrarvi*, I will go in, 282.

ESSERE *, to be, *stato*, fem. *stata*, been, 63. Obs., Note 3, 127. Its whole conjugation, 438. *Dove eravamo?* where did we stop? 377. Verbs which require *essere* *, to be, for their auxiliary, Obs. F. 277. The past participle of such verbs must agree with the nominative of *essere* *,

278. The impersonal *it is*, is rendered by *essere* *. *Di che è questo libro?* whose book is this? *è il suo*, it is his; *sono essi che l'hanno veduto*, it is they who have seen him, 210. The impersonal pronoun *it* is not rendered in Italian. *Sono io*, it is I. *Non sono io*, it is not I. *È desso*, it is he. *È dessa*, it is she. *Sono essi*, fem. *esse*, it is they, Obs. C. 308. *È vero*, it is true. *Non è vero?* is it not? *Di chi è questo cavallo?* whose horse is this? *è mio*, it is mine, 318, Obs. 319. *C'è*, there is. *Ci sono*, there are, &c. 208. *Essere in*, or *alla campagna*, to be in the country; *essere in chiesa, in scuola*, to be at church, at school; *essere a caccia, a pesca*, to be out hunting, fishing, Note 1, 265. *Cioè (vale a dire)*, that is to say (i. e.), 332. *Essere in istato (nel caso) di*, *essere capace*, to be able, 375. *Di chi è la colpa?* who can help it? whose fault is it? 376. *Essere * d'uopo*, to be necessary (must), 164. *Essere impaziente di (tardare)*, to long for; *essere agiato (comodo)*, to be comfortable; *essere mal comodo, non essere agiato*, to be uncomfortable, 391.

EVEN, *anche*; even not, *nemmeno*; we must love everybody, even our enemies, *bisogna amar tutti, anche i nostri nemici*, 327.

EVER, *mai*, 127.

EVERY, all, tutto, tutti, tutta, tutte, ogni, qualunque. Every day, *tutti i giorni, ogni giorno*; every morning, *tutte le mattine, ogni mattino (mattina)*; every time, *tutte le volte, ogni volta*, 89. 265, 266. Everybody, every one, *tutta la gente*. Everybody speaks of it, *tutti ne parlano, ciascuno ne parla*. Every one is liable to error, *ognuno è soggetto ad ingannarsi*, 187. Everywhere, all over, throughout, *dappertutto*; all over (throughout) the town, *per tutta la città*, 337.

EXPLETIVES, 434.

F.

FALL (to), *cadere**, 231. The day falls, *declina il giorno*; the stocks have fallen, *il cambio ha bassato (è calato)*, 336. A fall, *una caduta*; to have a fall, *far una caduta*, 386.

FAR, *lontano, lungi*. How far? *qual distanza? quanto è lontano?* Is

it far from here to Paris? *c'è mollo da (or di) qui a Parigi?* 223. *Far off*, from afar, *da lontano*, 299.

FARE*, formerly *fuere*, to do, to make; *fatto, feci*, 62. 94. 135. Its whole conjugation, 470. Idioms with *fare**; *Ella farà meglio*, you had better, 209. *Si farà scaldare la zuppa*, they will warm the soup, 332. *Non so che farvi, non saprei che farvi*, I cannot help it, 376. *Si fa notte*, it grows towards night; *si fa oscuro*, it grows dark; *si fa tardi*, it grows late, 336. *Far conto di qualcuno*, *aver in istima qualcuno*, to think much of one, to esteem one, 336. *Farsi battere*, to get beaten; *farsi pagare*, to get paid, 340. *Far istanze*, to make entreaties, 392. *Far nascere*, to give birth to (to raise, to cause); *far nascere delle difficoltà*, to raise difficulties, 402. *Far valere (trar profitto)*, to turn to account, to make the best of, 405. *Farsi valere*, to boast, to brag, 405. *Far in modo di*, to manage, 341. *Far fuoco*, to fire, 214. *Far parola di qualche cosa a qualcuno*, to impart something to some one, 392. *Far dei progressi*, to improve, to profit, 298. *Far una partita al biliardo*, to play a game at billiards, 386.

FAULT (the), *la colpa*. Whose fault is it? *di chi è la colpa?* 376. To find fault with, *trovare a ridire a qualche cosa*, 396.

FAVOUR (a), *un servizio (servigio)*. To do a favour, *far un piacere, rendere** un servizio, 89.

FEAR (to), *temere, aver paura*, 189. 234. For fear of, *per timore (per tema) di*, *sul timore di*, 338.

FEEL (to), *sentire*, 249. To feel a pain in one's head or foot, *soffrir dolori al capo, al piede*; I felt a pain in my eye, *ho sofferto all'occhio*, 314. To feel sleepy, *aver voglia di dormire*, 188.

FEW (a), *alcuni (parecchi)*; a few books, *alcuni libri, qualche libro*, 46.

FILL (to) with, *empire or riempire*, *empire or riempire** di, 282.

FINCÈ, *fin tanto che*, so long as, 397.

FINGERE*, to pretend, 337. 460.

FINO, SINO, up to, as far as (adverb of place); *fin dove? fin donde?* how far? *Fin qui (or quà)*, as far as here, hither; *fin là*, as far as there, thither, 159. *Fino in (a)*, as far as.

Fino in Inghilterra, as far as England; *fino a casa mia (fino da me)*, as far as my house, 159. *Fino, insino*, till, until; *fino a quando? insino a quando?* how long? *Fino a domani*, till to-morrow, 154.

FIORIRE (isco), to blossom (to flourish), 337.

FIRE (to), *sparare, tirare*; to fire a gun, *sparare un fucile, tirare una fucilata*; to fire a pistol, *tirare un colpo di pistola*; to fire at some one, *tirare un colpo di fucile a qualcuno*, 214.

FIRSTLY, *primieramente*, in primo luogo; secondly, *secondariamente*, in secondo luogo; thirdly, *in terzo luogo*, &c. 340.

FIT (to), *stare bene*, 209. See **STARE***.

FLY (to), to run away, *fuggire, fuggirsene, scappare*, 224. 234.

FOR (conjunction), *perché, poichè*, 194. For (preposition), during, *durante*, per lo spazio di, Note 1, 151. For, per, 249. 314. 317.

FORMERLY, *altre volte (ultra volta)*, *altre fiate*, 131.

FORTNIGHT (a), *quindici giorni*; a fortnight ago, *sono quindici giorni*, Note 1, 218.

FRA (tra), among, 243. *Fra (tra)*, in, Obs. B. 371.

FRAIGHTEN (to), *spaventare, alterare (isco)*; to be frightened, *spaventarsi*; the least thing frightens him (her), *la minima cosa lo (la) spaventa*, 370.

FUGGIRE, *fuggirsene*, to fly, to run away, 224.

FUN (to make) of some one, to laugh at some one, *beffarsi di qualcuno*; to laugh at something, *ridersi di qualche cosa*, 250.

FUORI (in strada), out of doors, 282; *fuori della città*, out of the city (the town), 288.

FUTURE, its formation; first or simple future, *Rule 202*. Obs. A. 203. Compound or past future; its formation, 280. The future is used in Italian when the present is employed in English, Obs. 281. The conditional conjunction *se*, if, may in Italian be followed by the future, Obs. B. 246.

G.

GAME (a) at chess, *una partita agli scacchi* (or *a' scacchi*); a game at billiards, *una partita al biliardo*; a game at cards, *una partita alle carte*, 322. To play a game at billiards, *far una partita al biliardo*, 386.

GATHER (to), *córrere* or *cogliere*, 330. Obs. A. 464, 465.

GET (to) one's livelihood—by, *guadagnarsi il vitto (il pane)*—col; I get my livelihood by working, *mi guadagno il vitto lavorando*, 288. To get made, *far fare*; to get dyed, *far tingere*, 142. 162. To get beaten, paid, &c., *farsi battere, pagare, &c.*, 340. To get rid of, *disfarsi di*, 239. To get into the coach, *montare in legno (in carrozza)*; to get on board the ship, *entrar nella nave, ascendere il naviglio*, 283.

GETTAR VIA, to throw away, 137. GIÀ, *di già*, already, 123.

GIORNO (il), *la giornata*, the day, *tutto il giorno, tutta la giornata*, the whole day, 265.

GRÙ, *abbasso*, below, or down stairs, 160.

GIUOCARE, to play, 102; *giuocare* governs the dative when a game is spoken of; *giuocare alle carte*, to play at cards, Obs. 230.

- GIVE (to), *dare**, 73. 470. To give birth to (meaning to raise, to cause) difficulties, quarrels, suspicions, *far nascere delle difficoltà, delle questioni, dei sospetti*, 402. To give occasion to, *dar motivo di*, 410.

GO (to), *andare**, 63. 88. 89. 132. 470. To go around the house, *andare intorno alla casa, far il giro della casa*, 342. To go on foot, *andare a piedi*, 182. To go on a journey, *far un viaggio*, 275. To go to bed (to lie down), *coricarsi, porsi in letto, andare a letto*, 191. To go to the country, *andare in or alla campagna*, 265. To go to some one, or to some one's house, *andare a casa d'uno (di qualcuno)*, 63. To go to see some one, *visitare qualcuno*, 313. To go a walking, *andare a passeggiare*, 191. To go away, *andarsene*, 188. 212. 214. 215. To go for (to fetch), *andare a cercare*, 82. To go out, *uscire*, 88. 95. 122. 140. 483.—See *ANDARE*.

GROW (to), *crescere**, 337. 457. It grows, towards night, it grows dark, *si fa notte, si fa oscuro*, 336.

H.

HAIL (to), *grandinare*; it hails much, *grandina molto*, 197.

HALF, *mezzo*; fem. *mezza*, 68.—See this word.

HAPPEN (to), *accadere**, *sopraggiungere**, *succedere*, 224. 457, 458. 460. 477.

HARDLY, *appena*, 146.

HAVE (to), *avere*, 130. To have a cold, *esser raffreddato (or infreddato)*; you have a cough, *Ella ha la tosse*, 270. Have you a sore finger? *Le duole il dito?* He has a sore eye, *gli duole l'occhio*; we have sore eyes, *ci dolgono gli occhi*, 102. I have a sore hand, *ho la mano malata, mi fa male la mano*. Have you the tooth-ache? *Le fanno male i denti?* *Le dolgono i denti?* I have the head-ache, *ho male al capo, mi duole la testa, mi fa male il capo, mi fa male la testa*, 259. I have a sore throat, *mi fa mal la gola, ho mal di gola*, 275. He has a pain in his side, *ha male ad un lato*, 298.

HEAR (to), *udire**; to hear of, *udire parlare, sentir parlare*, 217. 482.

HELP (to), *aiutare*; the help, *l'aiuto, il soccorso*; to cry for help, *chiamare aiuto, domandar soccorso*, 306.

HER, hers, or his, *il suo, la sua, i suoi, le sue*, Rule, 11. 18. 28. Rule 1. 258.

HERE, *quà, quì, in questo luogo (ci, vi)*, 88. Here and there, *quà e là*, 392. Here is, here are, *ecco*, 297.

HEREAFTER, henceforth, for the future, *d'or innanzi, d'oggi in avanti, in avvenire, nell'avvenire*, 378.

HIM, WHO, *quello, il quale (or che)*; *colui, il quale (or che)*, 174.

HIS, her, or hers, *il suo, la sua, i suoi, le sue*, Rule, 11. 18. 28. Rule 1. 258.

HOME (at), *in casa, in casa sua*, 63. Is he at home? *è in casa?* 64.

HOW, ora. What o'clock is it? and similar expressions, 68. 82. 122, 123. 151.

How, how much, how many, before an exclamation, *quanto, quanta, quanti, quante*; how good you are! *quanto Ella è buona!* how many people! *quanta gente!* 317. How many obligations I am under to you! *quante obbligazioni ho verso di Lei!* 317. How far? *fin dove? in donde?*

159. How far (meaning what distance)? *qual distanza? quanto è lontano?* 223. How long? *quanto tempo è?* 217. Obs. B. C. 217, 218. How long (since when)? *Da quando in qua? da quanto tempo?* 218. How long? *Fino a quando? fin quando? insino a quando?* 154. How much? how many? *quanto? quanti? quanta? quante?* 42. How many times (how often)? *quante volte? quante fiate?* 131.

HOWEVER, *pure, però*, 249. However or howsoever, *per quanto, perché*, 358, Rem. R. 359.

HURT (to) somebody, *apportar danno ad uno, far del male ad uno*, 193. Her leg hurts her, *Le fa male la gamba*, 298. To hurt some one's feelings, *far dispiacere a qualcuno*, 313.

I.

I, *io*; thou, *tu*; he, *egli*, &c., personal pronouns, are not indispensable in the Italian conjugation, Note 2, 439.

IDIOMS, 429—431; on *servire*, 226. 238. 333. 382; on *mettere**, 319. 332. 337. 338. 374. Paris is a fine place to live in, *Parigi è un bel soggiorno*, 251. With tears in his, her, our, or my eyes, *colle lagrime agli occhi*, 306. If you please, *favorisca*; as you please, at your pleasure, as you like, *come Le piace, come Le aggrada*, Obs. B. 307. I wonder why, *vorrei sapere perché*, 397. To draw a secret from one, to examine one carefully, *sorprendere il segreto di qualcuno*, 411. To bear, to put up with, *sottoporsi*, 411.

IF, *se*, 177. Obs. B. 246. 365. Remark H. 353 *et seq.* Note 1, 353. See SE.

IL (definite article, masculine singular, when the word begins with any consonant, except *s* immediately followed by another consonant), the, 1. IMMEDIATELY (directly), *subito*, 208.

IMPARARE, to learn, 103. 106. 145. *Imparare a memoria*, to learn by heart, 176.

IMPART (to) something to somebody, *far parola di qualche cosa a qualcuno*, 392.

IMPERATIVE: its formation, and

when it must be employed, Obs. A. 362. Obs. B. C. 363. 412. The personal pronouns and the relative *ne* are joined to the imperative, Obs. B. C. 363.

IMPERFECT (the) of the Indicative; its formation, Note 1, 286; when it must be employed, Obs. B. 286. Imperfect of the subjunctive: its formation, Obs. A. 352; when it must be employed, Rem. H. 353 *et seq.*

IMPROVE (to), to profit, *far dei progressi*, 298.

IN, *nel, nello, nei, negli, in*, 79. 82. Obs. A. 123. 198. In the winter, *nell'inverno*; in the summer, *nella state*, 182. In my place, *a (or in) mio luogo, in mia vece*, 342. To be in the country, *essere in, or alla campagna*, 265. In rendered by *di*, 318. In is rendered by the genitive, when a relative superlative is to be expressed. It is the finest country in Europe, *È il più bel paese dell'Europa*, 429. In this manner, *in questa maniera*, 146. When is in rendered by *fra (tra)*, and when by *in*? Obs. B. 371.

IN: The Italian preposition *in* is rendered into English in various ways, viz. *In Italia*, to (at, or in) Italy; *in Inghilterra*, to (at, or in) England, 159. *In questo luogo*, here, 88. *In qualche luogo*, somewhere or whither, any where or whither; *in nessun luogo*, no where, not anywhere, 68. *In contanti (a contanti)*, for cash; *comprare a contanti*, to buy for cash, 209. *In strada*, out of doors, 282. *In avventure, nell'avventure*, for the future, 378. *In grande*, on a large scale; *in piccolo*, on a small scale, 401.

IN LUOGO DI, *invece di*, instead of, followed in Italian by the infinitive, 102.

INCOMODARSI, to inconvenience one's self, to put one's self out of the way, 391.

INDIFFERENTLY, *bene o male*, 392.

INFINITIVE: means to distinguish the infinitive of each conjugation, 58. The personal pronouns, and the relative *ne* are joined to the infinitive, Obs. 59. The infinitive preceded by the preposition *da*, 58. Obs. 102. 115; by the preposition *a*, 103. Obs. A. 123; by, *per*, 70. The infinitive without a preposition, Obs. B. 124.

INGANNARE, to deceive, to cheat,

188; *ingannarsi*, to mistake, to be mistaken, 187.

INQUIRE (to) after some one, *domandare di qualcuno*, *chiedere di qualcuno*; after whom do you inquire? *di chi domanda Ella?* 171.

INSTANTLY, this instant, *immantamente*, *all'istante*, 208.

INSTEAD of, *in luogo di*, *invece di*, is in English followed by the present participle, and in Italian by the infinitive, Obs. 102.

INTENDERE*, to hear; *inteso*, *intesi*; *ha Ella inteso niente di nuovo?* Have you heard any thing new? 224.

INTORNO, around, round; *intorno intorno*, *tutto intorno*, all around, 342.

INTRODURRE*, formerly *introdurre*, 324. Obs. A. 464.

INVITATION (an), and the answer to it, 438.

IO, I; *tu* thou; *egli*, he, &c., personal pronouns, are not indispensable in the Italian conjugation, Note 2, 439.

IT, *lo*, Obs. A. 135, B. 136. *It* is rendered by *ciò* when it relates to a preceding circumstance, 270.

J.

JEST (to), *buffonare*, *burlare*, *scherzare*. Expressions about jesting: you are jesting, *Ella si burla*; he cannot take a joke, is no joker, *non regge alla celia*, 376.

JUDGE (to be a) of something, *intendersi di qualche cosa*, *conoscersi di (or in) qualche cosa*, 335.

JUST (to have), *poco fa*, *poco anzi*, *testè*, *ora*, or *ora*, *in questo punto*, *appunto*; he has just come, *è arrivato*, *in questo punto*, 219.

K.

KEEP (to), *tenere**, 244. To keep warm, *tenersi caldo*; to keep cool, *tenersi fresco*; to keep clean, *tenersi pulito*, 341; to keep on one's guard against some one, *star all'erta contro qualcuno*, 341. To keep, to maintain, *mantenere**, 406.

KILL (to), *ammazzare*, *uccidere**, 71. 464. To kill by shooting, *uccidere con arma da fuoco*, 343.

KNOCK (to), *picchiare*. To knock

at the door, *picchiare (bussare) alla porta*, 307.

KNOW (to), *sapere**. Do you know how to swim; *sa Ella nuotare?* 112 140. 474, 475. When this verb is rendered by *conoscere**, 311, 457.

L.

LA, she.—See Way of addressing a person in Italian.

LÀ (*là*, *cì*, *vì*), there, 88.

LAMENTARSI (*lagnarsi*), to complain, 225. 449.

LAST (to), to wear well, *durare*, 381.

LATE, *tardi*; too late, *troppo tardi*, 123.

LATELY, *ultimamente*, *poco fa*, *non è gran tempo*, *non ha guari*; the other day, *l'altro giorno*, 371.

LAUGH (to), *ridere**, 307.—See **RIDERE**.*

LAY (to) to one's charge, *imputare a qualcuno*; do not lay it to my charge, *non me lo imputi*, *non imputatelo*, 376.

LEAGUE (a), *una lega*. To walk or travel a league, two leagues, *fur una lega*, *due leghe*, 275.

LEARN (to), *imparare*, 103. To learn Italian, *imparare l'italiano*; to learn French, *imparare il francese*, 106. 145. To learn by heart, *imparare a memoria*, 176.

LEFT: to the left, on the left side or hand, *a sinistra*, *dal lato manca*, *a manca*, 375.

LEFT (to have), *rimanere**; when I have paid for the horse: I shall have only ten crowns left, *quando avrò pagato il cavallo, non mi rimarranno che dieci scudi*; they have one gold sequin left, *rimane loro uno zecchino d'oro*, 280, Obs. 281.

LEGGERE*, to read, 90. 120. 137. 460.

LEGNO (*il*), the wood, and *la legna*, the wood for fuel, Note 3, 5.

LET, you.—See Way of Addressing a person in Italian.

LESS, *meno*; the least, *il meno*, *la meno*, Obs. B. 118. Less, fewer, *meno*, 244.—See **MENO**.

LEVEL (on a) with, even with, *al piano*, *a livello*, 337.

LICENCES, 434—436.

LIGHTEN (to), *lampeggiare*, 197.

LIKE (to), *piacere**; I like fish,

mi piace il pesce; he likes fowl, *gli piace il pollastro*. To like, *trovare, piacere*; how do you like that wine? *come trova (come Le piace) questo vino?* I like it well, *lo trovo buono, mi piace, mi par buono*, 175, 176. As you like, *come Le piace, come le aggrada*, 307.

LIKE BETTER (to), *piacèr meglio (più), preferire, aver più caro, amar meglio (più)*; I like staying here better than going out, *mi piace meglio restar quì che uscire*, 233. To my liking, *a mio grado, a mio genio, a mio modo*, 381.

LITTLE, *piccolo*, Obs. F. 119; little, *poco*, plur. *pochi*; a little, *un poco di (alquanto)*, 43; but little, only a little, not much, *non—quasi, non—che poco, non—molto, solamente poco, non—se non poco*, 43. Just a little, ever so little, *alquanto, un poco, un pochetto, un pochino, un tantino*; do you wish a great deal? *ne vuol molto?* no, just a little, *no, un pochetto solo*, 403.

LIVE (to), to dwell, *dimorare, stare di casa*, 153.

Lo (definite article, masculine singular, when the word begins with s followed by a consonant, or with z), the, 2. Before a vowel the same article is changed into *l*, Obs. A. 3. When the word beginning with s followed by a consonant, or with z, is preceded by another word, the article is no more *lo*, but *il*, Obs. C. 3. *Lo* (pronoun), it, 4. *Lo*, it, so; *me lo figuro*, I imagine it, 135, 136. Obs. C. 136.

LODGE (to), *alloggiare, abitare*, 152.

LOGORARE, to wear out; this coat is worn out, *questo abito è logorato*, 346.

LONG (so) as, *quanto, finchè, fin tanto che*, 397. How long? *quanto tempo?* 217. How long (since when)? *da quando in quà? da quanto tempo?* 218. How long? *fino a quando? fin quando? insino a quando?* 154.

LONG (to) for, *esser impaziente di*; I long to see my brother, *sono impaziente di vedere mio fratello*, 391.

LOOK (to) upon, *dar su, sporgere su, guardare su*; the window looks into the street, *la finestra dà (sporge) sulla strada*; the window looks out upon the river, *la finestra sporge (dà) sul fiume*, 341.—See APPEAR. To

look pleased with some one, *far buona cera a qualcuno, accogliere bene qualcuno*; to look cross at some one, *far cattiva cera a qualcuno, accogliere male qualcuno*, 312, 313. To look, *aver l'aspetto*; to look melancholy, *aver l'aspetto melanconico*, 378.

LORO (il), plur. *i loro*, their, theirs, 28. Obs. B. and Rule 1, 258, 266.

LOSE (to), *perdere*, 457. To lose one's wits, *perdere la testa*, 315. To lose sight of, *perdere di vista, diseguarli dagli occhi (dalla vista)*, 385.

LUOGO, (in) *di*, instead of, Obs. 102. *In mio luogo (in mia vece)*, in my place; *in vostro, di Lei, suo luogo*, in your, his, her place, 342.

M.

MA, but, 22.

MAI, ever; *non—mai*, never, 127.

MAKE (to), to do, *fare**; made, done, *fatto*, 135. To make a present of something to some one, *far regalo di qualche cosa a qualcuno*, 371. To make sick, *rendere malato*, 270. To make one's self understood, *farsi capire*, 364. To make one's self comfortable, *accomodarsi*, 391. To make entreaties, *far istanze*, 392.

MALE, bad; worse, *peggio*; the worst, *pessimamente*, Obs. F. 119, 120. *Male*, badly, 116, 146. *Male*, wrong, bad, 300.

MALGRADO, notwithstanding; *malgrado ciò*, notwithstanding that, 340.

MANAGE (to), to go about a thing, *prenderli*, 335. To manage, *far in modo di*, 341.

MANTENERE*, to keep, to maintain; *il mio mantenimento*, my keeping or maintenance, 406.

MANY, *molto*, fem. *molte*, 43. Not many, but few, *non—molto, non—che pochi, non—se non pochi*, 43.

MATTINO (il), *la mattina*, the morning, 265.

MEAN, (to), *pretendere**, *intendere**, *significare*; what do you mean? *che pretendete? I mean, pretendo (intendo)*, 395.

MEDDLE (to) with a thing, *mischiarsi di qualche cosa, immischiarsi di qualche cosa*; what are you meddling with; *di che si mischia Ella?* 275.

MEDESIMO or stesso; fem. *medesima* or *stessa*; plur. *medesimi* or *stessi*,

medesime or *stesse*, self, selves; *io stesso*, or *io medesimo*, myself, &c. 326.

MENARE, to take, to carry, must not be mistaken for *portare* or *condurre*, 282, 283.

MENO, less, serves to form the comparative of minority; *il meno*, *minimo*, the least, form the superlative of minority; Obs. B. 118. Obs. F. 119. *Meno*, less, takes *di* before a pronoun, Obs. C. 56. *Meno*, less, fewer. When there is a comparison between two sentences, *than* is rendered by *di quello che*, followed by *non*. *Quest' uomo ha meno amici di quello che non pensi*, that man has fewer friends than he imagines, Obs. A. 244.

MENTIRE, to utter a falsehood, to lie, 195.

METTERE*, to put, to put on, 122. 135. 460. *Mettere in netto*, to transcribe fairly, 338. *Mettere in stato (nel caso) di*, to enable to, 374. *Mettersi a tavola*, to sit down to dinner, 403. *Mettersi a qualche cosa*, to set about something, 319. *Mettersi al ricovero di qualche cosa*, to shelter one's self from something, 337.

MEZZO, fem. *mezza*, half; *all' una e mezzo*, at half-past one, 68. *A mezzo giorno*, at twelve o'clock; *a mezza notte*, at midnight, 69.

MILE (a), *una lega*; to walk or travel a mile, two miles, *far una lega*, *due leghe*, 275.

MINE, *il mio*, *i miei*, *la mia*, *le mie*, 10. 28. 258. A brother of mine, *un mio fratello*; a cousin of yours, *un di Lei cugino*; a neighbour of theirs, *un loro vicino*, 171.

MIO (*il*), *la mia*; plur. *i miei*, *le mie*, *my*, *mine*, 3. 10. 11. 28. Obs. B. 258.

MISTAKE (to), to be mistaken, *ingannarsi*; you are mistaken, *Ella s' inganna (v' ingannate)*, 187.

MIX (to), *mischiarsi*; I mix among the men, *mi mischio fra gli uomini*, 243.

MOLTO, much, a good deal of, a great deal of; plur. *molti*; fem. *molta*; plur. *molte*, many, a good many, a great many, 43. Obs. C. 119. 371.

MONTARE, to go up, to mount, to ascend; *montare sulla collina*, to go up the mountain; *montare a cavallo*, to mount the horse; *montare in legno (in carrozza)*, to get into a coach, 283.

MOONLIGHT (the), moonshine, *il chiaro di luna*. It is moonlight, *è chiaro di luna (splende la luna)*, 175.

MORE, *più*, Obs. A. 244. See *più*. *More, più* (before a noun), 55, 56. *More, ancora*; one more book, *ancora un libro*; one good book more, *ancora un buon libro*; a few books more, *ancora alcuni libri (qualche libro)*, 52. *More, più*; the most, *il più*, *la più*, Obs. B. 118. *More, di più*; no—more, *non—di più*, 165.

MORIRE*, to die (lose life), *l' uomo è morto questa mattina, e sua moglie pure è morta*, 294, 295. 482. *Morire d' una malattia*, to die of a disease, 305.

MOUNT (to), to go up, to ascend, *montare, salire**, *ascendere*, 283. 462. 482. To go up the mountain, *salire il monte, salire il colle, montare sulla collina*; to mount the horse, *montare a cavallo*, 283.

MUCH, many, a good deal of, very much, *molto, molti, assai*, 43. 371. Not much, *non—molto, non—se non poco*, 43. So much, *tanto*, 176. 270.

MUST. The English nominative of this verb is rendered in Italian by the dative, *mi, ti, gli, le, ci, vi, loro*, joined to one of the impersonal verbs: *essere d' uopo, bisognare, abbisognare*, Obs. A. B. 164, 165.—See **BISOGNARE**.

MY, *il mio, la mia; i miei, le mie*, 3. 28. Obs. B. 258.

N.

NAME. What is your name? *Come si chiama? Che nome ha Ella?* My name is Charles, *mi chiamo Carlo*, *ho nome Carlo*, 301.

NAMES (proper) of persons, countries, and towns, Obs. B. C. D. E. F. 408, 409.

NATIVE (the), *il nativo*, 413.

NE, some of it, of it, some of them, of them, 38, 39. 68. Place of the relative *ne*, with regard to the personal pronouns, Obs. A. 72. Obs. B. 73; in conjunction with the infinitive, Obs. 59; with the present participle, Obs. C. 273; in conjunction with the imperative, Obs. B. C. 363. *Ne*, from it, from there, thence, 151.

NEAR, *vicino a, presso a*; near me,

vicino a me; near them, *vicino a loro*; near going, *vicino ad andare*, 230, 231.

NEARLY, *press' a poco, quasi, incirca*, 146. Nearly, thereabouts, *presso a poco, ad un di presso*, 401.

NEITHER—nor, *non—né, nè*, 12.

NEGATION. When it is employed in Italian, and not in English, Obs. A. 244.

NEL (*nello, nei, negli*), in, 79. 82. 192, 193. 254.—See IN.

NEMMENO, even not; *non ha nemmeno abbastanza danaro per comprar del pane*, he has not even money enough to buy some bread, 327.

NESSUNO (*niuno, veruno*), no one, nobody, not any body; *nessuno ha il vostro bastone*, nobody has your stick, 19. *Nessuno* followed by *che*, requires the subjunctive, 359.

NEVER, *non—mai*, 127.

NEW, *nuovo*, 157.

NIENTE (*non—*), *non—nulla*, nothing, or not any thing, Obs. A. 7. Obs. B. 8. 13. *Non—che*, nothing but, 194. *Non—che*, nothing that, requires the subjunctive, 359.

No, no; not, *non*, 5. Nothing, or not any thing, *non—niente, non—nulla* (or simply *nulla* before the verb), Obs. A. 7. 13. Nothing, or not any thing good, *niente di buono*. Obs. B. 8. No, or not any, *non*; I have no wine, *non ho vino*, 36. No one, nobody, not any body, *nessuno, niuno, veruno*, Obs. B. 19. 359. No longer, *non—più*, 152. No sooner, *non tosto*, 294.

NON. *Non—quasi, non—che poco, non—molto, solamente poco, non—se non poco*, but little, only a little, not much; *non—molti, non—che pochi, non—se non pochi*, not many, but few; *non ho che poco danaro, non ho se non poco danaro*, I have but little money, 43. *Non—né, neither; nè, nor; non ho il bastone del mercante, nè il mio*, I have neither the merchant's stick nor mine, 12. *Non—ancora, non—per anco, not—yet*, 123. *Non—più*, no longer, 152. *Non—più*, not any more, no more; *non ho più pane*, I have no more bread, 51. *Non—più molto, non—più molti*, not much more, not many more; *non ne ho più molto (molti)*, I have not much (many) more, 52. *Non—che, non—se non*, only, but; *non ne ha che uno, non ne ha se non uno*, he has

but one, 42. *Non—che*, nothing but; *non ha che nemici*, he has nothing but enemies, 194. *Non—niente, non—nulla; non ho niente, non ho nulla, nulla ho*. Obs. A. 7. Requires *de* when before an adjective, Obs. B. 8.

NONDIMENO, *nolladimeno, ciò non di meno (nullameno)*, for all that, although, notwithstanding that, 405.

NOSTRO (*il*), plur. *i nostri*, our, ours, 28, Obs. B. 258. 266.

NOT, *non*, 5. Not anything, or nothing, *non—niente, non—nulla*, Obs. A. 7. 13. Not any more, no more, *non—più*; not much more, not many more, *non—più molto, non—più molti*, 51. Not quite, *non interamente, non del tutto, non tutt' affatto*, 147. Not yet, *non ancora, non—per anco*, 123. Not until (meaning not before), *non—prima di*, 355.

NOTHING, or not anything, *non—niente, non—nulla*, Obs. A. 7. Obs. B. 8. 13. 359. Nothing but, *non—che*, 194. Nothing that, *niente—che*, requires the subjunctive in Italian, 359.

NOTWITHSTANDING, in spite of, *malgrado, a dispetto, ad onta*, 340. Notwithstanding that, for all that, although, *ciò non di meno, nullameno, nondimeno, nolladimeno*; that man is a little bit of a rogue, but notwithstanding he passes for an honest man, *quest' uomo è alquanto briccone, ciò non dimeno passa per un galantuomo*, 405.

Now, *ora, al presente, adesso*, 338. Now and then, *di distanza in distanza, di tanto in tanto*, 392.

NUMBERS (Cardinal), 40. 44. 47. The Cardinal numbers are employed when speaking of the days of the month, Obs. B. 47. Ordinal numbers, 47—49. After the Christian names of sovereigns, the Italians employ the ordinal numbers, as in English, but without using the article, Obs. B. 301. Distributive numbers, *primieramente, in primo luogo*, firstly; *secondariamente, in secondo luogo*, &c. 340. The English ordinal number rendered in Italian by the cardinal: I received your letter on the fifth, on the sixth, &c. *Ho ricevuto la di Lei lettera il cinque, il sei, &c.* 406.

NUOVO, new, 157.

O.

O, or, 10.

OBLIGED (to be) or indebted to some one for something, *esser obbligato verso qualcuno per qualche cosa, esser debitore verso (or a) qualcuno di qualche cosa*, 317.OCCHIO (*l'*), the eye; plur. *gli occhi*, Obs. B. 26.OCCORRERE*, to want, *occorso, occorsi*; *mi occorrono tre libri*, I want three books, 396.

ODIARE, to hate, 181.

OF, *di*, Obs. A. 5.OF the, *del* (before a consonant), *dello* (before s followed by a consonant), *dell'* (before a vowel), 10.OFFERIRE*, to offer; part. past, *offerta*, 226. Obs. 469.OFTEN, *spesso* (*spesse volte, sovente*); as often as, *così spesso che, così spesso come, spesso quanto*, 112. Not so often as, *meno spesso di*; oftener than, *più spesso di*, 112.OLTRE (*in*), *di più*, besides, moreover; *oltre ciò*, or *oltre di ciò*, besides that, 374.OMBRA (*un'*), a shadow; *all' ombra*, under the shade, 337.ON, or upon, *su, sopra, sovra*; upon it, *sopra, dissopra*, 141. On a small scale, *in piccolo*; on a large scale, *in grande*, 401.ON purpose, *apposta, a bella posta*, 387.ONCE, *una volta*; once a day, *una volta al giorno*; twice a day, *due volte al giorno*, 176. All at once, *tutto ad un tratto, tutto in una volta*, 266.ONE (the people, they or any one), *si*, 155, 156, 192.ONLY, but, *soltanto, solamente, non—che, non—se non*, 42.OPPOSITE to, *dirimpetto a, contro a (di), in faccia a, di contro a*; opposite that house, *dirimpetto a questa casa*, 382.

OR, o, 10.

OTHER, *altro*; another sou, *un altro soldo*; some other sous, *alcuni altri soldi*, 46. No other, *non—altro*; I have no other, *non ne ho altro*, 47. Others, other people, *altrui*, 276.OUGHT and SHOULD are rendered into Italian by the conditionals of the verb *dovere**, to be obliged, to owe, Obs. A. 385.OUR, OURS, *il nostro*; plur. *i nostri*, 28. Obs. B. 258, 266.OUT of, *fuori di*; out of doors, without, *fuori, in istrada*, 282, 288.OVE? (*dove? onde? donde?*) where? 64. *Ove? dove? onde? donde?* where? whither? where to? 67. 151. *Da dove? d'onde?* whence? where from? 167, 224.OVER (it is all), *è finita*; it is all over with me, *sono perduto* (fem. *perduta*), *sono ito* (fem. *ita*), 313.

P.

PARECCHI (*alcuni*), a few, 46.PARERE* (*sembrare*), to appear, to seem, 406, 476.

PARTICIPLE past; its formation, Notes 1, 2, 3. Obs. 126, 127. It agrees with its object in number, 130. 219. When it agrees with the noun in gender and number, Obs. E. 261. 278. It serves to form the passive voice, 180. 219.

PARTICIPLE present; its formation and use, 272. The personal pronouns and the relative *ne* are joined to the present participle, Obs. C. 273. How is the English present participle to be translated into Italian? 169. Obs. C. 251. Note 1, Obs. A. B. 272, 273.PARTICULAR (to be), *riguardarvi da vicino*, 395.

PARTIRE*, to depart, to set out, 116, 140, 468.

PASSATO REMOTO (or *remoto*), the preterite definite; its formation, 290. Notes 1, 2, 3, 4, Obs. A. B. 291, 292. When it is employed, 293.PASSEGGIARE, to take a walk; *andare a passeggiare*, to go a walking, 191.PAY (to), *pagare*; to pay a man for a horse, *pagare un cavallo ad un uomo*, 170. To pay some one a visit, *restituire la visita a qualcuno*, or *render la visita a qualcuno*, 313.PEL (contraction of *per il*); plur. *pei* (contraction of *per i*), for the, 192. *Pel gran (a forza di)*, by dint of; *pel gran lavoro*, by dint of labour, 417.PER, to (meaning in order to), 70. Whenever *in order* to can be substituted for the preposition to, the latter

is rendered in Italian by *per*, to express the end, the design, or the cause for which a thing is done, Obs. 341. *Per lo spazio di*, during, 151. *Per timore (per tema)*, for fear of, 338. *Pel corso di*, all along, 374. *Per mezzo*, through, 422.

PER QUANTO, however, or howsoever, followed by an adjective, remains invariable; it may be rendered by *per—che*. In both instances the subjunctive is employed, Rem. R. 359. *Per quanto*, whatever, whatsoever, is not followed by *che*, agrees with the subjunctive, and governs the subjunctive, Rem. S. 359.

PERCHÈ? why? 150. *Perchè* (*poichè*), because, 150.

*PERDERE**, to lose; *perdato* and *perso*; *perdeti*, *perdetti*, and *persi*, 457. *Sono perduto* (*perduto*), *sono ito* (*ito*), it is all over with me; *è finita*, it is all over, 313.

*PERMETTERE**, to permit, to allow, 365. 461.

PERSEGUIRE (*inseguire*), to pursue, 315.

*PERVENIRE**, to succeed, 207. 481.

*PIACERE**, to like, to please; *piacuto*, *piacqui*, 176. 209. 478. *Piacere meglio* (*più*), to like better, 233. *Piacersi*, to please one's self, 210.

PIOVERE, to rain, 197.

PIÙ, more, serves to form the comparative of superiority of adjectives and adverbs; *il più*, *la più*, serves to form the relative superlative of superiority, Obs. B. 118. *Di più*, more; *non—di più* (*non—più*), no—more, 165. *Più*, more (before a noun), 55. When there is a comparison between two sentences, the verb which follows *più* or *meno*, requires *di quello che non*. *Ho più pane di quello che non mangerò*, I have more bread than I shall eat, Obs. A. 244.

PIUTTOSTO, rather; *piuttosto che* (*di*), rather—than, 301.

PLAY (to), *giuocare*, 102; to play upon an instrument, *suonare un strumento*; to play at cards, *giuocare alle carte*, Obs. 230. 386. To play a trick on some one, *fare una burla a qualcuno*, 396.

PLEASE (to), *piacere*, *piacersi*; to please some one, *piacere a qualcuno*; how do you please yourself here? *come si piace* (*si trova*) *quà*? 209. 478.

If you please, *favorisca*, Obs. B. 307.

PLEASED with, *soddisfatto di*, 299.

PLEASURE. To give pleasure, *far piacere*, 89.

PLUPERFECT (the) of the indicative; its formation and its use, Obs. D. 293. Pluperfect of the subjunctive; its formation, Obs. B. 353; its use, 356.

PLURAL: its formation in nouns and adjectives, Rule 25 *et seqq.*, Obs. and Rules, 253 *et seqq.*

Poco, little; plur. *pochi*; *un poco di*, a little, 43. *Presso a poco* (*ad un di presso*), 401; *un poco*, *un pochetto*, *un pochino*, *un tantino*, *alquanto*, just a little, ever so little, 405. *Poco fa*, *poc' anzi*, *testè*, just; *ho visto il di Lei fratello*, *poco fa*, I have just seen your brother, 219.

POICHÈ (*perchè*), because, 150.

*PORRE**, formerly *ponere*, to put, Obs. A. Note 1, 324. 464. 465.

PORTARE, to bring, must not be mistaken for *menare*, or *condurre**, 101, 102. 282, 283. *Portar in tavola la zuppa*, to serve up the soup, 330.

*POTERE**, to be able (can), 71. 140. 473.

POUR (to) out, *versare*; to pour out some drink for any one, *versar da bere a qualcuno* (*mescere a qualcuno*), 305.

PREGARE, to desire, to beg, to pray, to request, takes *di* before the infinitive, 283.

*PRENDERE**, to take; *prendere il caffè*, to drink coffee, 108. 139. 461. *Prender la fuga* (*fuggirsene*), to make one's escape, to run away, to flee, to take to one's heels, 327. *Prendersi*, to manage, or to go about a thing, 335.

PREPOSITIONS, which in Italian are followed by the infinitive, whilst in English they are followed by the present participle, 169. Obs. 183. Obs. C. 251. The English preposition *for* with the verbs to ask, *domandare*, *chiedere*; to pay, *pagare*, is not rendered in Italian, 170. Use of the preposition *A*, 103. 115. 159. Obs. B. 401; of the preposition *DA*, Obs. C. 22. Obs. C. 79. Notes 1, 2, 63. 167. 181. 223. 224. 323. 338. Obs. A. 400; of the preposition *DI*, Obs. A. 5. B. 6. 58. Obs. A. 400. Obs. 418; of the preposition *IN*, 63. 79. 82. Obs. A. 123; of the preposition *PER*, to

(meaning *in order to*), 70; (meaning *during*), 151; (meaning *for fear of*), 338; (meaning *all along*), 374; (meaning *through*), 422. The infinitive without a preposition, Obs. B. 124.

PRESENT (the) tense indicative: its formation, Note 1. 93. Obs. A. 94. There is no distinction in Italian between *I love*, *do love*, *am loving*, Obs. B. 95. Verbs whose infinitive ends in *care* or *gare* insert an *h* as often as *g* or *c* meets with *i* or *e*, Obs. C. 96. 477. Do or *am*, when used as interrogatives in English, are generally not rendered in Italian. Sometimes they may be rendered by *forse*, perhaps, 114. Present of the subjunctive: its formation, 345. When it must be employed, Rem. A. B. C. 346 *et seqq.* In English the state of existence or of action, when in its duration, is always expressed in the preterperfect tense, whereas in Italian it is expressed by the present tense. He has been in Paris these three years, *son tre anni ch' è in Parigi*, Obs. C. 218.

PRESENTLY, *a momenti, fra poco, subito*, 208.

PRESSO *a poco, a un di presso*, thereabouts, nearly, 401.

PRETEND (to), *fingere * di, far sembrare di*, 337. 460.

PRETERITE (the) definite.—See *Passato remoto* (or *remoto*). Preterite anterior: its formation and its use, 294.

PRETERPERFECT of the indicative: its formation and use, 134. Preterperfect of the subjunctive: its formation and its use, Obs. B. 353 *et seqq.*

PRIMA *di, innanzi di (che), avanti di*, before, 115. *Non—prima di*, not until, 355.

PRODURRE *, formerly *produrre*, to produce, Obs. A. 324. Obs. A. 464 *et seqq.*

PROMETTERE *, to promise, 135. 145. 461.

PRONOUN: Personal pronouns, 74. 257. Order of the personal pronouns in the sentence, 73. Place of the relative *ne* with regard to the personal pronouns, 73. Joining of the personal pronouns and the relative *ne* to the infinitive (see *Infinitive*); to the present participle (see *Participle*); to the imperative (see *Imperative*). The

personal pronouns are joined to *ecco*, Obs. A. 298. Absolute possessive pronouns, 28, 29. 86. 258. In Italian the article precedes the possessive pronouns, whether conjunctive or absolute. Obs. B. 3. 28, 29. 86. 210. 248. 258. 266. Obs. 319. In Italian the qualifications of *Signore*, Mr., *Signora*, Mrs., *Signorina*, Miss, usually follow the possessive pronouns, Obs. B. 248. Demonstrative pronouns, 9. 15. Obs. A. 21. Obs. B. 22. 28. 31, 32. 135. 259. 261. Determinative pronouns, 32. 101. 174. Interrogative pronouns, 3. 8. 15. 17. 28. 77. 90. 167. 177. 210. 259. 319. Relative pronouns, 22. 31. 38. 101. 174. 198. 199. 261. 262. Indefinite pronouns, Obs. B. 19. 46. 51. 54—56. Obs. C. 136. Use of the indefinite pronoun *si*, they, the people, any one, or one, 155, 156. Indefinite pronouns requiring the subjunctive. Rem. P. R. S. 358, 359. Pronouns of Reflective verbs, Obs. A. 186. The reflective pronouns *myself, thyself, &c.*, rendered by *io stesso* or *io medesimo, tu stesso, or tu medesimo, &c.*, 326. Pronouns of address, *tu, Ella, Lei, Vossignoria*, and when they are used, 83 *et seqq.*

PROPERLY, *benissimo, a perfezione*, 171.

PROPORSI, *di* before inf., to propose; *mi propongo di far questo viaggio*, I propose going on that journey, 322. Obs. 464.

PULL (to), *tirare*, 214. To pull out, *strappare*; he pulls out his hair, *Egli si strappa i capelli*, 188.

PURCHASE (to) any thing, *far compera, far spesa, far delle comperare, far delle spese*, 227.

PUSH (to), *spingere **, *spinto, spinsi*, 374. 463.

PUT (to), *mettere **; to put on, *mettersi*, 135. To put off, to postpone, *rimettere ** (a), *differire*, 392. To put one's self out of the way, to inconvenience one's self, *incomodarsi*, 391.

Q.

QUÀ QUÀ (*in questo luogo, ci, vi*), here, 88. **QUÀ E LÀ**, here and there, 392. **ANDAR QUÀ E LÀ NELLA CASA**, to go about the house, 342. **DI QUÀ DELLA VIA, AL DI QUÀ DELLA VIA**, on this side of the road, 160.

QUALCHE cosa (*alcuna cosa*), something or anything, 7. *Qualche cosa di buono*, something or anything good, Obs. B. 8.

QUALCHEDUNO, *qualcuno*, or *alcuno*, somebody or anybody, some one or any one. *Ha qualcuno il mio libro?* has anybody my book? *Qualcheduno l'ha*, somebody has it, 19.

QUALE? or CHE? (interrogative pronoun) which or what. When is *quale* and when *che* (plural *quali, che*) to be employed? Obs. D. 3. Note 6, 3. *Quale?* which one? plur. *quali* (*quai, qua'*), 15. 28. 259. 261.

QUALUNQUE (*ogni*), each; *qualunque uomo*, each man, 187. *Qualunque*, whoever, whosoever, whatever, whatsoever, governs the subjunctive, 360.

QUANDO (*allorché, allorquando*), when, 212. When they are employed with the preterite anterior, 294. *Quando*, when, requires the indicative when it expresses an action with certainty, Obs. E. 347, 348.

QUANTO? How much? *quanti?* How many? 42. *Quante volte?* *quante fiate?* How many times (how often)? 131. *Da quanto tempo?* How long? since when? 218. *Quanto Ella è buona!* how good you are! *Quanta gente!* how many people! *Quante obbligazioni Le debbo!* how many obligations I am under to you! 317. *In quanto a*, or *quanto a*, as to, as for; *quanto a me, in quanto a me*, as to me, 304; *quanto (finché, fin tanto che)*, so long as, 397.

QUANTO *prima (fra poco)*, soon, shortly, 151. 230.

QUANTUNQUE, though, although, requires the subjunctive mood, Rem. A. 346.

QUEL, *quello, quell'*, that, Obs. 9. *Quello*, that, or the one, 9. 21. 23. 28. 31. 259. 261. *Quel che*, or *ciò che*: *Trova Ella ciò che cerca?* Do you find what you are looking for? 101. *Quello, il quale (or che)*, *colui, il quale (or che)*, him who; *quelli, i quali (or che)*, those who, 174.

QUESTION (to be the), to turn upon, *trattarsi di*. It is the question, it turns upon, *si tratta di*, 387.

QUESTO (*questo*), this one; *quello*, that one. When must *questo*, when *questo*, and when *quello* be used? Obs. B. 22. Plur. *questi, quelli, quei*, or *que'*, those, 31, 32. Fem. sing. and plur. 259. 261. *Questo mese*, this

month; *questo paese*, this country; *questo libro*, this book, 21. 204.

QUICK, fast, presto, 233.

QUITE (or just) as much, as many, *altrettanto, altrettanti*, 55.

R.

RAIN (to), *piovare*. Does it rain? *piove?* 281. It rains very hard, *piove dirottamente*, 198.

RALLEGRARSI *per qualche cosa* (or *di qualche cosa*), to rejoice at something, 192. 449.

RATHER THAN, *piuttosto che (di)*, 301.

READ (to), *leggere**; read, *letto*, 137. 460.

RECOLLECT (to), to remember, *ricordarsi, rammentarsi*, Note 1, 232. 449.

RELY (to); you may rely upon him, *può fidarsi a (or di) lui, può fidarsene, può far capitale di lui*, 331.

REMAIN (to), *rimanere**, *restare*, *stare**, 88. 148; to remain (meaning to dwell), *stare di casa, dimorare*, 152. 462. 469.

REPENTINAMENTE (*repenite*), suddenly, all of a sudden, 266.

RICONOSCERE*, to recognize, to acknowledge, 243. 457.

RICORDARSI, *rammentarsi*, to recollect, to remember. *Si rammenta di ciò?* do you recollect that? *Me ne rammento*, I recollect it. When these verbs are not reflective, they govern the accusative, Note 1, 232. 452.

RIDE (to) on horseback, *andare a cavallo, montare a cavallo*, 182. To take a ride, *andare a cavallo*, 191.—See *ANDARE*.

RIDERE*, to laugh; *ridersi di qualcuno*, to laugh at, to deride some one, to laugh in a person's face, 307. 462.

RIDURRE*, formerly *riduocere*, to reduce, Obs. A. 324. 464.

RIGHT; to the right, on the right side or hand, *a destra, a mano destra, a dritta*, 375. Right, *ragione*; am I right? *Ho ragione?* 14, 15.—See *TO BE*.

RIMETTERE*, *differire (isco)*, to postpone, to put off, 392. 461. 469.

RIMANERE*, to remain, to stay, 88. 148. 462. *Rimanere**, to have left, 280. Note 7, 477.

RISPLENDERE (*riverberare*), to shine, to glitter, 198.

RITENERE*, to retain, to hold back, 231. Note 7, 477.

RITORNARE, to return, to come back, 151.

RIUSCIRE*, to succeed (*a* before inf), 207, 322, 483.

ROAD (the), *la via*; on this side of the road, *di quà della via*; *al di quà della via*; on that side of the road, *al di là della via*, *di là della via*, 160.

ROOM (the), *la stanza*, *la camera*; the front room, *la camera verso strada*; the back room, *la camera verso corte*; the upper room, *la camera in alto*, *la camera al piano superiore*, 260.

S.

SAIL (*a*), *una vela*. To set sail, *mettere alla vela*, *spiegare le vele*; to set sail for, *far vela per*; to sail under full sail, *spiegar tutte le vele*, 332.

SALIRE*, to go up to, to mount, to ascend, 285, 482. *Salire il monte*, *salire il colle*, to go up the mountain, 283.

SALVARSI, *scappare*, to run away, to fly, 234.

SAME: the same thing, *la medesima (stessa) cosa*; the same man, *il medesimo (lo stesso) uomo*; it is all one (the same), *è lo stesso*, *è tutt'uno*, 287.

SAPER*, to know, 98. The infinitive joined to this verb is not preceded by a preposition, Obs. 112, 140, 474.

SATISFIED (to be) with some one or something, *essere contento (soddisfatto) di uno o di qualche cosa*, 177.

SCARCELY, *appena*, 294.

SCENDERE*, *discendere**, to come down, to go down; *sceso*, *disceso*; *scesi*, *discesi*, 283, 462.

SCRIVER*, to write; *scritto*, *scrisi*, 68, 137, 462.

SE, if, 177; requires the imperfect of the subjunctive, Rem. H. 353. *Se* may be followed by the future, Obs. B. 246. Note 1, 353.

SECONDO, according to; *secondo le*

occorrenze (or *le circostanze*), according to circumstances, 299.

SEDERE*, to sit down; *seduto*, *sedei* (*sedetti*), 232, 282, 456, 475.

SEDUTO (*essere*), to be seated, to sit, fem. *seduta*, 282.

SEE (to), *vedere**, 137, 475.

SEGUIRE, *seguire*, to follow, 315, 468. *Seguire un consiglio* (*un parere*), to follow advice (counsel), 378.

SELF, *stesso* or *medesimo*; *stessa* or *medesima*, *stessi* or *medesimi*, *stesse* or *medesime*; myself, *io stesso*, or *io medesimo*; himself, *egli stesso*, or *egli medesimo*; herself, *ella stessa*, or *ella medesima*; themselves, *eglino stessi*, or *eglino medesimi*, *elleno stesse*, or *elleno medesime*; one's self, *se stesso*, or *se medesimo*, 326.

SENTIRE, to feel (to perceive), 249, 336.

SENZA, without, is in Italian followed by the infinitive, Obs. 183.

SERVE (to), *servire*, 226, 238. To serve up the soup, *portar in tavola la zuppa*, 330. Dinner or supper is served up (is on the table), *è in tavola*, 332.

SERVIRE, to serve, to wait upon, 226. *Servirsi di*, to make use of, to use, 238, 333. *Servire*, to be of use; *a che le serve ciò?* of what use is that to you? *Servire di*, to stand instead, to be as: *il mio schioppo mi serve di bastone*, I use my gun as a stick; *servire di*, to avail; *a che Le serve di piangere?* what avails it to you to cry? *Non mi serve a nulla*, it avails me nothing, 382.

SET (to) out, to depart, to leave, *partire*, 116, 140, 468.

SHORTLY (soon), *quanto prima*, *fra poco*, *lentosto*, *presto*, *subito*, 151, 230.

SHOW (to), *mostrare*, *far vedere*, 111. To show a disposition to, *far vista*, *far mostra di*, 312. The show (splendour, brightness), *lo splendore*; to make a great show, *far pompa*, 411.

Sİ, they, the people, any one, or one, 155, 156, 194.

SIDE; by the side of, *accanto a*, *allato a*, 237. This side, *da questo lato*, *da questa parte*; that side, *da quella (cotesta) parte*; on this side of the road, *di quà della via*, *al di quà della via*; on that side of the road, *di là della via*, *al di là della via*, 160.

SIGNORE, Sir. When ought this word to be written with an *e* at the end, and when not? Note 3, 2.

SILENT (to be), to stop speaking, *tacere**, Obs. B. 387. Obs. 478.

SINCE, or FROM, *da poi* (or simply *da*); from that time, *da quel momento*; from my childhood, *dalla mia giovinezza (infanzia)*; from here to there, *da qui fino là*, 323. Since (considering), *giacchè* (*poichè, ducchè, da che*), 323.

SIT (to) down, *sedere**, *mettersi a sedere*, *porrsi a sedere*, 232. 475; to sit, to be seated, *essere seduto*; fem. *seduta*, 282.

SLEEP (to), *dormire*, 183. Are you sleepy? *Ha Ella sonno? Aveve sonno?* 8. To feel sleepy, *aver vogliu di dormire*, 188.

SLOW, slowly, *lentamente, adagio*, 233.

SMELL (to), *sentire*; he smells of garlic, *puzza d'aglio, ha un cattivo odor d'aglio*, 336.

SNOW (to), *nevicare*; it snows, *nevicca*, 197. 281.

So (it), *lo*, Obs. A. B. C. 135, 136; so so, *così così*, 146. So that, *di modo che, di maniera che, in guisa che, per cui*, 200. So long as, *quanto, finchè, fin tanto che*, 397.

SOFFRIRE*, to suffer, 314. 468

SOLAMENTE (*soltanto*), only, but; *ho soltanto un amico*, I have but one friend; *ne ho solamente uno*, I have but one, 42.

SOLO; fem. *sola*, alone, by one's self, 343.

SOME, or ANY (before a noun), *del, dello, dell'*; plur. *dei, degli, degl'*, Note 1, 35, 36; fem. *della, dell', delle*, 260, 261. Some of it, any of it, of it, some of them, any of them, of them; *ne* is always placed before the verb, except when this is in the infinitive, participle, or imperative, 38, 39. Some or any more, *ancora, anche*; some more wine, *ancora vino*; some more buttons, *ancora bottoni*, 51. Somebody or anybody, *qualcheduno, qualcuno, o alcuno*, Obs. B. 19.

SOMETHING, or anything, *qualche cosa, alcuna cosa*; something or any thing good, *qualche cosa di buono*, 8. Obs. B. 8. 156. Sometimes, *qualche volta, talvolta, talora*, 131. Somewhere or whither, any where or whither, *in qualche luogo*; no where, not any where, *in nessun luogo*, 68.

SOON, *quanto prima, fra poco, ben-tosto, presto, subito*, 151. 230. As soon as, *subito che, appena*, 183. No sooner, *non tosto*, employed in the use of the preterite anterior, 294.

SOPRA, *su, sopra*, upon; *dissopra, sopra*, upon it, 141. *Sopra, in alto, dissopra*, above, or up-stairs, 160.

SOPRAGGIUNGERE*, to happen; *sopraggiunto, sopraggiunsi*, 224. 460.

SOTTO, under; *sotto, di sotto*, under it, underneath, 141.

SPARARE, to shoot, to fire; *sparare un fucile*, to fire a gun, 214.

SPECCHIO (*lo*), the looking-glass; plur. *gli specchi*, Obs. B. 26.

SPEECH (a), *un discorso*; to make a speech, *far un discorso*, 275.

SPEGNERE*, to extinguish; *spento, spenti*, 139. 480.

SPEND (to) money, *spendere*, 219. 462. To spend time in something, *passare il tempo a qualche cosa*, 220.

SPESSO, often; *così spesso che, così spesso come, spesso quanto*, as often as; *più spesso*, oftener; *meno spesso, non tanto spesso*, not so often, 112.

SPINGERE*, to push; *spinto, spinsi*, 374. 463.

SPITE: in spite of, *malgrado, a dispetto, ad onta*; in spite of him, *malgrado lui, or suo malgrado*, 340.

STAR*, to stand; *stato, stood*; its conjugation, 470. *Star bene*, to fit; *mi sta bene questo abito?* does that coat fit me? 209. *Star in piedi*, to stand up, 369. *Stare di casa*, to dwell, to live, 152.

STEP (a), *un passo*. To walk a step, *far un passo*, 275.

STESSO, or *medesimo*; fem. *stessa* or *medesima*, plur. *stessi or medesimi, stesse or medesime*, self, selves; *io stesso*, or, *io medesimo*, myself; *eglieno stessi*, or *eglieno medesimi, elleno stesse*, or *elleno medesime*, themselves, 326.

STUPIRE (*isco*), *sorprendere**, to astonish, to surprise: *stupirsi* (*mara-vigliarsi*), to be astonished, to wonder, 370. 461.

STEA. This particle prefixed to some words forms an absolute superlative, Obs. E. 119.

STRIKE (to), *colpire*, 305. To be struck with a thought, *venir in pensiero, cader nell'animo*. A thought strikes me, *mi viene un pensiero, mi viene in mente*, 342.

SU, *sopra, sovra*, upon; *sopra dis-sopra*, upon it, 141.

SUBITO CHE (*appena*), as soon as, 183, 294.

SUBJUNCTIVE, 345 *et seqq.* 352 *et seqq.*—See PRESENT, IMPERFECT, &c.

SUBSTANTIVE: formation of the plural, 25 *et seqq.*; feminine substantives, 253 *et seqq.* Gender of substantives, Notes and Obs. 27, 254 *et seqq.* Compound substantives: a substantive compounded by means of a preposition, expressed or understood, the first word only takes the mark of the plural, Obs. 418. An English compound is rendered in Italian by two words, and the preposition *di* is put between, when the latter expresses the matter of which the former is made, Obs. A. 5. Obs. A. 400; but when the latter expresses the use of the former, the preposition *da* is put between, Obs. C. 22. Obs. A. 400, 402, 403. Substantives having a distinct form for individuals of the female sex, Obs. 267—269.

SUCCEED (to), *riuscire**, *pervenire**, do you succeed in learning Italian? *Riesce Ella ad imparar l'italiano?* 207, 322, 483.

SUCCEEDERE*, to happen; *successo*, *succedei*, *succedetti*, and *successi*, 224. Obs. 456.

SUCH, *tale*, *simile*; such a man, *un tal uomo*; such a woman, *una tal donna*, 288.

SUFFER (to), *soffrire**, 314, 468; to suffer one's self to be beaten, *lasciarsi battere*; to let or suffer one's self to fall, *lasciarsi cadere*; to suffer one's self to be insulted, *lasciarsi oltraggiare*, &c. 412.

SUIT (to), *piacere**, *esser di gusto*; it suits him, *gli piace*, *è di suo gusto*; To suit, *convenire**, *addirsi**, *esser convenevole*, or *dicevole*, 207, 478.

SUN (the), *il sole*. We have too much sun, *fa troppo sole*, 175.

SUO (*il*), *la sua*, *i suoi*, *le sue*, his, her, hers, 18. Note 6, 23. Obs. B. Rule 1, 258, 266.—See Way of Addressing a person in Italian.

SUPERLATIVE, Obs. A. B. Note 1, 118. Obs. C. D. E. F. 119, Obs. G. H. 120.

SUPPRESSION OF VOWELS. When two words finish with the same vowel, that of the first word is generally suppressed, but no vowel is suppressed before *s* followed by a

consonant, Note 1, 5.—See ELISION.

SURPRISE (to), *stupire (isco)*, *sorprendere**. To be surprised at something, *essere maravigliato (sorpreso) di qualche cosa*, 370.

SVEGLIARE, *risvegliare*, to wake; *svegliarsi*, *risvegliarsi*, to awake, 240.

T.

TACERE*, to hold one's tongue, to stop speaking, to be silent, Obs. B. 387. Obs. 478.

TAKE (to), *prendere**, 108, 139, 461. To take place, *aver luogo*, 131. To take care of something, *aver cura di qualcosa*, 226. To take care (to beware) of somebody, *guardarsi di (da) qualcuno*; to take care (to beware) of something, *badare a qualche cosa*, 342. To take a walk, *passeggiare*; to take an airing in a carriage, *andare in carrozza*, *in legno*, *in vettura*; to take a ride, *andare a cavallo*, 191.—See ANDARE*.

TALE (*simile*); *un tal uomo*, such a man; *tali uomini*, such men; *una tal donna*, such a woman; *tali cose*, such things, 288.

TANTINO (*un*), *un poco*, *un pochettino*, *un pochino*, just a little, ever so little, 405.

TANTO, so much; *tanto all'anno*, so much a year; *tanto a testa*, so much a head, 176, 270.

TANTO—quanto (*che, come*); plur. *tanti—quant*i (*che, come*), as much—as, as many—as, Note 1, 54.

TASTE (to), *gustare*, *assaggiare*, 175; the taste, *il gusto*; each man has his taste, *ognuno ha il suo gusto*, 187.

TEACH (to), *insegnare*; to teach some one something, *insegnare qualcosa a qualcuno*; to teach some one to do something, *insegnar a qualcuno a far qualche cosa*, 238.

TEAR (a), *una lagrima*; to shed tears, *spargere lagrime*; with tears in his, her, our, or my eyes, *colle lagrime agli occhi*, 305, 306.

TEMERE *uno*, to fear some one, 189, 234.

TENERE*, to hold, 171. *Tenersi pronto a*, to keep one's self ready, 244. *Tenere pensione*, to keep a boarding-house, 381. *Tener luogo di*, to take the place of, to be instead of, 401.—See TO KEEP.

THAN, *che*, 56. Than, before a number, is rendered by *di*, and not by *che*; more than nine, *più di nove*, Obs. A. 217.

THANK (to) some one for something, *ringraziare qualcuno per qualche cosa*, 318.

THAT, *quel, quello, quell'*; use of each of these pronouns, Obs. 9. That or the one, *quello*, 9. That or which, *che, il quale*, relative pronoun, 22. That (meaning that thing), *ciò, quello*, 131. 135. That or the one, *quello*, plur. *quelli, quei, or que'*; *quella*, plur. *quelle*, 9. 31. 259. 261. That which, the one which, those which, *quel che, quello che, quelli che, or cui, quei (que') che, quella che, quelle che*, 23. 31. 261. That (what) which, or the thing which, *ciò che, quel che, quanto*, 101.

THE, definite article, *il, lo, l', i, gli, gl', la, le*, 1—3. 24, 25. 253.—See ARTICLE.

THEIR, theirs, *il loro, i loro, la loro, le loro*, 28. Obs. B. 258. 266.

THEN, *allora*; until then, *fino allora*, 154.

THERE, or THITHER, to it, at it, in it, *vi or ci*, Note 1, 67, 68. 78. To go thither, *andarvi, andarci*; to be there, *esservi, esserci*, 67. There, *là, ò, ci, vi*, 88. There is, behold, *ecco*; there is my book, *ecco il mio libro*; there it is, *eccolo*, fem. *eccola*; there they are, *eccoli*, fem. *eccole*, 297. There is, *c'è, vi è (vi ha, avvi)*. There are, *ci sono or vi sono*, 147. 208.

THINE, *il tuo, la tua, i tuoi, le tue*, 86. 258. 266.

THIS, or THAT, these or those, *quel, quello, quella, questi (or que')*, *questi, questa, queste*, 9. 21. 28. 259. This one, that one, these, those, *questo (costo), quello; questi, quelli (quegli); questa, quella, queste or queste qui, quelle or quelle là*, Obs. B. 22. 32. 259. 261.

THOU, *tu*, Note 2, 83.

THUNDER (to), *il tuonare*. It thunders very much, *tuona molto*, 182.

THUS, or so, *così in questa guisa*, 320.

THY, *il tuo, la tua, i tuoi, le tue*, 86. Obs. B. Rule 1. 258. 266.

TIGNERE*, or TINGERE, to dye or to colour; *tignere nero, rosso*, to dye black, red. 161, 463.

TILL, until, *fino, insino*; till twelve

o'clock (till noon), *fino a mezzo giorno, fino a mezzodì*, 154. Not until (meaning not before), *non—prima di*, 355.

TIRARE, to pull, to draw,* to shoot, to fire, 214.

TIRED (to be), *esser stanco, lasso, annoiato*, 406. To get or be tired (to want amusement), *annoiarsi, stancarsi*, 372. 406.

TO, *a*; to whom? *a chi?* to what? *a che?* to the man, *all'uomo*; to the men, *agli uomini*; to it, to them, *ci or vi, loro*, 77, Obs. B. 78. To (meaning in order to), *per*, 70. Obs. 341. To (at, or in) Paris, *a Parigi*; to (at, or in) Rome, *a Roma*, 159. To (at, or in) France, *in Francia*; to (at, or in) England, *in Inghilterra*, 159. To my liking, *a mio grado (a mio genio, a mio modo)*, to every body's liking, *a grado di tutti*, 381.

Too, *troppo*, 123. Too much, *troppo*; too many, *troppi*, 43. Too late, *troppo tardi*; too soon, too early, *troppo di buon' ora, troppo a buon' ora*; too large, too great, *troppo grande*; too little, *troppo piccolo*, 123.

TOSTO *che (subito che)*, as soon as; *non tosto*, no sooner; is employed in the use of the preterite anterior, 294. *Tosto che, appena*, as soon as, 338.

TOWARDS, *verso*, or *in verso di*, 240. 390.

TRAVEL (to), *viaggiare*, 160.—See ANDARE*. To travel through Europe, *fare il giro dell'Europa*, 396.

TREAT (to), or to use somebody well, *comportarsi (trattare, usare) bene con qualcuno*; to use somebody ill, *comportarsi (usare, trattare) male con qualcuno*, 390.

TRICK (a), *una beffa, una burla*; to play a trick, *far una burla*, 396.

TROppo, too, 123. *Troppo*, too much; *troppi*, too many, 43.

TRUST (to) some one, *affidarsi a qualcuno*; to distrust one, *non fidarsi di alcuno, diffidare di qualcuno*, 307.

TU, thou.—See Way of Addressing a person in Italian.

TUO (il), *la tua, i tuoi, le tue*, thy, thine, 86. 258. 266.

TURN (to), a soldier, a merchant, a lawyer, *fursi (diventare, divenire) soldato, mercante, avvocato*, 194. To turn to account (to make the best of), *far valere, trar profitto*, 405. To

turn some one into ridicule, *porre in ridicolo qualcuno*, 383. The turn, *la volta*; a turn (a walk), *un giro*; to take a turn (a walk) *far un giro*, 213. 396.

TUTTO, all; plur. *tutti*. *Tutto il vino*, all the wine; *tutti i libri*, all the books, 161. *Tutto il giorno (tutta la giornata)*, the whole day, all the day; *tutto il mattino (tutta la mattina)*, the whole morning; *tutta la sera*, the whole evening; *tutta la notte (tutta notte)*, the whole night, all the night; *tutto ad un tratto*, all at once, 265, 266.

U.

UNDER, *sotto*; under it, *sotto, dis-sotto*, 141.

UNDERSTAND (to), *capire* * (*isco*), understand, *capito*, 145. 147. 468. To make one's self understood, *farsi capire*, 364.

UNO, *una*, a or an, 39. 260, 261. Obs. A. B. 106, 107. *L' un l' altro*, each other; *siete contenti l' un dell' altro?* are you pleased with each other? *lo siamo*, we are, 312. *Un poco*—See Poco.

UP; to get up (to rise), *levarsi, alzarsi*, 191. To go up, to mount, to ascend, *montare, salire* *, *ascendere* *, 283. 462. 482. To stand up, *star in piedi*; to remain up, *restar in piedi*, 369. Up-stairs, *sopra, in alto, dis-sopra*, 160. Up to the top, *fino in alto*, 406.

UPON, *su, sopra, sovra*; upon it, *sopra, dis-sopra*, 141.

USARE, to wear, to use, 146. *Usare bene o male, con qualcuno*, to use somebody well or ill, 390.

USCIRE *, to go out, Note 1, 88. 95. 122. 140. 483.

V.

VALERE *, to be worth, 166. 476. *Valer la pena (meritare il conto)*, to be worth while; *val la pena?* is it worth while? 240. *Non ne vale il prezzo, non ne vale la pena*, you have no reason for it, 318.

VECE (in) *di*, instead of, Obs. 102.

VEDERE *, to see, 71. 94. 137. 457.

VELA (*una*), a sail; *a piene vele, a gonfie vele*, under full sail, 332.

VENIRE *, to come, 68. 95. 140. 481. *Venir in pensiero*, to be struck with a thought; *mi viene un pensiero*, a thought strikes me, 342. The preposition *a* precedes the infinitive joined to a verb of motion, such as *andare* * and *venire* *, and the conjunction *and*, which in English follows the verbs *go* and *come*, is not rendered in Italian, Obs. A. 369.

VERBS: the three conjugations, 58. Means to distinguish each of them, 58. 93. Verbs ending in *care* or *gare* take the letter *h* after *c* or *g*, in all tenses and persons where *c* or *g* meets with one of the vowels, *e, i*, Obs. C. 96. 454. Verbs requiring the preposition *di* before the infinitive, 58. Obs. 102. 115. Verbs requiring the preposition *a* (*ad*), and those requiring the preposition *in*, 103, Obs. A. 123, 124. Verbs requiring the preposition *per*, 70. Verbs which do not require a preposition before the infinitives, Obs. B. 124. Treatise of the Italian Verbs, 438 *et seqq.* Compound and derivative verbs are conjugated like their primitives. Obs. 145. Auxiliary verbs (see AVERE *, ESSERE *). Verbs which require *essere* for their auxiliary, 190, Obs. F. 277. The past participle of such verbs must agree in gender and number with the nominative of the verb *essere*, 130 ~~65~~ 278. Active verbs, 134. Their conjugation, 443 *et seqq.* Neuter verbs, 140. Passive verbs, 180. 219. The passive participle agrees with the nominative in number, 219. Their conjugation, 446 *et seqq.* Reflective verbs, 186. 190. In Italian all reflective verbs take in their compound tenses the auxiliary *essere* *, whilst in English they take *to have*, 190. Their conjugation, 449 *et seqq.*, 452 *et seqq.* Impersonal verbs, 174, 175. 182. 197. Verbs requiring the subjunctive, Rem. C. 346. Rem. G. 349. Way of rendering in Italian the English interrogatives *do* and *am*, 114. Irregular verbs: in *are*, 469 *et seqq.*; in *ere*, 472 *et seqq.*; in *ire*, 481 *et seqq.* Defective verbs, 483.

VERSO, or *inverso di*, towards, 240. 390.

VI or *ci*, there, thither, to ft, at it, in it. They are joined to the verb,

which loses its final vowel, Obs. 67. Their place with regard to the personal pronouns, and *ne*, 68. *Ci* or *vi*, there, thither, 78. 88. *Riguardarvi da vicino*, to be particular, 395.

VIA (*la*), the road; *di quà della via*, *al di quà della via*, on this side of the road; *al di là della via*, *di là della via*, on that side of the road, 160.

VICINO a (*presso a*), near; *vicino (presso) al fuoco*, near the fire, 230, 231.

*VIVERE**, to live, 182. 464. *Si vive bene a Parigi?* is it good living in Paris? Is the living good in Paris? 182.

VOI, you.—See Way of Addressing a person in Italian.

*VOLERE**, to be willing, to wish, 62. 140. 457. *Ci vuol un quarto*, it wants a quarter; *ci vuol la metà*, it wants a half, 415.

VOLESSE IDDIO! would to God! requires the subjunctive, Rem. M. 357.

VOSSIGNORIA (V.S.) your worship, *Vossignoria Illustrissima*, your Lordship.—See Way of Addressing a person in Italian.

VOSTRA ALTEZZA, your Highness. — *ECCELLENZA*, your Excellency.

—— *MAESTÀ*, your Majesty.—See Way of Addressing a person in Italian.

VOSTRO (il), *la vostra*, *i vostri*, *le vostre*, 28. 258. 266.

W.

WAKE, *svegliare*, *risvegliare*, 240.

WALK (*to*), *camminare*, Obs. E. 275. To take a walk, *passaggiare*; to go a walking, *andare a passeggiare*, 191. To walk or travel a league, *far una lega*, 275.

WANT (*to*); to be in want of, *aver bisogno di*, 90. Obs. D. 96. To want, *occorrere*; I want three books, *mi occorrono tre libri*, 396.

WARM (*to*), *scaldare*; they will warm the soup, *si farà scaldare la zuppa*, 332. *WARM*, *caldo*; is it warm? *fa' caldo?* 174.

WATCH: to wind up, to regulate

the watch, and similar expressions, 377.

WAY (to ask one's), 375.

WAY of Addressing a person in Italian, Note 2, 1, 2. Note 2, 83 et seqq.

WEATHER (*the*), *il tempo*. How is the weather? what kind of weather is it? *che tempo fa?* 174, 175.

WELL, *bene*, 116. 120. 146. 300. To be well, *star bene*, *essere in buona salute*; she is well, *sta bene*, *è in buona salute*, 312.

WELCOME (*to be*), *esser il ben venuto*, *il ben arrivato*, *esser la ben venguta*, *la ben arrivata*, 372.

WET (*damp*), *umido*; is the weather damp? *È umido il tempo?* 175.

WHAT? *che?* *che cosa?* *cosa?* 8. Its declension, Obs. A. 77. What, or the thing which. Do you find what you are looking for? *Trova Ella ciò che cerca?* 101. What before an infinitive; I do not know what to do, *non so che fare*, 304.

WHATEVER, whatsoever, *per quanto*, agrees with the substantive that follows it, and requires the subjunctive, Rem. S. 359.

WHEN, *quando*, *allorchè*, *allorquando*, 212. 294.

WHERE? *Dove?* *ove?* *onde?* *donde?* 64. Where? whither? where to? *Ove?* *dove?* *onde?* *donde?* 67. Where from? Whence? *Da dove?* *d'onde?* 167. 224. Where did we stop? *Dove eravamo?* 377. Somewhere or whither, any where or whither, *in qualche luogo*; no where, not any where, *in nessun luogo*, 68.

WHICH or *WHAT?* *quale* or *che* (plural *quali*, *che*)? When is *quale*, and when *che*, to be employed? Obs. D. 3, Note 6, 3. 28. 261. Of which, *di cui*, *del quale*, *dei quali*, 198, 199. Which one? *quale*, *quali* (*quali*)? 15. 28. 261.

WHO? *chi?* its declension, 71. Whose? *a chi?* 77. Whose? *Di chi?* 120. Whose? *di cui?* 198. To whom, *a chi*, *ai quali*, 199.

WHOEVER, whosoever, *chi che sia*, *chiocchessia*, *chiunque*, 359.

WHY? *perchè?* 150.

WIPE (*to*), *asciugare*, 142.

WITH, *con*; with him, *seco*, *con lui*, 148. *With* rendered by *di*, 177. 193. 225. 282. *With* rendered by *in casa di*, or *da*, 63.